

Edward Craven Hawtrey

9504.f.14.

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, FROM The INVASION of JULIUS CÆSAR TO The REVOLUTION in 1688.

IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

By DAVID HUME, Esq;

VOL V.

A NEW EDITION, Corrected.

LONDON:

Printed for A. MILLAR, in the Strand.

MDCCLXIII.

BRITISH MUSEUM

CONTENTS

OF THE

FIFTH VOLUME.

CHAP. XXXIX.

ELIZABETH.

Queen's popularity.——Re-eſtabliſhment of the proteſtant religion.——A Parliament.——Peace with France.——Diſguſt between the Queen and Mary Queen of Scots.——Scots affairs.——Reformation in Scotland.——Civil wars in Scotland.——Interpoſal of the Queen in Scots affairs.——Settlement of Scotland.——French affairs.——Arrival of Mary in Scotland.——Bigotry of the Scotch reformers.——Wiſe government of Elizabeth. Page 1.

CHAP. XL.

State of Europe.——Civil wars of France.——Havre de Grace put in poſſeſſion of the Engliſh.——A Parliament.——Havre loſt.——Scots affairs.——The Queen of Scots marries the earl of Darnley.——Confederacy againſt the Proteſtants.——Murder of Rizzio.——A Parliament.——Murder of Darnley.——Queen of Scots marries Bothwel.——Inſurrections in Scotland.——Impriſonment of Mary.——Mary flies into England.——Conferences at York and Hampton-Court. 65

CHAP

CHAP. XL.

Character of the puritans.——Duke of Norfolk's conspiracy——Insurrection in the north.——Assassination of the earl of Murray.——A Parliament.——Civil wars of France.——Affairs of the Low Countries.——New conspiracy of the duke of Norfolk.——Trial of Norfolk.——His execution.——Scots affairs.——French affairs. Massacre of Paris.——French affairs.——Civil wars of the Low Countries.——A Parliament. 156

CHAP. XLI.

Scots affairs.——Spanish affairs.——Sir Francis Drake.——A Parliament.——Negotiations of marriage with the duke of Anjou.——Scots affairs. ——Letter of Queen Mary to Elizabeth.—— Conspiracies in England.——A Parliament.—— The ecclesiastical commission.——Affairs of the Low Countries.——Hostilities with Spain. 234

CHAP. XLII.

Zeal of the Catholics.——Babington's conspiracy. ——Mary assents to the conspiracy.——The conspirators seized and executed.——Resolution to try the Queen of Scots.——The commissioners prevail on her to submit to the trial.——The trial. ——Sentence against Mary.——Interposition of King James.——Reasons for the execution of Mary.——The execution.——Mary's character.

——*The Queen's affected ſorrow.*——*Drake deſtroys the Spaniſh fleet at Cadiz.*——*Philip projects the invaſion of England.*——*The invincible Armada.*——*Preparations in England.*——*The Armada arrives in the Channel.*——*Defeated.*——*A Parliament.*——*Expedition againſt Portugal.*——*Scots affairs.* 286

CHAP. XLIII.

French affairs.——*Murder of the duke of Guiſe.*——*Murder of Henry the third.*——*Progreſs of Henry the fourth.*——*Naval enterprizes againſt Spain.*——*A Parliament.*——*Henry the fourth embraces the catholic religion.*——*Scots affairs.*——*Naval enterprizes.*——*A Parliament.*——*Peace of Vervins.*——*The earl of Eſſex.* 368

CHAP. XLIV.

State of Ireland.——*Tyrone's rebellion.*——*Eſſex ſent over to Ireland.*——*His ill ſucceſs.*——*Returns to England.*——*Is diſgraced.*——*His intrigues.*——*His inſurrection.*——*His trial and execution.*——*French affairs.*——*Mountjoy's ſucceſs in Ireland.*——*Defeat of the Spaniards and Iriſh.*——*A Parliament.*——*Tyrone's ſubmiſſion.*——*Queen's ſickneſs.*——*And death.*——*And character.*——*Government, manners, commerce, arts, and learning.* 411

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XLV.

HISTORY of GREAT BRITAIN.

JAMES I.

Introduction.——James's first transactions.——State of Europe.——Rosni's negotiations.——Raleigh's conspiracy.——Hampton-court conference.——A parliament.——Peace with Spain. 510

CHAP. XLVI.

Gun-powder conspiracy.——A parliament.——Truce betwixt Spain and the United Provinces.——A parliament.——Death of the French King.——Arminianism.——State of Ireland. 541

20 JY 63

THE

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND, UNDER THE HOUSE of TUDOR.

ELIZABETH.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Queen's popularity. — Re-eſtabliſhment of the proteſtant religion. — A Parliament. — Peace with France. — Diſguſt between the Queen and Mary Queen of Scots. — Scotch affairs. — Reformation in Scotland. — Civil wars in Scotland. — Interpoſal of the Queen in Scotch affairs. — Settlement of Scotland. — French affairs. — Arrival of Mary in Scotland. — Bigotry of the Scotch reformers. — Wiſe government of Elizabeth.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1558.

IN a nation divided like the Engliſh, it could ſcarce be expected, that the death of one ſovereign, and the acceſſion of another, who was ſtrongly ſuſpected to have embraced oppoſite principles to thoſe which prevailed, could be the object of univerſal ſatisfaction: Yet ſo much were Men diſpleaſed with the preſent conduct of affairs, and ſuch apprehenſions were entertained

Queen's popularity.

CHAP. XXXIX.

1558. entertained of futurity, that the people, overlooking their theological disputes, expressed a very general and unfeigned joy that the scepter had passed into the hands of Elizabeth. That princess had discovered great prudence in her conduct during the reign of her sister; and as men were sensible of the imminent danger to which she was every moment exposed, the compassion towards her situation, and concern for her safety, had rendered her, to an uncommon degree, the favourite of the nation. A Parliament had been assembled a few days before Mary's death; and when Heathe, archbishop of York, then chancellor, notified to them that event, scarce an interval of regret appeared; and the two houses immediately resounded with the joyful acclamations of "God save Queen Elizabeth! Long and "happily may she reign." The people, less actuated by faction, and less influenced by private views, expressed a joy still more general and hearty on her proclamation; and the auspicious commencement of this reign prognosticated that felicity and glory which, during its whole course, so uniformly attended it.

ELIZABETH was at Hatfield when she heard of her sister's death; and after a few days she proceeded thence to London, thro' crowds of people, who strove with each other in giving her the strongest testimony of their affections. On her entrance into the Tower, she could not forbear reflecting on the great difference between her present fortune and that which a few years before had attended her, when she was conducted to that place as a prisoner, and lay there exposed to all the bigotted malignity of her enemies. She fell on her knees, and expressed her thanks to heaven, for the deliverance which the Almighty had granted her from her bloody persecutors; a deliverance, she said, no less miraculous than that which Daniel had received from the

[a] Burnet, vol. II. p. 375.

den

den of lions. This act of pious gratitude seems to have been the last circumstance in which she remembered any past injuries and hardships. With a prudence and magnanimity truly laudable, she buried all offences in oblivion, and received with affability even those who had acted with the greatest virulence against her. Sir Harry Bennifield himself, to whose custody she had been committed, and who had treated her with uncommon severity, never felt, during the whole course of her reign, any effects of her resentment [b]. Yet was not the gracious reception which she gave, prostitute and undistinguishing. When the bishops came in a body to make their obeisance to her, she expressed to all of them sentiments of regard, except to Bonner, from whom she turned aside, as from a Man polluted with blood, who was a just object of horror to every heart susceptible of humanity [c].

After employing a few days in ordering her domestic affairs, Elizabeth notified to foreign courts, her sister's death, and her own accession to the crown. She sent lord Cobham to the low Countries, where Philip then resided; and she took care to express to that monarch, her gratitude for the protection which he had afforded her, and her desire of persevering in that friendship which was so happily commenced between them. Philip, who had long foreseen this event, and who still hoped, by means of Elizabeth, to obtain that dominion over England, which he had failed of interposing Mary, immediately dispatched orders to the duke of Feria, his ambassador at London, to make proposals of marriage to the Queen, and he offered to procure from Rome a dispensation for that purpose. But Elizabeth soon came to the resolution of declining this proposal. She saw that the nation had entertained an extreme aversion to the Spanish alliance during her sis-

[b] Burnet, vol. II. p. 374. [c] Ibid. Heylin, p. 102.

CHAP. XXXIX.

1558.

ter's reign; and that one great cauſe of the popularity which ſhe herſelf enjoyed, was the proſpect of being freed, by her means, from the danger of foreign ſubjection. She was ſenſible that her affinity with Philip was exactly ſimilar to that between her father and Catharine of Arragon; and that her marrying that monarch was, in effect, declaring herſelf illegitimate, and incapable of ſucceeding to the throne. And tho' the power of the Spaniſh monarchy might ſtill be ſufficient, in oppoſition to all pretenders, to ſupport her title, her maſculine ſpirit diſdained ſuch precarious dominion, which, as it would depend ſolely on the power of another, muſt be exerciſed according to his inclination[d]. But while theſe views prevented her from entertaining any thoughts of a marriage with Philip, ſhe gave him a very obliging, tho' evaſive, anſwer; and he ſtill retained ſuch hopes of ſucceſs, that he ſent a meſſenger to Rome, with orders to ſollicit the diſpenſation.

THE Queen too, on her ſiſter's death, had wrote to Sir Edward Carne, the Engliſh ambaſſador at Rome, to ſignify her acceſſion to the pope; but the precipitate nature of Paul broke thro' all the cautious meaſures concerted by that young princeſs. He told Carne, that England was a fief of the holy ſee; and it was a great temerity in her to have aſſumed, without his participation, the title and authority of Queen. That Elizabeth, being illegitimate, could not poſſibly inherit that kingdom; nor could he annul the ſentence pronounced by Clement the ſeventh, and Paul the third, with regard to Henry's marriage. That were he to proceed with rigour, he would puniſh this criminal invaſion of his rights, by rejecting all her applications; but being willing to treat her with paternal indulgence, he would ſtill keep the door of grace open to her: And that if ſhe would renounce all pretenſions to the throne, and ſub-

[d] Camden in Kennet, p. 370. Burnet, vol. II. p. 375.

mit entirely to his will, she should experience the utmost lenity which was compatible with the dignity of the apostolic see[e]. When this answer was reported to Elizabeth, she was astonished at the character of that aged pontiff; and having recalled her ambassador, she continued with more determined resolution to pursue those measures which she had already secretly embraced.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1585.

THE Queen, not to alarm the partizans of the catholic religion, had retained eleven of her sister's counsellors; but in order to ballance their authority, she added eight more who were known to be affectionate to the protestant communion: The marquis of Northampton, the earl of Bedford, Sir Thomas Parry, Sir Edward Rogers, Sir Ambrose Cave, Sir Francis Knolles, Sir Nicholas Bacon whom she created lord keeper, and Sir William Cecil, secretary of state[f]. With these counsellors, particularly Cecil, she frequently deliberated concerning the expediency of restoring the protestant religion, and the means of executing that great enterprise. Cecil told her, that the greatest part of the nation had, ever since her father's reign, inclined to the reformation; and tho' her sister had constrained them to profess the ancient faith, the cruelties exercised by her ministers had still more alienated their affections from it: That happily the interests of the sovereign concurred here with the inclinations of the people; nor was her title to the crown compatible with the authority of the Roman pontiff: That a sentence, so solemnly pronounced by two popes against her mother's marriage, could not possibly be recalled, without inflicting a mortal wound on the credit of the see of Rome; and even if she was allowed to retain the crown, it would only be on an uncertain and dependant footing: That this motive counterballanced all dangers whatever; and these

Re-establishment of the protestant religion.

[e] Father Paul, lib. v.

[f] Strype's Ann. vol. I. p. 5.

CHAP. XXXIX.

1558.

dangers themſelves, if narrowly viewed, would be found very little formidable: That the curſes and execrations of the Romiſh church, when not ſeconded by military force, were, in the preſent age, more an object of ridicule than of terror, and had now as little influence in this world as in the next: That tho' the bigotry or ambition of Henry or Philip might incline them to execute a ſentence of excommunication againſt her, their intereſts were ſo incompatible, that they never could concur in any plan of operations; and the enmity of the one would always enſure to her the friendſhip of the other: That if they encouraged the diſcontents of her catholic ſubjects, their dominions alſo abounded with proteſtants, and it would be eaſy to retaliate that injury upon them: That even ſuch of the Engliſh as ſeemed at preſent zealouſly attached to the catholic faith, would moſt of them embrace the religion of their new ſovereign; and the nation had of late been ſo accuſtomed to theſe revolutions, that men had loſt all idea of truth and falſehood in ſuch ſubjects: That the authority of Henry the eighth, ſo highly raiſed by many concurring circumſtances, firſt enured the people to this ſubmiſſive deference; and it was the leſs difficult for the ſucceeding princes to continue the nation in a train to which it had been ſo long accuſtomed: And that it would be eaſy for her, by beſtowing on proteſtants all the commiſſions in civil offices and the militia, the church and the univerſities, both to enſure her own authority, and to render her religion entirely predominant [z].

THE education of Elizabeth, as well as her intereſt, led her to favour the reformation; and ſhe remained not long in ſuſpenſe with regard to the party, which ſhe ſhould embrace: But, tho' determined in her own mind, ſhe reſolved to proceed by gradual and ſecure ſteps,

[z] Burnet, vol. II. p. 377. Camden, p. 370.

and

and not to imitate the example of Mary, in encouraging the bigots of her party to make immediately a violent invasion on the established religion [h]. She thought it requisite, however, to discover such symptons of her intentions, as might give encouragement to the protestants, so much depressed by the late violent persecution. She immediately recalled all the exiles, and gave liberty to the prisoners who were confined on account of religion. We are told of a pleasantry of one Rainsford on this occasion, who said to the Queen, that he had a petition to present her in behalf of other prisoners called Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John: She readily replied, that it behoved her first to consult the prisoners themselves, and to learn of them whether they desired that liberty, which he demanded for them [i]. CHAP. XXXIX. 1558.

ELIZABETH also proceeded to exert, in favour of the reformers, some acts of power, which were consistent with the extent of the royal prerogative, during that age. Finding, that the protestant teachers, irritated by persecution, broke out in a furious accack on the antient superstition, and that the Romanists replied with no less zeal and acrimony, she published a proclamation, by which she inhibited all preaching without a special licence [k]; and tho' she dispensed with these orders in favour of some preachers of her own sect, she took care, that they should be the most calm and moderate of the party. She also suspended the laws so far as to order a great part of the service; the litany, the Lord's prayer, the creed, and the gospels; to be read in English. And having first published injunctions, that all the churches should conform themselves to the practice of her own chapel, she forbad the hoste to be any more elevated in her presence; an innovation, which, however frivo-

[h] Burnet, vol. II. p. 378. Camden, p. 371.
[i] Heylin, p. 103.
[k] Heylin, p. 104. Strype, vol. I. p. 41.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1558.

lous it may appear, implied the moſt material conſequences[l].

THESE declarations of her intention, concurring with the preceding ſuſpicions, made the biſhops foreſee with certainty a revolution in religion. They therefore refuſed to officiate at her coronation; and it was with ſome difficulty, that the biſhop of Carliſle was at laſt prevailed on to perform that ceremony. When ſhe was conducted thro' London, amidſt the joyful acclamations of her ſubjects, a boy, who perſonated Truth, was let down from one of the triumphal arches, and preſented her with a copy of the Bible. She received the book with the moſt gracious deportment, placed it next her boſom, and declared, that, admiſt all the coſtly teſtimonies which the city had that day given her of their attachment, this preſent was by far the moſt precious and moſt acceptable[m]. Such were the innocent artifices, by which Elizabeth inſinuated herſelf into the affections of her ſubjects. Open in her addreſs, gracious and affable in all public appearances, ſhe rejoiced in the concourſe of her Subjects, entered into all their pleaſures and amuſements, and without departing from her dignity, which ſhe knew well how to preſerve, ſhe acquired a popularity beyond what any of her predeceſſors or ſucceſſors ever could attain. Her own ſex exulted to ſee a woman hold the reins of empire with ſuch prudence and fortitude: And while a young princeſs of twenty-five years (for that was her age at her acceſſion) who poſſeſſed all the graces and inſinuation, tho' not all the beauty of her ſex, courted the affections of individuals by her civilities, of the public by her ſervices, her authority, tho' corroborated by the ſtricteſt bands of law and religion, appeared to be derived entirely from the choice and inclination of the people.

[l] Camden, p. 371. Heylin, p. 104. Strype, vol. I. p. 54. Stowe, p. 635.

[m] Burnet, vol. II. p. 380. Strype, vol. I. p. 29.

A SOVEREIGN

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

A Sovereign of this disposition was not likely to offend her subjects by any useless or violent exertions of power; and Elizabeth, tho' she threw out such hints as encouraged the protestants, delayed the entire change of religion till the meeting of the Parliament, which was summoned to assemble. The elections had gone entirely against the catholics, who seemed not indeed to have made any great struggle for the superiority; and the Houses met in a disposition of gratifying the Queen in every particular, which she could desire of them. They began the session with an unanimous declaration, "that Queen Elizabeth was, and ought to "be, as well by the word of God, as the common and "statute laws of the realm, the lawful, undoubted, and "true heir to the crown, lawfully descended from the "blood-royal, according to the order of succession, "settled in the 35th of Henry VIII[n]." This act of recognition was undoubtedly dictated by the Queen herself and her ministers; and she shewed her magnanimity, as well as moderation in the terms, which she employed on that occasion. She followed not Mary's practice in declaring the validity of her mother's marriage, or in expressly repealing the act formerly made against her own legitimacy. She knew, that this attempt must be attended with reflexions on her father's memory, and on the birth of her deceased sister; and as all the world were sensible that Henry's divorce from Anne Boleyn was merely the effect of his violence and caprice, she scorned to found her title on any act of an assembly, which had too much prostituted its authority by its former variable, servile, and iniquitous decisions. Satisfied therefore in the general opinion entertained with regard to this fact, which appeared the more undoubted, the less anxiety she discovered in fortifying it by votes and enquiries; she took possession

A Parliament.

[n] 1 Eliz. cap. 3.

of

CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

of the throne, both as her birth-right, and as enſured to her by former acts of Parliament; and ſhe never appeared ſollicitous to diſtinguiſh theſe titles [o].

THE firſt bill which was brought into the Parliament, with a view of trying their diſpoſition with regard to religion, was that for ſuppreſſing the monaſteries lately erected, and for reſtoring the tenths and firſt-fruits to the Queen. This point being gained without much difficulty, a bill was next introduced, annexing the ſupremacy to the crown; and tho' the Queen was there denominated *governeſs*, not *head*, of the church, it conveyed the ſame extenſive power, which had formerly been exerciſed by her father and brother. All the biſhops who were preſent in the upper houſe ſtrenuouſly oppoſed this law; and as they poſſeſſed more learning than the temporal peers, they triumphed in the argument; but the majority of voices in that houſe, as well as among the commons, were againſt them. By this act the crown, without the concurrence, either of the Parliament or even of the convocation, was veſted with the whole ſpiritual power; might repreſs all hereſies [p], might eſtabliſh or repeal all canons, might alter every point of diſcipline, and might ordain or aboliſh any religious rite or ceremony [q]. In order to exerciſe this unlimited authority, the Queen, by a clauſe of the act, was empowered to name commiſſioners, either laymen or clergymen, as ſhe ſhould think proper; and on this clauſe was after-

o Camden, p. 372. Heylin, p. 107, 108.

p In determining hereſy, the crown was only limited (if that could be called a limitation) to ſuch doctrines as had been adjudged hereſy, by the authority of the Scripture, by the firſt four general councils, or by any general council, which followed the Scripture as their rule, or to ſuch other doctrines as ſhould hereafter be denominated hereſy by the Parliament and convocation. 1 Eliz. cap. 2.

q 1 Eliz. cap. 1. This laſt power was anew granted in the act of uniformity. 1 Eliz. cap. 2.

wards

wards founded the court of eccleſiaſtical commiſſion; which aſſumed very large diſcretionary, not to ſay arbitrary powers, totally incompatible with any exact limitations in the conſtitution. Their proceedings indeed were only conſiſtent with abſolute monarchy; but were entirely ſuitable to the genius of the act on which they were eſtabliſhed; an act that at once gave the crown all the power, which had formerly been claimed by the popes, but which even theſe uſurping prelates had never been able fully to exerciſe, without ſome concurrence of the clergy. CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

WHOEVER refuſed to take an oath, acknowledging the Queen's ſupremacy, was incapacitated from holding any office; whoever denied the ſupremacy, or attempted to deprive the Queen of that prerogative, forfeited, for the firſt offence, all their goods and chattels; for the ſecond were ſubjected to the penalty of a premunire; but the third offence was declared treaſon. Theſe puniſhments, however ſevere, were leſs rigorous than ſuch as were formerly, during the reigns of her father and brother, inflicted in like caſes.

A LAW was paſſed, confirming all the ſtatutes enacted in King Edward's time with regard to religion[r]. The nomination of biſhops was given to the crown without any election of the chapters. The Queen was empowered, on the vacancy of any ſee, to ſeize all the temporalities, and to beſtow on the biſhops elect an equivalent, in the impropriations belonging to the crown. This pretended equivalent was commonly very much inferior in value; and thus the Queen, amidſt all her concern for religion, followed the example of the preceding reformers, in committing depredations on the eccleſiaſtical revenues.

THE biſhops and all incumbents were prohibited from alienating their revenues, and from letting leaſes

[r] 1 Eliz. cap. 2.

longer

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

longer than twenty-one years or three lives. This law seemed to be intended for securing the property of the church; but as an exception was left in favour of the crown, great abuſes ſtill prevailed. It was uſual for a courtier, during this reign, to make an agreement with a biſhop or incumbent; and to procure a fictitious alienation to the Queen, who afterwards transferred the lands to the perſon agreed on [s]. This method of pillaging the church was not remedied till the beginning of James the firſt. The preſent depreſſion of the clergy expoſed them to all injuries; and the laity never ſtopped till they had reduced the church to ſuch poverty, that her plunder was no longer a compenſation for the odium incurred by it.

A SOLEMN and public diſputation was held during this ſeſſion, in preſence of Lord-keeper Bacon, between the divines of the proteſtant and thoſe of the catholic party. The champions appointed to defend the religion of the ſovereign, were, as in former inſtances, entirely triumphant, and the popiſh diſputants, being pronounced refractory and obſtinate, were even puniſhed by impriſonment [t]. Emboldened by this victory, the proteſtants ventured on the laſt and moſt important ſtep, and brought into Parliament a bill for aboliſhing the maſs, and re-eſtabliſhing the liturgy of King Edward. Penalties were enacted, as well againſt thoſe who departed from this mode of worſhip, as thoſe who abſented themſelves from the church and the ſacraments. And thus in one ſeſſion, without any violence, tumult, or clamour, was the whole ſyſtem of religion altered, on the very commencement of a reign, and by the will of a young woman, whoſe title to the crown was by many eſteemed liable to great objections: An event, which, tho' it may appear ſurpriſing to men in the preſent age, was every

[s] Strype, vol. I. p. 79. [t] Ibid. p. 95. [u] 1 Eliz. cap. 2.

where

where expected on the first news of Elizabeth's accession.

The commons also made a sacrifice to the Queen, more difficult to obtain than that of any articles of religion. They voted a subsidy of four shillings in the pound on land, and two shillings and eight pence on goods, together with two fifteenths [x]. The house in no instance departed from the most respectful deference and complaisance towards the Queen. Even the importunate address, which they made her on the conclusion of the session, to fix her choice of a husband, could not, they supposed, be very disagreeable to one of her sex and age. The address was couched in the most respectful expressions; yet met with a refusal from the Queen. She told the speaker, that, as the application from the house was conceived in general terms, only recommending marriage, without pretending to direct her choice of a husband, she could not take offence at the address, or regard it as other than a new instance of their affectionate attachment towards her. That any farther interposition on their part would have

[x] The Parliament also granted the Queen the duties of tonnage and poundage; but this accession was at that time regarded only as a matter of form, and she had levied these duties before they were voted by the Parliament. But there was another exertion of power, which she practised, and which people, in this age, from their ignorance of the antient constitution, may be apt to think a little extraordinary. Her sisters, after the commencement of the war with France, had, from her own authority, imposed four marks on each ton of wine imported, and had encreased the poundage a third on all commodities. Queen Elizabeth continued these impositions as long as she thought convenient. The Parliament, who had so good an opportunity of restraining these arbitrary taxes, when they voted the tonnage and poundage, thought proper not to make any mention of them. They knew, that the sovereign, during that age, pretended to have the sole regulation of foreign trade, and that their intermeddling with that prerogative would have drawn on them the severest reproof, if not chastisement. See Forbes, vol. I. p. 132, 133. We know certainly from the statutes and journals, that no such impositions were granted by Parliament.

ill

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

ill become either them to make, as ſubjects, or her to hear as an independant princeſs: That even while ſhe was a private perſon, and expoſed to much danger, ſhe had always declined that engagement, which ſhe regarded as an incumbrance; much more, at preſent would ſhe perſevere in that ſentiment, when the charge of a great kingdom was committed to her, and her life ought to be entirely devoted to promoting the intereſts of religion and the happineſs of her ſubjects: That as England was her huſband, wedded to her by this pledge (and here ſhe ſhewed them her finger with the ſame gold ring upon it, with which ſhe had ſolemnly betrothed herſelf to the kingdom at her inauguration) ſo all Engliſhmen were her children; and while ſhe was employed in the rearing or governing ſuch a family, ſhe could not deem herſelf barren, or her life uſeleſs and unfruitful: That if ſhe ever entertained thoughts of changing her condition, the care of her ſubjects welfare would ſtill be uppermoſt in her thoughts; but ſhould ſhe live and die a virgin, ſhe doubted not but the divine providence, ſeconded by their counſels and her own meaſures, would be able to prevent all diſpute with regard to the ſucceſſion, and ſecure them a ſovereign, who, perhaps better than her own iſſue, would imitate her example in loving and cheriſhing her people: And that for her part, ſhe deſired that no higher character, nor fairer remembrance of her ſhould be tranſmitted to poſterity, than to have this inſcription engraved on her tomb-ſtone, when ſhe ſhould pay the laſt debt to nature; "Here lies Elizabeth, who lived and died a maiden Queen[y]."

8th May. AFTER the prorogation of the Parliament[z], the laws enacted with regard to religion, were put in ex-

[y] Camden, p. 375. Sir Simon d'Ewes.

[z] It is thought remarkable by Camden, that tho' this ſeſſion was the firſt of the reign, no perſon was attainted; but on the contrary, ſome re-

ecution,

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

execution, and met with no oppoſition from any quarter. The liturgy was again introduced in the vulgar tongue, and the oath of ſupremacy was tendered to the clergy. The number of biſhops had been reduced to fourteen by a very ſickly ſeaſon, which preceded; and all of theſe, except the biſhop of Landaffe, having refuſed compliance, were degraded from their ſees. But of the inferior clergy throughout all England, where there are near 10,000 pariſhes, only eighty pariſh rectors, fifty prebendaries, fifteen heads of colleges, twelve archdeacons, and as many deans, ſacrificed their livings to their religious principles[a]. Thoſe in high eccleſiaſtical ſtations, who were expoſed to the eyes of the world, ſeem chiefly to have placed a point of honour in their perſeverance; but on the whole, the proteſtants, in the former change introduced by Mary, appear to have been much more rigid and conſcientious. Tho' the catholic religion, adapting itſelf to the ſenſes, and requiring obſervances, which enter into the common train of life, does at preſent lay much faſter hold of the mind than the reformed, which, being chiefly ſpiritual, reſembles more a ſyſtem of metaphyſicks; yet was the proportion of zeal, as well as of knowledge, during the firſt ages after the reformation, much greater on the ſide of the proteſtants. The catholics continued, ignorantly and ſupinely, in their antient belief, or rather their antient practices: But the reformers, obliged to diſpute on every occaſion, and enflamed to a degree of enthuſiaſm by novelty and perſecution, had ſtrongly attached themſelves to their tenets; and were ready to ſacrifice their fortunes, and even their lives, in defence of their ſpeculative and abſtract principles.

ſtored in blood by the Parliament. A good ſympton of the lenity, at leaſt of the prudence, of the Queen's government.

[a] Camden, p. 376. Heylin, p. 115. Strype, vol. I. p. 73. with ſome ſmall variations.

The

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

The forms and ceremonies, ſtill preſerved in the Engliſh liturgy, as they bore ſome reſemblance to the antient ſervice, tended farther to reconcile the catholics to the eſtabliſhed religion; and as the Queen permitted no other mode of worſhip, and at the ſame time ſtruck out every thing that could be offenſive to them in the new liturgy [b], even thoſe addicted to the Romiſh communion made no ſcruple of attending the eſtabliſhed church. Had Elizabeth gratified her own inclinations, the exterior appearance, which is the chief circumſtance with the people, would have been ſtill more ſimilar between the new and the antient form of worſhip. As ſhe loved ſtate and magnificence in every thing, ſhe was ſomewhat addicted to the pomp of the catholic religion; and it was merely in compliance with the prejudices of her party, that ſhe gave up either the images or the addreſſes to the ſaints, or prayers for the dead [c]. Some foreign princes interpoſed to procure the Romaniſts the privilege of ſeparate aſſemblies in particular cities, but the Queen would not comply with their requeſt; and repreſented the manifeſt danger of diſturbing the national peace by a toleration of different religions [d].

Peace with France.

WHILE the Queen and Parliament were employed in ſettling the public religion, the negotiations for a peace were ſtill conducted firſt at Cercamp, then at Chateau-Cambreſis, between the miniſters of France, Spain, and England; and Elizabeth, tho' equally prudent, was not ſo ſucceſsful in this tranſaction. Philip employed his utmoſt efforts to procure the reſtitution of Calais, both as bound in honour to indemnify England, which, merely on his account, had been drawn into the war, and as engaged in intereſt to remove

[b] Heylin, p. 111. [c] Burnet, vol. II. p. 376. 397. Camden, p. 371.

[d] Camden, p. 378. Strype, vol. I. p. 150. 370.

France

CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

France from his frontiers in the Low Countries. So long as he entertained hopes of eſpouſing the Queen, he delayed concluding a peace with Henry; and even after the change of religion in England deprived him of all ſuch views, his miniſters hinted a propoſal, which may be regarded as reaſonable and honourable. After all his own terms with France were ſettled, he ſeemed willing to continue the war, till ſhe ſhould obtain ſatisfaction; provided ſhe would ſtipulate to adhere to the Spaniſh alliance, and continue hoſtilities againſt Henry, during the courſe of ſix years [e]. But Elizabeth, after conſulting with her miniſters, very wiſely rejected this propoſal. She was ſenſible of the low ſtate of her finances; the great debts contracted by her father, brother and ſiſter; the diſorders introduced into every part of the adminiſtration; the diviſions by which her people were agitated; and ſhe was convinced that nothing but tranquillity during ſome years could bring the kingdom again into a flouriſhing condition, or enable her to act with dignity and vigour, in her tranſactions with foreign nations. Well acquainted with the value which Henry put upon Calais, and the impoſſibility of recovering it by treaty, during the preſent emergency, ſhe was willing rather to ſuffer that loſs, than ſubmit to ſuch a dependance on Spain, as ſhe muſt expect to fall into, if ſhe continued pertinaciouſly in her preſent demand. She ordered, therefore, her ambaſſadors, the Lord Effingham, the biſhop of Ely, and Dr. Wotton, to conclude the negociation, and to ſettle a peace with Henry, on any reaſonable terms. Henry offered to ſtipulate a marriage between the eldeſt daughter of the dauphin, and the eldeſt ſon of Elizabeth; and to engage for the reſtitution of Calais as the dowry of that princeſs [f]; but as the Queen was ſenſible that this treaty would appear to the world a

[e] Forbes's Full View, vol. I. p. 59.

[f] Forbes, vol. I. p. 54.

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

palpable evaſion, ſhe inſiſted upon more equitable, at leaſt, more plauſible conditions. It was at laſt agreed, that Henry ſhould reſtore Calais at the expiration of eight years; that in caſe of failure, he ſhould pay five hundred thouſand crowns, and the Queen's title to Calais ſtill remain; that he ſhould find the Security of ſeven or eight foreign merchants, not natives of France, for the payment of this ſum; that he ſhould deliver five hoſtages till that ſecurity was provided; that if Elizabeth broke the peace with France or Scotland during that interval, ſhe ſhould forfeit all title to Calais; but if Henry made war on Elizabeth, he ſhould be obliged immediately to reſtore that fortreſs [g]. All men of penetration eaſily ſaw, that theſe ſtipulations were but a colourable pretence for abandoning Calais; but they excuſed the Queen on account of the neceſſity of her affairs, and they even extolled her prudence, in ſubmitting, without further ſtruggle, to that neceſſity. A peace with Scotland was a neceſſary conſequence of that with France.

PHILIP and Henry concluded hoſtilities with a mutual reſtitution of all places taken during the courſe of the war; and Philip eſpouſed the princeſs Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter of France, formerly betrothed to his ſon Don Carlos. The duke of Savoy married Margaret, Henry's ſiſter, and obtained a reſtitution of all his dominions of Savoy and Piedmont, except a few towns, retained by France. And thus general tranquillity ſeemed to be reſtored to Europe.

Diſguſt between the Queen, and Mary Queen of Scots.

BUT tho' a peace was ſigned and concluded between France and England, there ſoon appeared a ground of quarrel, of the moſt ſerious nature, and which was afterwards attended with the moſt important conſequences. The two marriages of Henry the eighth, that with Catherine of Arragon, and that with Anne Boleyn, were totally incompatible with each other, and it ſeemed im-

[g] Forbes, p. 62. Rymer, tom. XV. p. 505.

poſſible

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

impoſſible that both of them could be regarded as valid and legal: But ſtill the birth of Elizabeth lay under ſome diſadvantages, to which that of her ſiſter, Mary, was not expoſed. Henry's firſt marriage had obtained the ſanction of all the powers, both civil and eccleſiaſtical, which were then acknowledged in England; and it was natural, for proteſtants as well as Romaniſts, to allow, on account of the ſincere intention of the parties, that their iſſue ought to be regarded as legitimate. But his divorce, and ſecond marriage, had been concluded in direct oppoſition to the ſee of Rome; and tho' they had been ratified by the authority both of the Engliſh Parliament and convocation, thoſe who were ſtrongly attached to the catholic church, and who reaſoned with great ſtrictneſs, were lead to regard them as entirely invalid, and to deny altogether the Queen's right of ſucceſſion. The next heir of blood was the Queen of Scots, now married to the dauphin; and the great power of that princeſs, joined to her plauſible title, rendered her a very formidable rival to Elizabeth. The King of France had ſecretly been ſolliciting at Rome a bull of excommunication againſt the Queen; and ſhe had here been beholden to the good offices of Philip, who, from intereſt more than either friendſhip or principle, had negociated in her favour, and had ſucceſsfully oppoſed the pretenſions of Henry. But the court of France was not diſcouraged with this repulſe: The duke of Guiſe, and his brothers, thinking, that it would much augment their credit, if their niece ſhould bring an acceſſion of England, as ſhe had already done of Scotland, to the crown of France, engaged the King not to neglect the claim; and, by their perſuaſion, he ordered his ſon and daughter-in-law to aſſume openly the arms as well as title of England, and to quarter theſe arms on all their equipages, furniture, and liveries. When

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

the Engliſh ambaſſador complained of this injury, he could obtain nothing but an evaſive anſwer; that as the Queen of Scots was deſcended from the blood royal of England, ſhe was entitled, by the example of many princes, to aſſume the arms of that kingdom. But beſides that this practice had never prevailed without permiſſion being firſt obtained, and without making a viſible difference between the arms, Elizabeth plainly ſaw, that this pretenſion had not been advanced during the reign of her ſiſter Mary; and that, therefore, the King of France intended, on the firſt opportunity, to diſpute her legitimacy, and her title to the crown. Alarmed with the danger, ſhe thenceforth conceived a ſtrong jealouſy againſt the Queen of Scots; and was determined, as far as poſſible, to incapacitate Henry from the execution of his project. The ſudden death of that monarch, who was killed in a tournament at Paris, while he was celebrating the eſpouſals of his ſiſter with the duke of Savoy, altered not her views. Being informed, that his ſucceſſor, Francis the ſecond, ſtill continued to aſſume, without reſerve, the title of King of England, ſhe began to conſider him and his Queen as her moſt mortal enemies; and the preſent ſituation of affairs in Scotland afforded her a favourable opportunity, both of revenging the injury, and of providing for her own ſafety.

Scots affairs.

THE murder of the cardinal-primate at St. Andrews, had deprived the Scots catholics of a head whoſe ſeverity, courage, and capacity had rendered him extremely formidable to the innovators in religion; and the execution of the Laws againſt hereſy began thenceforth to be much more remiſs and gentle. The Queen-regent governed the Kingdom by prudent and moderate councils; and as ſhe was not diſpoſed to ſacrifice the civil intereſts of the ſtate to the bigotry or intereſts of prieſts, ſhe deemed it more expedient to temporize, and to connive

connive at the progreſs of a doctrine which ſhe had not power entirely to repreſs. When informed of the death of Edward, and the acceſſion of Mary to the crown of England, ſhe entertained hopes, that the Scottiſh reformers, deprived of the countenance which they received from that powerful kingdom, would loſe their ardour with their proſpect of ſucceſs, and would gradually return to the faith of their anceſtors. But the progreſs and revolutions of religion are little governed by the uſual maxims of civil policy; and the event much diſappointed the regent's expectations. Many of the Engliſh preachers, terrified with the ſeverity of Mary's government, took ſhelter in Scotland, where they found more protection, and a milder adminiſtration; and while they propagated their theological tenets, they filled that whole kingdom with a juſt horror againſt the cruelties of the bigotted catholics, and ſhowed their diſciples the fate which they muſt expect, if ever their adverſaries ſhould attain an uncontrouled authority over them.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

A HIERARCHY, moderate in its acquiſitions of power and riches, may ſafely grant a toleration to ſectaries; and the more it debates the fervor of innovators by lenity and liberty, the more ſecurely will it poſſeſs thoſe advantages which the legal eſtabliſhments beſtow upon it. But where ſuperſtition has raiſed a church to ſuch an exorbitant height as that of Rome, perſecution is leſs the reſult of bigotry in the prieſts, than of a neceſſary policy; and the rigour of law is the only method of repelling the attacks of men, who, beſides religious zeal, have ſo many other motives, derived both from public and private intereſt, to engage them on the ſide of innovation. But tho' ſuch overgrown hierarchies may long ſupport themſelves by theſe violent expedients, the time comes, when ſeverities tend only to enrage the new ſectaries, and make them break thro' all

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

bounds of reaſon and moderation. This criſis was now viſibly approaching in Scotland; and whoever conſiders merely the tranſactions reſulting from it, will be inclined to throw the blame equally on both parties; whoever enlarges his view, and reflects on the ſituations, will obſerve the neceſſary progreſs of human affairs, and the operation of thoſe principles which are inherent in human nature.

Reformation in Scotland.

SOME heads of the reformers in Scotland, ſuch as the earl of Argyle, his ſon lord Lorne, the earls of Morton, and Glencarne, Erſkine of Dun, and others, finding the danger to which they were expoſed, and deſirous to propagate their principles, entered privately into a bond or aſſociation; and called themſelves the *Congregation* of the Lord, in contradiſtinction to the eſtabliſhed church, which they denominated the congregation of Satan. The tenor of the bond was as follows: "We, "perceiving how Satan, in his members, the anti-"chriſts of our time, do cruelly rage, ſeeking to over-"throw and to deſtroy the goſpel of Chriſt and his "congregation, ought, according to our bounden "duty, to ſtrive, in our maſter's cauſe, even unto the "death, being certain of the victory in him. We do "therefore promiſe, before the majeſty of God and his "congregation, that we, by his grace, ſhall with all "diligence continually apply our whole power, ſub-"ſtance, and our very lives, to maintain, ſet forward, "and eſtabliſh the moſt bleſſed word of God and his "congregation; and ſhall labour, by all poſſible means, "to have faithful miniſters, truly and purely to mi-"niſter Chriſt's goſpel and ſacraments to his people; "We ſhall maintain them, nouriſh them, and defend "them, the whole congregation of Chriſt, and every "member thereof, by our whole power, and at the "hazard of our lives, againſt Satan, and all wicked "power, who may intend tyranny and trouble againſt

"the

" the ſaid congregation: Unto which holy word and " congregation we do join ourſelves; and we forſake " and renounce the congregation of Satan, with all " the ſuperſtitious abomination and idolatry thereof; " and moreover ſhall declare ourſelves manifeſtly ene- " mies thereto, by this faithful promiſe before God, " teſtified to this congregation by our ſubſcriptions. " At Edinburgh, the third of December, 1557 [h]."

HAD the ſubſcribers of this zealous league been contented only to demand a toleration of the new opinions; however incompatible their pretenſions might have been with the policy of the church of Rome, they would have had the praiſe of oppoſing tyrannical laws, enacted to ſupport an eſtabliſhment prejudicial to civil ſociety: But it is plain, that they carried their views much farther; and their practiſe immediately diſcovered the ſpirit by which they were actuated. Supported by the authority which, they thought, belonged to them as the congregation of the Lord, they ordained that prayers in the vulgar tongue [i] ſhould be uſed in all the pariſh churches of the kingdom; and that preaching, and the interpretation of the ſcriptures ſhould be practiſed in private houſes, till God ſhould move the prince to grant public preaching by faithful and true miniſters [k]. Such bonds of aſſociation are always the forerunners of rebellion; and this violent invaſion of the eſtabliſhed religion was the actual commencement of it.

BEFORE this league was publickly known or avowed, the clergy, alarmed with the progreſs of the reformation, attempted to recover their loſt authority, by a violent exerciſe of power, which tended ſtill farther to augment the zeal and number of their enemies. Hamilton, the primate, ſeized Walter Mill, a prieſt of an

[h] Keith, p. 66. Knox, p. 101.

[i] The reformers uſed at that time King Edward's liturgy in Scotland. Forbes, p. 155.

[k] Keith, p. 66. Knox, p. 101.

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

irreproachable life, who had embraced the new doctrines; and having tried him at St. Andrews, condemned him to the flames for hereſy. Such general averſion was diſcovered to this barbarity, that it was ſome time before the biſhops could prevail on any one to act the part of a civil judge, and pronounce the ſentence upon him; and even after the time of his execution was fixed, all the ſhops of St. Andrews being ſhut, no one would ſell a rope to tie him to the ſtake, and the primate himſelf was obliged to furniſh this implement. The man bore the torture with that courage which, tho' uſual on theſe occaſions, always appears aſtoniſhing and ſupernatural to the multitude: The people, to expreſs their abhorrence againſt the cruelty of the prieſts, raiſed a monument of ſtones on the place of his execution; and as faſt as the ſtones were removed by order of the clergy, they were again ſupplied from the voluntary zeal of the populace [1]. It is in vain for men to oppoſe the ſevereſt puniſhments to the united motives of religion and public applauſe; and this was the laſt barbarity of the kind which the catholics had the power to exerciſe in Scotland.

SOME time after, the people diſcovered their ſentiments in ſuch a manner as was ſufficient to prognoſticate to the prieſts, the fate which was awaiting them. It was uſual on the feſtival of St. Giles, the tutelar ſaint of Edinburgh, to carry in proceſſion the image of that ſaint; but the proteſtants, in order to prevent the ceremony, found means, on the eve of the feſtival, to purloin the ſtatue from the church, and they pleaſed themſelves with imagining the aſtoniſhment and diſappointment of his votaries. The clergy, however, framed haſtily a new image, which, in deriſion, was called by the people young St. Giles; and they carried it thro' the ſtreets, attended with all the eccleſiaſtics in the

[1] Knox, p. 122.

town

town and neighbourhood. The multitude abſtained from violence ſo long as the Queen-regent continued a ſpectator, but the moment ſhe retired, they invaded the idol, threw it in the dirt, and broke it in pieces. The flight and terror of the prieſts and fryars, who, it was remarked, deſerted, in his greateſt diſtreſs, the object of their worſhip, was the ſource of univerſal mockery and laughter,

ENCOURAGED by all theſe appearances, the congregation proceeded with alacrity in openly ſolliciting ſubſcriptions to their league; and the death of Mary of England, with the acceſſion of Elizabeth, which happened about this time, contributed much to increaſe their hopes of final ſucceſs in their undertaking. They ventured to preſent a petition to the regent, craving a reformation of the church, and of the *wicked*, *ſcandalous*, and *deteſtable* lives of the prelates and eccleſiaſticks [m]. They framed a Petition, which they intended to preſent to Parliament, and in which, after premiſing, that they could not communicate with the damnable idolatry, and intolerable abuſes of the papiſtical church, they deſired, that the laws againſt heretics ſhould be executed by the civil magiſtrate alone, and that the ſcripture ſhould be the ſole rule for judging of hereſy [n]. They even petitioned the convocation, and inſiſted that prayers ſhould be ſaid in the vulgar tongue, and that biſhops ſhould be choſen with the conſent of the gentry of the dioceſe, and prieſts with the conſent of the pariſhioners [o]. The regent prudently temporized between theſe parties; and as ſhe aimed at procuring a matrimonial crown for her ſon-in-law, the dauphin, ſhe was, on that as well as other accounts, unwilling to come to extremities with either of them.

BUT after this conceſſion was obtained, ſhe received orders from France, probably dictated by the haughty

[m] Knox, p. 121.
[n] Ibid, p. 123.
[o] Keith, p. 78, 81, 82.

ſpirit

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

ſpirit of her brothers, to proceed with violence againſt the reformers, and to reſtore the royal authority, by ſome ſignal act of power [p]. She made the moſt eminent of the proteſtant teachers be cited to appear before the council at Stirling; but when their followers were marching thither in great multitudes, in order to protect and countenance them, ſhe entertained apprehenſions of an inſurrection, and diſſipated the people by a promiſe [q], that nothing ſhould be done to the prejudice of the miniſters. This promiſe was violated; and a ſentence paſſed, by which all the miniſters were pronounced rebels, on account of their not appearing. A meaſure, ſo raſh and ill adviſed, enraged the people, and made them reſolve to reſiſt her authority by force of arms, and to proceed to extremity againſt the clergy of the eſtabliſhed religion.

In this critical time John Knox arrived from Geneva, where he had paſſed ſome years in baniſhment, and where he had imbibed, from his commerce with Calvin, the higheſt fanaticiſm of his ſect, augmented by the natural ferocity of his own character. He had been invited back to Scotland by the leaders of the reformation; and mounting the pulpit at Perth, during the preſent ferment of mens minds, he declaimed with his uſual vehemence againſt the idolatry and other abominations of the church of Rome, and incited his audience to exert their utmoſt zeal for its ſubverſion. A prieſt was ſo imprudent, after this ſermon, as to open his repoſitory of

11th May.

[p] Melvil's Memoirs, p. 24. Jebb, vol. II. p. 446.

[q] Knox, p. 127. We ſhall ſuggeſt afterwards ſome reaſons to ſuſpect, that, perhaps, no expreſs promiſe was given. Calumnies eaſily ariſe during times of faction, eſpecially thoſe of the religious kind, when men think every art lawful for promoting their purpoſe. The congregation in their manifeſto, where they enumerate all the articles of the regent's mal-adminiſtration, do not reproach her with this breach of promiſe. It was probably nothing but a rumour ſpread abroad to catch the populace. If the papiſts have ſometimes maintained, that no faith was to be kept with heretics, their adverſaries ſeem alſo to have thought, that no truth ought to be told of idolaters.

images and reliques, and prepare himſelf to ſay maſs. The audience, who were wrought up to a diſpoſition for any furious enterpriſe, were as much enraged as if the ſpectacle had not been quite familiar to them: They attacked the prieſt with fury, broke the images in pieces, tore the pictures, overthrew the altars, ſcattered about the ſacred vaſes; and left no implement of idolatrous worſhip, as they called it, entire or unbroken. They thence proceeded with additional numbers, and augmented rage, to the monaſteries of the Grey and Black friars, which they pillaged in an inſtant: The Carthuſians underwent the ſame fate; and the populace, not content with robbing and expelling the monks, vented their fury on the buildings, which had been the receptacles of ſuch abomination; and in a very little time nothing but the walls of theſe ſtately edifices were left ſtanding. The inhabitants of Couper in Fife ſoon after imitated the example [r].

Civil wars in Scotland.

THE Queen-regent, provoked at theſe violences, aſſembled an army, and prepared to chaſtiſe the rebels. She had about two thouſand French under her command, with a few Scots troops; and being aſſiſted with ſuch of the nobility as were well affected to her, ſhe pitched her camp within ten miles of Perth. Even the earl of Argyle, and the lord James Stuart, prior of St. Andrew's, the Queen's natural brother, tho' deeply engaged with the reformers, attended the regent in this enterpriſe, either becauſe they blamed the fury of the populace, or hoped by their influence and authority to mediate ſome agreement between the parties. The congregation, on the other hand, made preparations for defence; and being joined by the earl of Glencarne from the weſt, and being countenanced by many of the nobility and gentry, they appeared formidable from their numbers, as well as from the zeal by which they were animated. They

[r] Spotſwood, p. 121. Knox, p. 127.

ſent

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559. ſpirit of her brothers, to proceed with violence againſt the reformers, and to reſtore the royal authority, by ſome ſignal act of power [p]. She made the moſt eminent of the proteſtant teachers be cited to appear before the council at Stirling; but when their followers were marching thither in great multitudes, in order to protect and countenance them, ſhe entertained apprehenſions of an inſurrection, and diſſipated the people by a promiſe [q], that nothing ſhould be done to the prejudice of the miniſters. This promiſe was violated; and a ſentence paſſed, by which all the miniſters were pronounced rebels, on account of their not appearing. A meaſure, ſo raſh and ill adviſed, enraged the people, and made them reſolve to reſiſt her authority by force of arms, and to proceed to extremity againſt the clergy of the eſtabliſhed religion.

IN this critical time John Knox arrived from Geneva, where he had paſſed ſome years in baniſhment, and where he had imbibed, from his commerce with Calvin, the higheſt fanaticiſm of his ſect, augmented by the natural ferocity of his own character. He had been invited back to Scotland by the leaders of the reformation; 11th May. and mounting the pulpit at Perth, during the preſent ferment of mens minds, he declaimed with his uſual vehemence againſt the idolatry and other abominations of the church of Rome, and incited his audience to exert their utmoſt zeal for its ſubverſion. A prieſt was ſo imprudent, after this ſermon, as to open his repoſitory of

[p] Melvil's Memoirs, p. 24. Jebb, vol. II. p. 446.

[q] Knox, p. 127. We ſhall ſuggeſt afterwards ſome reaſons to ſuſpect, that, perhaps, no expreſs promiſe was given. Calumnies eaſily ariſe during times of faction, eſpecially thoſe of the religious kind, when men think every art lawful for promoting their purpoſe. The congregation in their manifeſto, where they enumerate all the articles of the regent's mal-adminiſtration, do not reproach her with this breach of promiſe. It was probably nothing but a rumour ſpread abroad to catch the populace. If the papiſts have ſometimes maintained, that no faith was to be kept with heretics, their adverſaries ſeem alſo to have thought, that no truth ought to be told of idolaters.

images and reliques, and prepare himſelf to ſay maſs. The audience, who were wrought up to a diſpoſition for any furious enterpriſe, were as much enraged as if the ſpectacle had not been quite familiar to them: They attacked the prieſt with fury, broke the images in pieces, tore the pictures, overthrew the altars, ſcattered about the ſacred vaſes; and left no implement of idolatrous worſhip, as they called it, entire or unbroken. They thence proceeded with additional numbers, and augmented rage, to the monaſteries of the Grey and Black friars, which they pillaged in an inſtant: The Carthuſians underwent the ſame fate; and the populace, not content with robbing and expelling the monks, vented their fury on the buildings, which had been the receptacles of ſuch abomination; and in a very little time nothing but the walls of theſe ſtately edifices were left ſtanding. The inhabitants of Couper in Fife ſoon after imitated the example [r].

Civil wars in Scotland.

THE Queen-regent, provoked at theſe violences, aſſembled an army, and prepared to chaſtiſe the rebels. She had about two thouſand French under her command, with a few Scots troops; and being aſſiſted with ſuch of the nobility as were well affected to her, ſhe pitched her camp within ten miles of Perth. Even the earl of Argyle, and the lord James Stuart, prior of St. Andrew's, the Queen's natural brother, tho' deeply engaged with the reformers, attended the regent in this enterpriſe, either becauſe they blamed the fury of the populace, or hoped by their influence and authority to mediate ſome agreement between the parties. The congregation, on the other hand, made preparations for defence; and being joined by the earl of Glencarne from the weſt, and being countenanced by many of the nobility and gentry, they appeared formidable from their numbers, as well as from the zeal by which they were animated. They

[r] Spotſwood, p. 121. Knox, p. 127.

ſent

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

sent an addreſs to the regent, where they plainly insinuated, that if they were purſued to extremity, by the cruel beaſts, the churchmen, they would have recourſe to foreign powers for aſſiſtance; and they ſubſcribed themſelves her faithful ſubjects in all things not repugnant to God; aſſuming, at the ſame time, the name of the faithful congregation of Chriſt Jeſus [s]. They applied to the nobility attending her, and maintained, that their paſt violences were juſtified by the word of God, which commands the godly to deſtroy idolatry, and all the monuments of it; that tho' all civil authority was ſacred, yet was there a great difference between the authority and the perſons who exerciſed it [t]; and that it ought to be conſidered whether or not thoſe abominations, called by the peſtilent papiſts, religion, and which they defend by fire and ſword, be the true religion of Chriſt Jeſus. They remonſtrated with ſuch of the Queen's army as had formerly embraced their party, and told them, "That as they were already reputed traitors by God, they ſhould likewiſe be excommunicated from their ſociety, and from the participation of the ſacraments of the church, which God by his mighty power had erected among them; whoſe miniſters have the ſame authority which Chriſt granted to his apoſtles in theſe words, *Whoſe ſins ye ſhall forgive ſhall be forgiven, and whoſe ſins ye ſhall retain ſhall be retained* [u]." We may here ſee that theſe new ſaints were no leſs lofty in their pretenſions than the ancient hierarchy; and it was therefore no wonder they were enraged againſt the latter as their rivals in dominion. They joined to all theſe declarations an addreſs to the eſtabliſhed church; and they affixed this title to it. "To the generation of antichriſt, the peſtilent prelates and their *ſhavelings* [x] in Scotland, the congregation of

[s] Knox, p. 129. [t] Ibid. p. 131. [u] Ibid. p. 133.

[x] A contemptuous term for a prieſt.

"Chriſt

"Chriſt Jeſus within the ſame ſayeth." The tenor of the manifeſto was agreeable to the title. They told the eccleſiaſtics, "As ye by tyranny intend not only to de- "ſtroy our bodies, but alſo by the ſame to hold our "ſouls in bondage of the devil, ſubject to idolatry; ſo "ſhall we, with all the force and power which God "ſhall grant unto us, execute juſt vengeance and pu- "niſhment upon you: Yea, we ſhall begin that ſame "war which God commanded Iſrael to execute "againſt the Canaanites; that is; contract of peace "ſhall never be made, till you deſiſt from your open "idolatry, and cruel perſecution of God's children. "And in this, in the name of the eternal God, and of "his ſon, Chriſt Jeſus, whoſe verity we profeſs, and "Goſpel we have preached, and holy ſacraments right- "ly adminiſtred, we ſignify unto you, to be our in- "tent, ſo far as God will aſſiſt us to withſtand your "idolatry. Take this for warning, and be not decei- "ved [y]." With theſe outrageous ſymptoms commenced that cant, hipocriſy, and fanaticiſm which long infeſted that kingdom; and which, tho' now mollified by the lenity of the civil power, is ſtill ready to break out on all occaſions. CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

THE Queen-regent, finding ſuch obſtinate zeal in the malecontents, was contented to embrace the councils of Argyle and the prior of St. Andrew's, and to form an accommodation with them. She was received into Perth, which ſubmitted to her on promiſing an indemnity of paſt offences, and engaging not to leave any French garriſon in the place. This capitulation, it is pretended, was not exactly obſerved. Some of the inhabitants were moleſted on account of the late violences; and ſome companies of Scots ſoldiers, ſuppoſed to be in French pay, were quartered in the town;

[y] Keith, p. 85, 86, 87. Knox, p. 134.

which

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

which step, tho' taken on a very plausible pretence, was regarded by the congregation as an infraction of the treaty [z]. It is asserted, that the regent, to justify these measures declared, that princes ought not to have their promises too strictly urged upon them; nor was any faith to be kept with heretics: And that for her part, could she find as good a colour of reason, she would willingly bereave all these men of their lives and fortunes [a]. But it is no wise likely, that such expressions dropt from this prudent and virtuous princess. On the contrary, it appears, that these violences were very disagreeable to her; that she was in this particular over-ruled by the authority of the French counsellors placed about her; and that she often thought, if the management of these affairs had been entrusted wholly to herself, she could easily, without force, have accommodated all differences [b].

THE congregation enflamed with their own zeal, and enraged with these disappointments, remained not

z Knox, p. 139. a Ibid. Spotswood, p. 123.

b Spotswood, p. 146. Melvil, p. 29. Knox, p. 225, 228. Lesly, lib. 9. That there was really no violation of the capitulation of Perth, appears from the manifesto of the congregation in Knox, p. 184. where it is not so much as pretended. The companies of Scots soldiers were, probably, in Scots pay, since the congregation complains, that the country was oppressed with taxes to maintain armies. Knox, p. 164, 165. And even if they had been in French pay, it were no breach of the capitulation, since they were national troops, not French. Knox does not say, p. 139, that any of the inhabitants of Perth were tried or punished for their past offences; but only that they were oppressed with the quartering of soldiers: And the congregation in their manifesto, say only that many of them had fled for fear. This plain detection of the calumny with regard to the breach of the capitulation of Perth, may make us suspect a like calumny with regard to the promise pretended not to give sentence against the ministers. The affair lay altogether between the regent and the laird of Dun; and that gentleman, tho' a man of sense and character, might be willing to take some general professions for promises. If the Queen, overawed by the power of the congregation, gave such a promise in order to have liberty to proceed to a sentence; how could she expect to have power to execute a sentence so treacherously obtained? And to what purpose could it serve?

long

long in tranquillity. Even before they left Perth, and while as yet they had no colour to complain of any violation of treaty, they had signed a new covenant, in which, besides their engagements to mutual defence, they vowed in the name of God to employ their whole power in destroying every thing that dishonoured his holy name; and this covenant was subscribed, among others, by Argyle and the prior of St. Andrew's [c]. These two leaders now desired no better Pretence for deserting the regent and openly joining their associates, than the complaints, however doubtful, or rather false, of her breach of promise. The congregation also, encouraged by this accession of force, gave themselves up entirely to the furious zeal of Knox, and renewed at Crail, Anstruther, and other places in Fife, like depredations, on the churches, and monasteries with those formerly committed at Perth and Couper. The regent, who marched against them with her army, finding their power so much increased, was glad to conclude a truce for a few days, and to pass over with her forces to the Lothians. The reformers besieged and took Perth; proceeded thence to Stirling, where they exercised their usual fury; and finding nothing able to resist them, they bent their march to Edinburgh, the inhabitants of which, as they had already anticipated the zeal of the congregation against the churches and monasteries, gladly opened their gates to them. The regent, with the few forces which remained with her, took shelter in Dunbar, where she shut herself up, in expectation of a reinforcement from France.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

Meanwhile, she employed her partizans in representing to the people the dangerous consequences of this open rebellion; and she endeavoured to convince them, that the lord James, under pretence of religion, had

[c] Keith, p. 89. Knox, p. 138.

formed

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

formed the ſcheme of wreſting the ſcepter from the hands of the ſovereign. By theſe conſiderations many were engaged to deſert the army of the congregation; but much more by the want of pay or any means of ſubſiſtance; and the regent, obſerving the inſurgents to be much weakened, ventured to march to Edinburgh, with a deſign to ſuppreſs them. On the interpoſition of the duke of Chatelraut, who ſtill adhered to her, ſhe agreed to a capitulation, in which ſhe granted them a toleration of their religion, and they engaged to commit no farther depredations on the churches. Soon after they evacuated the city of Edinburgh; and before they left it, they proclaimed the articles of agreement; but they took care to publiſh only the articles favourable to themſelves, and they were guilty of an impoſture, in adding one to the number, viz. that idolatry ſhall not again be erected in any place where it was at that time ſuppreſſed [d].

An agreement concluded, while men's minds were in this diſpoſition, could nor be durable; and both ſides endeavoured to ſtrenghten themſelves as much as poſſible, againſt the enſuing rupture, which appeared inevitable. The regent, having got a reinforcement of 1000 men from France, began to fortify Leith; and the congregation ſeduced the duke of Chatelraut to their party, who had long appeared inclined to them, and who was at laſt determined by the arirval of his ſon, the earl of Arran, from France, where he had eſcaped many dangers, from the jealouſy, as well as bigotry, of Henry and the duke of Guiſe. More French troops ſoon after diſembarked under the command of La Broſſe, who was ſol-

[d] Knox, p. 153, 154, 155. This author pretends that this article was agreed to verbally, but that the Queen's ſcribes omitted it in the treaty which was ſigned. This ſtory is very unlikely, or rather very abſurd; and in the mean time it is allowed, that the article is not in the treaty: Nor do the congregation in their ſubſequent manifeſto inſiſt upon it. Knox, p. 184.

followed by the bishop of Amiens, and three doctors of the Sorbonne. These last were supplied with store of syllogisms, authorities, citations, and scholastic arguments, which they intended to oppose to the Scots preachers, and which, they justly presumed, would acquire force, and operate conviction on mens minds, by the influence of the French arms and artillery [e].

CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

The constable Montmorency had always opposed the marriage of the Queen of Scots with the dauphin, and had foretold, that, by forming such close connexions with Scotland, the antient league would be dissolved; and the natives of that kingdom, jealous of a foreign yoke, would soon become, instead of allies, attached by interest and inclination, the most inveterate enemies to the French dominion. But tho' the event seemed now to have justified the prudence of that aged minister, it is not improbable, considering the violence of the councils, by which France was governed, that the insurrection was esteemed a favourable event; as affording a pretence for sending over armies, for entirely subduing the country, for attainting the rebels [f], and for preparing means thence to invade England, and support Mary's title to the crown of that kingdom. The leaders of the congregation, well acquainted with these views, were not insensible of their danger, and saw that their only safety consisted in the vigour and success of their measures. They were encouraged by the intelligence received of the sudden death of Henry the second; and having passed an act from their own authority, depriving the Queen dowager of the regency, and ordering all the French troops to evacuate the kingdom, they collected forces to put their edict in execution against them. They became masters again of Edinburgh; but found themselves unable to keep long pos-

[e] Spotswood, p. 134. Thuan. lib. xxiv. c. 10.

[f] Forbes, vol. I. p. 139. Thuan. lib. xxiv. c. 13.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1559.

poſſeſſion of that city. Their tumultuary armies, aſſembled in haſte, and ſupported by no pay, ſoon ſeparated themſelves upon the leaſt diſaſter, or even any delay of ſucceſs; and were incapable of reſiſting ſuch veteran troops as the French, who were alſo ſeconded by ſome of the Scots nobility, among whom the earl of Bothwel diſtinguiſhed himſelf. Hearing that the marquis of Elbeuf, brother to the regent, was levying a new army againſt them in Germany, they thought themſelves excuſable for applying, in this extremity, to the aſſiſtance of England; and as the ſympathy of religion, as well as regard to national liberty, had now counterballanced the antient animoſity againſt that kingdom, this meaſure was the reſult of inclination no leſs than of intereſt[z]. Maitland of Ledington, therefore, and Robert Melvil, were ſecretly diſpatched by the Congregation to ſollicit ſuccours from Elizabeth.

Interpoſition of the Queen in Scots affairs.

THE wiſe council of Elizabeth deliberated not long in aſſenting to this propoſal, which concurred ſo well with their views and intereſts. Cecil in particular repreſented to the Queen, that the union of the crowns of Scotland and France, both of them the hereditary enemies of England, was ever regarded as a very pernicious event; and her father, as well as protector Somerſet, had employed every expedient, both of war and negotiation, to prevent it: That the claim, which Mary pretended to the crown, rendered the preſent ſituation of England ſtill more dangerous, and demanded,

z The Scots lords in their declaration ſay, "How far we have ſought ſupport of England, or of any other prince, and what juſt cauſe we had and have ſo to do, we ſhall ſhortly make manifeſt unto the world, to the praiſe of God's holy name, and to the confuſion of all thoſe that ſlander us for ſo doing: For this we fear not to confeſs, that, as in this enterpriſe againſt the devil, againſt idolatry and the maintainers of the ſame, we chiefly and only ſeek God's glory to be notified unto men, ſin to be puniſhed, and virtue to be maintained; ſo where power faileth of ourſelves, we will ſeek it, whereſoever God ſhall offer the ſame." Knox, p. 176.

on the part of the Queen, the greateſt vigilance and precaution: That the capacity, ambition, and exorbitant views of the family of Guiſe, who now entirely governed the French councils, were ſufficiently known, and they themſelves made no ſecret of their deſign to advance their niece to the throne of England: That deeming themſelves ſecure of ſucceſs, they had already, very imprudently and prematurely, taken off the maſk: and Throcmorton, the Engliſh ambaſſador at Paris, ſent over, by every courier, inconteſtible proofs of their hoſtile intentions[h]: That they only waited till Scotland ſhould be entirely ſubdued; and having thus deprived the Engliſh of the advantage, reſulting from their ſituation and naval power, they prepared means for ſubverting the Queen's authority: That the zealous catholics in England, diſcontented with the preſent government, and ſatisfied with the legality of Mary's title, would bring them conſiderable reinforcement, and would diſturb every meaſure of defence againſt that formidable power: That the only expedient for preventing theſe deſigns was to ſeize the preſent opportunity, and take advantage of a like zeal in the proteſtants of Scotland; nor could any doubt be entertained with regard to the juſtice of a meaſure, founded on ſuch evident neceſſity, and directed only to the ends of ſelf preſervation: That tho' a French war, attended with great expence, ſeemed the neceſſary conſequence of ſupporting the Scots malecontents, that power, if removed to the continent, could never be very formidable; and a ſmall diſburſement at preſent would in the end be found the greateſt frugality: And that the domeſtic diſſentions of France, which every day augmented, together with the ſupport of Philip, who, notwithſtanding all his bigotry and hypocricy, would never permit the entire conqueſt of England,

CHAP. XXXIX.

1559.

h Forbes, vol. I. p. 134, 136, 149, 150, 159, 165, 181, 194, 229, 231, 235—241, 253.

CHAP. XXXIX.

1560.

were sufficient to secure the Queen against the dangerous ambition and resentment of the house of Guise [i].

Elizabeth's propensity to caution and œconomy were, tho' with some difficulty [k], overcome by these powerful motives; and she prepared herself to support by arms and money the declining affairs of the Congregation in Scotland. She equiped a fleet, which consisted of thirteen ships of war; and giving the command of it to Winter, she sent it to the Firth of Forth: She named the young duke of Norfolk her lieutenant in the northern counties, and assembled at Berwic an army of eight thousand men under the command of lord Gray, warden of the east and middle marches. Tho' the court of France, sensible of the danger, offered her to make immediate restitution of Calais, provided she would not interpose in the affairs of Scotland; she resolutely told them, that she never would put an inconsiderable fishertown in competition with the safety of her dominions [l]; and she still continued her preparations. She concluded a treaty of mutual defence with the congregation, which was to last during the marriage of the Queen of Scots with Francis and a year after, and she promised never to desist till the French had entirely evacuated Scotland [m]. And having thus taken all proper measures for success, and received from the Scots six hostages for the performance of articles, she ordered her fleet and army to begin their operations.

1560. 15th January.

The appearance of Elizabeth's fleet in the Firth very much disconcerted the French army, who were at that time ravaging the county of Fife; and obliged them to make a circuit by Stirling, in order to reach Leith, where they shut themselves up, and prepared for

[i] Forbes, vol. I. p. 387. Jebb, vol. I. p. 448. Keith, append. 24.
[k] Forbes, vol. I. p. 454. 460. [l] Spotswood, p. 146.
[m] Knox, p. 217. Haynes's State Papers, vol. I. p. 153. Rymer. tom. xv. p. 569.

defence.

defence. The Engliſh army, reinforced by 5000 Scots [n], ſat down before Leith; and after two ſkirmiſhes, in the former of which, the Engliſh had the advantage, in the latter the French, they began to batter the town; and tho' repulſed with conſiderable loſs in a raſh and ill conducted aſſault, they reduced the garriſon to great difficulties. Their diſtreſs was augmented by two events; the diſperſion by a ſtorm of d'Elbeuf's fleet, which carried a conſiderable army on board [o], and the death of the Queen regent, who expired about this time in the caſtle of Edinburgh; a woman endowed with all the capacity which ſhone forth in her family, but poſſeſſed of much more virtue and moderation than appeared in the conduct of the other branches of it. The French, who found it impoſſible to ſubſiſt for want of proviſions, and who ſaw that the Engliſh were continually reinforced by freſh numbers, were obliged to capitulate. And the biſhop of Valence and count Randan, plenipotentiaries from France, ſigned a treaty at Edinburgh with Cecil and Dr. Wotton, whom Elizabeth had ſent to Edinburgh for that purpoſe. It was there ſtipulated, that the French ſhould, all of them, inſtantly evacuate Scotland; that the King and Queen of France and Scotland ſhould thenceforth abſtain from bearing the arms of England, or aſſuming the title of that kingdom; that farther ſatisfaction for the injury already done in that particular ſhould be granted Elizabeth; and that commiſſioners ſhould meet to ſettle this point, or if they could not agree, that the King of Spain ſhould be arbiter between the crowns. Beſides theſe ſtipulations, which regarded England, ſome conceſſions were granted to the Scots, which the plenipotentiaries, in the name of the King and Queen of France and Scotland, promiſed in the treaty with

5th July.

Settlement of Scotland.

[n] Haynes, vol. I. 256, 259. [o] Ibid. p. 233.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1560.

Elizabeth to obſerve; that an amneſty ſhould be publiſhed for all paſt offences; that none but natives ſhould be put into any office in Scotland; that the ſtates ſhould name twenty-four perſons, of whom the Queen of Scots ſhould chuſe ſeven, and the ſtates five, and in the hands of theſe twelve ſhould the whole adminiſtration be placed during that Queen's abſence; and that Mary ſhould neither make peace nor war without conſent of the ſtates [p]. In order to haſten the execution of this important treaty Elizabeth ſent ſhips, by which the French forces were tranſported into their own country.

THUS all Europe ſaw, in the firſt tranſaction of this reign, the genius and capacity of the Queen and her miniſters. She diſcerned at a diſtance the danger, which threatened her; and took inſtantly vigorous meaſures to prevent it. Making all the poſſible advantages of her ſituation ſhe proceeded with celerity to a deciſion; and was not diverted by any offers, negotiations, or remonſtrances of the French court. She ſtopped not till ſhe had brought the matter to a final iſſue; and had converted that very power, to which her enemies truſted for her deſtruction, into her firmeſt ſupport and ſecurity. By exacting no improper conditions from the Scots malecontents even during their greateſt diſtreſs, ſhe eſtabliſhed an entire confidence with them; and having cemented the union by all the tyes of gratitude, intereſt and religion, ſhe now poſſeſſed an influence over them above what remained even with their native ſovereign. The regard which ſhe acquired by this dextrous and ſpirited conduct, gave her every where, abroad as well as at home, more authority than had attended her ſiſter, tho' ſupported by all the power of the Spaniſh monarchy [q].

[p] Rymer, vol. XV. p. 593. Keith, p. 137. Spotſwood, p. 147. Knox, p. 229. [q] Forbes, vol. I. p. 354, 372. Jebb, vol. II. p. 452.

THE

CHAP. XXXIX.

1558.

THE ſubſequent meaſures of the Scots reformers tended ſtill more to cement their union with England. Being entirely maſters of the kingdom, they made no farther ceremony or ſcruple, in fully effecting their purpoſe. In the treaty of Edinburgh it had been agreed, that a Parliament or convention ſhould ſoon be aſſembled; and the leaders of the Congregation, not waiting till the Queen of Scots ſhould ratify that treaty, thought themſelves fully intitled, without the ſovereign's authority, immediately to ſummon a Parliament. The reformers preſented a petition to this aſſembly; in which they are not contented with deſiring the eſtabliſhment of their doctrine; they alſo apply for the puniſhment of the catholics, whom they call vaſſals to the Roman harlot; and they aſſert, that, amongſt all the rabble of the clergy, ſuch is their expreſſion, there is not one lawful miniſter; but that they are, all of them, thieves and murderers; yea rebels and traitors to civil authority; and therefore unworthy to be ſuffered in any reformed common-wealth[f]. The Parliament ſeem to have been actuated by the ſame ſpirit of rage and perſecution. After ratifying a confeſſion of faith, agreeable to the new doctrines, they paſſed a ſtatute againſt the maſs, and not only aboliſhed it in all the churches, but enacted, that whoever any where, either officiated in it or was preſent at it, ſhould be chaſtiſed, for the firſt offence, with confiſcation of goods, and corporal puniſhment, at the diſcretion of the magiſtrate; for the ſecond, with baniſhment; and for the third, with loſs of life[g]. A law was alſo voted for aboliſhing the papal juriſdiction in Scotland: The preſbyterian form of diſcipline was ſettled, leaving only at firſt ſome ſhadow of authority to certain eccleſiaſtics, whom they called ſuperintendants. The prelates of the antient faith appeared in order to complain of great injuſtice committed

[f] Knox, p. 237, 238. [g] Ibid. p. 254.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1560.

Elizabeth to obſerve; that an amneſty ſhould be publiſhed for all paſt offences; that none but natives ſhould be put into any office in Scotland; that the ſtates ſhould name twenty-four perſons, of whom the Queen of Scots ſhould chuſe ſeven, and the ſtates five, and in the hands of theſe twelve ſhould the whole adminiſtration be placed during that Queen's abſence; and that Mary ſhould neither make peace nor war without conſent of the ſtates [p]. In order to haſten the execution of this important treaty Elizabeth ſent ſhips, by which the French forces were tranſported into their own country.

THUS all Europe ſaw, in the firſt tranſaction of this reign, the genius and capacity of the Queen and her miniſters. She diſcerned at a diſtance the danger, which threatened her; and took inſtantly vigorous meaſures to prevent it. Making all the poſſible advantages of her ſituation ſhe proceeded with celerity to a deciſion; and was not diverted by any offers, negotiations, or remonſtrances of the French court. She ſtopped not till ſhe had brought the matter to a final iſſue; and had converted that very power, to which her enemies truſted for her deſtruction, into her firmeſt ſupport and ſecurity. By exacting no improper conditions from the Scots malecontents even during their greateſt diſtreſs, ſhe eſtabliſhed an entire confidence with them; and having cemented the union by all the tyes of gratitude, intereſt and religion, ſhe now poſſeſſed an influence over them above what remained even with their native ſovereign. The regard which ſhe acquired by this dextrous and ſpirited conduct, gave her every where, abroad as well as at home, more authority than had attended her ſiſter, tho' ſupported by all the power of the Spaniſh monarchy [q].

[p] Ry..er, vol. XV. p. 593. Keith, p. 137. Spotſwood, p. 147. Knox, p. 229. [q] Forbes, vol. I. p. 354, 372. Jebb, vol. II. p. 452.

THE

CHAP. XXXIX.

1558.

THE ſubſequent meaſures of the Scots reformers tended ſtill more to cement their union with England. Being entirely maſters of the kingdom, they made no farther ceremony or ſcruple, in fully effecting their purpoſe. In the treaty of Edinburgh it had been agreed, that a Parliament or convention ſhould ſoon be aſſembled; and the leaders of the Congregation, not waiting till the Queen of Scots ſhould ratify that treaty, thought themſelves fully intitled, without the ſovereign's authority, immediately to ſummon a Parliament. The reformers preſented a petition to this aſſembly; in which they are not contented with deſiring the eſtabliſhment of their doctrine; they alſo apply for the puniſhment of the catholics, whom they call vaſſals to the Roman harlot; and they aſſert, that, amongſt all the rabble of the clergy, ſuch is their expreſſion, there is not one lawful miniſter; but that they are, all of them, thieves and murderers; yea rebels and traitors to civil authority; and therefore unworthy to be ſuffered in any reformed common-wealth [f]. The Parliament ſeem to have been actuated by the ſame ſpirit of rage and perſecution. After ratifying a confeſſion of faith, agreeable to the new doctrines, they paſſed a ſtatute againſt the maſs, and not only aboliſhed it in all the churches, but enacted, that whoever any where, either officiated in it or was preſent at it, ſhould be chaſtiſed, for the firſt offence, with confiſcation of goods, and corporal puniſhment, at the diſcretion of the magiſtrate; for the ſecond, with baniſhment; and for the third, with loſs of life [g]. A law was alſo voted for aboliſhing the papal juriſdiction in Scotland: The preſbyterian form of diſcipline was ſettled, leaving only at firſt ſome ſhadow of authority to certain eccleſiaſtics, whom they called ſuperintendants. The prelates of the antient faith appeared in order to complain of great injuſtice committed

[f] Knox, p. 237, 238. [g] Ibid. p. 254.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1560.

on them by the invasion of their property, but the Parliament took no notice of them; till at last, these ecclesiastics, tired with fruitless attendance, departed the town. They were then cited to appear; and as no body presented themselves, it was voted by the Parliament, that the ecclesiastics were entirely satisfied, and found no reason of complaint.

Sir James Sandilands, prior of St. John, was sent over to France to obtain the ratification of these acts; but was very ill received by the Queen, who absolutely denied the validity of a Parliament, summoned without the royal consent; and she refused her sanction to these statutes. But the protestants gave themselves little concern about their Queen's refusal. They immediately put the statutes in execution: They abolished the mass; they settled their ministers; they committed every where furious devastations on the monasteries, and even on the churches, which they thought to be profaned by idolatry; and deeming the property of the clergy lawful prey, they took possession, without ceremony, of the far greater part of the ecclesiastical revenues. Their new preachers, who had authority sufficient to incite them to war and insurrection, could not restrain their rapacity; and fanaticism concurring with avarice, an incurable blow was given to the papal authority in that country. The protestant nobility and gentry, united by the consciousness of such unpardonable guilt, alarmed for their new possessions, well acquainted with the imperious character of the house of Guise, saw no safety for themselves but in the protection of England; and they dispatched Morton, Glencarne, and Ledington to express their sincere gratitude to the Queen for her past favours, and to represent to her the necessity of continuing them.

French affairs.

Elizabeth had equal reason to maintain an union with the Scots protestants; and soon found, that the house

houſe of Guiſe, notwithſtanding their paſt diſappointments, had not laid aſide the deſign of conteſting her title, and ſubverting her authority. Francis and Mary, whoſe councils were wholly directed by them, refuſed to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh; and ſhowed no diſpoſition to give her any ſatisfaction for that mortal injury and affront which they had put upon her, by ſo openly aſſuming the title and arms of England. She was ſenſible of the danger attending ſuch pretenſions; and it was with pleaſure ſhe heard of the violent factions, which prevailed in the French government, and of the oppoſition, which had ariſen againſt the meaſure sof the duke of Guiſe. That ambitious prince, ſupported by his four brothers, the cardinal of Lorraine, the duke of Aumale, the marquis of Elbeuf, and the grand prior, men no leſs ambitious than himſelf, had engroſſed all the authority of the crown: and as he was poſſeſſed of every quality, which could command the eſteem or ſeduce the affections of men, there appeared no end of his acquiſitions and pretenſions. The conſtable Montmorency, who had long ballanced his credit, was deprived of all power: The princes of the blood, the King of Navarre and his brother the prince of Condé, were entirely excluded from offices and favour: The Queen-mother herſelf, Catherine de Medicis, found her influence every day declining: And as Francis, a young prince, infirm both in mind and body, was wholly governed by his ſpouſe, who knew no law but the pleaſure of her uncles, men deſpaired of ever obtaining freedom from the dominion of that aſpiring family. It was the conteſts of religion, which firſt inſpired the French with courage openly to oppoſe their exorbitant authority.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1560.

THE theological diſputes, firſt ſtarted in the north of Germany, and next in Switzerland, countries at that time

CHAP. XXXIX. 1560.

time wholly illiterate, had long ago penetrated into France; and as they were assisted by the general discontents against the court and church of Rome, and by the zealous spirit of the age, the proselytes to the new religion were secretly encreasing in every province. Henry the second, in imitation of his father Francis, had opposed the progress of the reformers; and tho' a prince addicted to pleasure and society, he was transported by a vehemence, as well as bigotry, which had little place in his predecessor's conduct. Rigorous punishments had been inflicted on the most eminent of the protestant party; and a point of honour seemed to have arisen, whether the one sect could exercise or the other suffer most barbarity. The death of Henry put some stop to the persecutions; and the people, who had admired the constancy of the new preachers, now heard with favour and prepossession their arguments and doctrines. But the cardinal of Lorrain, as well as his brother, who were possessed of the legal authority, thought it their interest to support the established religion; and when they revived the exercise of the penal statutes, they necessarily engaged the malecontent princes and nobles in the protection of the new religion. The King of Navarre, a man of mild dispositions, but of a weak character, and the prince of Condé, who possessed many heroic qualities, having declared themselves in favour of the protestants, that sect acquired new force from their countenance; and the admiral de Coligni, with his brother Andelot, no longer scrupled to declare themselves openly of their communion. The integrity of the admiral, who was believed sincere in his profession, and his high renown both for valour and conduct, for the arts of peace as well as of war, gave credit to the reformers; and after a frustrated attempt of the malecontents to seize the King's person at Amboise, of which

Elizabeth

CHAP. XXXIX.

1560.

Elizabeth had probably ſome intelligence[t], every place was full of diſtraction, and matters haſtened to an extremity between the parties. But the houſe of Guiſe, tho' theſe factions had obliged them to remit their efforts in Scotland, and had been one chief cauſe of Elizabeth's ſucceſs, were determined not to relinquiſh their authority in France, or yield to the violence of their antagoniſts. They found an opportunity to ſeize the King of Navarre and the prince of Condé; they threw the former into priſon; they obtained a ſentence of death againſt the latter; and they were proceeding to put the ſentence in execution, when the king's ſudden death ſaved the noble priſoner, and interrupted the proſperity of the duke of Guiſe. The Queen-mother was appointed regent to her ſon Charles the ninth, now in his minority: The King of Navarre was named lieutenant-general of the kingdom: The ſentence againſt Condé was annulled: The conſtable was recalled to court: And the family of Guiſe, tho' they ſtill enjoyed great offices, and great power, now found a counterpoiſe to their authority.

4 December. 1561.

ELIZABETH was not diſſatisfied to learn, that her avowed enemies had met with ſo ſevere a check, and ſhe determined to make advantage of it againſt the Queen of Scots, whom ſhe ſtill regarded as a dangerous rival. She ſaw herſelf freed from the perils attending an union of Scotland with France; and was pleaſed to find, that ſo powerful a prince as the French monarch was no longer a pretender to her crown and kingdoms. But ſhe conſidered, on the other hand, that the Engliſh catholics, who were very numerous, and who were generally prejudiced in favour of Mary's title, would now

[t] Forbes, vol. I. p. 214. Throcmorton, about this time, unwilling to entruſt to letters the great ſecrets committed to him, obtained leave, under ſome pretext, to come over to London.

adhere

CHAP. XXXIX.

1561.

adhere to that princeſs with more zealous attachment, when they ſaw, that her ſucceſſion no longer endangered the liberties of the kingdom, and was rather attended with the advantages of producing an entire union with Scotland. She gave orders, therefore, to her ambaſſador, Throcmorton, a very vigilant and able miniſter, to renew his applications to the Queen of Scots, and to require her ratification of the treaty of Edinburgh. But tho' Mary had deſiſted, after her huſband's death, from bearing the arms and title of Queen of England, ſhe ſtill declined gratifying Elizabeth in this momentous article; and hearkening too much to the ambitious ſuggeſtions of her uncles, ſhe refuſed to make any formal renunciation of her pretenſions.

MEANWHILE, the Queen-mother of France, who imputed to Mary all the mortifications which ſhe had met with during Francis's life-time, took care to retaliate on her by like injuries; and the Queen of Scots, who found her abode in France diſagreeable, began to think of returning into her native country. Lord James, who had been ſent in deputation from the ſtates to invite her over, ſeconded this intention; and ſhe applied to Elizabeth, by D'Oiſel, for liberty to paſs thro' England [u]. But ſhe received for anſwer, that till ſhe had given ſatisfaction, by ratifying the treaty of Edinburgh, ſhe could expect no favour from a perſon whom ſhe had ſo much injured. This denial excited her reſentment; and ſhe made no ſcruple of expreſſing her ſentiments to Throcmorton, when he reiterated his applications to gratify his miſtreſs in a demand, which he repreſented as ſo reaſonable. Having cleared the room of all her attendants, ſhe ſaid to him, "How weak I "may prove, or how far a woman's frailty may tranſ-"port me, I cannot tell: However, I have no mind to "have ſo many witneſſes of my infirmity as your miſ-

[u] Goodall, vol. I. p. 175.

"treſs

" treſs had at her audience of my ambaſſador D'Oi- CHAP. XXXIX.
" ſel. There is nothing diſturbs me ſo much, as the
" having aſked, with ſo much importunity, a favour 1561.
" which it was of no conſequence for me to obtain. I
" can, with God's leave, return to my own country
" without her leave; as I came to France, in ſpite of
" all the oppoſition of her brother, King Edward:
" Neither do I want friends, both able and willing to
" conduct me home, as they have brought me hither;
" tho' I was deſirous rather to make an experiment of
" her friendſhip than of the aſſiſtance of any other per-
" ſon. I have often heard you ſay, that a good cor-
" reſpondence between her and myſelf would conduce
" much to the ſecurity and happineſs of both our king-
" doms: But were ſhe well convinced of this truth,
" ſhe had hardly denied me ſo ſmall a requeſt. But,
" perhaps, ſhe bears a better inclination to my rebel-
" lious ſubjects than to me, their ſovereign, her equal
" in royal dignity, her near relation, and the undoubt-
" ted heir of her kingdoms. Beſides her friendſhip, I
" aſk nothing at her hands: I neither trouble her, nor
" concern myſelf in the affairs of her State: Not that
" I am ignorant, that there are now in England a great
" many malecontents, who are no friends to the pre-
" ſent eſtabliſhment. She is pleaſed to upbraid me as a
" perſon little experienced in the world: I freely own
" it; but age will cure that defect. However, I am
" old enough to acquit myſelf honeſtly and courteouſly
" to my friends and relations, and to encourage no re-
" ports of her, which would miſbecome a Queen and
" her kinſwoman. I would alſo ſay, by her leave,
" that I am a Queen as well as ſhe, and not altogether
" friendleſs: And, perhaps, I have as great a ſoul too;
" ſo that methinks we ſhould be upon a level in
" our treatment of each other. As ſoon as I have

" conſulted

CHAP. XXXIX.

1561.

"consulted the states of my kingdom, I shall be ready "to give a reasonable answer; and I am the more in- "tent on my journey, in order to make the quicker "dispatch in this affair. But she, it seems, intends to "stop my journey; so that either she will not let me "give her satisfaction, or is resolved not to be satified; "perhaps, on purpose to keep up the disagreement be- "twixt us. She has often reproached me with my be- "ing young; and I must be very young, indeed, and "as ill advised, to treat of matters of such great concern "and importance, without the advice of my Parlia- "ment. I have not been wanting in any friendly "offices to her; but she disbelieves or overlooks them. "I could heartily wish, that I was as near allied to "her in affection as in blood: For that, indeed, would "be a most valuable alliance [x]."

SUCH a spirited reply, notwithstanding the obliging terms interspersed in it, was but ill fitted to conciliate friendship between these rival princesses, or cure those mutual jealousies which had already taken place. Elizabeth equipped a fleet, on pretence of pursuing pyrates, but probably with an intention of intercepting the Queen of Scots in her return homewards. Mary embarked at Calais; and passing the English fleet in a fog, arrived safely at Leith, attended by her three uncles, the duke of Aumale, the grand prior, and the marques of Elbeuf, together with the marques of Damville, and other French courtiers. This change of abode and situation was very little agreeable to that princess. Besides the natural prepossessions in favour of a country in which she had been educated from her earliest infancy, and where she had borne so high a rank, she could not forbear regreting her departure from among that people, so celebrated for their humane and sociable dis-

19th August. Arrival of Mary in Scotland.

[x] Caballa, p. 374. Spotswood, p. 177.

position,

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

poſition, and their reſpectful attachment to their ſovereign, and reflecting on the diſparity of the ſcene which lay before her. It is ſaid, that after ſhe was embarked at Calais, ſhe kept her eyes fixed on the coaſt of France, and never turned them from that beloved object, till darkneſs fell, and intercepted it from her view. She then ordered a couch to be ſpread for her under the open air; and charged the pilot, that, if in the morning the land was ſtill in ſight, he ſhould awake her, and afford her one parting view of that country in which all her affections were centered. The weather proved very calm, ſo that the ſhip made little way in the night-time: And Mary had once more an opportunity of ſeeing the French coaſt. She ſat up on her couch, and ſtill looking towards the land, often repeated theſe words: "Farewell, France, farewell; I ſhall never ſee thee more [y]." The firſt aſpect, however, of things in Scotland, was more favourable, if not to her pleaſure and happineſs, at leaſt to her repoſe and ſecurity, than ſhe had reaſon to apprehend. No ſooner did the French gallies appear off Leith, than people of all ranks, who had long expected their arrival, flocked towards the ſhore, with an earneſt impatience to behold and receive their young ſovereign. Some were led by duty, ſome by intereſt, ſome by curioſity; and all combined to expreſs their attachment to her, and to inſinuate themſelves into her confidence, on the commencement of her adminiſtration. She had now reached the nineteenth year of her age; and the bloom of her youth, and amiable beauty of her perſon, were farther recommended by the affability of her addreſs, the politeneſs of her manners, and the elegance of her genius. Well accompliſhed in all the ſuperficial, but engaging graces of a court, ſhe afforded, when better known, ſtill more

[y] Keith, p. 179. Jebb, vol. II. p. 483.

promiſing

CHAP. XXXIX.

1561.

promising indications of her character; and men prognosticated both humanity from her soft and obliging deportment, and penetration from her taste in all the refined arts of music, eloquence, and poetry [z]. And as the Scots had long been deprived of the presence of their sovereign, whom they once despaired ever more to behold among them, her arrival seemed to give universal satisfaction; and nothing appeared about the court, but symptoms of affection, joy, and festivity.

THE first measures which Mary embraced, confirmed all the prepossessions which had been entertained in her favour. She followed the advice which she had received in France from D' Oisel and the bishop of Amiens, as well as her uncles; and gave her confidence entirely to the leaders of the reformed party, who had greatest influence on the people, and who, she found, were alone able to support her government. Her brother, lord James, whom she soon after created earl of Murray, obtained the chief authority; and after him, Lidington, secretary of state, a man of great sagacity, had a principal share in her confidence. By the vigour of these mens measures she endeavoured to restore order and police in the country, divided by public factions and private feuds; and that fierce and intractable people, unacquainted with laws and obedience, seemed, for a time, to submit peaceably to her gentle and prudent administration.

Bigotry of the Scots reformers.

BUT there was one circumstance which blasted all these promising appearances, and bereaved Mary of that general favour which her agreeable manners and prudent deportment gave her just reason to expect. She was still a papist; and tho' she published, soon after her arrival, a proclamation, requiring every one to submit

z Buchan, lib. xvii. c. 9. Spotswood, p. 178, 179. Keith, p. 180. Thuan. lib. xxix. c. 2.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

to submit to the eſtabliſhed religion, the preachers, and their adherents, could neither be reconciled to a perſon polluted with ſo great an abomination, nor lay aſide their jealouſies of her future conduct. It was with great difficulty ſhe could obtain permiſſion for maſs in her own chappel; and had not the people apprehended, that if ſhe had here met with a refuſal, ſhe would inſtantly have returned to France, the zealots never would have granted her even that ſmall indulgence. The cry was, "Shall that idol be ſuffered again to be erected within the realm?" It was aſſerted in the pulpit, that one maſs was more terrible than ten thouſand armed men landed to invade the kingdom [a]: Lord Lindeſay, and the gentlemen of Fife, exclaimed, "That the idolater ſhould die the death;" ſuch was their expreſſion. One that carried tapers for the ceremony of that worſhip, was attacked and inſulted in the court of the palace. And if the lord James, and ſome popular leaders, had not interpoſed, the moſt dangerous uproar was juſtly apprehended, from the ungoverned fury of the multitude [b]. The uſual prayers in the churches were to this purpoſe: That God would turn her heart, which was obſtinate againſt him and his truth; or if his holy will be otherwiſe, that he would ſtrengthen the hearts and *hands* of the elect, ſtoutly to oppoſe the rage of all tyrants [c]. Nay, it was openly called in queſtion, whether that princeſs, being an idolatreſs, was entitled to any authority, even in civil matters [d].

The helpleſs Queen was every moment expoſed to contumely, which ſhe bore with benignity and patience. Soon after her arrival ſhe dined in the caſtle of Edinburgh; and it was there contrived, that a boy, ſix years of age ſhould be let down from the roof, and ſhould preſent her with a bible, a pſalter, and the keys

[a] Knox, p. 287. [b] Ibid, p. 284, 285, 287. Spotſwood, p. 179.
[c] Keith, p. 179. [d] Ibid. p. 202.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

of the castle. Lest she should be at a loss to understand this insult on her as a papist, all the decorations expressed the burning of Corah, Dathan, and Abiram, and other punishments inflicted by God against idolatry [e]. The town council of Edinburgh had the assurance, from their own authority, to issue a Proclamation banishing from their district, "all the wicked rabble of "antichrist the pope, such as priests, monks, friars, to-"gether with adulterers and fornicatots [f]." And because the privy-council suspended the magistrates for their insolence, the passionate historians [g] of that age have inferred, that the Queen was engaged, by a sympathy of manners, to take adulterers and fornicators under her protection. It appears probable, that the magistrates were afterwards reinstated in their office, and that their proclamation was confirmed [h].

But all the insolence of the people was nothing in comparison of that which was exercised by the clergy and the preachers; and they took a pride in vilifying, even to her face, this amiable princess. The assembly of the church framed an address, in which, after telling her, that her mass was a bastard service of God, the fountain of all impiety, and the source of every evil which abounded in the realm; they discovered their expectations, that she would, ere this time, have preferred truth to her own pre-conceived opinion, and have renounced her religion, which, they assured her, was nothing but abomination and vanity. They said, that the present abuses of government were so enormous, that if a speedy remedy was not provided, God would not fail in his anger to strike the head and the tail, the disobedient prince and sinful people. They required, that severe punishment should be inflicted on adulterers and forni-

[e] Keith, p. 189. Buchan. lib. xvii. c. 20. [f] Ibid, p. 192. Haynes, vol. I. p. 372. [g] Knox, p. 292. [h] Keith, p. 202.

cators;

cators; and they concluded with demanding for themſelves, ſome addition both of power and property [i].

THE ringleader in all theſe inſults on majeſty was John Knox, who poſſeſſed an uncontrouled authority in the church, and even in the civil affairs of the nation, and who triumphed in the contumelious uſage of his ſovereign. His uſual appellation for the Queen was Jezabel; and tho' ſhe endeavoured, by the moſt gracious condeſcenſion, to win his favour, all her inſinuations could gain nothing on his obdurate heart. She promiſed him acceſs to her whenever he demanded it; and ſhe even deſired him, if he found her blameable in any thing, to reprehend her freely in private, rather than vilify her in the pulpit before all the people; but he plainly told her, that he had a publick miniſtry entruſted to him, that if ſhe would come to church, ſhe ſhould there hear the goſpel of truth, and that it was not his buſineſs to apply to every individual, nor had he leiſure for that occupation [k]. The political principles of the man, which he communicated to his brethren, were as full of ſedition as his theological were of rage and bigotry. Tho' he once condeſcended ſo far as to tell the Queen, that he would ſubmit to her, in the ſame manner that Paul did to Nero [l]; he remained not long in this dutiful ſtrain. He ſaid to her, that "Samuel feared not to ſlay "Agag, the fat and delicate King of Amalek, whom "King Saul had ſaved: Neither ſpared Elias Jezabel's "falſe prophets, and Baal's prieſts, tho' King Ahab was preſent. Phineas," added he, "was no magiſtrate; "and yet feared he not to ſtrike Coſbie and Zimri in "the very act of filthy fornication. And ſo, madam, "your grace may ſee, that others than chief magiſtrates "may lawfully inflict puniſhment on ſuch crimes as

i Knox, p. 311, 312. k Ibid. p. 310. l Ibid p. 288.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

"are condemned by the law of God [m]." Knox had formerly, during the reign of Mary of England, wrote a book againſt female ſucceſſion to the crown: The title of it is, *The firſt blaſt of the trumpet againſt the monſtrous regimen of women.* He was too proud either to recant the tenets of this book, or even to apologize for them; and his conduct ſhewed, that he thought no more civility than loyalty was due to any of the female ſex.

THE whole life of Mary, from the demeanour of theſe men, was filled with bitterneſs and ſorrow. This ruſtic apoſtle ſcruples not, in his hiſtory, to inform us, that he once treated her with ſuch ſeverity, that ſhe loſt all command of her temper, and diſſolved into tears before him: Yet ſo far from being moved with youth, and beauty, and royal dignity reduced to that condition, he perſevered in his inſolent reproofs; and when he relates this incident, he even diſcovers a viſible pride and ſatisfaction in his own conduct [n]. The pulpits had become nothing but ſcenes of railing againſt the vices of the court; among which were always noted as the principal, feaſting, finery, dancing, balls, and whoredom, their neceſſary attendant [o]. Some ornaments, which the ladies at that time wore upon their petticoats, excited mightily the indignation of the preachers, and they affirmed, that ſuch vanity would provoke God's vengeance, not only againſt theſe fooliſh women, but againſt the whole realm [p].

MARY, whoſe age, condition, and education invited her to liberty and chearfulneſs, was curbed in every amuſement, by the abſurd ſeverity of theſe reformers; and ſhe found each moment reaſon to regret her leaving that country from whoſe manners ſhe had in her early youth received the firſt impreſſions [q]. Her two uncles, the duke

[m] Knox, p. 326. [n] Ibid, p. 332, 333. [o] Ibid, p. 322.
[p] Ibid, p. 330. [q] Ibi, p. 294.

of

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

of Aumale, and the grand prior, with the other French nobility, ſoon took their leave of her: The marqueſs of Elbeuf remained ſome time longer; but after his departure, ſhe was left alone to the ſociety of her own ſubjects; men at that time unacquainted with the pleaſures of converſation, ignorant of arts and civility, and corrupted beyond their uſual ruſticity by a diſmal fanat iſm, which rendered them incapable of all humanity or improvement. Tho' ſhe had made no attempt to reſtore the antient religion, her popery was a ſufficient crime: Tho' her behaviour was hitherto irreproachable, and her manners ſweet and engaging, her gaiety and eaſe were interpreted as ſigns of diſſolute vanity. And to the harſh and prepoſterous uſage which this princeſs met with, may, in part, be aſcribed thoſe errors of her ſubſequent conduct, which ſeemed to be ſo little of a piece with the general tenor of her character.

THERE happened to the marqueſs of Elbeuf, before his departure, an adventure which, tho' frivolous, might enable him to give Mary's friends in France, a very melancholy idea of her ſituation. This nobleman, with the earl of Bothwel, and ſome other young courtiers, had been engaged, after a debauch to pay a viſit to a woman called Aliſon Craig, who was known to be liberal of her favours; and becauſe they were denied entrance, they broke the windows, thruſt open the door, and committed ſome diſorders, in ſearching for the damſel. It happened that the aſſembly of the church was ſitting at that time, and they immediately took the matter under their cognizance. In conjunction with ſeveral of the nobility, they preſented an addreſs to the Queen, which was introduced with this awful prelude. "To the Queen's majeſty, and to her ſecret "and great council, her grace's faithful and obedient "ſubjects, the profeſſors of Chriſt Jeſus's holy evangil,

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

"wiſh the ſpirit of righteous judgment." The tenor of the petition was, that the fear of God, the duty which they owed her grace, and the terrible threatnings denounced by God againſt every city or country where horrible crimes are openly committed, compelled them to demand the ſevere puniſhment of ſuch as had done what in them lay to kindle the wrath of God againſt the whole realm: That the inquity of which they complained, was ſo heinous, and ſo horrible, that they ſhould eſteem themſelves accomplices in it, if they had been engaged by worldly fear, or ſervile complaiſance, to paſs it over in ſilence, or bury it in oblivion: That as they owed her grace obedience in the adminiſtration of juſtice, ſo were they entitled to require of her, in return, the ſharp and condign puniſhment of this enormity, which, they repeated it, might draw down the vengeance of God on the whole kingdom: And that they inſiſted on it to be her duty to lay aſide all private affections towards the actors in this heinous crime and enormous villainy, and without delay bring them to a trial, and inflict the ſevereſt penalties upon them. The Queen gave a gracious reception to this peremptory addreſs; but becauſe ſhe probably thought, that breaking the windows of a brothel merited not ſuch ſevere reprehenſion, ſhe only replied, that her uncle was a ſtranger, and that he was attended with a young company: But ſhe would put ſuch order to him and to all others, that her ſubjects ſhould henceforth have no reaſon to complain. Her paſſing over this incident ſo ſlightly, was the ſource of great diſcontent, and was regarded as a proof of the moſt profligate manners[r]. It is not to be omitted, that Aliſon Craig, the cauſe of all the uproar, was known to entertain a commerce with the earl of Arran, who, on account of his great zeal

[r] Knox, p. 302, 303, 304. Keith, p. 509.

for

for the reformation, was, without ſcruple, indulged in that enormity[s].

1561.

Some of the populace of Edinburgh broke into the Queen's chappel during her abſence, and committed ſome outrages; for which two of them were indicted, and it was intended to bring them to a trial. Knox wrote circular letters to the moſt conſiderable zealots of the party, and charged them to appear in town, and protect their brethren. The holy ſacraments, he there ſaid, are abuſed by prophane papiſts; the maſs has been ſaid; and in worſhiping that idol, the prieſts have omitted no ceremony, not even the conjuring of their accurſed water, that had ever been practiſed in the time of the greateſt blindneſs. Theſe violent meaſures for oppoſing juſtice differed little from rebellion; and Knox was ſummoned before the council to anſwer for his offence. The courage of this man was equal to his inſolence. He ſcrupled not to tell the Queen, that the peſtilent papiſts, who had enflamed her againſt theſe holy men, were the ſons of the devil; and muſt therefore obey the directions of their father, who had been a liar and a manſlayer from the beginning. The matter ended with the full acquital of Knox[t]. Randolf, the Engliſh ambaſſador in Scotland at this time, had reaſon to write to Cecil, ſpeaking of the Scots nation: "I think marvelouſly of the wiſdom of God, that gave "this unruly, inconſtant, and cumberſome people no "more power nor ſubſtance: For they would otherwiſe run wild[u]."

We have related theſe circumſtances at greater length, than the neceſſity of our ſubject may ſeem to require: But even trivial incidents, which ſhow the manners of the age, are often more inſtructive, as well as entertaining, than the great tranſactions of wars and

[s] Knox. Ibid. [t] Ibid, p. 336, 342. [u] Keith, p. 202.

CHAP. XXXIX.

negotiations, which are nearly similar in all periods and and in all countries of the world.

1561. The reformed clergy in Scotland had, at that time, a very natural reason for their ill humour, viz. the poverty or rather beggary to which they were reduced: The nobility and gentry had at first laid their hands on all the property of the regular clergy, without making any provision for the friars and nuns, whom they turned out of all their possessions. The secular clergy of the catholic communion, tho' they lost all ecclesiastical jurisdiction, still held some of the temporalities of their benefices; and either became laymen themselves, and converted them into perpetual property, or made conveyance of them at low prices to the nobility, who thus enriched themselves by the plunder of the church. The new teachers had hitherto subsisted chiefly by the voluntary oblations of the faithful; and in a poor country, divided in religious sentiments, this establishment was regarded as very scanty and very precarious. Repeated applications were made for a legal settlement to the preachers; and tho' almost every thing in the kingdom was governed by their zeal and caprice, it was with difficulty that their request was at last complied with. The fanatical spirit which they indulged, and their industry in decrying the principles and practices of the romish communion, which placed such a merit in enriching the clergy, proved now a very sensible obstacle to their acquisitions. The boundaries of the royal power were, during that age, more uncertain in Scotland than even in England; and the privy council alone thought themselves intitled, without a Parliament, to regulate this important matter. They passed a vote [x], by which they divided all the ecclesiastical benefices into twenty one parts: They assigned fourteen to the antient possessors: Of the remaining seven, they

[x] Knox, p. 296. Keith, p. 210.

granted

granted three to the crown; and if that was found to answer the public expences, they bestowed the overplus on the reformed ministers. The Queen was empowered to levy all the seven; and it was ordained, that she should afterwards pay to the clergy what should be judged to suffice for their maintenance. The necessities of the crown, the rapacity of the courtiers, and the small affection which Mary bore to the protestant ecclesiastics, rendered their revenues very contemptible as well as uncertain; and the preachers, finding that they could not rival the gentry, nor even the middling rank of men in opulence and plenty, were necessitated to betake themselves to other expedients for supporting their authority. They affected a furious zeal for religion, morose manners, a vulgar and familiar, and yet mysterious, cant; and tho' the liberality of subsequent princes put them afterwards on a better footing with regard to revenue and thereby corrected in some degree these vicious habits; it must be confessed that, while many other advantages attend presbyterian government, these inconveniencies are not easily separated from the genius of that ecclesiastical polity.

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

The Queen of Scots, destitute of all force, possessing a narrow revenue, surrounded with a factious turbulent nobility, a bigoted people, and insolent ecclesiastics, soon found, that her only expedient for maintaining tranquillity was to preserve a good correspondence with Elizabeth, who by former engagements and services, had acquired such authority over all these ranks of men. Soon after her arrival in Scotland, secretary Lidington was sent to London, in order to pay her compliments to the Queen, and express her desire of friendship and a good correspondence; and he received a commission from her, as well as from the Scots nobility, to demand, as a means of cementing this

[y] Jebb, vol. II. p. 456.

friendsh[ip],

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

friendſhip, that Mary ſhould, by act of Parliament or by Proclamation (for the difference between theſe ſecurities was not then deemed very conſiderable) be declared ſucceſſor to the crown. No requeſt could be more unreaſonable, nor made at a more improper juncture. The Queen replied, that Mary had once diſcovered her intention not to wait for the ſucceſſion, but had openly, without ceremony or reſerve, aſſumed the title of Queen of England, and had pretended ſuperior right to her throne and kingdom: That tho' her ambaſſadors, and thoſe of her huſband, the French King, had ſigned a treaty, in which they renounced that claim, and promiſed ſatisfaction for ſo great an indignity, ſhe was ſo intoxicated with this imaginary right, that ſhe had rejected the moſt earneſt ſollicitations, and even, as ſome endeavoured to perſuade her, incurred ſome danger in croſſing the ſeas rather than ratify that equitable treaty: That her partizans every where had ſtill the aſſurance to inſiſt on her title, and had preſumed to talk of her own birth as ſpurious and illegitimate: That while affairs were on this footing; while a claim thus openly made, ſo far from being openly renounced, was only ſuſpended till a more convenient opportunity; it would in her be the moſt egregious imprudence to fortify the hands of a pretender to her crown, by declaring her the ſucceſſor: That no expedient could be worſe imagined for cementing friendſhip than ſuch a declaration, and Kings were often found to bear no good will to their ſucceſſors, even tho' their own children; much more when the connexion was ſo much leſs intimate, and when ſuch cauſe of diſguſt and jealouſy had been already given, and indeed was ſtill continued, on the part of Mary: That tho' ſhe was willing, from the amity which ſhe bore her kinſwoman, to aſcribe her former pretenſions to the advice of others, by whoſe

direction ſhe was then governed; her refuſal to relinquiſh them could proceed only from her own prepoſſeſſions, and were a proof that ſhe ſtill retained ſome dangerous project againſt her: That it was the nature of all men to be diſguſted with the preſent, to entertain flattering views of futurity, to think their ſervices ill rewarded, to expect a better recompence from the ſucceſſor; and ſhe ſhould eſteem herſelf ſcarce half a ſovereign over the Engliſh, if they ſaw her declare her heir, and arm her rival with authority againſt her own repoſe and ſafety: That ſhe knew the inconſtant nature of the people; ſhe was acquainted with the preſent diviſions in religion; ſhe was not ignorant, that the ſame party, which expected greateſt favour during the reign of Mary, did alſo imagine, that the title of that princeſs was ſuperior to her own: That for her part, whatever claims were advanced, ſhe was determined to live and die Queen of England; and after her death, it was the buſineſs of others to examine who had the beſt pretenſions, either by the laws or by right of blood, to the ſucceſſion: That ſhe hoped the Queen of Scots's claim would then be found preferable; and conſidering the injury, which ſhe herſelf had received, it was ſufficient indulgence, if ſhe promiſed, in the mean time, to do nothing which might, in any reſpect, weaken or invalidate that claim: And that Mary, if her title was really ſuperior, a point, which, for her own part, ſhe had never inquired into, poſſeſſed all advantages above her rivals; who, deſtitute both of preſent power, and of all ſupport by friends, would only expoſe themſelves to inevitable ruin, by advancing any weak, or even doubtful pretenſions [z].

THESE views of the Queen were ſo prudent and judicious, that there was no likelihood of her ever de-

[z] Buchanan. lib. xvii. c. 14—17. Camden. p. 385. Spotſwood, p. 180. 181.

parting

CHAP. XXXIX.

1561.

parting from them: But that she might put the matter to a fuller proof, she offered to explain the words of the treaty of Edinburgh, so as to leave no suspicion of their excluding Mary's right of succession [a]; and in this form, she again required her to ratify that treaty. Matters at last came to this issue, that Mary agreed to the proposal, and offered to renounce all present pretensions to the crown of England, provided Elizabeth would agree to declare her the successor [b]. But such was the jealous character of this latter princess, that she never would consent to strengthen the interest and authority of any claimant, by fixing the succession; much less would she make this concession in favour of a rival Queen, who possessed such plausible pretensions for the present, and who, tho' she might verbally resign them, could easily resume her title on the first opportunity. Mary's proposal, however, bore so specious an appearance of equity and justice, that Elizabeth, sensible that reason would be deemed to lie entirely on that side, made no more mention of the matter; and tho' no farther concessions were made by either Princess, they put on all the appearances of a cordial reconcilement and friendship with each other. The Queen observed, that, even without her interposition, Mary was sufficiently depressed by the mutinous disposition of her own subjects; and instead of giving Scotland, for the present, any inquietude or disturbance, she employed herself, much more usefully and laudibly, in regulating the affairs of her own kingdom, and promoting the happiness of her people. She made some progress in paying those great debts which lay upon the crown; she regulated the coin, which had been extremely debased by her predecessors; she furnished her arsenals with great quantities of arms from Germany and other places; en-

Wise government of Elizabeth.

[a] Spotswood, p. 181. [b] Haynes, vol. I. p. 377.

gaged

gged her nobility and gentry to imitate her example in this particular; introduced into the kingdom the art of making gun-powder and braſs cannon; fortified her frontiers on the ſide of Scotland; made frequent reviews of the militia; encouraged agriculture by allowing a free exportation of corn; promoted trade and navigation; and ſo much encreaſed the ſhipping of her kingdom, both by building veſſels of Force herſelf, and ſuggeſting like undertakings to the merchants, that ſhe was juſtly ſtiled the reſtorer of naval glory, and the Queen of the northern ſeas[c]. The natural frugality of her temper, ſo far from diſqualifying her for theſe great enterprizes, only enabled her to execute them with greater certainty and ſucceſs; and all the world ſaw in her conduct the happy effects of a vigorous perſeverance in judicious and well conducted projects.

It is eaſy to imagine, that ſo great a princeſs, who enjoyed ſuch felicity and renown, would receive propoſals of marriage from every one, who had any likelihood of ſucceeding; and tho' ſhe had made ſome public declarations in favour of a ſingle life, few believed, that ſhe would perſevere for ever in that reſolution. The archduke Charles, ſecond ſon to the emperor[d], as well as Caſimir, ſon to the elector palatine, made applications to her; and as this latter prince made profeſſion of the reformed religion, he thought himſelf, on this account, better intitled to ſucceed in his addreſſes. Eric, King of Sweden, and Adolph, duke of Holſtein, were encouraged by the ſame views to become ſuitors; and the earl of Arran, heir to the crown of Scotland, was, by the ſtates of that kingdom, recommended to her as a ſuitable marriage. Even ſome of her own ſubjects, tho' they did not openly declare their pretenſions, en-

[c] Camden, p. 388. Strype. vol. I. p. 230, 336, 337.
[d] Haynes. vol. I. p. 233.

tertained

CHAP. XXXIX.

1561.

tertained hopes of ſucceſs. The earl of Arundel, a perſon declining in years, but deſcended from a very antient and noble family, as well as poſſeſſed of great riches, flattered himſelf with this proſpect; as did alſo Sir William Pickering, a man much eſteemed for his perſonal merit. But the perſon moſt likely to ſucceed, was a younger ſon of the late duke of Northumberland, the lord Robert Dudley, who, by means of his exterior qualities, joined to addreſs and flattery, had become, in a manner, her declared favourite, and had great influence in all her councils. The leſs worthy he appeared of this diſtinction, the more was his great favour aſcribed to ſome violent affection, which could thus ſeduce the judgment of this penetrating princeſs; and men long expected, that he would obtain the preference above ſo many princes and monarchs. But the Queen gave all theſe ſuitors a gentle refuſal, which ſtill encouraged their purſuit; and ſhe thought, that ſhe ſhould the better attach them to her intereſts, if they were ſtill allowed to entertain hopes of ſucceeding in their pretenſions. It is alſo probable, that this policy was not entirely free from a mixture of female coquetry; and that, tho' ſhe was determined in her own mind never to ſhare her power with any man, ſhe was not diſpleaſed with the courtſhip, ſollicitation, and profeſſions of love, which the deſire of acquiring ſo valuable a prize procured her from all quarters.

WHAT is moſt ſingular in the conduct and character of Elizabeth, is, that, tho' ſhe determined never to have any heir of her own body, ſhe was not only extremely averſe to fix any ſucceſſor to the crown; but ſeems alſo to have reſolved, as far as lay in her power, that no one, who had pretenſions to the ſucceſſion, ſhould ever have any heirs or ſucceſſors. After the excluſion given by the will of Henry VIII. to the poſterity of Margaret, Queen of Scotland, the right to the crown devolv-

1561.

devolved on the houſe of Suffolk; and the lady Catherine Gray, younger ſiſter to the lady Jane, was now the heir of that family. This lady had been married to the lord Herbert, ſon to the earl of Pembroke; but having been divorced from that nobleman, ſhe had made a private marriage with the earl of Hertford, ſon to the protector; and her huſband, ſoon after conſummation, travelled into France. In a little time ſhe appeared to be pregnant, which ſo enraged Elizabeth, that ſhe threw her into the Tower, and ſummoned him to appear, in order to anſwer for his miſdemeanor. He made no ſcruple to acknowlege the marriage, which, tho' concluded without the Queen's conſent, was intirely ſuitable to both parties; and for this offence he was alſo committed to the Tower. Elizabeth's ſeverity ſtopped not here: She iſſued a commiſſion to enquire into the matter; and as Hertford could not, within the time limited, prove the nuptials by witneſſes, their commerce was declared unlawful, and their poſterity illegitimate. They were ſtill continued in cuſtody; but by bribing their keepers, they found means to have farther intercourſe; and another child appeared to be the fruit of their commerce. This was a freſh ſource of vexation to the Queen who made a fine of fifteen thouſand pounds be ſet on Hertford by the Star-Chamber, and ordered his confinement to be thenceforth ſtill more rigid and ſevere. He lay in this condition for nine years, till the death of his wife, by freeing Elizabeth from all fears, procured him his liberty[e]. This extreme ſeverity muſt be accounted for, either by the unrelenting jealouſy of the Queen, who was afraid that any pretender to the ſucceſſion would acquire credit by having iſſue; or by her malignity, which, with all her great qualities, made one ingredient in her character,

[e] Haynes, vol. I. p. 369, 378, 396. Camden, p. 389. Heylin, p. 154.

and

CHAP. XXXIX.

1561.

tertained hopes of ſucceſs. The earl of Arundel, a perſon declining in years, but deſcended from a very antient and noble family, as well as poſſeſſed of great riches, flattered himſelf with this proſpect; as did alſo Sir William Pickering, a man much eſteemed for his perſonal merit. But the perſon moſt likely to ſucceed, was a younger ſon of the late duke of Northumberland, the lord Robert Dudley, who, by means of his exterior qualities, joined to addreſs and flattery, had become, in a manner, her declared favourite, and had great influence in all her councils. The leſs worthy he appeared of this diſtinction, the more was his great favour aſcribed to ſome violent affection, which could thus ſeduce the judgment of this penetrating princeſs; and men long expected, that he would obtain the preference above ſo many princes and monarchs. But the Queen gave all theſe ſuitors a gentle refuſal, which ſtill encouraged their purſuit; and ſhe thought, that ſhe ſhould the better attach them to her intereſts, if they were ſtill allowed to entertain hopes of ſucceeding in their pretenſions. It is alſo probable, that this policy was not entirely free from a mixture of female coquetry; and that, tho' ſhe was determined in her own mind never to ſhare her power with any man, ſhe was not diſpleaſed with the courtſhip, ſollicitation, and profeſſions of love, which the deſire of acquiring ſo valuable a prize procured her from all quarters.

WHAT is moſt ſingular in the conduct and character of Elizabeth, is, that, tho' ſhe determined never to have any heir of her own body, ſhe was not only extremely averſe to fix any ſucceſſor to the crown; but ſeems alſo to have reſolved, as far as lay in her power, that no one, who had pretenſions to the ſucceſſion, ſhould ever have any heirs or ſucceſſors. After the exclusion given by the will of Henry VIII. to the poſterity of Margaret, Queen of Scotland, the right to the crown devolv-

devolved on the houſe of Suffolk; and the lady Catherine Gray, younger ſiſter to the lady Jane, was now the heir of that family. This lady had been married to the lord Herbert, ſon to the earl of Pembroke; but having been divorced from that nobleman, ſhe had made a private marriage with the earl of Hertford, ſon to the protector; and her huſband, ſoon after conſummation, travelled into France. In a little time ſhe appeared to be pregnant, which ſo enraged Elizabeth, that ſhe threw her into the Tower, and ſummoned him to appear, in order to anſwer for his miſdemeanor. He made no ſcruple to acknowlege the marriage, which, tho' concluded without the Queen's conſent, was intirely ſuitable to both parties; and for this offence he was alſo committed to the Tower. Elizabeth's ſeverity ſtopped not here: She iſſued a commiſſion to enquire into the matter; and as Hertford could not, within the time limited, prove the nuptials by witneſſes, their commerce was declared unlawful, and their poſterity illegitimate. They were ſtill continued in cuſtody; but by bribing their keepers, they found means to have farther intercourſe; and another child appeared to be the fruit of their commerce. This was a freſh ſource of vexation to the Queen who made a fine of fifteen thouſand pounds be ſet on Hertford by the Star-Chamber, and ordered his confinement to be thenceforth ſtill more rigid and ſevere. He lay in this condition for nine years, till the death of his wife, by freeing Elizabeth from all fears, procured him his liberty[e]. This extreme ſeverity muſt be accounted for, either by the unrelenting jealouſy of the Queen, who was afraid that any pretender to the ſucceſſion would acquire credit by having iſſue; or by her malignity, which, with all her great qualities, made one ingredient in her character,

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

[e] Haynes, vol. I. p. 369, 378, 396. Camden, p. 389. Heylin, p. 154.

and

CHAP. XXXIX. 1561.

and which led her to envy in others those natural pleasures of love and posterity, of which her own ambition and desire of dominion made her renounce all prospect for herself.

THERE happened, about this time, some other events in the royal family, where the Queen's conduct was more laudable. Arthur Pole, and his brother, nephews to the late cardinal, and descended from the duke of Clarence, brother to Edward the fourth, together with Anthony Fortescue, who had married a sister of these gentlemen, and some other persons, were brought to their trial for conspiring to withdraw into France, with a view of receiving succours from the duke of Guise, of returning thence into Wales, and of proclaiming Mary Queen of England, and Arthur Pole duke of Clarence. They confessed the indictment, but asserted, that they never intended to execute these projects during the Queen's life-time: They had only deemed such precautions requisite in case of her death, which, some pretenders to judicial astrology had assured them, they might with certainty look for before the year expired. They were condemned by the jury[f], but received their pardon from the Queen's clemency.

[f] Strype, vol. I. p. 333. Heylin, p. 154.

CHAP.

CHAP. XL.

State of Europe.—Civil wars of France.—Havre de Grace put in poſſeſſion of the Engliſh.—A Parliament.—Havre loſt.—Scotch affairs.—The Queen of Scots marries the earl of Darnley.—Confederacy againſt the Proteſtants.—Murder of Rizzio.—A Parliament.—Murder of Darnley.—Queen of Scots marries Bothwel.—Inſurrections in Scotland.—Impriſonment of Mary.—Mary flies into England.—Conferences at York and Hampton-Court.

AFTER the commencement of the religious wars in France, which rendered that flouriſhing kingdom, during the courſe of near forty years, a ſcene of horror and devaſtation, the great rival powers in Europe were Spain and England; and it was not long before an animoſity, firſt political, then perſonal, broke out between the ſovereigns of theſe countries. 1562. State of Europe.

PHILIP the ſecond of Spain, tho' he reached not any enlarged views of policy, was endowed with great induſtry and ſagacity, a remarkable caution in his enterprizes, an unuſual foreſight in all his meaſures; and as he was ever cool and ſeemingly unmoved by paſſion, and poſſeſſed neither talents nor inclination for war, both his ſubjects and his neighbours had reaſon to expect great juſtice, happineſs and tranquillity, from his adminiſtration. But prejudices had on him a more pernicious effect than ever paſſions had on any other monarch; and the ſpirit of bigotry and tyranny, by which he was actuated, with the fraudulent maxims which governed his councils, excited the moſt violent

CHAP. XL. 1562.

agitation among his own people, engaged him in acts of the most enormous cruelty, and threw all Europe into combustion.

After Philip had concluded peace at Cambray, and had remained some time in the Netherlands, in order to settle the affairs of that country, he embarked for Spain; and as the gravity of that nation, with their respectful obedience to their prince, had appeared much more agreeable to his humour, than the homely familiar manners, and the pertinacious liberty of the Flemings, it was expected, that he would for the future reside altogether at Madrid, and would govern all his extensive dominions by Spanish ministers and Spanish councils. Having met with a violent tempest on his voyage, he no sooner arrived in harbour, than he fell on his knees, and after giving thanks for this deliverance, he vowed, that his life, which was thus providentially saved, should be thenceforth entirely devoted to the extirpation of heresy [z]. His subsequent conduct corresponded to these professions. Finding that the new doctrines had penetrated into Spain, he let loose the rage of persecution against all who professed them, or were suspected of adhering to them; and by his violence he gave new edge, even to the unrelenting cruelty of priests and inquisitors. He committed to custody Constantine Ponce, who had been confessor to his father, the emperor Charles; who had attended him during his retreat; and in whose arms that great monarch had terminated his life: And after this ecclesiastic died in prison, he still ordered him to be tried and condemned for heresy, and his statue to be committed to the flames. He even deliberated, whether he should not exercise like severity against the memory of his father, who was suspected, during his latter years, to have indulged a propensity towards the Lutheran principles: In his

[z] Thuanus, lib. xxiii. cap. 14.

furious

furious zeal for orthodoxy, he ſpared neither age, ſex, nor condition: He was preſent, with an inflexible countenance, at the moſt barbarous executions: He iſſued rigorous orders for the proſecution of heretics, in Spain, Italy, the Indies, and the Low Countries: And having founded his determined tyranny on maxims of civil policy, as well as on principles of religion, all his ſubjects ſaw, that there was no method, except the moſt entire compliance, or moſt obſtinate reſiſtance, to eſcape or elude the ſeverity of his vengeance. CHAP. XL. 1562.

DURING that extreme animoſity which prevailed between the adherents of the oppoſite religions, the civil magiſtrate, who found it difficult, if not impoſſible, for the ſame laws to govern ſuch enraged adverſaries, was naturally led by ſpecious rules of prudence, in embracing one party, to declare war againſt the other, and to exterminate, by fire and ſword, thoſe bigots, who, from abhorrence of his religion, had proceeded to an oppoſition of his power, and to a hatred of his perſon. If any prince poſſeſſed ſuch enlarged views as to foreſee, that a mutual toleration would in time abate the fury of religious prejudices, he yet met with difficulties in reducing this principle to practice; and might deem the malady too violent to await a remedy, which, tho' certain, muſt neceſſarily be ſlow in its operations. But Philip, tho' a profound hypocrite, and extremely governed by ſelf-intereſt, ſeems alſo to have been himſelf actuated by an imperious bigotry; and as he employed great reflection in all his conduct, he could eaſily palliate the gratification of his natural temper under the colour of wiſdom, and find in this ſyſtem no leſs advantage to his foreign than his domeſtic politics. By placing himſelf at the head of the catholic party, he converted the zealots of the ancient faith into partizans of the Spaniſh greatneſs; and by employ-

CHAP. XL. 1562.

ing the powerful allurement of religion, he ſeduced every where the ſubjects from that allegiance which they owed their native ſovereign.

THE courſe of events, guiding and concurring with choice, had placed Elizabeth in a ſituation diametrically oppoſite; and had raiſed her to be the glory, the bulwark, and the ſupport of the numerous, tho' ſtill perſecuted proteſtants, throughout all Europe. More moderate in her temper than Philip, ſhe found, with pleaſure, that the principles of her ſect required not ſuch extreme ſeverity in her domeſtic government, as was exerciſed by that monarch; and having no object but ſelf-preſervation, ſhe united her intereſts in all foreign negociations with thoſe who were every where ſtruggling under oppreſſion, and guarding themſelves againſt ruin and extermination. The more virtuous ſovereign was thus happily thrown into the more favourable cauſe; and fortune, in this inſtance, concurred with policy and nature.

DURING the life-time of Henry the ſecond and his ſucceſſor, the force of theſe principles was ſomewhat reſtrained, tho' not altogether overcome, by the motives of a ſuperior intereſt; and the dread of uniting England with the French monarchy, engaged Philip to maintain a good correſpondence with Elizabeth. Yet even during this period he rejected the garter which ſhe ſent him; he refuſed to ratify the ancient league between the houſe of Burgundy and England [h]; he furniſhed ſhips to tranſport the French forces into Scotland; he endeavoured to intercept the earl of Arran, who was haſtening to join the malecontents in that country; and the Queen's wiſeſt miniſters ſtill regarded his friendſhip as hollow and precarious [i]. But no ſooner did the death of Francis the ſecond put an end

[h] Digges' Compleat ambaſſador, p. 369. Haynes, p. 585. Strype, vol. IV. No 246. [i] Haynes, vol. I. p. 280, 281, 283, 284.

to

1562.

to Philip's apprehenſions with regard to Mary's ſucceſſion, than his animoſity againſt Elizabeth began more openly to appear, and the intereſts of Spain and England were found oppoſite in every negociation and tranſaction.

THE two great monarchies of the continent, France and Spain, being poſſeſſed of nearly equal force, were naturally antagoniſts; and England, from its power and ſituation, was intitled to ſupport its own dignity, as well as tranquillity, by holding the ballance between them. Whatever incident, therefore, tended too much to depreſs any one of theſe rival powers, as it left the other without controul, might be deemed contrary to the intereſts of England: Yet ſo much were theſe great maxims of policy over-ruled, during that age, by the diſputes of theology, that Philip found an advantage in ſupporting the eſtabliſhed government and religion of France; and Elizabeth in protecting faction and innovation.

Civil wars of France.

THE Queen-regent of France, when re-inſtated in authority by the death of her ſon, Francis, had formed a plan of adminiſtration more ſubtle than judicious; and ballancing the Catholics with the hugonots, the duke of Guiſe with the prince of Condé, ſhe endeavoured to render herſelf neceſſary to both, and to eſtabliſh her own dominion on their conſtrained obedience [k]. But the equal counterpoiſe of power, which, among foreign nations, is the ſource of tranquillity, proves always the ground of quarrel between domeſtic factions; and if the animoſity of religion concur with the frequent occaſions which preſent themſelves of mutual injury, it is impoſſible, during any time, to preſerve a firm concord in ſo delicate a ſituation. The conſtable, Montmorency, moved by zeal for the ancient faith, joined himſelf to the duke of Guiſe: The King of

[k] Davila, lib. ii.

CHAP. XL.

1562.

Navarre, from his inconſtant temper, and his jealouſy of the ſuperior genius of his brother, embraced the ſame party: And Catherine, finding herſelf depreſſed by this combination, had recourſe to Condé and the hugonots, who gladly embraced the opportunity of fortifying themſelves by her countenance and protection [l]. An edict had been publiſhed, granting a toleration to the proteſtants; but the intereſted violence of the duke of Guiſe, covered with the pretence of religious zeal, broke thro' this agreement; and the two parties, after the fallacious tranquillity of a moment, renewed their mutual inſults and injuries. Condé, Coligni, Andelot, aſſembled their friends, and flew to arms: Guiſe and Montmorency got poſſeſſion of the King's perſon, and conſtrained the Queen-regent to embrace their party: Fourteen armies were levied and put in motion in different places of France [m]: Each province, each city, each family, was agitated with inteſtine rage and animoſity. The father was divided againſt the ſon; the brother againſt the brother; and women themſelves, ſacrificing their humanity as well as their timidity to the religious fury, diſtinguiſhed themſelves by acts of ferocity and valour [n]. Wherever the hugonots prevailed, the images were broke, the altars pillaged, the churches demoliſhed, the monaſteries conſumed with fire: Where ſucceſs attended the catholics, they burned the bibles, re-baptized the infants, conſtrained married perſons to paſs anew thro' the ceremony: And plunder, deſolation, and bloodſhed attended equally the triumph of both parties. The Parliament of Paris itſelf, the ſeat of law and juſtice, inſtead of employing its authority to compoſe theſe fatal quarrels, publiſhed an edict, by which it put the ſword into the hands of the enraged multitude, and empowered the catholics every where to maſſacre the hugo-

[l] Ibid. lib. iii. [m] Father Paul, lib. vii. [n] Ibid.

nots:

CHAP. XL.

1562.

nots[o]: And it was during this period, when men began to be somewhat enlightened, and in this nation, renowned for poliſhed manners, that the theological rage, which had long been boiling in mens veins, ſeems to have attained its laſt ſtage of virulence and ferocity.

PHILIP, who was jealous of the progreſs which the hugonots made in France, and who dreaded that the contagion would ſpread into the Low-Country Provinces, had formed a ſecret alliance with the princes of Guiſe, and had entered into a mutual concert for the protection of the ancient faith, and the ſuppreſſion of hereſy. He now ſent ſix thouſand men, with ſome ſupply of money, to reinforce the catholic party; and the prince of Condé, finding himſelf unequal to ſo great a combination, countenanced by the regal authority, was obliged to diſpatch the Vidame of Chartres and Briguemaut to London, in order to crave the aſſiſtance and protection of Elizabeth. Moſt of the province of Normandy was poſſeſſed by the hugonots; and Condé offered to put Havre de Grace into the hands of the Engliſh; on condition, that, together with three thouſand men for the garriſon of that place, the Queen ſhould likewiſe ſend over three thouſand to defend Dieppe and Rouen, and ſhould furniſh the prince with a ſupply of a hundred thouſand crowns[p].

Havre de Grace put in poſſeſſion of the Engliſh.

ELIZABETH, beſides the general and eſſential intereſt of ſupporting the proteſtants, and oppoſing the rapid progreſs of her enemy, the duke of Guiſe, had other motives which engaged her to accept this propoſal. When ſhe concluded the peace at Cateau Cambreſis, ſhe had good reaſon to foreſee, that France never would voluntarily fulfil the article with regard to the reſtitution of Calais; and many ſubſequent incidents

20th September.

[o] Father Paul, lib. vii. Haynes, p. 391. [p] Forbes, vol. II. p. 48.

CHAP. XL.

1562.

had tended to confirm this ſuſpicion. Conſiderable ſums of money had been laid out on the fortifications; long leaſes had been granted of the lands; and many inhabitants had been encouraged to build and ſettle there, by aſſurances that Calais ſhould never be reſtored to the Engliſh [q]. The Queen, therefore, very wiſely concluded, that could ſhe get poſſeſſion of Havre, a place which commanded the mouth of the Seine, and was of much greater importance than Calais, ſhe ſhould eaſily conſtrain the French to execute the treaty, and ſhould have the glory of reſtoring to the crown that ancient poſſeſſion, which was ſo much the favourite of the nation.

No meaſure could be more generally odious in France, than the concluſion of this treaty with Elizabeth. Men were naturally led to compare the conduct of Guiſe, who had finally chaſed the Engliſh from France, and had debarred theſe dangerous and deſtructive enemies from all acceſs into it, with the treaſonable politics of Condé, who had again granted them an entry into the heart of the kingdom. The prince had the more reaſon to repent of this meaſure, as he reaped not from it all the advantage which he expected. Three thouſand Engliſh immediately took poſſeſſion of Havre and Dieppe, under the command of Sir Edward Poinings; but the latter place was found ſo little capable of being defended, that it was immediately abandoned [r]. The ſiege of Rouen was already formed by the catholics, under the command of the King of Navarre and the conſtable Montmorency; and it was with difficulty that Poinings could throw a ſmall reinforcement into the place. Tho' theſe Engliſh troops behaved with great gallantry [s], and the King of Navarre was mortally wounded during the ſiege, the catholics

[q] Forbes, p. 54, 257. [r] Ibid, vol. II. p. 199. [s] Ibid p. 161.

ſtill

still continued the attack of the place, and carrying it at last by assault, put the whole garrison to the sword. The earl of Warwic, eldest son to the late duke of Northumberland, arrived soon after at Havre, with another body of three thousand English, and took on him the command of the place. CHAP. XL. 1562.

It was expected, that the French catholics, flushed with their success at Rouen, would immediately have formed the siege of Havre, which was not as yet in any condition of defence; but the intestine disorders of the kingdom soon diverted their attention to another enterprize. Andelot, seconded by the negociations of Elizabeth, had levied a considerable body of protestants in Germany; and having arrived at Orleans, the seat of the hugonot's power, he enabled the prince of Condé and the admiral to take the field, and oppose the progress of their enemies. After threatning Paris during some time, they took their march towards Normandy, with a view of engaging the English to act in conjunction with them, and of fortifying themselves with the farther assistance which they expected from the zeal and vigour of Elizabeth[t]. The catholics, commanded by the constable, and under him by the duke of Guise, followed on their rear; and overtaking them at Dreux, obliged them to give battle. The field was fought with great obstinacy on both sides: and the action was distinguished by this signal event, that Condé and Montmorency, the commanders of the opposite armies, remained both of them prisoners in the hands of their enemies. The appearances of victory remained with Guise; but the admiral, whose fate it ever was to be defeated, and still to rise more terrible after his misfortunes, collected the remains of the army, and inspiring his own unconquerable courage and constancy in-

[t] Forbes, p. 230. Davila, lib. iii.

to

CHAP. XL.

1563. to every breaſt, kept them in a body, and ſubdued ſome of the moſt conſiderable places in Normandy. Elizabeth, the better to ſupport his cauſe, ſent him a new ſupply of an hundred thouſand crowns; and offered, if he could find merchants to lend him the money, to give her bond for another hundred thouſand [u].

1563. 12 January. A Parliament. THE expences incurred by aſſiſting the French hugonots had emptied the Queen's exchequer, notwithſtanding her extreme frugality; and in order to obtain ſupply, ſhe found herſelf under a neceſſity of ſummoning a Parliament: An expedient to which ſhe never voluntarily had recourſe. A little before the meeting of this aſſembly, ſhe had fallen into a dangerous illneſs, the ſmall pox; and as her life, during ſome time, was deſpaired of, the people became the more ſenſible of the perilous condition in which they ſtood, on account of the uncertainty which, in caſe of her deceaſe, attended the ſucceſſion of the crown. The partizans of the Queen of Scots, and thoſe of the houſe of Suffolk, already divided the nation into factions; and every one foreſaw, that, tho' it might be poſſible at preſent to determine the controverſy by law, yet, if the throne was vacant, nothing but the ſword would be able to fix a ſucceſſor. The commons, therefore, on the very opening of the ſeſſion, voted an addreſs to the Queen; in which, after enumerating the dangers attending a broken and doubtful ſucceſſion, and mentioning the evils which their fathers had experienced from the contending titles of York and Lancaſter, they entreated the Queen to put an end to their apprehenſions, by chooſing ſome huſband, whom, they promiſed, whoever he was, gratefully to receive, and faithfully to ſerve, honour, and obey: Or if ſhe had entertained any reluctance to the married ſtate, they deſired, that the lawful ſucceſſor might be named, or

[u] Forbes, vol. II. p. 322, 347.

at

1563.

at leaſt appointed by act of parliament. They remarked, that during all the reigns which had paſſed ſince the conqueſt, the nation had never before been ſo unhappy, as not to know the perſon who, in caſe of the ſovereign's death, was legally entitled to the ſucceſſion. And they obſerved, that the certain and fixed order which took place in the inheritance of the French monarchy, was one chief ſource of the uſual tranquillity, as well as of the happineſs of that kingdom [x].

THIS ſubject, tho' extremely intereſting to the nation, was very little agreeable to the Queen; and ſhe was ſenſible, that great difficulties would attend every deciſion. A declaration in favour of the Queen of Scots, would form a ſettlement perfectly legal; becauſe that princeſs was commonly allowed to poſſeſs the right of blood, and the excluſion given by Henry's will, deriving its weight chiefly from an act of parliament, would loſe all authority whenever the Queen and Parliament had made a new ſettlement, and reſtored the Scottiſh line to their place in the ſucceſſion. But ſhe dreaded the giving encouragement to the catholics her ſecret enemies, by this declaration. She was ſenſible, that every heir was, in ſome degree, a rival; much more one who poſſeſſed a claim for the preſent poſſeſſion of the crown, and who had already advanced, in a very open manner, theſe dangerous pretenſions. The great power of Mary, both from the favour of the catholic princes, and her connections with the houſe of Guiſe, not to mention the force and ſituation of Scotland, was well known to her; and ſhe ſaw no ſecurity that that princeſs, if fortified by a ſure proſpect of ſucceſſion, would not again revive claims which ſhe could never yet be prevailed on formally

[x] Sir Simon Dewes's Journ. p. 81.

to

CHAP. XI. 1563.

to relinquish. On the other hand, the title of the house of Suffolk was supported only by the more zealous protestants; and it was very doubtful, whether even a parliamentary declaration in its favour would bestow on it such validity as to give satisfaction to the people. The republican part of the constitution had not as yet acquired such an ascendant as to controul, in any degree, the ideas of hereditary right; and as the legality of Henry's will was still disputed, tho' founded on the utmost authority which a Parliament could bestow; who could be assured, that a more recent act would be acknowleged to have any greater force or validity? In the frequent revolutions which had of late taken place, the right of blood had still prevailed over religious prejudices; and the nation had ever shewed itself disposed rather to change its faith than the order of succession. Even many Protestants declared themselves in favour of Mary's claim of inheritance[y]; and nothing would endanger more general disgust, than to see the Queen openly, and without reserve, take party against it. That princess also, finding herself injured in so sensible a point, would thenceforth act as a declared enemy; and uniting together her foreign and domestic friends, the partizans of her present title and of her eventual succession, would soon bring matters to extremity against the public establishment. The Queen, weighing all these inconveniences, which were great and urgent, was determined to keep both parties in awe, by maintaining still an ambiguous conduct; and she chose rather that the people should run the hazard of contingent events, than that herself should visibly endanger her throne, by employing expedients, which, at best, did not give entire security to the nation. She made, therefore, an evasive answer to the applications of the commons; and when the house, at the end of the

[y] Keith, p. 322.

sessions,

ſeſſions, deſired, by the mouth of their ſpeaker, farther ſatisfaction on that head, ſhe could not be prevailed on to make her reply more explicite. She only told them, contrary to her declarations in the beginning of her reign, that ſhe had fixed no abſolute reſolution againſt marriage; and ſhe added, that the difficulties with which the queſtion of the ſucceſſion was attended, were ſo great, that ſhe would be contented, for their ſake, to remain ſome time longer in this vale of miſery; and never ſhould depart this life with ſatisfaction, till ſhe had laid ſome ſolid foundation for their future ſecurity[z].

THE moſt remarkable law paſſed this ſeſſion was that which bore the title of *Aſſurance of the Queen's royal power over all ſtates and ſubjects within her dominions*[a]. By this act, the aſſerting twice by writing, word, or deed, the pope's authority, was ſubjected to the penalties of treaſon. All perſons in holy orders were bound to take the oath of ſupremacy; as alſo, all who were advanced to any degrees, either in the univerſities or in common law; all ſchoolmaſters, officers in court, or members of Parliament: And the penalty of their ſecond refuſal was treaſon. The firſt offence in both caſes, was puniſhed by baniſhment and forfeiture. This rigorous ſtatute, which involved a real, tho' not general, perſecution, and of the worſt kind too, as it made a ſcrutiny into mens ſecret ſentiments, was not extended to any of the degree of a baron; becauſe it was not ſuppoſed, that the Queen could entertain any doubt with regard to the fidelity of perſons poſſeſſed of ſuch high dignity. The lord Montacute made vigorous oppoſition to this bill; and aſſerted, in favour of the catholics, that they diſputed not, they preached not, they diſobeyed not the Queen, they cauſed no

[z] Sir Simon D' Ewes's Journal, p. 75. [a] 5 Eliz. c. 1.

CHAP. XL. 1563.

trouble no tumults among the people[b]. It is, however, probable, that ſome ſuſpicions of their ſecret conſpiracies had made the Queen and Parliament increaſe their rigour againſt them; tho' it is alſo more than probable, that they were miſtaken in the nature of the remedy.

THERE was likewiſe another point in which the Parliament, this ſeſſion, ſhewed more the goodneſs of their intention than the ſoundneſs of their judgment. They paſſed a law againſt fond and fantaſtical prophecies, which had been obſerved to ſeduce the people into rebellion and diſorder[c]: But at the ſame time they enacted a ſtatute which was moſt likely to increaſe theſe and ſuch like ſuperſtitions: It was levelled againſt conjurations, enchantments, and witchcrafts[d]. Witchcraft and hereſy are two crimes which commonly increaſe by puniſhment, and never are ſo effectually ſuppreſſed as by being totally neglected. After the Parliament had granted the Queen a ſupply of one ſubſidy and two fifteenths, it was finiſhed by a prorogation. The convocation likewiſe voted the Queen a ſubſidy of ſix ſhillings in the pound, payable in three years.

WHILE the Engliſh parties exerted theſe calm efforts againſt each other, in parliamentary votes and debates, the French factions, enflamed to the higheſt degree of animoſity, continued that cruel war which their intemperate zeal, actuated by the ambition of their leaders, had kindled in the kingdom. The admiral was ſucceſsful in reducing the towns of Normandy which held for the King; but he frequently complained, that the numerous garriſon of Havre remained totally unactive, and was not employed in any military operations againſt the common enemy. The Queen, in taking poſſeſſion of that place, had publiſhed a ma-

[b] Strype, vol. I. p. 260. [c] 5 Eliz. c. 15. [d] Ibid. c. 16.

nifeſto,

CHAP. XL.

1563.

nifeſto [e], in which ſhe pretended, that her concern for the French King's intereſt had engaged her in that meaſure, and that her ſole intention was to oppoſe her enemies of the houſe of Guiſe, who held their prince in captivity, and employed his power to the deſtruction of his beſt and moſt faithful ſubjects. It was chiefly her deſire to preſerve appearances, joined to the great frugality of her temper, which made her, at this critical juncture, keep her ſoldiers in garriſon, and reſtrain them from committing farther hoſtilities upon the enemy [f]. The duke of Guiſe, meanwhile, was aiming a mortal blow at the power of the hugonots; and had commenced the ſiege of Orleans, which was commanded by Andelot, and where the conſtable was detained priſoner. He had the proſpect of ſpeedy ſucceſs in this undertaking; when he was aſſaſſinated by Poltrot, a young gentleman, whoſe zeal, inſtigated (as it is pretended, tho' without any certain foundation) by the admiral and Beza, a famous preacher, led him to attempt that criminal enterpriſe. The death of this gallant prince was a very ſenſible loſs to the catholic party; and tho' the cardinal of Lorraine, his brother, ſtill ſupported the intereſts of the family, the danger of their progreſs appeared much leſs imminent, both to Queen Elizabeth and to the French proteſtants. The union, therefore, between theſe allies, which had been cemented by their common fears, began thenceforth to be leſs intimate; and the leaders of the hugonots were perſuaded to hearken to terms of accommodation. Condé and Montmorency held conferences for ſettling the peace; and as they were both of them impatient to relieve themſelves from captivity, they ſoon came to an agreement with regard to the conditions. The character of the Queen-regent, whoſe ends were always violent, but who endeavoured, by ſubtilty and

[e] Forbes, vol. II. [f] Ibid, p. 276, 277.

policy,

CHAP. XI. 1563.

policy, rather than force, to attain them, led her to embrace any plauſible terms; and in ſpite of the admiral's proteſtations, whoſe ſagacity could eaſily diſcover the treachery of the court, the articles of agreement were finally ſettled between the parties. A toleration, under ſome reſtrictions, was anew granted to the proteſtants; a general amneſty was publiſhed; Condé was reinſtated in his offices and governments; and after money was advanced for the payment of arrears due to the German troops, they were diſmiſſed the kingdom.

By the agreement between Elizabeth and the prince of Condé, it had been ſtipulated[g], that neither party ſhould conclude peace without the conſent of the other; but this article was at preſent but little regarded by the leaders of the French proteſtants. They only comprehended her ſo far in the treaty, as to obtain a promiſe, that, on her relinquiſhing Havre, her charges and the money which ſhe had advanced them, ſhould be repaid her by the King of France, and that Calais, on the expiration of the term, ſhould be reſtored to her. But ſhe diſdained to accept of theſe terms; and thinking the poſſeſſion of Havre a much better pledge for the obtaining her purpoſe, ſhe ſent Warwic orders to prepare himſelf againſt an attack from the now united power of the French monarchy.

The earl of Warwic, who commanded a garriſon of ſix thouſand men, beſide ſeven hundred pioniers, had no ſooner got poſſeſſion of Havre, than he employed every means for putting it in a poſture of defence[h]; and after expelling the French from the town, he encouraged his ſoldiers to make the moſt deſperate defence againſt the enemy. The conſtable commanded the French army; the Queen-regent herſelf, and the

g Forbes, vol. II. p. 79. h Ibid. p. 158.

King,

CHAP. XL. 1563.

King, were present in the camp; even the prince of Condé joined the King's forces, and gave countenance to this enterprise; the admiral and Andelot alone, who still desired to preserve Elizabeth's friendship, kept at a distance, and prudently refused to join their antient enemies in an attack upon their allies.

By the force, and dispositions, and situation of both sides, it was expected, that the siege would be attended with some very memorable event; yet did France make a much easier acquisition of this important place, than was at first apprehended. The plague crept in among the English soldiers; and being encreased by their fatigue and bad diet (for they were but ill supplied with provisions[i]) it committed such ravages, that sometimes a hundred men a day died of it, and there remained not at last fifteen hundred in a condition to do duty[k]. The French, meeting with such feeble resistance, carried on their attacks successfully; and having made two breaches, each of them sixty feet wide, they prepared for a general assault, which must have terminated in the slaughter of the whole garrison[l]. Warwic, who had frequently warned the English council of the danger, and who had loudly demanded a supply of men and provisions, found himself obliged to capitulate, and to content himself with the liberty of withdrawing his garrison. The articles were no sooner signed, than lord Clinton, the admiral, who had been detained by contrary winds, appeared off the harbour with a reinforcement of three thousand men; and found the place surrendered to the enemy. To encrease the misfortune, the infected army brought the plague with them into England, where it swept off great multitudes, particularly in the city of Lon-

Havre lost, 28th July.

i Forbes, p. 377, 493.
k Ibid. p. 450, 458.
l Ibid, vol. II. p. 493.

CHAP. XL.

1564.

don. Above twenty thouſand perſons there died of it in one year [m].

ELIZABETH, whoſe uſual vigour and foreſight had not appeared in theſe tranſactions, was now glad to compound matters; and as the Queen-regent deſir'd to obtain leizure, in order to prepare meaſures for the extermination of the hugonots, ſhe readily hearkened to any reaſonable terms of accommodation with England [n]. It was agreed, that the hoſtages, which the French had given for the reſtitution of Calais, ſhould be reſtored for 220,000 crowns; and that both ſides ſhould retain all their claims and pretenſions.

28 April.

Scotch affairs.

THE peace ſtill continued with Scotland; and even a cordial friendſhip ſeemed to have been cemented between Elizabeth and Mary. Theſe princeſſes made profeſſion of the moſt entire affection; wrote amicable letters every week to each other; and had adopted, in all appearance, the ſentiments as well as ſtyle, of ſiſters. Elizabeth puniſhed one Hales, who had compoſed a book againſt Mary's title [o]; and as the lord keeper, Bacon, was thought to have encouraged Hales in this undertaking, he fell under her diſpleaſure, and it was with ſome difficulty that he was able to give her ſatisfaction, and recover her good opinion [p]. The

[m] This year the council of Trent was diſſolved, which had ſat from 1545. The publication of its decrees excited anew the general ferment in Europe; while the catholics endeavoured to enforce the acceptance of them, and the proteſtants rejected them. The religious controverſies were too far advanced to expect any conviction would reſult from the decrees of this council. It is the only general council which has been held in an age truly learned and inquiſitive; and as the hiſtory of it has been wrote with great penetration and judgment, it has tended very much to expoſe clerical uſurpations and intrigues, and may ſerve us as a ſpecimen of more antient councils. No one expects to ſee another general council, till the decay of learning and the progreſs of ignorance ſhall again fit mankind for theſe great impoſtures.

[n] Davila, lib. 3. [o] Keith, p. 252. [p] Ibid, p. 253.

two

two Queens had agreed in the foregoing ſummer to an interview at York[q]; in order to remove all difficulties with regard to Mary's ratification of the treaty of Edinburgh, and to conſider of the proper method for ſettling the ſucceſſion of England: But as Elizabeth carefully avoided touching on this delicate ſubject, ſhe employed a pretence of the wars in France, which, ſhe ſaid, would detain her in London; and ſhe delayed till next year the intended interview. It is alſo probable, that, being well acquainted with the beauty and addreſs and accompliſhments of Mary, ſhe did not choſe to ſtand the compariſon with regard to thoſe exterior qualities, in which ſhe was eclipſed by her rival; and was unwilling, that a princeſs, who had already made great progreſs in the eſteem and affections of the Engliſh, ſhould have a farther opportunity of encreaſing the number of her partizans. CHAP. XL. 1564.

MARY's cloſe connexions with the houſe of Guiſe, and her devoted attachment to her uncles, by whom ſhe had been educated and protected, was the ground of juſt and unſurmountable jealouſy to Elizabeth, who regarded them as her mortal and declared enemies, and was well acquainted with their dangerous character and ambitious projects. They had made offer of their niece to Don Carlos, Philip's ſon; to the King of Sweeden, the King of Navarre, the archduke Charles, the duke of Ferrara, the cardinal of Bourbon, who had only taken deacons orders, from which he might eaſily be abſolved; and they were ready to marry her to any one, who could ſtrengthen their intereſts, or give inquietude and diſturbance to Elizabeth[r]. Elizabeth on her part was equally vigilant to prevent the execution of their ſchemes, and was particularly anxious, leſt Mary ſhould form any powerful foreign

[q] Haynes, p. 388. [r] Forbes, vol. II. p. 287. Strype, vol. I. p. 400.

CHAP. XL.

1564.

alliance, which might tempt her to revive her pretenſions to the crown, and to invade the kingdom on the ſide where it was weakeſt and lay moſt expoſed [s]. As ſhe believed, that the marriage with the archduke Charles was the one moſt likely to have place, ſhe uſed every expedient to prevent it; and beſides remonſtrating againſt it to Mary herſelf, ſhe endeavoured to draw off the archduke from that purſuit, by giving him ſome reaſon to hope for ſucceſs in his pretenſions to herſelf, and by inviting him to a renewal of the former treaty of marriage [t]. She always told the Queen of Scots, that nothing would ſatisfy her but her eſpouſing ſome Engliſh nobleman, who would remove all grounds of jealouſy, and cement the union between the two kingdoms; and ſhe offered on this condition to have her title examined, and to declare her the ſucceſſor to the crown [u]. After keeping the matter in theſe general terms during a twelvemonth, ſhe at laſt named the lord Robert Dudley, now created earl of Leiceſter, as the perſon on whom ſhe deſired that Mary's choice ſhould fall.

THE earl of Leiceſter, the great and powerful favourite of Elizabeth, poſſeſſed all thoſe exterior qualities, which are naturally alluring to the fair ſex; a handſome perſon, a polite addreſs, an inſinuating behaviour; and by means of theſe acompliſhments, he had been able to blind even the penetration of Elizabeth, and conceal from her the great defects, or rather odious vices, which attended his character. He was proud, inſolent, intereſted, ambitious; without honour, without generoſity, without humanity; and attoned not for theſe bad qualities, by any ſuch abilities or courage, as could fit him for that high truſt and confidence with which ſhe always honoured him.

[s] Keith, p. 247, 284. [t] Melvil, p. 41. [u] Keith, p. 243, 249, 259, 265.

Her

CHAP. XL.

1564.

Her conſtant and declared attachment to him had very naturally emboldened him to aſpire to her bed; and in order to make way for theſe nuptials, he was univerſally believed to have murdered, in a barbarous manner, his wife, the heireſs of one Robeſart. The propoſal of eſpouſing Mary was by no means agreeable to him; and he always aſcribed it to the contrivance of Cecil, his enemy; who intented by that artifice to make him loſe the friendſhip of Mary from the temerity of his pretenſions, and that of Elizabeth from jealouſy of his attachments to another woman [x]. The Queen herſelf had not any ſerious intention of effecting this marriage; but, as ſhe was deſirous, that the Queen of Scots ſhould never take any huſband, ſhe named a man, who ſhe believed, was not likely to be accepted of; and ſhe hoped, by that means, to gain time, and elude the project of any other alliance. The earl of Leiceſter was too great a favourite to be parted with; and, when Mary, allured by the proſpect of being declared ſucceſſor to the crown, ſeemed at laſt to hearken to Elizabeth's propoſal, this princeſs receded from her former offers, and withdrew the bait, which ſhe had formerly thrown out to her rival [y]. This duplicity of conduct, joined to ſome appearance of an imperious ſuperiority, aſſumed by her, had drawn a peeviſh letter from Mary; and the ſeemingly amicable correſpondence of the two Queens was, during ſome time, interrupted. In order to make up this breach, the Queen of Scots diſpatched Sir James Melvil to London; who has given us a very particular account of his negociation.

MELVIL was an agreeable courtier, a man of addreſs and converſation; and it was recommended to him by his miſtreſs, that, beſides grave reaſonings

x Camden, p. 396. Strype, vol. I. p. 414.

y Keith, p. 269, 270. Appendix, p. 158.

CHAP. XL. 1564.

concerning politics and ſtate-affairs, he ſhould introduce more entertaining topics of converſation, ſuitable to the ſprightly character of Elizabeth; and ſhould endeavour by that means to inſinuate himſelf into her confidence. He ſucceeded ſo well, that he threw that artful princeſs entirely off her guard [z], and brought her to diſcover the bottom of her heart, full of all thoſe levities and follies and ideas of rivalſhip, which poſſeſs the youngeſt and moſt frivolous of her ſex. He talked to her of his travels, and forgot not to mention the different dreſſes of the ladies in different countries, and the particular advantages of each, in ſetting off the beauties of the ſhape and perſon. The Queen ſaid that ſhe had dreſſes of all countries, and ſhe took care thenceforth to meet the ambaſſador every day apparelled in a different habit: Sometimes ſhe was dreſſed in the Engliſh garb, ſometimes in the French, ſometimes in the Italian; and ſhe aſked him, which of them became her moſt. He anſwered, the Italian; a reply, that he knew would be agreeable to her, becauſe that mode ſhowed her flowing locks; which, he remarked, tho' they were more red than yellow, ſhe fancied to be the fineſt in the world. She deſired to know of him what was reputed the beſt colour of hair: She aſked whether his Queen's hair or hers was beſt: She even enquired which of them he eſteemed the faireſt perſon: A very delicate queſtion, and which he prudently eluded, by ſaying that her majeſty was the faireſt perſon in England, and his miſtreſs in Scotland. She next demanded which of them was talleſt: He replied, his queen: Then, ſaid Elizabeth, ſhe is too tall: For I myſelf am of a juſt ſtature. Having learned from him, that his miſtreſs ſometimes recreated herſelf by playing on the harpſicord, an inſtrument on which ſhe herſelf excelled,

[z] Haynes, p. 447.

CHAP. XL.

1564.

excelled, she gave orders to lord Hunsdon, that he should lead him as it were casually, into an apartment, where he might hear her perform; and when Melvil, as if ravished with the harmony, broke into the Queen's apartment, she pretended to be displeased at his intrusion; but still took care to ask him whether he thought Mary or her the best performer on that instrument[a]. From the whole of her behaviour, Melvil thought he might, on his return, assure his mistress that she had no reason ever to expect any cordial friendship from Elizabeth, and that all her professions of amity were full of falshood and dissimulation.

After two years had been spent in evasions and artifices[b], Mary's subjects and counsellors, and probably herself, began to think it full time that some alliance were concluded; and the lord Darnley, son to the earl of Lenox, was the person, in whom most mens opinions and wishes centered. He was Mary's cousin-german, by the lady Margaret Douglas, niece to Harry the eighth, and daughter to the earl of Angus, by Margaret, Queen of Scotland. He had been born and educated in England, where the earl of Lenox had constantly resided, ever since he had been banished by the prevailing power of the house of Hamilton; and as Darnley was now in his twentieth year, and was a very comely person, tall and delicately shaped, it was hoped, that he might soon render himself agreeable to the Queen of Scots. He was also by his father a branch of the same family with herself; and would, in espousing her, preserve the royal dignity in the house of Stuart: He was, after her, next heir to the crown of England; and those who pretended to exclude her on account of her being a foreigner, had endeavoured to recommend his title, and

[a] Melvil. p. 49, 50. [b] Keith, p. 264.

CHAP. XL. 1564.

give it the preference. It ſeemed no inconſiderable advantage, that ſhe could, by marrying him, unite both their claims; and as he was by birth an Engliſhman, and could not by his power or alliances give any ground of ſuſpicion to Elizabeth, it was hoped that the propoſal of this marriage would not be unacceptable to that jealous princeſs.

ELIZABETH was well informed of theſe intentions of the court of Edinburgh [c]; and was ſecretly not diſpleaſed with the projected marriage between Darnley and the Queen of Scots [d]. She would rather have wiſhed, that Mary had continued for ever in a ſingle life; but finding little probability of rendering this ſcheme effectual, ſhe was ſatisfied with a choice, which freed her at once from the dread of a foreign alliance, and from the neceſſity of parting with Leiceſter, her favourite. In order to pave the way to Darnley's marriage, ſhe ſecretly deſired Mary to invite Lenox into Scotland, to reverſe his attainder, and to reſtore him to his honours and fortune [e]. And when her requeſt was complied with, ſhe took care, in order to preſerve the friendſhip of the Hamiltons and her other partizans in Scotland, to blame openly this conduct of Mary [f]. Hearing that the negotiation for Darnley's marriage proceeded apace, ſhe gave that nobleman permiſſion, on his firſt application, to follow his father into Scotland: But no ſooner did ſhe learn, that the Queen of Scots was taken with his figure and perſon, and that all meaſures were fixed for eſpouſing him, than ſhe exclaimed againſt the marriage; ſent Throcmorton to order Darnley immediately upon his allegiance, to return into England; threw the counteſs of Lenox and her ſecond ſon into the Tower, where they ſuffered a very rigorous confinement;

[c] Keith, p. 261. [d] Keith, p. 280, 282. Jebb, vol. II. p. 46.
[e] Keith, p. 255, 259, 272. [f] Melvil, p. 42.

ſeized

1565. 28th July.

ſeized all Lenox's Engliſh eſtate; and, tho' it was impoſſible for her to aſſign one ſingle reaſon of her diſpleaſure [g], ſhe menaced, and proteſted, and complained, as if ſhe had ſuffered the moſt grievous injury in the world.

THE politics of Elizabeth, tho' judicious, were uſually full of duplicity and artifice; but never more ſo than in her tranſactions with the Queen of Scots, where there entered ſo many little paſſions and narrow jealouſies, that ſhe durſt not avow to the world the reaſons of her conduct, ſcarcely to her miniſters, and ſcarcely even to herſelf. But beſides a womaniſh rivalſhip and envy againſt the marriage of this princeſs, ſhe had ſome motives of intereſt for feigning a diſpleaſure on the preſent occaſion. It ſerved her as a pretence for refuſing to acknowledge Mary's title to the ſucceſſion of England, a point to which ſhe was determined never to conſent. And it was uſeful to her for a purpoſe, ſtill more unfriendly and dangerous, for encouraging the diſcontents and rebellion of the Scottiſh nobility and eccleſiaſtics [h].

NOTHING can be more unhappy for a people than to be governed by a ſovereign, who is attached to a religion different from that which is eſtabliſhed; and it is ſcarce poſſible, that a mutual confidence can ever, in ſuch a ſituation, have place between the prince and his ſubjects. Mary's conduct had been hitherto, in every reſpect, unexceptionable, and even laudable; yet had ſhe not made ſuch progreſs in acquiring popularity, as might have been expected from her gracious deportment and agreeable accompliſhments. Suſpicions every moment prevailed on account of her attachment to the catholic faith, and eſpecially to her uncles, the open and avowed promoters of the ſcheme for exterminating the profeſſors

[g] Keith, p. 274, 275. [h] Keith, p. 290.

CHAP. XL.

1565.

of the reformed religion throughout all Europe. She ſtill refuſed to ratify the acts of Parliament, which had eſtabliſhed the reformation; ſhe made attempts for reſtoring to the catholic biſhops ſome part of their civil juriſdiction [i]; and ſhe wrote a letter to the council of Trent, in which, beſides profeſſing her attachment to the catholic faith, ſhe took notice of her title to ſucceed to the crown of England, and expreſſed her hopes of being able, in ſome period, to bring back all her dominions to the boſom of the church [k]. The zealots among the proteſtants were not wanting, in their turn, to practiſe inſults upon her, which tended ſtill more to alienate her from their faith. A law was enacted, making it capital, even on the firſt offence, to ſay maſs any where, except in the Queen's chappel [l]; and it was with great difficulty that even this ſmall indulgence was granted her: The general aſſembly importuned her anew to change her religion, to renounce the blaſphemous idolatry of the maſs, with the tyranny of the Roman Antichriſt, and to embrace the true religion of Chriſt Jeſus [m]. As ſhe anſwered with temper, that ſhe was not yet convinced of the falſhood of her religion or the impiety of the maſs; and that her apoſtacy would loſe her the friendſhip of her allies on the continent; they replied, by aſſuring her, that their religion was undoubtedly the ſame which had been revealed by Jeſus Chriſt, which had been preached by the apoſtles, and which had been embraced by the faithful in the primitive ages; that neither the religion of Turks, Jews, nor Papiſts was built on ſo ſolid a foundation as theirs; that they alone, of all the various ſpecies of religioniſts ſpread over the face of the earth, were ſo happy as to be poſſeſſed of the truth; that thoſe who hear, or rather

[i] Spotſwood, p. 198. [k] Father Paul, lib. vii. [l] Keith, p. 268. [m] Keith, p. 545. Knox, p. 374.

who

CHAP. XL.

1565.

who gaze on the maſs, allow ſacrilege, pronounce blaſphemy, and commit moſt abominable idolatry; and that the friendſhip of the King of kings was preferable to all the confederacies and alliances in the world [n].

The marriage of the Queen of Scots had kindled afreſh the zeal of the reformers, becauſe the family of Lenox was believed to adhere to the catholic faith; and tho' Darnley, who now bore the name of King Henry, went often to the eſtabliſhed church, he could not, by this exterior compliance, gain the confidence and regard of the eccleſiaſtics. They rather laid hold of this opportunity to inſult him to his face; and Knox ſcrupled not to tell him from the pulpit, that God, for puniſhment of the offences and ingratitude of the people, was wont to commit the rule over them to boys and women [o]. The populace of Edinburgh, inſtigated by ſuch doctrine, began to meet and to aſſociate themſelves againſt the government [p]. But what threatned with more immediate danger Mary's authority, were the diſcontents which prevailed among ſome of the principal nobility.

The Queen of Scots marries the earl of Darnley.

The duke of Chatelrault was diſpleaſed with the reſtoration, and ſtill more with the aggrandizement, of the family of Lenox, his hereditary enemies; and entertained fears leſt his eventual ſucceſſion to the crown of Scotland ſhould be excluded by his rival, who had formerly advanced ſome pretenſions to it. The earl of Murray found his credit at court much diminiſhed by the intereſt of Lenox, and his ſon; and began to apprehend the revocation of ſome conſiderable grants which he had obtained from Mary's liberality. The earls of Argyle, Rothes, and Glencairne, the lords Boyde and Ochiltry, Kirkaldy of

[n] Keith, 550, 551, [o] Ibid. p. 546. Knox, p. 381.
[p] Knox, p. 377.

Grange,

CHAP. XL. 1565.

Grange, Pittarow, were inſtigated by like motives; and as theſe were the perſons who had moſt zealouſly promoted the reformation, they were diſguſted to find that the Queen's favour was entirely engroſſed by a new cabal, the earls of Bothwel, Athole, Sutherland, and Huntley; men who were eſteemed either lukewarm in religious controverſy, or inclined to the catholic party. The ſame ground of diſcontent, which, in other courts, is the ſcource of intrigue, faction, and oppoſition, commonly produced in Scotland, either projects of aſſaſſination, or of rebellion; and beſides mutual accuſations of the former kind, which it is difficult to clear up [q], the diſcontented lords, as ſoon as they ſaw the Queen's marriage entirely reſolved on, entered into a confederacy for taking arms againſt their ſovereign. They met at Stirling; pretended an anxious concern for the ſecurity of religion; framed engagements for mutual defence; and made applications to Elizabeth for aſſiſtance and protection [r]. That princeſs, after publiſhing the expreſſions of her diſpleaſure againſt the marriage, had ſecretly ordered her ambaſſadors Randolf and Throcmorton, to give in her name ſome promiſes of ſupport to the malecontents; and had even ſent them a ſupply of ten thouſand pounds, to enable them to begin their inſurrection [s].

MARY was no ſooner informed of the meeting at Stirling, and the movements of the lords, than ſhe

[q] It appears, however, from Randolf's Letters, Keith, p. 290, that ſome offers had been made to that miniſter, of ſeizing Lenox and Darnley, and delivering them into Queen Elizabeth's hands. Melvil confirms the ſame ſtory, and ſays, that the deſign was acknowledged by the conſpirators. P. 56. This ſerves to juſtify the account given by the Queen's party of the Raid of Baith, as it is called. See farther Goodall, vol. II. p. 358. The other conſpiracy, of which Murray complained, is much more uncertain, and is founded on very doubtful evidence.

[r] Keith, p. 293, 294, 300, 301. [s] Knox, p. 380. Keith, Appen. p. 164. Anderſon, vol. III. p. 194.

ſummoned

CHAP. XL. 1565.

ſummoned them to appear at court, in order to anſwer for their conduct; and having levied ſome forces to execute the laws, ſhe obliged the malecontents to leave the low country, and take ſhelter in Argyleſhire. That ſhe might more effectually cut off all their reſources, ſhe proceeded with the king to Glaſgow, and forced them from their retreat. They appeared at Paiſly in the neighbourhood with about a thouſand horſe; and paſſing the Queen's army, proceeded to Hamilton, and thence to Edinburgh, which they entered without reſiſtance. They expected great reinforcements in this place, from the efforts of Knox and the ſeditious preachers; and they beat their drums, deſiring all men to enliſt, and receive wages for the defence of God's glory[t]. But the nation was in no diſpoſition for rebellion: Mary was eſteemed and beloved: Her marriage was not generally diſagreeable to the people: And the intereſted views of the malecontent lords were ſo well known, that their pretence of zeal for religion had little influence even on the ignorant populace[u]. The King and Queen advanced to Edinburgh at the head of their army: The rebels were obliged to retire into the ſouth; and being purſued by a force which now amounted to eighteen thouſand men[x], they found themſelves under a neceſſity of abandoning their country, and of taking ſhelter in England.

ELIZABETH, when ſhe found the event ſo much to diſappoint her expectations, thought proper to diſown all connections with the Scottiſh malecontents, and to declare every where, that ſhe had never given them any encouragement, or any promiſe of countenance or aſſiſtance. She even carried farther her diſſimulation and hypocriſy. Murray had come to London, with the abbot of Kilwinning, agent for Chatelrault;

[t] Knox. p. 381. [u] Ibid. 380, 385. [x] Ibid. 388.

and

CHAP. XL. 1565.

and ſhe ſeduced them, by ſecret aſſurances of protection, to declare, before the ambaſſadors of France and Spain, that ſhe had no-wiſe contributed to their inſurrection. No ſooner had ſhe extorted this confeſſion from them, than ſhe chaſed them from her preſence, called them unworthy traytors, declared that their deteſtable rebellion was of bad example to all princes, and aſſured them, that as ſhe had hitherto given them no encouragement, ſo they ſhould never thenceforth receive from her any aſſiſtance or protection [y]. Throcmorton alone, whoſe honour was equal to his abilities, could not be prevailed on to conceal the part which he had acted in the enterpriſe of the Scots rebels; and being well appriſed of the uſual character and conduct of Elizabeth, he had had the precaution to obtain an order of council to authorize the engagements which he had been obliged to take with them [z].

THE baniſhed lords, finding themſelves ſo ill uſed by Elizabeth, had recourſe to the clemency of their ſovereign; and after ſome ſollicitation, and ſome profeſſions of ſincere repentance, the duke of Chatelrault obtained his pardon, on condition that he ſhould retire into France. Mary was more implacable againſt the ungrateful earl of Murray, and the other confederates, on whom ſhe threw the chief blame of the enterprize; but as ſhe was continually plied with applications from their friends, and as ſome of her moſt judicious partizans in England thought, that nothing would more promote her intereſts in that kingdom, than the gentle treatment of men ſo celebrated for their zeal againſt the catholic religion; ſhe agreed to give way to her natural temper, which inclined not to ſeverity, and ſhe ſeemed determined to reſtore them to her favour [a]. In this interval, Rambouillet arrived as ambaſſador

y Melvil, p. 57. Knox, p. 388. Keith, p. 319. Crawford, p. 62, 63.
z Melvil, p. 60. a Ibid, p. 59, 60, 61, 62, 63. Keith, p. 322.

from France, and brought her advice from her uncle, the cardinal of Lorraine, to whoſe opinion ſhe always paid an extreme deference, by no means to pardon theſe proteſtant leaders, who had been engaged in a rebellion againſt her [b].

THE two religions, in France, as well as in other parts of Europe, were rather irritated than ſatiated with their mutual violences; and the peace granted to the hugonots, as had been foreſeen by the admiral, was intended only to lull them aſleep, and prepare the way for their final and abſolute deſtruction. The Queen-regent made a pretence of travelling thro' the kingdom, in order to viſit the provinces, and correct all the abuſes ariſing from the late war; and after having held ſome conferences on the frontiers with the duke of Lorraine, and the duke of Savoy, ſhe came to Bayonne, where ſhe was met by her daughter, the Queen of Spain, and the duke of Alva. Nothing appeared in the congreſs of theſe two ſplendid courts, but gaiety, feſtivity, love, and joy; but amidſt theſe ſmiling appearances were ſecretly fabricated ſchemes the moſt bloody, and the moſt deſtructive to the repoſe of mankind, which had ever been thought of in any age or nation. No leſs than a total and univerſal extermination of the proteſtants by fire and ſword, was concerted by Philip and Catherine of Medicis; and Alva, agreeable to his fierce and ſanguinary diſpoſition, adviſed the Queen-regent to commence the execution of this project, by the immediate maſſacre of all the leaders of the hugonots [c]. But that princeſs, tho' equally hardened againſt every humane ſentiment, would not forego this opportunity of diſplaying her wit and refined politics; and ſhe propoſed, rather by treachery and diſſimulation, which ſhe called addreſs, to lead the Proteſtants into the ſnare, and never to

[b] Keith, p. 325. Melvil, p. 63. [c] Davila, lib. iii.

draw

CHAP. XL.

1565. draw the ſword till they were totally diſabled from reſiſtance. The cardinal of Lorraine, whoſe character bore a greater affinity to that of Alva, was a chief author of this barbarous aſſociation againſt the reformers; and having connected his hopes of ſucceſs with the aggrandizement of his niece, the Queen of Scots, he took care that her meaſures ſhould agree with thoſe violent councils, which were embraced by the other catholic princes. In conſequence of this ſcheme, he turned her from the road of clemency, which ſhe intended to have followed, and made her reſolve on the total ruin of the baniſhed lords[d]. A Parliament was ſummoned to meet at Edinburgh for their forfeiture and attainder; and as the crime of which they had been guilty, was palpable and avowed, no doubt could be entertained but ſentence would be pronounced againſt them. It was by a ſudden and violent accident, which, in the iſſue, brought on the ruin of Mary, that they were ſaved from the rigour of the law.

Confederacy againſt the proteſtants.

1566.

THE marriage of the Queen of Scots with lord Darnley was ſo natural, and ſo inviting in all its circumſtances, that it had been precipitantly agreed to by that princeſs and her council; and while ſhe was allured by his youth, and beauty, and exterior accompliſhments, ſhe had at firſt overlooked the qualities of his mind, which no wiſe correſponded with the excellence of his outward figure. Violent, yet variable in his enterprizes; inſolent, yet credulous and eaſily governed by flatterers; he was devoid of all gratitude, becauſe he thought no favours equal to his merit; and being addicted to low pleaſures, he was equally incapable of all true ſentiments of love and tenderneſs[e]. The Queen of Scots, in the firſt effuſions of her fondneſs,

[d] Melvil, p. 63. Keith's Append. p. 176.
[e] Keith, p. 287. 329. Appen. p. 163.

had

had taken a pleasure in exalting him beyond measure: She had granted him the title of King; she had joined his name with her own in all public acts; she intended to have procured him from the states a matrimonial crown: But having leisure afterwards to remark his weakness and vices, she began to see the danger of her profuse liberality, and was resolved thenceforth to proceed with more reserve in the trust which she should confer upon him. His resentment against this prudent conduct, served but the more to encrease her disgust; and the young prince, enraged at her imagined neglects, pointed his vengeance against every one whom he esteemed the cause of this change in her measures and behaviour. CHAP. XL. 1566.

Murder of Rizzio.

THERE was in the court, one David Rizzio who had of late obtained a very extraordinary degree of confidence and favour with the Queen of Scots. He was a Piedmontese, of mean birth, son to a teacher of music, himself a musician; and finding it difficult to subsist by his art in his own country, he had followed into Scotland an ambassador whom the duke of Savoy sent thither to pay his compliments to Mary, some time after her first arrival. He possessed a good ear, and a tolerable voice; and as that princess found him useful to compleat her band of music, she retained him in her service after the departure of his master. Her secretary for French dispatches having, some time after, fallen under her displeasure, she promoted Rizzio to that office, which gave him frequent opportunities of approaching her person, and insinuating himself into her favour. He was shrewd and sensible, as well as aspiring, much beyond his rank and education; and made so good use of the access which fortune had procured him, that he was soon regarded as the chief confident and even minister of the Queen.

CHAP. XL.

1566. He was counſulted on all occaſions; no favours could be obtained but by his interceſſion; all ſuitors were obliged to gain him by preſents and flattery; and the man, inſolent from his new exaltation, as well as rapacious in his acquiſitions, ſoon drew on himſelf the hatred of the nobility, and of the whole kingdom[f]. He had at firſt employed his credit to promote Darnley's marriage; and a firm friendſhip ſeemed to be eſtabliſhed between them: But on the ſubſequent change of the Queen's ſentiments, it was eaſy for Henry's friends to perſuade him, that Rizzio was the real author of her indifference, and even to rouze in his mind jealouſies of a more dangerous nature. The favourite was of a diſagreeable figure, but was not paſt his youth[g]; and tho' the opinion of his criminal correſpondence with Mary might ſeem of itſelf unreaſonable, if not abſurd, a ſuſpicious huſband could find no other means of accounting for that laviſh and imprudent kindneſs, with which ſhe honoured him. The rigid auſterity of the eccleſiaſtics, who could admit of no freedoms, contributed to ſpread this opinion among the people; and as Rizzio was univerſally believed to be a penſionary of the pope, and to be deeply engaged in all ſchemes againſt the proteſtants, any ſtory to his and Mary's diſadvantage, received an eaſy credit among the zealots of that communion.

Rizzio, who had connected his intereſt with the Roman catholics, was the declared enemy of the baniſhed lords; and by promoting the violent proſecu-

[f] Keith, p. 282. 302. Crawford's Memoirs, p. 5. Spotſwood, p. 193.

[g] Buchanan confeſſes he was ugly; but it may be inferred, from the narration of that author, that he was young. He ſays, that on the return of the duke of Savoy to Turin, Rizzio was *in adoleſcentiæ vigore*; in the vigour of youth. Now that event happened only a few years before. Lib. xvii. cap. 44.

tion

CHAP. XL. 1566.

tion againſt them, had expoſed himſelf to the animoſity of their numerous friends and retainers. A ſcheme was alſo thought to be formed for revoking ſome exorbitant grants made during the Queen's minority; and even the nobility, who had ſeized the eccleſiaſtical benefices, began to think themſelves leſs ſecure in the poſſeſſion of them [h]. The earl of Morton, chancellor, was affected by all theſe conſiderations, and ſtill more by a rumour ſpread abroad, that Mary intended to appoint Rizzio chancellor in his place, and to beſtow that dignity on a mean and upſtart foreigner, who was ignorant of the laws and language of the country [i]. So indiſcreet had this princeſs been in her kindneſs to Rizzio, that even that ſtrange report met with credit, and proved a great means of accelerating the ruin of the favourite. Morton, inſinuating himſelf into Henry's confidence, employed all his art to enflame the diſcontent and jealouſy of that prince; and he perſuaded him, that the only means of freeing himſelf from the indignities under which he laboured, was to bring the baſe ſtranger to that fate which he had ſo well merited, and which was ſo paſſionately deſired by the whole nation. George Douglas, natural brother to the counteſs of Lenox, concurred in the ſame advice; and the lords Ruthven and Lindeſey, being conſulted, offered their concurrence in the enterprize; nor was even the earl of Lenox, the King's father, averſe to the deſign [k]. But as theſe conſpirators were well acquainted with Henry's levity, they engaged him to ſign a paper, in which he avowed the undertaking, and promiſed to

[h] Keith, p. 326. Melvil, p. 64. [i] Buchanan, lib. xvii. c. 60. Crawford, p. 6. Spotſwood, p. 194. Knox, p. 393. Jebb, vol. I. p. 436.
[k] Crawford, p. 7.

CHAP. XL. 1566.

protect them againſt every conſequence which might enſue upon the aſſaſſination of Rizzio[l]. All theſe meaſures being fully concerted, a meſſenger was diſpatched to the baniſhed lords, who were hovering near the borders; and they were invited by the King to return to their native country.

9th March.

This deſign, ſo atrocious in itſelf, was rendered ſtill more ſo by the circumſtances which attended its execution. Mary, who was in the ſixth month of her pregnancy, was ſupping in private, and had at table the counteſs of Argyle, her natural ſiſter, with Rizzio, and others of her ſervants. The King entered the room by a private paſſage, and ſtood at the back of Mary's chair: The lord Ruthven, George Douglas, and other conſpirators, being all armed, ruſhed in after him; and the Queen of Scots, terrified with the appearance, demanded of them the reaſon of this rude intruſion. They told her, that they intended no violence againſt her perſon; but meant only to bring that villain, pointing at Rizzio, to his deſerved puniſhment. Rizzio, aware of the danger, ran behind his miſtreſs, and ſeizing her by the waiſt, called aloud to her for protection; while ſhe interpoſed in his behalf, with cries, and menaces, and entreaties. The impatient aſſaſſins, regardleſs of her efforts, ruſhed upon their prey, and by overturning every thing which ſtood in their way, increaſed the horror and confuſion of the ſcene. Douglas, ſeizing Henry's dagger, ſtuck it in the body of Rizzio, who, ſcreaming with fear and agony, was torne from Mary by the other conſpirators, and puſhed into the antichamber, where he was diſpatched with fifty-ſix wounds.[m] The unhappy princeſs, informed of his fate, immediately

[l] Goodall, vol. 1. p. 266. Crawford, p. 7.
[m] Melvil, p. 64. Keith. p. 330, 331. Crawford, p. 9.

dried

CHAP. XL. 1566.

dried her tears, and ſaid, ſhe would weep no more; ſhe would now think of revenge. The inſult, indeed, upon her perſon; the ſtain attempted to be fixed on her honour; the danger to which her life was expoſed, on account of her pregnancy; were injuries ſo atrocious, and ſo complicated, that they ſcarce left room for pardon, even from the greateſt lenity and mercy.

The aſſaſſins, apprehenſive of Mary's reſentment, detained her a priſoner in the palace; and the King diſmiſſed all thoſe who ſeemed willing to attempt her reſcue, by telling them, that nothing was done without his orders, and that he would be careful of the Queen's ſafety. Murray, and the baniſhed lords, appeared two days after; and Mary, whoſe anger was now engroſſed by injuries more recent and violent, was willingly reconciled to them; and ſhe even received he brother with tenderneſs and affection. They obtained an acquital from the Parliament, and were re-inſtated in their honours and fortunes. The accomplices alſo in Rizzio's murder applied to her for a pardon; but ſhe artfully delayed compliance, and perſuaded them, that ſo long as ſhe was detained in cuſtody, and was ſurrounded by guards, any deed which ſhe ſhould ſign, would have no force nor validity. Meanwhile ſhe had gained the confidence of her huſband, by her perſuaſion and careſſes; and no ſooner were the guards withdrawn, than ſhe engaged him to eſcape with her in the night time, and take ſhelter in Dunbar. Many of her ſubjects here offered her their aſſiſtance; and Mary, having collected an army, which the conſpirators had no power to reſiſt, advanced to Edinburgh, and obliged them to fly into England, where they lived in great poverty and diſtreſs. They made applications, however, to the earl of Bothwel, a new favourite of Mary's; and that nobleman, deſi-

CHAP. XL. 1566.

ſirous to ſtrengthen his party by the acceſſion of their intereſt, was able to pacify her reſentment, and he ſoon after procured them liberty to return into their own country [n].

THE vengeance of the Queen of Scots was implacable againſt her huſband alone, whoſe perſon was before diſagreeable to her, and who, by his violation of every tie of gratitude and duty, had now drawn on him her higheſt reſentment. She engaged him to diſown all connections with the aſſaſſins, to deny any concurrence in their crime, even to publiſh a proclamation containing a falſehood ſo notorious to the whole world [o]; and having thus made him expoſe himſelf to univerſal contempt, and rendered it impracticable for him ever to acquire the confidence of any party, ſhe threw him off with diſdain and indignation [p]. As if ſhe had been making an eſcape from him, ſhe ſuddenly withdrew to Alloa, a ſeat of the earl of Mar: and when Henry followed her thither, ſhe returned ſuddenly to Edinburgh; and gave him every where the ſtrongeſt proofs of diſpleaſure, and even of antipathy. She encouraged her courtiers in their neglect of him; and ſhe was pleaſed, that his mean equipage, and ſmall train of attendants, ſhould draw on him the contempt of the very populace. He was permitted, however, to have apartments in the caſtle of Edinburgh, which Mary had choſen for the place of her delivery. She there brought forth a ſon; and as this was very important news to England, as well as to Scotland, ſhe immediately diſpatched Sir James Melvil to carry intelligence of the happy event to Elizabeth. Melvil tells us, that that princeſs, the evening of his arrival in London, had given a ball to her court

19th June.

[n] Melvil, p. 75, 76. Keith, p. 334. Knox, p. 398.
[o] Goodall, vol. I. p. 280. Keith Appen. p. 167.
[p] Melvil, p. 66, 67.

at

CHAP. XL.

1566.

at Greenwich, and was displaying all that spirit and alacrity which usually attended her on these occasions: But when the prince of Scotland's birth was notified to her, all her joy was damped: She sunk into melancholy; she reclined her head upon her arm; and complained to some of her attendants, that the Queen of Scots was mother of a fair son, while she was but a barren stock. Next day, however, on the reception of the Scots ambassador, she resumed her former dissimulation, put on a joyful countenance, gave Melvil thanks for the haste he had made in conveying to her the agreeable intelligence, and expressed the utmost cordiality and friendship to her sister [q]. Some time after she dispatched the earl of Bedford, with her kinsman George Cary, son to the lord Hunsdon, in order to officiate at the baptism of the young prince; and she sent by them some magnificent presents to the Queen of Scots.

The birth of a son gave additional zeal to Mary's partizans in England [r]; and even men of all parties began to cry aloud for some settlement of the succession. These humours broke out with great vehemence in a new session of Parliament, which was held after six prorogations. The house of peers, which had hitherto forborne to touch on the delicate point of the succession, here took the lead; and the house of commons soon after imitated the zeal of the lords. Molineux opened the matter in the lower house, and proposed that the question of the succession and that of supply should go hand in hand; as if it were intended to constrain the Queen to a compliance with the request of her Parliament [s]. The courtiers endeavoured to elude the debate: Sir Ralph Sadler told the house, that he had heard the Queen positively affirm,

30th September. A Parliament.

[q] Melvil, p. 69, 70.
[r] Camden, p. 397.
[s] D'Ewes, p. 129.

CHAP. XL. 1566.

that, for the good of her people, she was determined to marry. Secretary Cecil and Sir Francis Knollys gave their testimony to the same purpose; as did also Sir Ambrose Cave, chancellor of the dutchy, and Sir Edward Rogers, comptroler of the household [t]. Elizabeth's ambitious and masculine character was so well known, that few members gave any credit to this intelligence; and it was considered merely as an artifice, by which she endeavoured to retract that positive affirmation, which she had made in the beginning of her reign, that she meant to live and die a virgin. The ministers therefore gained nothing farther by this piece of policy, but only to engage the house, for the sake of decency, to join the question of the Queen's marriage with that of a settlement of the crown; and the commons were proceeding with great earnestness in the debate, and had even appointed a committee to confer with the lords, when express orders were brought them from Elizabeth not to proceed farther in that matter. Cecil told them, that she pledged to the house the word of a Queen for her sincerity in her intentions to marry; that the appointment of a successor would be attended with great danger to her person; that she herself had had experience, during the reign of her sister, how much court was paid to the next heir, and what dangerous sacrifices men were commonly disposed to make of their present duty to their future prospects; and that she was therefore determined to delay, till a more proper opportunity, the decision of that important question [u]. The house were not satisfied with these reasons, and still less with the command, prohibiting them all debate on that subject. Paul Wentworth, a spirited member, went so far as to question whether such a prohibition were not an infringement of the liberties and privileges of the house [x]. Some even ventured to

[t] D'Ewes, p. 124. [u] Ibid. p. 127, 128. [x] Ibid. p. 128.

violate

violate that profound reſpect which they had hitherto preſerved to the Queen; and affirmed that ſhe was bound in duty, not only to provide for the happineſs of her ſubjects during her own life, but alſo to pay regard to their future ſecurity, by fixing a ſucceſſor; that by a contrary conduct, ſhe ſhowed herſelf the ſtepmother, not the natural parent, of her people, and would ſeem deſirous, that England ſhould no longer ſubſiſt than ſhe ſhould enjoy the glory and ſatisfaction of governing it; that none but timorous princes, or tyrants, or faint hearted women, ever ſtood in fear of their ſucceſſors; and that the affections of the people were a firm and impregnable rampart to every ſovereign, who, laying aſide all artifice or by-ends, had courage and magnanimity to put his ſole truſt in that honourable and ſure defence [y]. The Queen, hearing of theſe debates, ſent for the ſpeaker, and after reiterating her former prohibition, ſhe bid him inform the houſe, that, if any member remained ſtill unſatisfied, he might appear before the privy council, and there give his reaſons [z]. As the members ſhowed a diſpoſition, notwithſtanding theſe peremptory orders, ſtill to proceed upon the queſtion, Elizabeth thought proper, by a meſſage, to revoke them, and to allow the houſe liberty, of debate [a]. They were ſo mollified by this gracious condeſcenſion, that they thenceforth conducted the matter with more calmneſs and temper; and they even voted her a ſupply, to be levied at three payments, of a ſubſidy and a fifteenth, without annexing any condition to it. The Queen ſoon after diſſolved the Parliament, and told them with ſome ſharpneſs in the concluſion, that their proceedings had contained much diſſimulation and artifice; that under the plauſible pretences of marriage and ſucceſſion, many of them covered very malevolent intentions towards her; but

CHAP. XL.

1566.

2d January. 1567.

[y] Camden, p. 400. [z] D'Ewes. p. 128. [a] Ibid. p. 130.

that,

CHAP. XL.

1567.

that, however, she reaped this advantage from their attempts that she could now distinguish her friends from her enemies. "But do you think," added she, "that "I am unmindful of your future security, or will be "negligent in settling the succession? That is the "chief object of my concern; as I know myself to "be liable to mortality. Or do you apprehend, that I "meant to encroach on your liberties? No: It was "never my meaning; I only intended to stop you be-"fore you approached the precipice. All things have "their time; and tho' you may be blessed with a sove-"reign more wise or more learned than I, yet I assure "you, that no one will ever rule over you, who "shall be more careful of your safety. And therefore, "henceforward, whether I live to see the like assem-"bly or no, or whoever holds the reins of govern-"ment, let me warn you to beware of provoking "your sovereign's patience, so far as you have done "mine. But I shall now conclude, notwithstanding "the disgusts I have received (for I mean not to part "with you in anger) that the greatest part of you may "assure themselves that they go home in their prince's "good graces [b]."

ELIZABETH carried farther her dignity on this occasion. She had received the subsidy without any condition; but as it was believed, that the commons had given her that gratuity with a view of engaging her to yield to their requests, she thought proper, on her refusal, to remit voluntarily the third payment; and she said, that money in her subjects purses was as good as in her own exchequer [c].

BUT tho' the Queen was able to elude, for the present, the applications of Parliament, the friends of the Queen of Scots multiplied every day in England; and

[b] D'Ewes. p. 116, 117. [c] Camden, p. 400.

besides

beſides the catholics, many of whom kept treaſonable correſpondence with her, and were ready to riſe at her command [d], the court itſelf of Elizabeth was full of her avowed partizans. The duke of Norfolk, the earls of Leiceſter, Pembroke, Bedford, Northumberland, Sir Nicholas Throcmorton, and moſt of the conſiderable men in England, except Cecil, ſeemed convinced of the neceſſity of declaring her the ſucceſſor. None but the more zealous proteſtants adhered either to the counteſs of Hertford, or to her aunt, Eleanor, Counteſs of Cumberland; and as the marriage of the former ſeemed liable to ſome objections, and had been declared invalid, men were alarmed, even on that ſide, with the proſpect of new diſputes concerning the ſucceſſion. Mary's behaviour alſo, ſo moderate towards the proteſtants, and ſo gracious towards all men, had procured her univerſal reſpect [e]; and the public was willing to aſcribe any imprudences, into which ſhe had fallen, to her youth and inexperience. But all theſe flattering proſpects were blaſted by the ſubſequent incidents, where her engregious indiſcretions, ſhall I ſay, or atrocious crimes, threw her from the height of her proſperity, and involved her in infamy and ruin. CHAP. XL. 1567.

THE earl of Bothwel was of a conſiderable family and power in Scotland; and tho' not diſtinguiſhed by any talents either of a civil or military nature, he had made a figure in that party, which oppoſed the greatneſs of the earl of Murray, and the more rigid reformers. He was a man of profligate manners; had involved his opulent fortune in great debts, and even reduced himſelf to beggary, by his profuſe expences [f]; and ſeemed to have no reſource but in deſperate councils and enterprizes. He had been accuſed more than once of an attempt to aſſaſſinate Murray; and notwithſtanding that the frequency of theſe accuſati- Murder of Darnley.

[d] Haynes. p. 446, 448. [e] Melvil, p. 53, 61, 74. [f] Keith, p. 240.

ons

CHAP. XL.

1567.

ons on all ſides diminiſh ſomewhat the credit due to any particular imputation, they prove ſufficiently the prevalence of that deteſtable practice in Scotland, and may in that view ſerve to render ſuch rumours the more likely and credible. This man had of late acquired the favour and entire confidence of Mary; and all her meaſures were directed by his advice and authority. Reports were ſpread of more particular intimacies and familiarities between them; and theſe reports gained ground from the continuance or rather encreaſe of her hatred towards her huſband[g]. That young prince was reduced to ſuch a ſtate of deſperation, by the neglects which he underwent from his Queen and the courtiers, that he had once reſolved to fly ſecretly into France or Spain, and had even provided a veſſel for that purpoſe[h]. Some of the moſt conſiderable nobility, on the other hand, obſerving her fixed averſion to him, had propoſed ſome expedients for a divorce; and tho' Mary is ſaid to have ſpoken honourably on that occaſion, and to have embraced the propoſal no farther than it ſhould be found conſiſtent with her own honour and her ſon's legitimacy[i], men were inclined to believe, that the difficulty of finding proper means for effectuating that purpoſe, was the real cauſe of laying aſide all farther thoughts of it. So far were the ſuſpicions againſt her carried, that, when Henry, diſcouraged with the continual proofs of her hatred, left the court and retired to Glaſgow, an illneſs of an extraordinary nature, with which he was ſeized immediately on his arrival in that place, was univerſally aſcribed by her enemies to a doſe of poiſon, which, it was pretended, ſhe had adminiſtred to him.

g Melvil, p. 66. 77. h Keith. p. 345—348.
i Camden, p. 404. Goodal's Queen Mary, vol. II. p. 317.

WHILE

CHAP. XI. 1567.

WHILE affairs were on this footing, all thoſe who wiſhed well to her character or the repoſe of their country, were extremely pleaſed, and ſomewhat ſurprized, to hear, that a friendſhip was again conciliated between them, that ſhe had taken a journey to Glaſgow on purpoſe to viſit him during his ſickneſs, that ſhe behaved towards him with great tenderneſs, that ſhe had brought him along with her, and that ſhe appeared thenceforth determined to live with him on a footing more ſuitable to the connexions between them. Henry, naturally uxorious, and not miſtruſting this ſudden reconcilement, put himſelf implicitly into her hands, and attended her to Edinburgh. She lived in the palace of Holy-rood-houſe; but as the ſituation of that place was low, and the concourſe of perſons about the court was neceſſarily attended with noiſe, which might diſturb him in his preſent infirm ſtate of health, theſe reaſons were aſſigned for fitting up an apartment for him in a ſolitary houſe, at ſome diſtance, called the Kirk of Field. Mary here gave him marks of kindneſs and attachment; ſhe converſed cordially with him; and ſhe lay ſome nights in a room below his; but on the ninth of February, ſhe told him, that ſhe would paſs that night in the palace, becauſe the marriage of one of her ſervants was there to be celebrated in her preſence. About two o'clock in the morning the whole town was much alarmed at hearing a great noiſe; and were ſtill more aſtoniſhed, when it was diſcovered, that the noiſe came from the King's houſe, which was blown up by gun-powder; that his dead body was found at ſome diſtance in a neighbouring field; and that no marks either of fire, contuſion or violence appeared upon it[k]. 10th February.

[k] It was imagined, that Henry had been ſtrangled before the houſe was blown up: But this ſuppoſition is contradicted by the confeſſion of the criminals; and there is no neceſſity to admit it in order to account for the con-

CHAP. XL. 1567.

No doubt could be entertained but Henry was murdered; and the general conjecture ſoon pointed towards the earl of Bothwel as the author of that crime [l]. But as his favour with Mary was open and viſible, and his power great, no one ventured to declare openly his ſentiments, and all men remained in ſilence and mute aſtoniſhment. Voices, however, were heard in the ſtreets, during the darkneſs of the night, proclaiming Bothwel, and even Mary herſelf, to be the murderers of the King; placards were ſecretly affixed on the walls to the ſame purpoſe; offers were made, that, upon giving proper ſecurities, his guilt ſhould be openly proved: But after one proclamation from the court, offering a reward and indemnity to any one that would diſcover the author of that villainy, greater vigilance was employed in ſearching out the ſpreaders of the libels and reports againſt Bothwel, and the Queen, than in tracing the cauſes of the King's murder, or detecting the regicides [m].

THE earl of Lenox, who lived at a diſtance from the court, in poverty and contempt, was rouzed by the report of his ſon's murder, and wrote to the Queen, imploring ſpeedy juſtice againſt the aſſaſſins; among whom he named the earl of Bothwel, Sir James Balfour, and Gilbert Balfour his other, David Chalmers, and four others of the Queen's houſhold; all of them perſons who had been mentioned in the placards affixed on the walls at Edinburgh [n]. Mary took his demand of ſpeedy juſtice in a very literal ſenſe; and allowing only fifteen days for the examination of this important affair, ſhe ſent a citation to Lenox, requiring him to appear in court, and prove his charge

dition of his body. There are many inſtances that men's lives have been ſaved who have been blown up in ſhips. Had Henry fallen on water he had not probably been killed.

[l] Melvil, p. 78. Cabbala, p. 136. [m] Anderſon's Collections vol. II. p. 38. vol [illegible]. p. 167, 168. Spotſwood, p. 200. Keith, p. 374.
[n] Keith, p. 372. Anderſon, vol. II. p. 3.

againſt Bothwel [o]. This nobleman, meanwhile, and all the other perſons, accuſed by Lenox, enjoyed their full liberty [p]; Bothwel himſelf was continually ſurrounded with armed men [q]; took his place in council [r]; lived during ſome time in the houſe with Mary [s]; and ſeemed to poſſeſs all his wonted confidence and familiarity with her. Even the caſtle of Edinburgh, a place of great conſequence, in this critical time, was entruſted to his creature, Sir James Balfour, who had himſelf been publickly charged as an accomplice in the King's murder [t]. Lenox, who had come as far as Stirling, with a view of appearing at the trial, was informed of all theſe circumſtances; and reflecting on the ſmall train, which attended him, he began to entertain very juſt apprehenſions from the power, inſolence, and temerity of his enemy. He wrote to Mary, deſiring that the day of trial might be prorogued; and conjured her, by all the regard which ſhe bore to her own honour, to employ more leiſure and deliberation in determining a queſtion of ſuch extreme moment [u]. No regard was paid to his application: The jury was encloſed, of which the earl of Caithneſs was chancellor; and tho' Lenox, foreſeeing this precipitation, had ordered Cuningham, one of his retinue, to appear in court, and proteſt in his name, againſt the acquital of the criminal, the jury proceeded to a verdict [x]. The verdict was ſuch as it behoved them to give, where neither accuſer nor witneſs appeared; and Bothwel was abſolved from the King's murder. The jury, however apprehenſive that their verdict would give great ſcandal, and perhaps expoſe them afterwards to ſome dan-

1567.

12th April.

[o] Keith, p. 373. [p] Ibid p. 374. 375. [q] Ibid p. 405.
[r] Anderſon, vol. I. p. 38, 40, 50, 52. [s] Ibid. vol. II. p. 274.
[t] Spotſwood, p. 201. [u] Keith p. 375. Anderſon, vol. I. p. 52.
[x] Keith, p. 376. Anderſon, vol. II. p. 106 Spotſwood, p. 201.

ger,

CHAP. XL.

1567.

No doubt could be entertained but Henry was murdered; and the general conjecture ſoon pointed towards the earl of Bothwel as the author of that crime [l]. But as his favour with Mary was open and viſible, and his power great, no one ventured to declare openly his ſentiments, and all men remained in ſilence and mute aſtoniſhment. Voices, however, were heard in the ſtreets, during the darkneſs of the night, proclaiming Bothwel, and even Mary herſelf, to be the murderers of the King; placards were ſecretly affixed on the walls to the ſame purpoſe; offers were made, that, upon giving proper ſecurities, his guilt ſhould be openly proved: But after one proclamation from the court, offering a reward and indemnity to any one that would diſcover the author of that villainy, greater vigilance was employed in ſearching out the ſpreaders of the libels and reports againſt Bothwel, and the Queen, than in tracing the cauſes of the King's murder, or detecting the regicides [m].

THE earl of Lenox, who lived at a diſtance from the court, in poverty and contempt, was rouzed by the report of his ſon's murder, and wrote to the Queen, imploring ſpeedy juſtice againſt the aſſaſſins; among whom he named the earl of Bothwel, Sir James Balfour, and Gilbert Balfour his other, David Chalmers, and four others of the Queen's houſhold; all of them perſons who had been mentioned in the placards affixed on the walls at Edinburgh [n]. Mary took his demand of ſpeedy juſtice in a very literal ſenſe; and allowing only fifteen days for the examination of this important affair, ſhe ſent a citation to Lenox, requiring him to appear in court, and prove his charge

dition of his body. There are many inſtances that men's lives have been ſaved who have been blown up in ſhips. Had Henry fallen on water he had not probably been killed.

l Melvil, p. 78. Cabbala, p. 136. m Anderſon's Collections vol. II. p. 38. vol V. p. 167, 168. Spotſwood, p. 200. Keith, p. 374.
n Keith, p. 372. Anderſon, vol. II. p. 3.

CHAP. XL. 1567.

againſt Bothwel [o]. This nobleman, meanwhile, and all the other perſons, accuſed by Lenox, enjoyed their full liberty [p]; Bothwel himſelf was continually ſurrounded with armed men [q]; took his place in council [r]; lived during ſome time in the houſe with Mary [s]; and ſeemed to poſſeſs all his wonted confidence and familiarity with her. Even the caſtle of Edinburgh, a place of great conſequence, in this critical time, was entruſted to his creature, Sir James Balfour, who had himſelf been publickly charged as an accomplice in the King's murder [t]. Lenox, who had come as far as Stirling, with a view of appearing at the trial, was informed of all theſe circumſtances; and reflecting on the ſmall train, which attended him, he began to entertain very juſt apprehenſions from the power, inſolence, and temerity of his enemy. He wrote to Mary, deſiring that the day of trial might be prorogued; and conjured her, by all the regard which ſhe bore to her own honour, to employ more leiſure and deliberation in determining a queſtion of ſuch extreme moment [u]. No regard was paid to his application: The jury was encloſed, of which the earl of Caithneſs was chancellor; and tho' Lenox, foreſeeing this precipitation, had ordered Cuningham, one of his retinue, to appear in court, and proteſt in his name, againſt the acquital of the criminal, the jury proceeded to a verdict [x]. The verdict was ſuch as it behoved them to give, where neither accuſer nor witneſs appeared; and Bothwel was abſolved from the King's murder. The jury, however apprehenſive that their verdict would give great ſcandal, and perhaps expoſe them afterwards to ſome dan- 12th April.

[o] Keith, p. 373. [p] Ibid p. 374. 375. [q] Ibid p. 405.
[r] Anderſon, vol. I. p. 38, 40, 50, 52. [s] Ibid. vol. II. p. 274.
[t] Spotſwood, p. 201. [u] Keith p. 375. Anderſon, vol. I. p. 52,
[x] Keith, p. 376. Anderſon, vol. II. p. 106 Spotſwood, p. 201.

ger,

CHAP. XL. 1567.

ger, entered a proteſt, in which they repreſented the neceſſity of their proceedings [y]. It is remarkable, that the indictment was laid againſt Bothwel for committing the crime on the ninth of February, not the tenth, the real day on which Henry was aſſaſſinated [z]. The interpretation generally put upon this error, too groſs, it was thought, to have proceeded from miſtake, was, that the ſecret council by whom Mary was governed, not truſting entirely to precipitation, violence, and authority, had provided this plea, by which they enſured, at all adventures, a plauſible pretence for acquiting Bothwel.

Two days after this extraordinary tranſaction, a Parliament was held; and tho' the ſentence in favour of Bothwel was attended with ſuch circumſtances as ſtrongly confirmed, rather than diminiſhed, the general opinion of his guilt, he was the perſon choſen to carry the royal ſcepter on the firſt meeting of that national aſſembly [a]. In this Parliament, a rigorous act was made againſt thoſe who ſet up defamatory placards; but no notice was taken of the King's murder [b]. The favour, which Mary openly bore to Bothwel, kept every one in awe; and the effects of this terror appeared more plainly in another tranſaction, which enſued immediately upon the diſſolution of the Parliament. A bond or aſſociation was framed; in which the ſubſcribers, after relating the acquital of Bothwel by a legal trial, and a farther offer, which he had made, to prove his innocence by ſingle combat, oblige themſelves, in caſe any perſon ſhould afterwards impute to him the King's murder, to ſupport him with their whole pow-

y Spotſwood, p. 201. Anderſon, vol. I. p. 113.

z Keith, p. 375. Anderſon, vol. II. p. 93. Spotſwood, p. 201.

a Keith, p. 78. Crawford, p. 14. b Keith, p. 380. The Queen, in order to gain the people, agreed to an act of Parliament, which eſtabliſhed the proteſtant religion; a conceſſion which ſhe could never before be brought to make.

er

CHAP. XL.

1567.

er againſt ſuch calumniators. After this promiſe, which implied no great aſſurance in Bothwel of his own innocence, the ſubſcribers mentioned the neceſſity of their Queen's marriage, in order to ſupport the government; and they recommended Bothwel to her as a huſband [c]. This paper was ſubſcribed by all the conſiderable nobility there preſent. In a country, divided by violent factions, ſuch a concurrence in favour of one nobleman, no wiſe diſtinguiſhed above the reſt, except by his flagitious conduct, could never have been obtained, had not every one been certain, at leaſt firmly perſuaded, that Mary was fully determined on this meaſure [d]. Nor would ſuch a motive have ſufficed to influenced men, commonly ſo ſtubborn and intractable, had they not been taken by ſurprize, been ignorant of each others ſentiments, and overawed by the preſent power of the court, and by the apprehenſions of farther violence, from perſons ſo little governed by any rules of honour and humanity. Even with all theſe circumſtances, the ſubſcription to this paper may juſtly be regarded as a reproach to the nation.

24th April.

THE ſubſequent meaſures of Bothwel were equally precipitate and audacious. Mary having gone to Stirling to pay a viſit to her ſon, he aſſembled a body of eight hundred horſe, on pretence of purſuing ſome robbers on the borders, and having way-laid her on her return, he ſeized her perſon near Edinburgh,

[c] Keith, p. 381.

[d] Mary herſelf confeſſed, in her inſtructions to the ambaſſadors, which ſhe ſent to France, that Bothwel perſuaded all the noblemen, that their application in favour of his marriage was agreeable to her. Keith, p. 389. Anderſon, vol. I. p. 94. Murray afterwards produced to Queen Elizabeth's commiſſioners a paper ſigned by Mary, by which ſhe permitted them to make this application to her. This permiſſion was a ſufficient declaration of her intentions, and was eſteemed equivalent to a command. Anderſon, vol. IV. p. 59. They even aſſerted, that the houſe, in which they met, was ſurrounded with armed men. Goodal, vol. II. p. 141.

CHAP. XL.

1567. April.

and carried her to Dunbar, with an avowed design of forcing her to yield to his purpose. Sir James Melvil, who was in her retinue, was carried along with her; and says not, that he saw any signs of reluctance or constraint: He was even informed, as he tells us by Bothwel's officers, that the whole transaction was managed in concert with her[e]. A woman, indeed, of that spirit and resolution, which is acknowledged to belong to Mary, does not usually, on these occasions, give such marks of opposition to *real* violence, as can appear anywise doubtful or ambiguous. Some of the nobility, however, in order to put matters to farther trial, sent her a private message; in which they told her, that, if in reality she lay under force, they would use all their efforts to relieve her. Her answer was, that she had indeed been carried to Dunbar by violence, but since her arrival had been so well treated there, that she willingly remained with Bothwel[f]. No one gave themselves thenceforth any solicitude to relieve her from a captivity, which they believed to have proceeded entirely from her own approbation and connivance.

THIS unusual conduct was first ascribed to Mary's sense of the infamy, attending her purposed marriage; and her desire of finding some colour to gloss over the irregularity of her conduct. But a pardon given to Bothwel a few days afterwards, made the public carry somewhat farther their conjectures. In this deed, Bothwel received a pardon for the violence committed on the Queen's person; and for *all other crimes*: A clause, by which the murder of the King was indirectly pardoned. The rape was then conjectured to have been only a contrivance of these politicians, in order to afford a pretence for indirectly pardoning a

[e] Melvil, p. 80. [f] Spotswood, p. 202.

crime,

crime, of which they durſt not openly make any mention [g]. CHAP. XL. 1567.

THESE events paſſed with ſuch rapidity, that men had no leiſure to admire ſufficiently one incident, when they were ſurprized with a new one, equally rare and uncommon. There ſtill, however, remained one difficulty, which, it was not eaſy to foreſee, how the Queen and Bothwel, determined as they were to execute their ſhameful purpoſe, could find expedients to overcome. The man, who had procured the ſubſcription of the nobility, recommending him as a huſband to the Queen, and who had acted this ſeeming violence on her perſon, in order to force her conſent, had been married ſix months before to another woman; to a woman of merit, of a very noble family, ſiſter to the earl of Huntley. But perſons blinded with paſſion, and infatuated with crimes, ſoon ſhake off all appearance of decency. A ſuit was commenced for a divorce between Bothwel and his wife; and this ſuit was opened at the ſame inſtant in two different, or rather oppoſite courts; in the court of the archbiſhop of St. Andrews, which was popiſh, and governed itſelf by the canon law; and in the new conſiſtorial or commiſſariot court, which was proteſtant, and was regulated by the principles of the reformed teachers. The plea advanced in each court, was ſo calculated as to ſuit the principles which there prevailed: In the archbiſhop's court, the pretence of conſanguinity was employed, becauſe Bothwel was related to his wife in the fourth degree; in the commiſſariot court, the accuſation of adultery was made uſe of againſt him. The parties too who applied for the divorce, were different in the different courts: Bothwel was the perſon who ſued in the former; his wife in the latter. And the ſuit in both courts was opened, pleaded, examined,

[g] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 61.

CHAP. XL.

1567.

and decided with the utmoſt precipitation, and a ſentence of divorce was pronounced in four days [h].

THE divorce being thus obtained, it was thought proper that Mary ſhould be conducted to Edinburgh, and ſhould there appear before the courts of judicature, and ſhould acknowledge herſelf to be reſtored to entire freedom. This was underſtood to be contrived with a view of obviating all doubts with regard to the validity of her marriage. Orders were then given to publiſh the banns in the church, between the Queen and the duke of Orkney; for that was the title which he now bore; and Craig, a miniſter of Edinburgh, was applied to for that purpoſe. This clergyman, not content with having, for ſome time, refuſed compliance, publicly in his ſermons condemned the marriage; and exhorted all thoſe who had acceſs to the Queen, to give her their advice againſt ſo ſcandalous an alliance. Being called before the council, to anſwer for this liberty, he ſhowed a courage which might cover all the nobles with ſhame, on account of their tameneſs and ſervility. He ſaid, that, by the rules of the church, the earl of Bothwel, being convicted of adultery, could not be permitted to marry; that the divorce between him and his former wife, was plainly procured by colluſion, as appeared by the precipitation of that ſentence, and the ſudden concluſion of his marriage with the Queen; and that all the ſuſpicions which prevailed, with regard to the King's murder, and the Queen's concurrence in the former rape, would thence receive undoubted confirmation. He therefore exhorted Bothwel, who was preſent, no longer to perſevere in his preſent criminal enterprizes; and turning his diſcourſe to the other counſellors, he charged them to employ all their influence with the Queen, in order to divert her from a

h Anderſon, vol. II. p. 280.

CHAP. XL.

1567.

measure which would cover her with infamy and dishonour. Not satisfied even with this admonition, he took the first opportunity of informing the public, from the pulpit, of this whole transaction, and expressed to them his fears, that, notwithstanding all remonstrances, their sovereign was still obstinately bent on her fatal purpose. "For himself," he said, "he had "already discharged his conscience, and yet again "would take heaven and earth to witness, that he "abhorred and detested that marriage, as scandalous "and hateful in the sight of mankind; But since "the Great, as he perceived, either by their flattery "or silence, gave countenance to the measure, he be-"sought the Faithful to pray fervently to the Al-"mighty, that a resolution, which was taken contrary to "all law, reason, and good conscience, might, by the "divine blessing, be turned to the comfort and benefit "of the church and kingdom." These speeches offended the court extremely; and Craig was anew summoned before the council, to answer for his temerity in thus passing the bounds of his commission. But he told them, that the bounds of his commission were the word of God, good laws, and natural reason; and were the Queen's marriage tried by any of these three standards, it would appear infamous and dishonourable, and would be so esteemed by the whole world. The council were so overawed by this heroic behaviour in a private clergyman, that they dismissed him without farther censure or punishment [1].

But tho' this transaction might have recalled Bothwel and the Queen of Scots, from their infatuation, and might have instructed them in the dispositions of the people, as well as in their own inability to oppose them; they were still resolute to rush forward to their own manifest destruction. The marriage was 15 May.

[1] Spotswood, p. 203. Anderson, vol. II. p. 280.

CHAP. XL. 1567.

solemnized by the bishop of Orkney, a protestant, who was afterwards deposed by the church for this scandalous compliance. Few of the nobility appeared at the ceremony; they had most of them, either from shame or fear, retired to their own houses. The French ambassador, Le Croc, an aged gentleman of honour and character, could not be prevailed on, tho' a dependent of the house of Guise, to countenance the marriage by his presence [k]. Elizabeth remonstrated, by very friendly letters and messages, against the marriage [l]: The court of France made like opposition; but Mary, tho' on all other occasions she was extremely obsequious to the advice of her relations in that country, was here determined to pay no regard to their opinion.

51 May. Queen of Scots marries Bothwel.

THE news of these transactions, being carried to foreign countries, filled all Europe with amazement, and threw infamy not only on the principal actors in them, but also on the whole nation, who seemed, by their submission and silence, and even by their declared approbation, to give their sanction to these scandalous practices [m]. The Scots, who resided abroad, met with such reproaches, that they durst no where appear in public; and they earnestly exhorted their countrymen at home, to free them from the public odium, by bringing to condign punishment the authors of such atrocious crimes. This intelligence, with a little more leisure for reflection, roused men at last from their lethargy; and the rumours, which, from the very beginning [n], had been spread against Mary, as if she had concurred in the King's murder, seemed now, by the subsequent transactions, to have received a strong confirmation and authority. It was every where said, that, even tho' no particular and direct proofs had as

[k] Spotswood, p. 203. Melvil, p. 82. [l] Keith, p. 392. Digges, p. 14. [m] Melvil, p 82. Keith, p. 402. Anderson, vol. I. 128, 134. [n] Crawford, p. 11. Keith, Pref. p. 9.

CHAP. XL. 1567.

yet been produced of the Queen's guilt, the whole tenor of her late conduct was ſufficient, not only to beget ſuſpicion, but to produce entire conviction againſt her: That her ſudden reſolution of being reconciled to her huſband, whom before ſhe had long and juſtly hated; her bringing him to court, from which ſhe had baniſhed him by neglects and rigours; her fitting up ſeparate apartments for him; were all of them circumſtances, which, tho' trivial in themſelves, yet, being compared with the following events, bore a very unfavourable aſpect for her: That the leaſt which, after the King's murder, might have been expected in her ſituation, was a more than uſual caution in her meaſures, and an extreme anxiety to puniſh the real aſſaſſins, in order to free herſelf from all reproach and ſuſpicion: That no woman, who had any regard to her character, would allow a man, publickly accuſed of her huſband's murder, ſo much as to approach her preſence, far leſs give him a ſhare in her councils, and endow him with favour and authority: That an acquital merely in the abſence of accuſers was very ill fitted to ſatisfy the public; eſpecially if that abſence proceeded from a deſigned precipitation of the ſentence, and from the terror which her known friendſhip for the criminal had infuſed into every one: That the very mention of her marriage to ſuch a perſon, in ſuch circumſtances, was horrible; and the contrivances of extorting a conſent of the nobility, and of concerting a rape, were groſs artifices, more proper to diſcover her guilt than prove her innocence: That where a woman thus ſhews a conſciouſneſs of merited reproach, and, inſtead of correcting, provides only thin gloſſes to cover her exceptionable conduct, ſhe betrays a neglect of fame, which muſt either be the effect or the cauſe of the moſt ſhameful enormities: That to eſpouſe a man, who had a few days before been ſo ſcandalouſly divorced from his wife; who, to ſay the leaſt, was believed to have, a few months before, aſſaſſinated her huſband, was ſo

CHAP. XL. 1567.

contrary to the plaineſt rules of behaviour, that no pretence of indiſcretion or imprudence could account for ſuch a conduct: That a woman, who, ſo ſoon after her huſband's death, tho' not attended with any extraordinary circumſtances, contracts a marriage which might, in itſelf, be the moſt blameleſs, cannot eſcape ſevere cenſure; but one who overlooks, for her pleaſure, ſo many other weighty conſiderations, was equally capable, in gratifying her appetites, to neglect every regard to honour, and to humanity: That Mary was not ignorant of the prevailing opinion of the public, with regard to her own guilt, and of the inferences which would every where be drawn from her conduct; and therefore, if ſhe ſtill continued to purſue meaſures which gave ſuch juſt offence, ſhe ratified, by her actions, as much as by the moſt formal confeſſion, all the ſurmizes and imputations of her enemies: That the only circumſtance which oppoſed all theſe preſumptions, was, the benignity and goodneſs of her preceding behaviour, which ſeemed to remove her from all ſuſpicion of ſuch atrocious inhumanity; but that the characters of men were extremely variable, and the perſons who were guilty of the worſt actions, were not always naturally of the worſt and moſt criminal diſpoſitions; That a woman, who, in a critical and dangerous moment, had ſacrificed her honour to a man of abandoned principles, might thenceforth be led blindfold by him to the commiſſion of the moſt enormous crimes, and was in reality no longer at her own diſpoſal: And that, tho' one ſuppoſition was ſtill left to alleviate her blame, viz. that Bothwel, preſuming on her affection towards him, had of himſelf committed the crime, and had never communicated it to her, yet ſuch a ſudden and paſſionate love to a man whom ſhe had long known, could not eaſily be accounted for, without ſuppoſing ſome degree of preceding guilt; and as it appeared that ſhe was not afterwards

wards reſtrained, either by ſhame or prudence, from incurring the higheſt reproach and danger, it was not likely, that a ſenſe of duty or humanity would have a more powerful influence over her.

THESE were the ſentiments which prevailed throughout Scotland; and as the proteſtant teachers, who had great authority, had long borne a great animoſity towards Mary, the opinion of her guilt was, by that means, the more widely diffuſed, and made the deeper impreſſion on every one. Some attempts made by Bothwel, and, as it is pretended, with her conſent, to get the young prince into his power, excited the moſt ſerious attention; and the principal nobility, even many of thoſe who had formerly been conſtrained to ſign the application in favour of Bothwel's marriage, met at Stirling, and formed an aſſociation for protecting the prince, and puniſhing the Kings murderers [o]. The earl of Athole himſelf, a known catholic, was the firſt author of this confederacy: The earls of Argyle, Morton, Mar, Glencarne, the lords Boyd, Lindeſey, Hume, Semple, Kirkaldy of Grange, Tullibardine, and ſecretary Lidington, entered zealouſly into it. The earl of Murray, foreſeeing ſuch turbulent times, and being deſirous to keep free of theſe dangerous factions, had, ſome time before, deſired and obtained Mary's permiſſion to retire into France.

Inſurrections in Scotland.

LORD Hume was firſt in arms; and leading a body of eight hundred horſe, ſuddenly invironed the Queen of Scots and Bothwel, in the caſtle of Borthwic. They found means to make their eſcape to Dunbar; while the confederate lords were aſſembling their troops at Edinburgh, and taking meaſures to effectuate their purpoſe. Had Bothwel been ſo prudent as to keep within the forteſs of Dunbar, his enemies muſt have been diſſipated for want of pay and ſubſiſtance; but hearing that the lords were fallen into diſtreſs, he was

15th June.

[o] Keith, p. 394.

ſo

CHAP. XL. 1567.

so rash as to take the field, and advance towards them. The armies met at Carberry Hill, about six miles from Edinburgh; and Mary became soon sensible, that her own troops disapproved of her cause, and were averse to spend their blood in the quarrel [p]. After some brava does of Bothwel, where he discovered very little courage, she saw no resource but that of holding a conference with Kirkaldy of Grange, and of putting herself, upon some general promises, into the hands of the confederates. She was conducted to Edinburgh, amidst the insults of the populace, who reproached her with her crimes, and even held before her eyes, which ever way she turned, a banner, on which was painted the murder of her husband, and the distress of her infant son [q]. Mary, overwhelmed with her calamities, had recourse to tears and lamentations. Mean while Bothwel, during her conference with Grange, fled unattended to Dunbar; and fitting out a few small ships, set sail for the Orkneys, where he subsisted during some time by pyracy. He was pursued thither by Grange, and his ship was taken, with several of his servants, who afterwards discovered all the circumstances of the King's murder, and were punished for the crime [r]. Bothwel himself escaped in a boat, and found means to get a passage to Denmark, where he was thrown into prison, lost his senses, and died miserably about ten years afterwards: An end worthy of his flagitious conduct and behaviour.

Imprisonment of Mary.

THE Queen of Scots, now in the hands of an enraged faction, met with such treatment as a sovereign may naturally expect from subjects who have their future fears to provide against, as well as their present animosity to gratify. It is pretended, that she behaved with a spirit very little suitable to her condition, avowed her inviolable attachment to Bothwel [s], and even wrote him a letter, which the lords intercepted, where she declared, that she would endure any extremity,

p Keith, p. 402. Spotswood, p. 207. q Melvil, p. 83, 84.
r Anderson, vol. II. p. 165, 166, &c. s Keith, p. 419.

nay,

CHAP. XL.

1567.

nay, resign her dignity and power, rather than relinquish his affections[t]. The malecontents finding the danger to which they were exposed, in case Mary should finally prevail, thought themselves obliged to proceed with rigour against her; and they sent her next day under a guard to the castle of Lochlevin, situated in a lake of that name. The mistress of the house was mother to the earl of Murray; and as she pretended to have been lawfully married to the late King of Scots, she naturally bore an animosity to Mary, and treated her with the utmost harshness and severity.

ELIZABETH, who was exactly informed of all those events, seemed touched with compassion towards the unfortunate Queen; and all her fears and jealousies being now laid asleep, by the consideration of that ruin and infamy in which Mary's conduct had involved her, she began to reflect on the instability of human affairs, the precarious state of royal grandeur, the danger of encouraging rebellious subjects; and she resolved to employ her authority for alleviating the calamities of her unhappy sister. She sent Sir Nicholas Throcmorton ambassador to Scotland, in order to remonstrate both with Mary and the associated lords; and she gave him instructions which, tho' mixt with some lofty pretensions, were full of that good sense which was so natural to her, and of that generosity which the present interesting situation had called forth. She empowered him to declare in her name to Mary, that the late conduct of that princess, so enormous, and in every respect so unjustifiable, had given her the highest offence; and tho' she felt the movements of pity towards her, she had once determined never to interpose in her affairs, either by advice or assistance, but to

[t] Melvil, p. 84. The reality of this letter appears somewhat disputable; chiefly because Murray and his associates never mentioned it in their accusation of her before Queen Elizabeth's commissioners.

abandon

CHAP. XL. 1567.

abandon her entirely, as a perſon whoſe condition was totally deſperate, and honour irretrieveable: That ſhe was well aſſured, that other foreign princes, Mary's near relations, had embraced the ſame reſolution; but, for her part, the late events had touched her heart with more tender ſympathy, and had made her adopt meaſures more favourable to the liberty and intereſts of the unhappy Queen: That ſhe was determined not to ſee her oppreſſed by her rebellious ſubjects, but would employ all her good offices, and even her power, to redeem her from captivity, and place her in ſuch a condition as would at once be compatible with her dignity, and the ſafety of her ſubjects: That ſhe entreated her to lay aſide all thoughts of revenge, except againſt the murderers of her huſband; and as ſhe herſelf was his near relation, ſhe was better entitled than the ſubjects of Mary to interpoſe her authority on that head, and ſhe therefore beſought that princeſs, if ſhe had any regard to her own honour and ſafety, not to oppoſe ſo juſt and reaſonable a demand: That after thoſe two points were provided for, her own liberty, and the puniſhment of her huſband's aſſaſſins, the ſafety of her infant ſon was next to be conſidered; and there ſeemed no expedient more proper for that purpoſe, than the ſending him to be educated in England: And that, beſides the ſecurity which would attend his removal from all factions and convulſions, there were many other beneficial conſequences, which it was eaſy to foreſee as the reſult of his education in that country [u].

THE remonſtrances which Throcmorton was inſtructed to make to the aſſociated lords, were entirely conformable to theſe ſentiments which Elizabeth entertained in Mary's favour. She empowered him to tell them, that whatever blame ſhe might throw on Mary's conduct, any oppoſition to their ſovereign was totally

[u] Keith, p. 411, 412, &c.

unjuſtifiable,

unjuſtifiable, and incompatible with all order and good government: That it belonged not to them to reform, much leſs to puniſh, the mal-adminiſtration of their prince; and the only arms which ſubjects could in any caſe lawfully employ againſt the ſupreme authority, were entreaties, counſels, and repreſentations: That if theſe expedients failed, they were next to appeal by their prayers to Heaven; and to wait with patience till the Almighty, in whoſe hands are the hearts of princes, ſhould be pleaſed to turn them to juſtice and to mercy. That ſhe inculcated not this doctrine becauſe ſhe herſelf was intereſted in its obſervance; but becauſe it was univerſally received in all well governed ſtates, and was eſſential to the preſervation of civil ſociety: That ſhe required them to reſtore their Queen to liberty; and promiſed, in that caſe, to concur with them in all proper expedients for regulating the government, for puniſhing the King's murderers, and for guarding the life and liberty of the infant prince: And that if the ſervices which ſhe had lately conferred on the Scotiſh nation, in protecting them from foreign uſurpation, were duly conſidered by them, they would repoſe confidence in her good offices, and would eſteem themſelves blame-worthy, in never having as yet made any application to her [x].

ELIZABETH, beſides theſe remonſtrances, ſent, by Throcmorton ſome articles of accommodation, which he was to propoſe to both parties, as expedients for the ſettlement of public affairs; and tho' theſe articles included ſome conſiderable reſtraints on the ſovereign power, they were in the main calculated for Mary's advantage, and were ſufficiently indulgent to her [y]. The aſſociated lords, who were determined to proceed with greater ſeverity, were apprehenſive of Elizabeth's partiality; and being ſenſible, that Mary would take courage from the protection of that

[x] Keith, p. 414, 415. 429. [y] Ibid. p. 416.

powerful

CHAP. XL.

1567.

powerful princeſs [z], they thought proper, after ſeveral affected delays, to refuſe the Engliſh ambaſſador all acceſs to her perſon. There were four different ſchemes propoſed in Scotland, for the treatment of the captive Queen: One, that ſhe ſhould be reſtored to her authority under very ſtrict limitations; The ſecond, that ſhe ſhould be obliged to reſign her crown to the prince, be baniſhed the kingdom, and be confined either to France or England; with aſſurances from the ſovereign in whoſe dominions ſhe ſhould reſide, that ſhe ſhould make no attempts to the diſturbance of the eſtabliſhed government: The third, that ſhe ſhould be publickly treid for her crimes, of which her enemies pretended to have undoubted proofs, and be condemned to perpetual impriſonment: The fourth was ſtill more ſevere, and required that, after her condemnation, capital puniſhment ſhould be inflicted upon her [a]. Throcmorton ſupported the mildeſt propoſal; but tho' he promiſed his miſtreſs's guarantee for the performance of articles, threatned them with immediate vengeance in caſe of refuſal [b], and warned them not to draw on themſelves, by their violence, the public reproach, which now lay upon the Queen; he found, that excepting ſecretary Lidington, he had not the good fortune to convince any of the leaders. All councils ſeemed to tend towards the more ſevere expedients; and the preachers, in particular, drawing their examples from the rigorous maxims of the Old Teſtament, which can only be warranted by particular revelations, inflamed the minds of the people againſt their unhappy ſovereign [c].

THERE were ſeveral pretenders to the regency of the young prince, after the intended depoſition of Mary. The earl of Lenox claimed that authority as

z Keith, p. 427. a Ibid. p. 420. b Ibid. p. 42[illegible]
c Ibid. p. 422, 426.

grandfather

CHAP. XL.

1567.

grandfather to the prince: The duke of Chatelraut, who was abſent in France, had pretenſions as next heir to the crown: But the greateſt number of the aſſociated lords inclined to the earl of Murray, in whoſe capacity they had the greateſt truſt, and who poſſeſſed the entire confidence of the preachers and more zealous reformers. All meaſures being therefore concerted, three inſtruments were ſent to Mary, by the hands of Lord Lindeſey and Sir Robert Melvil; by one of which ſhe was to reſign the crown in favour of her ſon, by another to appoint Murray regent, by the third to name a Council, which ſhould adminiſter the government till his arrival in Scotland. The Queen of Scots, ſeeing no proſpect of relief, lying juſtly under apprehenſions of her life, and believing, that no deed, which ſhe executed during her captivity, could be valid, was prevailed on, after a plentiful effuſion of tears, to ſign theſe three inſtruments; and ſhe took not the trouble of inſpecting any one of them [d]. In conſequence of this forced reſignation, the young prince was proclaimed King, under the name of James the ſixth. He was ſoon after crowned at Stirling, and the earl of Morton took in his name the coronation-oath; in which a promiſe to extirpate hereſy was not forgot. Some republican pretenſions in favour of the people's power were countenanced in this ceremony [e]; and a coin was ſoon ſtruck, on which the famous ſaying of Trajan was inſcribed, *Pro me; ſi merear, in me:* For me; if I deſerve it, againſt me [f]. Throcmorton had orders from his miſtreſs not to aſſiſt at the coronation of the King of Scots [g].

29th July.

The council of regency had not long occaſion to exerciſe their authority, The earl of Murray arrived

[d] Melvil, p. 85. Spotſwood, p. 211. Anderſon, vol. III. p. 19.
[e] Keith, p. 439, 440. [f] Ibid. p. 440. Appen. p. 150.
[g] Ibid. p. 430.

from

CHAP. XL. 1567.

from France, and took poſſeſſion of his high office. He paid a viſit to the captive Queen; and ſpoke to her in a manner which better ſuited her paſt conduct than her preſent condition. This harſh treatment quite extinguiſhed in her breaſt any remains of affection towards him[h]. Murray proceeded afterwards to break, in a more public manner, all terms of decency with her. He ſummoned a Parliament; and that aſſembly, after voting that ſhe was undoubtedly an accomplice in her huſband's murder, condemned her to impriſonment, ratified her dimiſſion of the crown, and acknowleged her ſon for King, and Murray for regent[i]. The regent, who was a man of vigour and abilities, employed himſelf ſucceſsfully in reducing the kingdom. He bribed Sir James Balfour to ſurrender the caſtle of Edinburgh: He conſtrained the garriſon of Dunbar to open their gates; And he demoliſhed that fortreſs.

15th of December.

But tho' every thing thus bore a favourable aſpect to the new government, and all men ſeemed to ſubmit to Murray's authority; a violent revolution, however neceſſary, can never be effected without great diſcontents; and it was not likely that in a country, where the government, in its moſt ſettled ſtate, poſſeſſed a very diſjointed authority, a new eſtabliſhment ſhould meet with no interruption or diſturbance. Few conſiderable men of the nation ſeemed willing to ſupport Mary, ſo long as Bothwel was preſent; but the removal of that obnoxious nobleman had altered the ſentiments of many. The duke of Chatelraut, being diſappointed of the regency, bore no good will to Murray and his counſellors; and the ſame ſentiments were embraced by all his numerous retainers: Several of the nobility, finding that others had taken the lead among the aſſociators, formed a

[h] Melvil, p. 87. Keith, p. 445. [i] Anderſon, vol. II. p. 206, & ſeq.

faction

faction apart, and oppoſed the prevailing power: And beſides ſome remains of duty and affection towards Mary; the malecontent lords, finding every thing carried to extremity againſt her, were naturally led to embrace her cauſe, and ſhelter themſelves under her authority. All thoſe, who retained any propenſity to the catholic religion, were inclined to join this party; and even the people in general, tho' they had formerly either deteſted Mary's crimes, or blamed her imprudence, were now moved by her misfortunes to compaſſionate her preſent ſituation, and lamented, that a perſon, poſſeſſed of ſo many amiable accompliſhments, joined to ſuch high dignity, ſhould be treated with ſuch extreme rigour and ſeverity [k]. Animated by all theſe motives, many of the principal nobility, now adherents to the Queen of Scots, met at Hamilton, and concerted meaſures for ſupporting the cauſe of that princeſs. CHAP. XL. 1567.

WHILE theſe humours were in fermentation, Mary was employed in contrivances for effecting her eſcape; and ſhe engaged, by her charms and careſſes, a young gentleman, George Douglas, brother to the laird of Lochlevin, to aſſiſt her in that enterprize. She even went ſo far as to give him hopes of eſpouſing her, after her marriage with Bothwel ſhould be diſſolved on the plea of force; and ſhe propoſed this expedient to the regent, who rejected it. Douglas, however, perſevered in his endeavours to free her from captivity; and having all opportunities of acceſs to the houſe, he was at laſt ſucceſsful in the undertaking. He conveyed her in diſguiſe into a ſmall boat, and himſelf rowed her aſhore. She haſtened to Hamilton; and the news of her arrival in that place being immediately ſpread abroad, many of the nobility flocked to her with their forces. A bond of aſſociation for her defence was ſigned by the earls of Ar- 1568. 2d May.

[k] Buchan. lib. xviii. c. 53.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

gyle, Huntley, Eglington, Crawford, Caſſiles, Rothes, Montroſe, Southerland, Errol, nine biſhops, and nine barons, beſides many of the moſt conſiderable gentry[l]. And in a few days an army, to the number of ſix thouſand men, was aſſembled under her ſtandard.

ELIZABETH was no ſooner informed of Mary's eſcape, than ſhe diſcovered her reſolution of perſevering in the ſame generous and friendly meaſures, which ſhe had hitherto purſued. If ſhe had not employed force againſt the regent, during the impriſonment of that princeſs, ſhe had been chiefly withheld by the fear of puſhing him to greater extremities againſt her[m]; but ſhe had propoſed to the court of France an expedient, which, tho' leſs violent, would have been no leſs effectual for her ſervice: She deſired that France and England ſhould by concert cut off all commerce with the Scots, till they ſhould do juſtice to their injured ſovereign[n]. She now diſpatched Leighton into Scotland to offer both her good offices, and the aſſiſtance of her force to Mary; but as ſhe was apprehenſive of the entrance of French troops into the kingdom, ſhe deſired that the controverſy between the Queen of Scots and her ſubjects might by that princeſs be referred entirely to her arbitration, and that no foreign ſuccours ſhould be introduced into Scotland[o].

BUT Elizabeth had not leizure to exert fully her efforts in favour of Mary. The regent made haſte to aſſemble forces; and notwithſtanding that his army was inferior in number to that of the Queen of Scots, 13th May. he took the field againſt her. A battle was fought at Langſide near Glaſgow, which was entirely deciſive in favour of the aſſociated lords; and tho' the regent,

l Keith, p. 475.
m Ibid. p. 463. Cabbala, p. 141.
n Keith, p. 462. Ibid. p. 473. in the notes. Anderſon, vol. IV. p. 26.

after

CHAP. XL.

1568.

after his victory, ſtopt the bloodſhed, yet was the action followed by a total diſperſion of the Queen's party. That unhappy princeſs fled ſouthwards from the field of battle with great precipitation, and came, with a few attendants, to the borders of England. She here deliberated concerning her next meaſures, which would probably prove ſo important to her future happineſs or miſery. She found it impoſſible to remain in her own kingdom: She had an averſion, in her preſent wretched condition, to return into France, where ſhe had formerly appeared with ſo much ſplendour; and was not, beſides, provided of a veſſel, which could ſafely convey her thither: The late generous behaviour of Elizabeth made her hope for defence, and even aſſiſtance, from that quarter[p]; and as the preſent fears of her domeſtic enemies were the moſt urgent, ſhe overlooked all other conſiderations, and embraced the reſolution of taking ſhelter in England. She embarked on board a fiſhing-boat in Galloway, and landed the ſame day at Wirkington in Cumberland, about thirty miles diſtant from Carliſle; whence ſhe immediately diſpatched a meſſenger to London; notifying her arrival, deſiring liberty to viſit Elizabeth, and craving her protection, in conſequence of former profeſſions of friendſhip, made her by that princeſs.

Mary flies into England.

16th May.

ELIZABETH now found herſelf in a ſituation, when it was become neceſſary to take ſome deciſive reſolution with regard to her treatment of the Queen of Scots; and as ſhe had hitherto, contrary to the opinion of Cecil, attended more to the motives of generoſity than of policy[q], ſhe was engaged by that prudent miniſter to weigh anew all the conſiderations, which occurred in this critical conjuncture. He repreſented, that the party, which had dethroned Mary, and had at

[p] Jebb's Collection, vol. I. p. 420. [q] Cabala, p. 140.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

preſent aſſumed the government of Scotland, were always the partizans of the Engliſh alliance, and were engaged, by all the motives of religion and of intereſt, to perſevere in their connexions with Elizabeth: That tho' Murray and his friends might complain of ſome unkind uſage during their baniſhment in England, they would eaſily forget theſe grounds of quarrel, when they conſidered, that Elizabeth was the only ally, on whom they could ſafely rely, and that their own Queen, by her attachment to the catholic faith, and by her other connexions, excluded them entirely from the friendſhip of France, and even from that of Spain: That Mary, on the other hand, even before her violent breach with her proteſtant ſubjects, was in ſecret entirely governed by the counſels of the houſe of Guiſe; much more, would ſhe implicitly comply with their views, when by her own miſconduct the power of that family and of the zealous catholics was become her ſole reſource and ſecurity: That her pretenſions to the Engliſh crown would render her a very dangerous inſtrument in their hands; and, were ſhe once able to ſuppreſs the proteſtants in her own kingdom, ſhe would unite the Scots and Engliſh catholics, with thoſe of all foreign ſtates, in one confederacy againſt the religion and government of England: That it behoved Elizabeth therefore to proceed with caution in the deſign of reſtoring her rival to the throne; and to take care, both that that enterprize, if undertaken, ſhould be effected by Engliſh forces alone, and that full ſecurities ſhould beforehand be provided for the reformers and the reformation in Scotland: That above all, it was requiſite to guard carefully the perſon of that princeſs; leſt, finding this unexpected reſerve in the Engliſh friendſhip, ſhe ſhould ſuddenly take the reſolution of flying into France, and ſhould attempt by foreign force to recover poſſeſſion

CHAP. XL. 1563.

poſſeſſion of her authority: That her deſperate fortunes and broken reputation fitted her for any attempt; and her reſentment, when ſhe ſhould find herſelf thus deſerted by the Queen, would concur with her ambition and her bigotry, and render her an unrelenting, as well as powerful, enemy to the Engliſh government: That if ſhe was once abroad, in the hands of enterprizing catholics, the attack of England would appear to her as eaſy as that of Scotland; and the only method, ſhe muſt imagine, of recovering her native kingdom, would be to acquire that crown, to which ſhe would eſteem herſelf equally intitled: That a neutrality in ſuch intereſting ſituations, tho' it might be pretended, could never, without the moſt extreme danger, be upheld by the Queen; and the detention of Mary was equally requiſite, whether the power of England were to be employed in her favour, or againſt her: That nothing indeed was more becoming a great prince than generoſity; yet the ſuggeſtions of this noble principle could never, without the utmoſt imprudence, be conſulted in ſuch delicate circumſtances as thoſe in which the Queen was at preſent placed; where her own ſafety and the intereſts of her people were intimately concerned in every reſolution which ſhe embraced; That tho' the example of ſucceſsful rebellion, eſpecially in a neighbouring country, could be no wiſe agreeable to any ſovereign, yet Mary's imprudence had been ſo great, perhaps her crimes ſo enormous, that the inſurrection of ſubjects, after ſuch provocation, could no longer be regarded as a precedent againſt other princes: That it was firſt neceſſary for Elizabeth to aſcertain, in a regular and ſatisfactory manner, the extent of Mary's guilt, and thence to determine the degree of protection which ſhe ought to afford her, againſt her diſcontented ſubjects: That as no glory could ſurpaſs that of defending oppreſſed innocence, it was equally infamous to patronize vice

CHAP. XL. 1568.

and murder on the throne; and the contagion of such dishonour, would extend itself to all who countenanced or supported it: And that if the crimes of the Scottish princess should, on enquiry, appear as great and certain as was affirmed and believed, every measure against her, which policy should dictate, would thence be justified; or if she should be found innocent, every enterprize, which friendship should inspire, would be acknowledged laudable and glorious.

AGREEABLE to these views, Elizabeth resolved to proceed in a seemingly friendly, but really cautious manner, with the Queen of Scots; and she immediately sent orders to Lady Scrope, sister to the duke of Norfolk, a lady who lived in the neighbourhood, to attend on that princess. Soon after she dispatched to her the lord Scrope himself, warden of the marches, and Sir Francis Knolles, vice chamberlain. They found Mary already lodged in the castle of Carlisle; and after expressing the Queen's sympathy with her in her late misfortunes, they told her, that her request of being allowed to visit their sovereign, and of being admitted to her presence, could not at present be complied with: Till she had cleared herself of her husband's murder, of which she was so strongly accused. Elizabeth could not without dishonour show her any countenance, or appear indifferent to the assassination of so near a kinsman [r]. So unexpected a check threw Mary into tears; and the necessity of her situation extorted from her a declaration, that she would willingly justify herself to her sister from all imputations, and would submit her cause to the arbitration of so good a friend [s]. Two days after, she sent lord Herreis to London with a letter to the same purpose.

[r] Anderson, vol. IV. p. 54, 65, 82, 83, 86.
[s] Ibid. p. 10. 55, 87.

THIS

CHAP. XL. 1568.

THIS conceſſion which Mary could ſcarce avoid, without an acknowledgment of guilt, was the point expected and deſired by Elizabeth: She immediately diſpatched Midlemore to the regent of Scotland; requiring him both to deſiſt from the farther proſecution of his Queen's party, and to ſend ſome perſons to London to juſtify his conduct with regard to her. Murray might juſtly be ſtartled at receiving a meſſage, which muſt have appeared ſomewhat imperious; but as his domeſtic enemies were numerous and powerful, and England was the ſole ally, which he could expect among foreign nations, he was reſolved rather to digeſt the affront than provoke Elizabeth by a refuſal. He alſo conſidered, that tho' that Queen had hitherto appeared partial to Mary, her intereſt evidently engaged her to ſupport the King's cauſe in Scotland; and it was not to be doubted but that penetrating princeſs would in the end diſcover this advantage, and would at leaſt afford him a patient and equitable hearing. He therefore replied, that he would himſelf take a journey into England, attended with other commiſſioners, and would willingly ſubmit the determination of his cauſe to Elizabeth [t].

LORD Herreis now perceived, that his miſtreſs had advanced too far in her conceſſions: He endeavoured to maintain, that Mary could not, without diminution of her royal dignity, ſubmit to a conteſt with her rebellious ſubjects before a foreign prince; and he required either preſent aid from England, or liberty for his Queen to paſs over into France. Being preſſed, however, with the former agreement before the Engliſh council, he again renewed his conſent; but in a few days he began anew to recoil, and it was with ſome difficulty that he was brought to acquieſce in

[t] Anderſon, vol. IV. p. 13 --- 16.

CHAP. XL.

1568.

the first determination[u]. These fluctuations, which were incessantly renewed, showed his visible reluctance to the measures pursued by the court of England.

THE Queen of Scots discovered no less aversion to the trial proposed; and it required all the artifice and prudence of Elizabeth to make her persevere in the agreement to which she had at first consented. This latter princess still said to her, that she desired not, without Mary's consent and approbation, to enter into this question, and pretended only as a friend to hear her justification: That she was confident there would be found no difficulty in refuting all the calumnies of her enemies; and even if her apology should fall short of full conviction, Elizabeth was determined to support her cause, and procure her some reasonable terms of accommodation: And that it was never meant, that she should be cited to a trial on the accusation of her rebellious subjects, but on the contrary, that they should be summoned to appear and justify themselves for their conduct towards her[x]. Allured by these plausible professions, the Queen of Scots agreed to justify herself by her own commissioners before commissioners which should be appointed by Elizabeth.

DURING these transactions, the lord Scrope and Sir Francis Knolles, who resided with Mary at Carlisle, had leizure to study her character, and to make report of it to Elizabeth. Unbroken by her misfortunes, resolute in her purpose, active in her enterprizes, she aspired to nothing but victory, and was determined to endure any extremity, to undergo any difficulty, and to try every fortune, rather than abandon her cause, or yield the superiority to her enemies. Eloquent, insinuating, affable; she had already convinced all those who approached her, of the innocence of her past conduct; and as she declared her fixed purpose to require

[u] Anderson, p. 16---20. [x] Ibid. p. 11, 12, 13, 109, 110.

aid

CHAP. XL.

1568.

aid of her friends all over Europe, and even to have recourſe to infidels and barbarians, rather than fail of vengeance againſt her perſecutors, it was eaſy to foreſee the danger to which her charms, her ſpirit, her addreſs, if allowed to operate with their full force, would expoſe them[y]. The court of England, therefore, who under pretence guarding her, had already, in effect, detained her cloſe priſoner, were determined to watch her with ſtill greater vigilance. As Carliſle, by its ſituation on the borders, afforded her great opportunities for contriving her eſcape, they removed her to Bolton, a ſeat of lord Scrope's in Yorkſhire: And the iſſue of the controverſy between her and the Scots nation was regarded as a ſubject more momentous to Elizabeth's ſecurity and intereſts, than it had ever hitherto been apprehended.

THE perſons, appointed by the Engliſh court for the examination of this great cauſe, were the duke of Norfolk, the earl of Suſſex, and Sir Ralph Sadler; and York was named as the place of conference. Leſley, biſhop of Roſs, the lords Herreis, Levingſtone and Boyde, with five perſons more, appeared as commiſſioners from the Queen of Scots. The earl of Murray, regent, the earl of Morton, the biſhop of Orkney, lord Lindeſey, and the abbot of Dunfermling were appointed commiſſioners from the King and kingdom of Scotland. Secretary Ledington, George Buchanan, the famous poet and hiſtorian, with ſome others, were named as their aſſiſtants.

4th October. Conferences at York and Hampton-court.

IT was a great circumſtance of Elizabeth's glory, that ſhe was thus choſen umpire between the factions of a neighbouring kingdom, which had, during many centuries, entertained the moſt violent jealouſy and animoſity againſt England; and her felicity was equally rare, in having the fortune and fame of ſo dangerous a rival, who had long given her the greateſt inquietude,

[y] Anderſon, vol. IV. p. 54, 71, 72, 74, 78, 92.

now

CHAP. XL.

1568. now entirely at her diſpoſal. Some circumſtances of her late conduct had diſcovered a byaſs towards the ſide of Mary: Her prevailing intereſts led her to favour the enemies of that princeſs: The profeſſions of impartiality, which ſhe had made, were open and frequent; and ſhe had ſo far ſucceeded, that each ſide accuſed her commiſſioners of partiality towards their adverſaries [z]. She herſelf appears, by the inſtructions given them, to have fixed no plan for the deciſion; but ſhe knew, that the advantages, which ſhe ſhould reap, muſt be great, whatever iſſue the cauſe ſhould take. If Mary's crimes could be aſcertained by undoubted proof, ſhe could for ever blaſt the reputation of that princeſs, and might juſtifiably detain her for ever a cloſe priſoner in England: If the evidence fell ſhort of conviction, it was propoſed to reſtore her to her throne, but with ſuch ſtrict limitations, as would leave Elizabeth perpetual arbiter of all differences between the parties in Scotland, and render her in effect abſolute miſtreſs of that Kingdom [a].

MARY's commiſſioners, before they gave in their complaints againſt her enemies in Scotland, entered a proteſt, that their appearance in the cauſe ſhould no wiſe affect the independance of her crown, or be conſtrued as a mark of ſubordination to England: The Engliſh commiſſioners received this proteſt, but with a reſerve to the claim of England. The complaint of that princeſs was next read, and contained a detail of all the injuries, which ſhe had ſuffered, ſince her marriage with Bothwel: That her ſubjects had taken arms againſt her, on pretence of freeing her from captivity; that when ſhe put herſelf into their hands, they had committed her to cloſe cuſtody in Lochlevin; had crowned her ſon, an infant, in her place; had again taken arms againſt her after her delivery from priſon;

z Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 40. Goodall, vol. II. p. 110.

a Ibid, 14, 15, &c.

had rejected all her propoſals for accommodation; had given battle to her troops; and had obliged her, for the ſafety of her perſon, to take ſhelter in England [b]. The earl of Murray, in anſwer to this complaint, gave a ſummary and imperfect account of the late tranſactions: That the earl of Bothwel, the known murderer of the late King, had, a little time after the commiſſion of that crime, ſeized the perſon of the Queen and led her to Dunbar; that he acquired ſuch influence over her as to gain her conſent to marry him, and he had accordingly procured a divorce from his former wife, and had pretended to celebrate his marriage with the Queen; that the ſcandal of this tranſaction, the diſhonour which it brought on the whole nation, the danger to which the infant prince was expoſed from the attempts of that audacious man, had obliged the nobility to take arms, and oppoſe his criminal deſigns and enterprizes; that after the Queen, in order to ſave him, had thrown herſelf into their hands, ſhe ſtill diſcovered ſuch a violent attachment to him, that they found it neceſſary, for their own and the public ſafety, to confine her perſon, during a ſeaſon, till Bothwel and the other murderers of her huſband could be tried and puniſhed for their crimes; and that during this confinement, ſhe had voluntarily, without compulſion or violence, merely from diſguſt at the inquietude and vexations attending power, reſigned her crown to her only ſon, and had appointed the earl of Murray regent during the minority [c]. The Queen's anſwer to this apology was obvious: That ſhe did not know and never could ſuſpect, that Bothwel, who had been acquitted by a jury, and recommended to her by all the nobility for her huſband, was the murderer of the King; that ſhe ever was, and ſtill continues de-

CHAP. XL. 1568.

[b] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 52. Goodall, vol. II. p. 128. Haynes, p. 478. [c] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 64 & ſeq. Goodall, vol. II. p. 144.

ſirous

CHAP. XL. 1568.

sirous, that, if he be guilty, he may be brought to condign punishment; that her resignation of the crown was extorted from her by the well-grounded fears of her life, and even by the direct menaces of violence; and that Throcmorton, the English ambassador, as well as others of her friends, had advised her to sign that paper as the only means of saving herself from the last extremity, and had assured her, that a consent, given under these circumstances, could never have any force or validity [d].

So far the Queen of Scots seemed plainly to have the advantage in the contest; and the English commissioners might have been surprized, that Murray had made so weak a defence, and had suppressed all the material imputations against that princess, on which his party had ever so strenuously insisted, had not some private conferences previously informed them of the secret. Mary's commissioners had boasted, that Elizabeth, from regard to her kinswoman, and from her desire of maintaining the rights of sovereigns, was determined, however criminal the conduct of that princess might appear, to restore her to the throne [e]; and Murray, reflecting on some past measures of the English court, began to apprehend that there were but too just grounds for their expectations. He believed, that Mary, if he would agree to conceal the most violent part of the accusation against her, would submit to any reasonable terms of accommodation; but if he once proceeded so far as to charge her with the whole of her guilt, no composition could afterwards take place; and should she ever be restored, either by the power of Elizabeth, or the assistance of her other friends, he and his party must be exposed to her most severe and implacable vengeance [f]. He resolved therefore not to venture rashly on a measure, which it would be im-

[d] Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 60. & seq. Goodall, vol. II. p. 161.
[e] Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 45. Goodall, vol. II. p. 127. [f] Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 47, 48. Goodall, vol. II. p. 159.

possible

CHAP. XL. 1568.

poſſible for him ever to recal; and he paid privately a viſit to Norfolk and the other Engliſh commiſſioners, confeſſed his ſcruples, laid before them the evidences of the Queen's guilt, and deſired to have ſome ſecurity for Elizabeth's protection, in caſe theſe evidences ſhould, upon examination, appear entirely ſatisfactory. Norfolk was not ſecretly diſpleaſed with theſe ſcruples of the regent [g]. He had ever been a partizan of the Queen of Scots: Secretary Ledington, who began alſo to incline to that party, and was a man of ſingular addreſs and capacity, had engaged him to embrace farther views in her favour, and even to think of eſpouſing her: And tho' that duke confeſſed [h], that the proofs againſt Mary ſeemed to him unqueſtionable, he encouraged Murray in his preſent reſolution not to produce them publickly in the conferences before the Engliſh commiſſioners [i].

NORFOLK, however, was obliged to tranſmit to court the queries propoſed by the regent. Theſe queries conſiſted of four particulars: Whether the Engliſh commiſſioners had authority from their ſovereign to pronounce any ſentence againſt Mary, in caſe her guilt ſhould be fully proved before them? Whether they would promiſe to exerciſe that authority, and proceed to an actual ſentence? Whether the Queen of Scots, if ſhe was found guilty, ſhould be delivered into the hands of the regent, or, at leaſt, ſo ſecured in England, that ſhe never ſhould be able to diſturb the tranquillity of Scotland? and, Whether Elizabeth would alſo, in that caſe, promiſe to acknowledge the young King, and protect the regent in his authority [k]?

ELIZABETH, when theſe queries, with the other tranſactions, were laid before her, began to think that

[g] Crawford, p. 92. Melvil, p. 94. 95. Haynes, p. 574. [h] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 77. [i] Ibid. p. 57, 77. State Trials, vol I. p. 76. [k] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 55. Goodall, vol. II. p. 130.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

they pointed towards a concluſion more deciſive and more advantageous than ſhe had hitherto expected. She determined, therefore, to bring the matter into full light: and under pretext that the diſtance from her perſon retarded the proceedings of her commiſſioners, ſhe ordered them to come to London, and there continue the conferences. On their appearance, ſhe immediately joined in commiſſion with them, ſome of the moſt conſiderable of her council; Sir Nicholas Bacon lord keeper, the earls of Arundel and Leiceſter, lord Clinton, admiral, and Sir William Cecil, ſecretary [l]. The Queen of Scots, who knew nothing of theſe ſecret motives, and who expected, that fear or decency would ſtill reſtrain Murray from proceeding to any violent accuſation againſt her, expreſſed an entire ſatisfaction in this adjournment, and declared, that the affair, being under the immediate inſpection of Elizabeth, was now in the hands where ſhe moſt deſired it [m]. The conferences were accordingly continued at Hampton-Court; and Mary's commiſſioners, as before, made no ſcruple to be preſent at them.

THE Queen, meanwhile, gave a ſatisfactory anſwer to all Murray's demands; and having declared, that tho' ſhe wiſhed and hoped, from the preſent enquiry, to be entirely convinced of Mary's innocence, yet if the event ſhould prove contrary, and if that princeſs ſhould appear guilty of her huſband's murder, ſhe ſhould, for her part, deem her ever after unworthy of a throne [n]. The regent, encouraged by this declaration, opened more fully his charge againſt the Queen of Scots; and after expreſſing his reluctance to proceed to that extremity, and proteſting, that nothing but the neceſſity of ſelf-defence, which muſt not be abandoned for any delicacy, could have engaged him in ſuch a meaſure, he proceeded to accuſe her in plain

[l] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 99. [m] Ibid. p. 95. Goodall, vol. II. p. 177, 179. [n] Goodall, vol. II. p. 199.

terms

terms of participation and consent in the assassination of the King [o]. The earl of Lenox too appeared before the English commissioners; and imploring vengeance for the murder of his son, accused Mary as an accomplice with Bothwel in that enormity [p].

When this charge was so unexpectedly given in, and copies of it transmitted to the bishop of Ross, lord Herreis, and the rest of Mary's commissioners, they absolutely refused to return any answer; and they grounded their silence on very extraordinary reasons: They had orders, they said, from their mistress, if any thing was advanced that might touch her honour, not to make any defence, as she was a sovereign princess, and could not be subject to any tribunal; and they required, that she should previously be admitted to Elizabeth's presence, to whom, and to whom alone, she was determined to justify her innocence [q]. They forgot, that the conferences were at first begun, and were still continued, with no other view than to clear her from the accusations of her enemies; that Elizabeth had ever pretended to enter into them only as her friend, by her own consent and approbation, not as assuming any superior jurisdiction over her; that that princess had from the beginning refused to admit her to her presence, till she should clear herself of the crimes imputed to her; that she had therefore discovered no new signs of partiality by her perseverance in that resolution; and that tho' she had granted an audience to the earl of Murray and his collegues, she had previously conferred the same honour on Mary's commissioners [r]; and her conduct was so far entirely equal to both parties [s].

[o] Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 115, & seq. Goodall, vol. II. p. 206.

[p] Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 122. Goodal, vol. II. p. 208.

[q] Anderson, vol. IV. part 2. p. 125, & seq. Goodal, vol. II. 184, 211, 217.

[r] Lesley's Negociations in Anderson, vol. III. p. 25. Haynes, p. 487.

[s] Mary's complaints of the Queen's partiality in admitting Murray to a conference was a mere pretext in order to break off the conference. She indeed employs that reason in her commission for that purpose (see Good-

As

CHAP. XL. 1568.

As the Queen of Scots refuſed to give in any anſwer to Murray's charge, the neceſſary conſequence ſeemed to be, that there could be no farther proceedings in the trial. But tho' this ſilence might be interpreted as a preſumption againſt her, it did not fully anſwer the purpoſe of thoſe Engliſh miniſters, who were the enemies of that princeſs. They ſtill deſired to have in their hands the proofs of her guilt; and in order to draw them with decency from the regent, a judicious artifice was employed by Elizabeth. Murray was called before the Engliſh commiſſioners; and reproved by them, in the Queen's name, for the atrocious imputations which he had the temerity to throw upon his ſovereign: But tho' the earl of Murray, they added, and the other commiſſioners, had ſo far forgot the duty of allegiance to their prince, the Queen never would overlook what ſhe owed to her friend, her neighbour, and her kinſwoman; and ſhe therefore deſired to know what they could ſay in their own juſtification [t]. Murray, thus urged, made no difficulty of producing the proofs of his charge againſt the Queen of Scots; and among the reſt, ſome love-letters and ſonnets of her's to Bothwel, wrote all in her own hand, and two other papers, one wrote in her own hand, another ſigned by her, and wrote by the earl of Huntley; each of which contained a promiſe of marriage with Bothwel, made before the trial and acquital of that nobleman.

ALL theſe important papers had been kept by Bothwel in a ſilver box or caſket, which had been given him by Mary, and which hadbelonged to her firſt huſband Francis; and tho' the princeſs had enjoined him to

all, vol. II. p. 184) but in her private letter, they are directed to make uſe of that commiſſion to prevent her honour from being attacked. Goodall, vol. II. p. 183. It was the accuſation therefore ſhe was only afraid of.

t Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 147. Goodall, vol. II. p. 233.

burn

CHAP. XL.

1568.

burn the letters as ſoon as he had read them, he had thought proper to preſerve them carefully, as pledges of her fidelity, and had committed them to the cuſtody of Sir James Balfour, deputy-governor of the caſtle of Edinburgh. When that fortreſs was beſieged by the aſſociated lords, Bothwel ſent a ſervant to receive the caſket from the hands of the deputy-governor. Balfour delivered it to the meſſenger; but as he had at that time received ſome diſguſt from Bothwel, and was ſecretly negociating an agreement with the ruling party, he took care, by conveying private intelligence to the earl of Morton, to make the papers be intercepted by him. They contained inconteſtible proofs of Mary's criminal correſpondence with Bothwel, of her conſent to the King's murder, and of her concurrence in that rape which Bothwel pretended to commit upon her[u]. Murray fortified this evidence by ſome teſtimonies of correſpondent facts,[x]; and he added, ſometime after, the dying confeſſion of one Hubert, or French Paris, as he was called, a ſervant of Bothwel's, who had been executed for the King's murder, and who directly charged the Queen with her being acceſſary to that criminal enterprize[y].

MARY's commiſſioners had uſed every expedient to ward this blow, which they ſaw coming upon them, and againſt which, it appears, they were not provided of any proper defence. As ſoon as Murray opened his charge, they endeavoured to turn the conferences from an enquiry into a negociation; and tho' informed by the Engliſh commiſſioners, that nothing could be more diſhonourable for their miſtreſs, than to enter into a treaty with ſuch undutiful ſubjects, before ſhe had juſtified herſelf from thoſe enormous

[u] Anderſon, vol II. p. 115. Goodall vol. II. p. 1.

[x] Anderſon, vol. II. part 2. p. 165, &c. Goodall, vol. II. p. 243.

[y] Anderſon, vol. II. p. 192. Goodall, vol. II. p. 76.

CHAP. XL.

1568.

imputations which had been thrown upon her, they ſtill inſiſted, that Elizabeth ſhould ſettle terms of accommodation between Mary and her enemies in Scotland [z]. They maintained, that till their miſtreſs had given in her anſwer to Murray's charge, his proofs could neither be called for nor produced [a]; and finding, that the Engliſh commiſſioners were ſtill determined to proceed in the method which had been projected, they finally broke off the conferences, and never would make any reply. Theſe papers have all of them been ſince publiſhed. The objections made to their authenticity, are in general of ſmall force: But were they ever ſo ſpecious, they cannot now be hearkened to; ſince Mary, at the time when the truth could have been fully cleared, did, in effect, ratify the evidence againſt her, by recoiling from the enquiry at the very critical moment, and refuſing to give any anſwer to the accuſation of her enemies [b].

z Anderſon, vol. II. part 2. p. 135, 139, Goodall, vol. II. p. 224.

a Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 139, 145. Goodall, vol. II. p. 228.

b We ſhall not enter into a long diſcuſſion of the authenticity of theſe letters: We ſhall only remark in general, that the chief objections againſt them are, that they are ſuppoſed to have paſſed through the earl of Morton's hands, the leaſt ſcrupulous of all Mary's enemies; and that they are, to the laſt degree, indecent, and even ſomewhat inelegant, ſuch as it is not likely ſhe would write. But to theſe preſumptions we may oppoſe the following conſiderations. (1.) Though it be not difficult to counterfeit a ſubſcription, it is very difficult, and almoſt impoſſible, to counterfeit ſeveral pages, ſo as to reſemble exactly the hand writing of any perſon. Theſe letters were examined and compared with Mary's hand writing, by the Engliſh privy council, and by a great many of the nobility, among whom were ſeveral partizans of that princeſs. They might have been examined by the biſhop of Roſs, Herreis, and Mary's commiſſioners. The regent muſt have expected, that they would be very critically examined by them: and had they not been able to ſtand that teſt, he was only preparing a ſcene of confuſion to himſelf. Biſhop Leſly expreſsly declines the comparing the hands, which he calls no legal proof Goodall, vol. II. p. 389. (2.) The letters are very long, much longer than they needed to have been, in order to ſerve the purpoſes of Mary's enemies; a circumſtance, which increaſed the difficulty, and expoſed any forgery the more to the riſk of a detection. (3.) They are not ſo groſs and palpable, as forgeries commonly are; for they left ſtill a pretext for Mary's friends to aſſert, that their meaning was ſtrained to make

But

CHAP. XL.

1568.

But Elizabeth, though ſhe had ſeen enough for her own ſatisfaction, was determined, that the moſt

them appear criminal; ſee Goodall, vol. II. p. 361. (4.) There is a long contract of marriage, ſaid to be wrote by the earl of Huntley, and ſigned by the Queen, before Bothwell's acquital. Would Morton, without any neceſſity, have thus doubled the difficulties of the forgery, and the danger of detection? (5.) The letters are indiſcreet; but ſuch was apparently Mary's conduct at that time: They are inelegant; but they have a careleſs, natural air, like letters haſtily wrote between familiar friends. (6.) They contain ſuch a variety of particular circumſtances, as no body could have thought of inventing, eſpecially as they muſt neceſſarily have afforded her many means of detection. (7.) We have not the originals of the letters, which were in French: We have only a Scots and Latin tranſlation from the original, and a French tranſlation profeſſedly done from the Latin. Now it is remarkable, that the Scots tranſlation is full of Galliciſms, and is clearly a tranſlation from a French original: Such as *make fault, faire des fautes*; *make it ſeem that I believe, faire ſemblant de le croire*; *make brek, faire breche*; *this is my firſt journay, cèſt ma premiere journée*; *have you not deſire to laugh, n'avez vous pas envie de rire*; *the place will hald unto the death, la place tiendra juſqu'a la mort*; *he may not come forth of the houſe this long time, il ne peut pas ſortir du logis de long tems*; *to make me advertiſement, faire m'avertir*; *put order to it, mettre ordre a cela*; *diſcharge your heart*; *decharger votre cœur*; *make gud watch, faites bon garde*, &c. (8.) There is a converſation, which ſhe mentions, between herſelf and the King one evening: but Murray produced before the Engliſh commiſſioners, the teſtimony of one Crawford, a gentleman of the earl of Lenox, who ſwore, that the King, on her departure from him, gave him an account of the ſame converſation. (9.) There ſeems very little reaſon why Murray and his aſſociates ſhould run the riſk of ſuch a dangerous forgery, which muſt have rendered them infamous, if detected; ſince their cauſe, from Mary's known conduct, even without theſe letters, was ſufficiently good and juſtifiable. (10.) Murray expoſed theſe letters to the examination of perſons qualified to judge of them; the Scots council, the Scots Parliament, Queen Elizabeth and her council, who were poſſeſſed of a great number of Mary's genuine letters. (11.) He gave Mary herſelf an opportunity of refuting and expoſing him, if ſhe had choſen to lay hold of it. (12.) The letrers tally ſo well with all the other parts of her conduct during that tranſaction, that theſe proofs throw the ſtrongeſt light on each other. (13.) The duke of Norfolk, who had examined theſe papers, and who favoured ſo much Queen Mary, that he intended to marry her, and in the end loſt his life in her cauſe, yet believed them authentic, and was fully convinced of her guilt. This appears not only from his letters above mentioned, to Queen Elizabeth and her miniſters, but by his ſecret acknowledgment to Baniſter, his moſt truſty confident. See State Trials, vol. I. p. 81. In the conferences between the duke, ſe-

CHAP. XL.

1568.

eminent perſons of her court ſhould alſo be acquainted with theſe tranſactions, and ſhould be convinced

cretary Lidington, and the biſhop of Roſs, all of them zealous partizans of that princeſs, the ſame thing ſeems always to be taken for granted. Ibid. p. 74, 75. See farther MS. in the Advocate's library. A. 3. 28. p. 314. from Cott, lib. Calig. c. 9. (14.) I need not repeat the preſumption drawn from Mary's refuſal to anſwer. The only excuſe for her ſilence, is, that ſhe ſuſpected Elizabeth to be a partial judge: It was not, indeed, the intereſt of that princeſs to acquit and juſtify her rival and competitor; and we accordingly find that Lidington, from the ſecret information of the duke of Norfolk, informed Mary, by the biſhop of Roſs, that the Queen of England never meant to come to a deciſion; but only to get into her hands the proofs of Mary's guilt, in order to blaſt her character. See State Trials, vol I. p. 77. But this was a better reaſon for declining the trial altogether than for breaking it off, on frivolous pretences, the very moment the chief accuſation was unexpectedly opened againſt her. Tho' ſhe could not expect Elizabeth's final deciſion in her favour, it was of importance to give a ſatisfactory anſwer, if ſhe had any, to the accuſation of the Scots commiſſioners. That anſwer could have been diſperſt for the conviction of the public, of foreign nations, and of poſterity. And ſurely after the accuſation and proofs were in Queen Elizabeth's hands, it could do no hurt to give in the anſwers. Mary's information, that the Queen never intended to come to a deciſion, could be no obſtacle to her juſtification. (15.) The very diſappearance of theſe letters, is a preſumption of their authenticity. That event can be accounted for no way but from the care of King James's friends, who were deſirous to deſtroy every proof of his mother's crimes. The diſappearance of Morton's narrative, and of Crawford's evidence, from the Cotton library, Calig. c. 1. muſt have proceeded from a like cauſe. See MS. in the Advocate's library, A. 3. 29. p. 88.

I find an objection made to the authenticity of the letters, drawn from the vote of the Scots privy council, which affirms the letters to be wrote and ſubſcribed by Queen Mary's own hand; whereas the copies given in to the Parliament a few days after, were only wrote, not ſubſcribed. See Goodall, vol. II. p. 64, 67. But it is not conſidered, that this circumſtance is of no manner of force: There were certainly letters, true or falſe, laid before the council; and whether the letters were true or falſe, this miſtake proceeds equally from the inaccuracy or blunder of the clerk. The miſtake is eaſily accounted for: The letters were only wrote by her; the ſecond contract with Bothwel was only ſubſcribed. A proper accurate diſtinction was not made; and they are all ſaid to be wrote and ſubſcribed. A late writer, Mr. Goodall, has endeavoured to prove, that theſe letters clash with chronology, and that the Queen was not in the places mentioned in the letters, on the days there aſſigned: To confirm this, he produces charters and other deeds ſigned by the Queen, where the date and place

of

1568.

of the equity of her proceedings. She ordered her privy-council to be aſſembled; and that ſhe might render the matter more ſolemn and authentic, ſhe added to them the earls of Northumberland, Weſtmoreland, Shrewſbury, Worceſter, Huntingdon, and Warwic. All the proceedings of the Engliſh commiſſioners were read to them: The evidences produced by Murray were peruſed: A great number of letters, wrote by Mary to Elizabeth, were laid before them, and the hand-writing compared with that of the letters delivered in by the regent: The refuſal of the Queen of Scots commiſſioners to make any reply, was related;

do not agree with the letters. But it is well known, that the date of charters, and ſuch like grants, is no proof of the real day on which they were ſigned by the ſovereign. Papers of that kind commonly paſs through different offices: The date is affixed by the firſt office; and may precede very long the day of the ſignature.

The account given by Morton of the manner in which the papers came into his hands, is very natural. When he gave it to the Engliſh commiſſioners, he had reaſon to think it would be canvaſſed with all the ſeverity of able adverſaries, intereſted in the higheſt degree to refute it. It is probable, that he could have confirmed it by many circumſtances and teſtimonies; ſince they declined the conteſt.

The ſonnets are inelegant; inſomuch, that both Brantome and Ronſard, who knew Queen Mary's ſtile, were aſſured, when they ſaw them, that they could not be her compoſition. Jebb, vol. II. p. 478. But no perſon is equal in his productions, eſpecially one whoſe ſtyle is ſo little formed as Mary's muſt be ſuppoſed to be. Not to mention, that ſuch dangerous and criminal enterprizes leave little tranquillity of mind for elegant, poetical compoſitions.

In a word, Queen Mary might eaſily have conducted the whole conſpiracy againſt her huſband, without opening her mind to any one perſon except Bothwel, and without writing a ſcrap of paper about it; but it was very difficult to have conducted it, ſo as that her conduct ſhould not betray her to men of diſcernment. In the preſent caſe, her conduct was ſo groſs as to betray her to every body; and fortune threw into her enemies hands, papers by which they could convict her. The ſame infatuation and imprudence, which happily is the uſual attendant of great crimes, will account for both. It is proper to obſerve, that there is not one circumſtance of the foregoing narrative, contained in the hiſtory, that is taken from Knox, Buchanan, or even Thuanus, or, indeed, from any ſuſpected authority.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

And on the whole Elizabeth told them, that as ſhe had, at firſt, thought it improper, that Mary, after ſuch horrid crimes were imputed to her, ſhould be admitted to her preſence, before ſhe had, in ſome meaſure, juſtified herſelf from the charge; ſo now, when her guilt was confirmed by ſo many plauſible evidences, and all anſwer refuſed, ſhe muſt, for her part, perſevere more ſteadily in that reſolution [c]. Elizabeth next called in the Queen of Scots commiſſioners, and after obſerving, that ſhe deemed it much more decent for their miſtreſs to continue the conferences, than to require the liberty of juſtifying herſelf in perſon; ſhe told them, that Mary might either ſend her reply by a perſon whom ſhe truſted, or deliver it herſelf to ſome Engliſh noblemen, whom Elizabeth ſhould appoint to wait upon her: But as to her reſolution of making no reply at all, ſhe muſt regard it as the ſtrongeſt confeſſion of guilt; nor could they ever be eſteemed her friends, who adviſed her to that method of proceeding [d]. Theſe topics ſhe enforced ſtill more ſtrongly in a letter which ſhe wrote to Mary herſelf [e].

THE Queen of Scots had no other ſubterfuge from theſe preſſing remonſtrances than ſtill to demand a perſonal conference with Elizabeth: A conceſſion which, ſhe was ſenſible, could never be granted [f]; both becauſe Elizabeth knew, that that expedient could decide nothing, and becauſe it brought matters to extremity, which that princeſs deſired to avoid. In order to keep herſelf better in countenance, Mary thought of another device. Even after all the conferences were broke off, ſhe ordered her commiſſioners to accuſe the earl of Murray and his aſſociates as the mur-

[c] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 170, &c. Goodall, vol. II. p. 254.
[d] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 179, &c. Goodall, vol. II. p. 268.
[e] Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 183. Goodall, vol. II. p. 269.
[f] Cabala, p. 157.

derers

derers of the King [g]: But this accuſation, coming ſo late, being extorted merely by a complaint of Murray's, and being unſupported by any proof, could only be regarded as an angry retaliation upon her enemy [h]. She alſo deſired to have copies of the papers giv-

CHAP. XL. 1568.

g Goodall, vol. II. p. 280.

h Unleſs we take this angry accuſation, advanced by Queen Mary, to be an argument of Murray's guilt, there remains not the leaſt preſumption which ſhould lead us to ſuſpect him to have been any wiſe an accomplice in the King's murder. That Queen never pretended to give any proof of the charge; and her commiſſioners affirmed at the time, that they themſelves knew of none, tho' they were ready to maintain its truth by their miſtreſs's orders, and would produce ſuch proof as ſhe ſhould ſend them. It is remarkable, that, at that time, it was impoſſible for either her or them to produce any proof; becauſe the conferences before the Engliſh commiſſioners were previouſly broke off.

It is true, the biſhop of Roſs, in an angry pamphlet, wrote by him under a borrowed name, (where it is eaſy to ſay any thing) affirms, that lord Herreis, a few days after the King's death, charged Murray with the guilt, openly, to his face, at his own table That nobleman, as Leſly relates the matter, affirmed, that Murray, riding in Fife with one of his ſervants, the evening before the commiſſion of that crime, ſaid to him among other talk, *This night 'ere morning the lord Darnley ſhall loſe his life.* See Anderſon, vol. I. p. 75. But this is only hearſay of Leſly's, concerning a hearſay of Herreis's; and contains a very improbable fact. Would Murray, without any uſe or neceſſity, communicate to a ſervant, ſuch a dangerous and important ſecret, merely by way of converſation? We may alſo obſerve, that lord Herreis himſelf was one of Queen Mary's commiſſioners who accuſed Murray. Had he ever heard this ſtory, or given credit to it, was not that the time to have produced it; and not have affirmed, as he did, that he, for his part, knew nothing of Murray's guilt. See Goodall, vol. II. p. 307.

The earls of Huntley and Argyle accuſe Murray of this crime; but the reaſon which they aſſign is moſt ridiculous. He had given his conſent to Queen Mary's divorce from the King; therefore he was the King's murderer. See Anderſon, vol. IV. part 2. p. 192. It is a ſure argument, that theſe earls knew no better proof againſt Murray, otherwiſe they would have produced it, and not have inſiſted on ſo abſurd a preſumption. Was not this alſo the time for Huntley to deny his writing Mary's contract with Bothwel, if that paper had been a forgery?

Murray could have no motive to commit that crime. The King, indeed, bore him ſome ill-will; but the King himſelf was become ſo deſpicable, both from his own ill-conduct and the Queen's averſion to him, that he could neither do good nor harm to any body. To judge by the event, in any caſe, is always abſurd; but more eſpecially in the preſent.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

en in by the regent; but as she still persisted in her resolution to make no reply, this demand was finally refused her [i].

As Mary had thus put an end to the conference, the regent expressed great impatience to return into Scotland; and he complained, that his enemies had taken advantage of his absence, and had thrown the whole government into confusion. Elizabeth, therefore, dismissed him; and granted him a loan of five thousand pounds, to bear the charges of his journey [k]. During the conference at York, the duke of Chatelrault arrived at London, in passing from France; and as the Queen knew, that he was engaged in Mary's party, and had very plausible pretensions to the regency of the King of Scots; she thought proper to detain him till after Murray's departure. But notwithstanding these marks of favour, and some other assistance, which she secretly gave the regent [l], she still declined acknowledging the young King, or treating with Murray as regent of Scotland.

ORDERS were given for removing the Queen of Scots from Bolton, a place surrounded with catholics, to Tutbury in the county of Stafford; where she was put under the custody of the earl of Shrewsbury. Elizabeth entertained hopes, that that princess, discouraged by her misfortunes, and confounded by the late transactions, would be glad to secure a safe retreat from all the tempests, with which she had been agitated; and she promised to bury every thing in oblivion, provided Mary would agree, either to resign voluntarily her crown, or to associate

The King's murder, indeed, procured Murray the regency: But much more Queen Mary's ill-conduct and imprudence, which he could not possibly foresee, and which never would have happened, had she been entirely innocent.

[i] Goodall, vol. II. p. 253, 283, 289, 310, 311. Haynes, vol. I. p. 492.
[k] Rymer, tom. XV. p. 677. [l] MS. in the Advocate's library. A. 3, 29. p. 128, 129, 130, from Cott. Lib. Cal. c. 1.

her

her ſon with her in the government; and the adminiſtration to remain, during his minority, in the hands of the earl of Murray[m]. But that high-ſpirited princeſs refuſed all treaty upon ſuch terms, and declared that her laſt words ſhould be thoſe of a Queen of Scotland. Beſides many other reaſons, ſhe ſaid, which fixed her in that reſolution, ſhe knew, that, if, in the preſent emergence, ſhe made ſuch conceſſions, her ſubmiſſion would be univerſally deemed an acknowlegement of guilt, and would ratify all the calumnies of her enemies[n]. CHAP. XL. 1568.

MARY ſtill inſiſted upon the alternative of two demands; either that Elizabeth ſhould aſſiſt her in recovering her authority, or ſhould give her liberty to retire into France, and make trial of the friendſhip of other princes: And as ſhe aſſerted, that ſhe had come voluntarily into England, invited by many former profeſſions of amity, ſhe thought that one of theſe requeſts could not, without the moſt extreme injuſtice, be refuſed her. But Elizabeth, ſenſible of the danger, which attended either of theſe propoſals, was ſecretly reſolved to detain her ſtill a captive; and as her retreat into England had been very little voluntary, her claim upon the Queen's generoſity appeared much leſs urgent than ſhe was willing to pretend. Neceſſity, it was thought, would to the prudent juſtify her detention: Her paſt miſconduct would apologize for it to the equitable: And tho' it was foreſeen, that compaſſion for her ſituation, joined to her intrigues and inſinuating behaviour, would, while ſhe remained in England, excite the zeal of her friends, eſpecially of the catholics; theſe inconveniences were eſteemed much leſs than thoſe which attended any other expedient. Elizabeth truſted alſo to her own addreſs, for eluding all thoſe difficulties: She propoſed to avoid breaking abſolutely with the Queen of Scots, to keep

[m] Goodall, vol. II. p. 295. [n] Ibid. p. 301.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

her always in hopes of accommodation, to negotiate perpetually with her, and ſtill to throw the blame of not coming to any concluſion, either on unforeſeen accidents, or on the obſtinacy and perverſeneſs of others.

WE come now to mention ſome Engliſh affairs, which we left behind us, that we might not interrupt our narration of the events in Scotland, which form ſo material a part of the preſent reign. The term, fixed by the treaty of Cateau-Cambreſis for the reſtitution of Calais expired in 1567; and Elizabeth, after making her demand at the gates of that city, ſent Sir Thomas Smith to Paris; and that miniſter, in conjunction with Sir Henry Norris, her ordinary ambaſſador, enforced her pretenſions. Conferences were held on that head, without coming to any concluſion. The chancellor De L'Hopital told the Engliſh ambaſſadors, that tho' France by an article of the treaty was obliged to reſtore Calais on the expiration of eight years, there was another article of the ſame treaty, which now deprived Elizabeth of all right, that could accrue to her by that engagement: That it was agreed, if the Engliſh ſhould, during that interval, commit hoſtilities upon France, they ſhould inſtantly forfeit all claim to Calais; and the taking poſſeſſion of Havre and Dieppe, with whatever pretences that meaſure might be covered, was a plain violation of the peace between the nations: That tho' theſe places were not taken by force, but put into Elizabeth's hands by the governors; theſe governors were rebels; and a correſpondence with ſuch offenders was the moſt flagrant injury, which could be committed to any ſovereign: That in the treaty, which enſued upon the expulſion of the Engliſh from Normandy, the French miniſters had abſolutely refuſed to make any mention of Calais, and had thereby declared their intention to

take advantage of the title which had accrued ro the crown of France: And that tho' a general clauſe had been inſerted, implying a reſervation of all claims; this conceſſion could not avail the Engliſh, who at that time poſſeſſed no juſt claim to Calais, and had previouſly forfeited all pretenſions to that fortreſs [o]. The Queen was no wiſe ſurprized at hearing theſe allegations; and as ſhe knew, that the French court intended not from the firſt to make reſtitution, much leſs, after they could defend their refuſal by ſuch plauſible reaſons, ſhe thought it better for the preſent to ſubmit to the loſs, than to purſue a doubtful title by a war both dangerous and expenſive, as well as unſeaſonable [p]. 1568.

ELIZABETH entered anew into negotiations for marrying the archduke Charles; and ſhe ſeemed at preſent to have no great motive of policy, which might induce her to make this fallacious offer: But as ſhe was very rigorous in the terms inſiſted on, and refuſed him all power and title, and even the exerciſe of his religion in England, the treaty came to nothing; and that prince, deſpairing of ſucceſs in his addreſſes, married the daughter of Albert, duke of Bavaria [q].

[o] Haynes, p. 587. [p] Camden, p. 406. [q] Ibid. p. 407, 408.

CHAP.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

her always in hopes of accommodation, to negotiate perpetually with her, and ſtill to throw the blame of not coming to any concluſion, either on unforeſeen accidents, or on the obſtinacy and perverſeneſs of others.

WE come now to mention ſome Engliſh affairs, which we left behind us, that we might not interrupt our narration of the events in Scotland, which form ſo material a part of the preſent reign. The term, fixed by the treaty of Cateau-Cambreſis for the reſtitution of Calais expired in 1567; and Elizabeth, after making her demand at the gates of that city, ſent Sir Thomas Smith to Paris; and that miniſter, in conjunction with Sir Henry Norris, her ordinary ambaſſador, enforced her pretenſions. Conferences were held on that head, without coming to any concluſion. The chancellor De L'Hopital told the Engliſh ambaſſadors, that tho' France by an article of the treaty was obliged to reſtore Calais on the expiration of eight years, there was another article of the ſame treaty, which now deprived Elizabeth of all right, that could accrue to her by that engagement: That it was agreed, if the Engliſh ſhould, during that interval, commit hoſtilities upon France, they ſhould inſtantly forfeit all claim to Calais; and the taking poſſeſſion of Havre and Dieppe, with whatever pretences that meaſure might be covered, was a plain violation of the peace between the nations: That tho' theſe places were not taken by force, but put into Elizabeth's hands by the governors; theſe governors were rebels; and a correſpondence with ſuch offenders was the moſt flagrant injury, which could be committed to any ſovereign: That in the treaty, which enſued upon the expulſion of the Engliſh from Normandy, the French miniſters had abſolutely refuſed to make any mention of Calais, and had thereby declared their intention to

take advantage of the title which had accrued ro the crown of France: And that tho' a general clauſe had been inſerted, implying a reſervation of all claims; this conceſſion could not avail the Engliſh, who at that time poſſeſſed no juſt claim to Calais, and had previouſly forfeited all pretenſions to that fortreſs [o]. The Queen was no wiſe ſurprized at hearing theſe allegations; and as ſhe knew, that the French court intended not from the firſt to make reſtitution, much leſs, after they could defend their refuſal by ſuch plauſible reaſons, ſhe thought it better for the preſent to ſubmit to the loſs, than to purſue a doubtful title by a war both dangerous and expenſive, as well as unſeaſonable [p].

ELIZABETH entered anew into negotiations for marrying the archduke Charles; and ſhe ſeemed at preſent to have no great motive of policy, which might induce her to make this fallacious offer: But as ſhe was very rigorous in the terms inſiſted on, and refuſed him all power and title, and even the exerciſe of his religion in England, the treaty came to nothing; and that prince, deſpairing of ſucceſs in his addreſſes, married the daughter of Albert, duke of Bavaria [q].

[o] Haynes, p. 587. [p] Camden, p. 406. [q] Ibid. p. 407, 408.

CHAP.

CHAP. XL.

Character of the puritans.—Duke of Norfolk's conſpiracy.—Inſurrection in the north.—Aſſaſſination of the Earl of Murray.—A Parliament. Civil wars of France.—Affairs of the Low Countries.—New conſpiracy of the duke of Norfolk—Trial of Norfolk.—His execution.—Scotch affairs.—French Affairs. Maſſacre of Paris.—French affairs.—Civil wars of the Low Countries.—A Parliament.

1568. Character of the puritans.

OF all the European churches, which ſhook off the yoke of the papal authority, no one proceeded with ſo much reaſon and moderation as the church of England; an advantage, which had been derived partly from the interpoſition of the civil magiſtrate in this innovation, partly from the gradual and ſlow ſteps by which the reformation was conducted in that kingdom. Rage and animoſity againſt the catholic religion was as little indulged as could be ſuppoſed in ſuch a revolution: The fabric of the ſecular hierachy was maintained entire: The antient liturgy was preſerved, ſo far as was thought conſiſtent with the new principles: Many ceremonies, become venerable from age and preceding uſe, were retained: The ſplendor of the catholic worſhip, tho' removed, had at leaſt given place to order and decency: The diſtinctive habits of the clergy, according to their different ranks, were continued: No innovation was admitted merely from ſpite and oppoſition to the former uſage: And the new religion, by mitigating the genius of the antient ſuperſtition, and rendering it more compatible with the peace and intereſts of ſociety, had preſerved itſelf in that happy medium, which wiſe men have always ſought, and which

which the people have ſo ſeldom been able to maintain.

CHAP. XL. 1568.

But tho' ſuch in general was the ſpirit of the reformation in that country, many of the Engliſh reformers, being men of a more warm complexion and more obſtinate temper, endeavoured to puſh matters to extremity againſt the church of Rome, and indulged themſelves in the moſt violent contrariety and antipathy to all former practices. Among theſe, Hooper, who afterwards ſuffered for his religion with ſuch extraordinary conſtancy, was chiefly diſtinguiſhed. This man was appointed, during the reign of Edward, to the ſee of Gloceſter, and made no ſcruple of accepting the epiſcopal office; but he refuſed to be conſecrated in the epiſcopal habits, the cymarre and rochette, which had formerly, he ſaid, been abuſed to ſuperſtition, and which were thereby rendered unbecoming a true chriſtian. Cranmer and Ridley were ſurprized at this objection, which oppoſed the received practice, and even the eſtabliſhed laws; and tho' young Edward, deſirous to promote a man ſo celebrated for his eloquence, his zeal, and his morals, enjoined them to diſpenſe with this ceremony, they ſtill continued reſolute to retain it. Hooper then embraced the reſolution, rather to refuſe the biſhopric than cloath himſelf in thoſe hated garments; but it was determined, that, for the ſake of the example, he ſhould not eſcape ſo eaſily. He was firſt confined to Cranmer's houſe, and then thrown into priſon, till he ſhould conſent to be a biſhop on the terms propoſed: He was plyed with conferences, and reprimands, and arguments: Bucer and Peter Martyr and the moſt celebrated foreign reformers were conſulted on this important queſtion: And a compromiſe, with great difficulty, was at laſt made, that Hooper ſhould not be obliged to wear commonly the obnoxious robes, but ſhould agree to be conſecrated in them, and to uſe them during cathedral ſervice[1]: A condeſcenſion

[1] Burnet, vol. II. p. 152. Heylin, p. 90.

not

CHAP. XL. 1568.

not a little extraordinary in a man of ſo inflexible a ſpirit as this reformer.

THE ſame objection, which had riſen with regard to the epiſcopal habits, had been moved againſt the rayment of the inferior clergy; and the ſurplice in particular, with the tippet and corner cap, was a great object of abhorrence to many of the popular zealots [s]. In vain was it urged, that particular habits, as well as poſtures and ceremonies, being conſtantly uſed by the clergy, and employed in religious ſervice, acquire a veneration in the eyes of the people, appear ſacred to their apprehenſions, exite their devotion, and contract a kind of myſterious virtue, which attaches the affections of men to the national and eſtabliſhed worſhip: That in order to produce this effect an uniformity in theſe particulars is requiſite, and even a perſeverance, as far as poſſible, in the former practice: And that the nation would be happy, if, by retaining theſe inoffenſive obſervances, they could engage the people to renounce willingly what was hurtful or pernicious in the antient ſuperſtition. Theſe arguments, which had influence with wiſe men, were the very reaſons, which engaged the violent proteſtants to reject the habits. They puſhed matters to a total oppoſition with the church of Rome: Every compliance, they ſaid, was a ſymbolizing with Antichriſt [t]: And this ſpirit was carried ſo far by ſome reformers, that in a national remonſtrance, which was afterwards made by the church of Scotland againſt theſe habits, it was aſked, "What has Chriſt Jeſus to do "with Belial? What has darkneſs to do with light? "If ſurplices, corner caps, and tippets have been "badges of idolaters in the very act of their idolatry; "why ſhould the preacher of Chriſtian liberty, and "the open rebuker of all ſuperſtition partake with the "dregs of the Romiſh beaſt? Yea, who is there that "ought not rather to be afraid of taking in his hand or "on his forehead the print and mark of that odious "beaſt?

[s] Strype, vol. I. p. 416. [t] Ibid. p. 416.

CHAP. XL.

1568.

"beaſt [u]?" But this application was rejected by the Engliſh church.

THERE was only one inſtance, where the ſpirit of contradiction to the Romaniſts took place univerſally in England: The altar was removed from the wall, was placed in the middle of the church, and was thenceforth denominated the communion-table. The reaſon, why this reformation met with ſuch general compliance, was, that the nobility and gentry got thereby a pretence for making ſpoil of the plate, veſtures, and rich ornaments, which belonged to the altars [x].

THESE diſputes, which had been ſtarted during the reign of Edward, were carried abroad by the proteſtants, who fled from the perſecutions of Mary; and as their zeal had received an encreaſe from the furious cruelty of their enemies, they were generally inclined to carry their oppoſition to the utmoſt extremity againſt the practices of the church of Rome. Their communication with Calvin and the other reformers, who followed the diſcipline and worſhip of Geneva, confirmed them farther in this obſtinate reluctance; and tho' ſome of the refugees, particularly thoſe eſtabliſhed at Frankfort, ſtill adhered to King Edward's liturgy, the prevailing ſpirit carried theſe confeſſors to ſeek a ſtill farther reformation. On the acceſſion of Elizabeth, they returned to their native country; and being regarded with general veneration on account of their zeal and paſt ſufferings, they ventured to inſiſt on the eſtabliſhment of their projected model; nor did they want countenance from many conſiderable perſons in the Queen's council. But the Princeſs herſelf, ſo far from being willing to deſpoil religion of the few ornaments and ceremonies, which remained in it, was of herſelf rather inclined to bring the public worſhip ſtill nearer to the Romiſh ritual [y]; and ſhe thought, that the reformation

[u] Keith, p. 565. Knox, p. 402. [x] Heylin, preface, p. 3. Hiſt. p 106.

[y] *When Nowel, one of her chaplains, had ſpoke leſs reverently in a ſermon, preached before her of the ſign of the croſs, ſhe called aloud to him from her*

had

CHAP. XL.

1568.

not a little extraordinary in a man of ſo inflexible a ſpirit as this reformer.

THE ſame objection, which had riſen with regard to the epiſcopal habits, had been moved againſt the rayment of the inferior clergy; and the ſurplice in particular, with the tippet and corner cap, was a great object of abhorrence to many of the popular zealots [s]. In vain was it urged, that particular habits, as well as poſtures and ceremonies, being conſtantly uſed by the clergy, and employed in religious ſervice, acquire a veneration in the eyes of the people, appear ſacred to their apprehenſions, exite their devotion, and contract a kind of myſterious virtue, which attaches the affections of men to the national and eſtabliſhed worſhip: That in order to produce this effect an uniformity in theſe particulars is requiſite, and even a perſeverance, as far as poſſible, in the former practice: And that the nation would be happy, if, by retaining theſe inoffenſive obſervances, they could engage the people to renounce willingly what was hurtful or pernicious in the antient ſuperſtition. Theſe arguments, which had influence with wiſe men, were the very reaſons, which engaged the violent proteſtants to reject the habits. They puſhed matters to a total oppoſition with the church of Rome: Every compliance, they ſaid, was a ſymbolizing with Antichriſt [t]: And this ſpirit was carried ſo far by ſome reformers, that in a national remonſtrance, which was afterwards made by the church of Scotland againſt theſe habits, it was aſked, "What has Chriſt Jeſus to do "with Belial? What has darkneſs to do with light? "If ſurplices, corner caps, and tippets have been "badges of idolaters in the very act of their idolatry; "why ſhould the preacher of Chriſtian liberty, and "the open rebuker of all ſuperſtition partake with the "dregs of the Romiſh beaſt? Yea, who is there that "ought not rather to be afraid of taking in his hand or "on his forehead the print and mark of that odious "beaſt?

[s] Strype, vol. I. p. 416. [t] Ibid. p. 416.

CHAP. XL.

1568.

"beaſt [u]?" But this application was rejected by the Engliſh church.

THERE was only one inſtance, where the ſpirit of contradiction to the Romaniſts took place univerſally in England: The altar was removed from the wall, was placed in the middle of the church, and was thenceforth denominated the communion-table. The reaſon, why this reformation met with ſuch general compliance, was, that the nobility and gentry got thereby a pretence for making ſpoil of the plate, veſtures, and rich ornaments, which belonged to the altars [x].

THESE diſputes, which had been ſtarted during the reign of Edward, were carried abroad by the proteſtants, who fled from the perſecutions of Mary; and as their zeal had received an encreaſe from the furious cruelty of their enemies, they were generally inclined to carry their oppoſition to the utmoſt extremity againſt the practices of the church of Rome. Their communication with Calvin and the other reformers, who followed the diſcipline and worſhip of Geneva, confirmed them farther in this obſtinate reluctance; and tho' ſome of the refugees, particularly thoſe eſtabliſhed at Frankfort, ſtill adhered to King Edward's liturgy, the prevailing ſpirit carried theſe confeſſors to ſeek a ſtill farther reformation. On the acceſſion of Elizabeth, they returned to their native country; and being regarded with general veneration on account of their zeal and paſt ſufferings, they ventured to inſiſt on the eſtabliſhment of their projected model; nor did they want countenance from many conſiderable perſons in the Queen's council. But the Princeſs herſelf, ſo far from being willing to deſpoil religion of the few ornaments and ceremonies, which remained in it, was of herſelf rather inclined to bring the public worſhip ſtill nearer to the Romiſh ritual [y]; and ſhe thought, that the reformation

[u] Keith, p. 565. Knox, p. 402. [x] Heylin, preface, p. 3. Hiſt. p 106.

[y] *When Nowel, one of her chaplains, had ſpoke leſs reverently in a ſermon, preached before her of the ſign of the croſs, ſhe called aloud to him from her*

had

CHAP. XL. 1568.

had already gone too far in ſhaking off thoſe forms and obſervances, which, without diſtracting men of more refined apprehenſions, tend in a very innocent manner to allure, and amuſe, and engage the vulgar. She took care to have a law for uniformity ſtrictly enacted: She was empowered by the parliament to add any new ceremonies, which ſhe thought proper: And tho' ſhe was ſparing in the exerciſe of this prerogative, ſhe continued rigid in exacting an obſervance of the eſtabliſhed laws, and in puniſhing all nonconformity. The zealots, therefore, who harboured a ſecret antipathy to the epiſcopal order and to the whole liturgy, were obliged, in a great meaſure, to conceal theſe ſentiments, which would have been regarded as highly audacious and criminal; and they confined their avowed objections to the ſurplice, the confirmation of children, the ſign of the croſs in baptiſm, the ring in marriage, kneeling at the ſacrament, and bowing at the name of Jeſus. So fruitleſs is it for ſovereigns to watch with a rigid care over orthodoxy, and to employ the ſword in religious controverſy, that the work, perpetually renewed, is perpetually to begin; and a garb, a geſture, nay, a metaphyſical or grammatical diſtinction, when rendered important by the diſputes of theologians and the zeal of the magiſtrate, is ſufficient to deſtroy the unity of the church, and even the peace of ſociety. Theſe controverſies had already excited ſuch ferment among the people, that in ſome places they refuſed to frequent the churches where the habits and ceremonies were uſed, would not ſalute the conforming clergy, and proceeded ſo far as to revile them in the ſtreets, ſo ſpit in their

cloſet window, commanding him to retire from that ungodly digreſſion and to return unto his text. And on the other ſide, when one of her divines had preached a ſermon in defence of the real preſence, ſhe openly gave him thanks for his pains and piety. Heylin, p. 124. She would have abſolutely forbid the marriage of the clergy, if Cecil had not interpoſed Strype's Life of Parker, p. 107, 108, 109. She was an enemy to ſermons; and uſually ſaid, that ſhe thought two or three preachers were ſufficient for a whole county.

faces

faces, and to use them with all manner of contumely [z]. And while the sovereign authority checked these excesses, the flame was confined, not extinguished; and burning fiercer from confinement, it burst out in the succeeding reigns to the destruction of the church and monarchy. CHAP. XL. 1568.

All enthusiasts, indulging themselves in rapturous flights, extasies, visions, inspirations, have a natural aversion to episcopal authority, to ceremonies, rites, and forms, which they denominate superstition, or beggarly elements, and which seem to restrain the liberal effusions of their zeal and devotion: But there was another set of opinions adopted by these innovators, which rendered them in a peculiar manner the object of Elizabeth's aversion. The same bold and daring spirit, which accompanied them in their addresses to the divinity, appeared in their political speculations; and the principles of civil liberty, which, during some reigns, had been very little avowed in the nation, and which were totally incompatible with the present exorbitant prerogative, had been strongly adopted by this new sect. Scarce any sovereign before Elizabeth, and none after her, carried higher, both in speculation and practice, the authority of the crown; and the puritans (so these sectaries were called, on account of their pretending to a greater purity of worship and discipline) could not recommend themselves worse to her favour, than by preaching up the doctrine of resisting or restraining princes. From all these motives, the Queen neglected no opportunity of depressing those zealous innovators; and while they were countenanced by some of her most favoured ministers, Cecil, Leicester, Knolles, Bedford, Walsingham, she never was, to the end of her life, reconciled to their principles and practices.

We have thought proper to insert in this place an

[z] Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 460.

CHAP. XL.

1568. account of the riſe and the genius of the puritans; becauſe Camden marks the preſent year, as the period when they began to make themſelves conſiderable in England. We now return to our narration.

1569. Duke of Norfolk's conſpiracy. THE Duke of Norfolk was the only peer, who enjoyed the higheſt title of nobility; and as there were at preſent no princes of the blood, the ſplendor of his family, the opulence of his fortune, and the extent of his influence, had rendered him without compariſon the firſt ſubject in England. The qualities of his mind correſponded to his high ſtation: Beneficent, affable, generous, he had acquired the affections of the people; prudent, moderate, obſequious, he poſſeſſed without giving jealouſy the good graces of his ſovereign. His grandfather and father had long been regarded as the leaders of the catholics; and this hereditary attachment, joined to the alliances of blood, had procured him the friendſhip of the moſt conſiderable men of that party: But as he had been educated among the reformers, was ſincerely devoted to their principles, and maintained that ſtrict decorum and regularity of life, by which the proteſtants were at that time diſtinguiſhed; he thereby enjoyed the rare felicity of being popular even with the moſt oppoſite factions. The height of his proſperity alone was the ſource of his misfortunes, and engaged him into attempts, from which his virtue and prudence would naturally have for ever kept him at a diſtance.

NORFOLK was at this time a widower; and being of a ſuitable age to eſpouſe the Queen of Scots, that marriage had appeared ſo natural, that it had occurred to ſeveral of his friends and thoſe of that princeſs: But the firſt perſon, who, after ſecretary Lidington, opened the ſcheme to the duke is ſaid to be the earl of Murray, before his departure for Scotland [a]. That nobleman ſet before Norfolk both the advantage of compoſing the differences in Scotland by an alliance which would be

[a] Leſley, p. 36, 37.

ſo

CHAP. XL. 1569.

ſo generally acceptable, and the proſpect of reaping the ſucceſſion of England; and in order to bind Norfolk's intereſt the faſter with Mary's, he propoſed that the duke's daughter ſhould eſpouſe the young king of Scotland. The obtaining previouſly Elizabeth's conſent, was regarded both by Murray and Norfolk as a circumſtance eſſential to the ſucceſs of their project; and all circumſtances being adjuſted between them, Murray took care, by the means of Sir Rober Melvil, to have the deſign communicated to the Queen of Scots. That princeſs replied, that the vexations, which ſhe had met with in her two laſt marriages, had made her more inclined to lead a ſingle life, but ſhe was determined to ſacifice her own inclinations to the public welfare: And therefore, ſo ſoon as ſhe ſhould be legally divorced from Bothwell, ſhe would be determined by the opinion of her nobility and people in the choice of another huſband [b].

It is probable, that Murray was not ſincere in this propoſal. He had two motives to engage him to diſſimulation. He knew the danger, which he muſt run in his return thro' the North of England, from the power of the Earls of Northumberland and Weſtmoreland, Mary's partizans in that country; and he dreaded an inſurrection in Scotland from the duke of Chatelrault, and the earls of Argyle and Huntley, whom ſhe had appointed her lieutenants during her abſence. By theſe feigned appearances of friendſhip, he both engaged Norfolk to write in his favour to the northern noblemen [c]; and he perſuaded the Queen of Scots to give her lieutenants permiſſion, and even advice, to make a ceſſation of hoſtilities with the regent's party [d].

The duke of Norfolk, tho' he had agreed, that Elizabeth's conſent ſhould be previouſly obtained, before the completion of his marriage, had good reaſon to apprehend, that he never ſhould prevail with her volun-

[b] Leſley, p. 40, 41. [c] State Trials, p. 76, 78. [d] Leſley, p. 41.

CHAP. XL. 1569.

tarily to make that conceſſion. He knew her perpetual and unrelenting jealouſy againſt her heir and rival; he was acquainted with her former reluctance to all propoſals of marriage with the Queen of Scots; he foreſaw, that that princeſs's eſpouſing a perſon of his power, and character, and intereſt, would give the greateſt umbrage; and as it would then become neceſſary to reinſtate Mary in poſſeſſion of her throne on ſome tolerable terms, and even to endeavour the re-eſtabliſhing her character, he dreaded, that Elizabeth, whoſe politics had now taken a different turn, would never agree to ſuch indulgent and generous conditions. He therefore attempted previouſly to gain the conſent and approbation of ſeveral of the moſt conſiderable nobility; and he was ſucceſsful with the earls of Pembroke, Arundel, Derby, Bedford, Shrewſbury, Southampton, Northumberland, Weſtmoreland, Suſſex[e]. The lord Lumley, and Sir Nicholas Throcmorton embraced cordially the propoſal: Even the earl of Leiceſter, Elizabeth's declared favourite, who had formerly entertained ſome views of eſpouſing Mary, willingly reſigned all his pretenſions, and ſeemed to enter zealouſly into Norfolk's intereſts[f]. There were other motives, beſides affection to the duke, which produced this general combination of the nobility.

SIR William Cecil, ſecretary of ſtate, was the moſt vigilant, active, and prudent miniſter ever known in England; and as he was governed by no views but the intereſts of his ſovereign, which he inflexibly purſued, his authority over her became every day more predominant. Ever cool himſelf, and uninfluenced by prejudice or affection, he checked thoſe ſallies of paſſion, and ſometimes of caprice, to which ſhe was ſubject; and if he failed of perſwading her in the firſt movement, his perſeverance, and remonſtrances, and arguments were ſure at laſt to recommend themſelves to her ſound

[e] Leſley, p. 55. Camden, p. 419. Spotſwood, p. 230. [f] Haynes, p. 535.

diſcernment.

diſcernment. The more credit he gained with his miſtreſs, the more was he expoſed to the envy of her other counſellors; and as he had been ſuppoſed to adopt the intereſts of the houſe of Suffolk, whoſe claim ſeemed to carry with it no danger to the preſent eſtabliſhment, his enemies, in oppoſition to him, were naturally led to attach themſelves to the Queen of Scots. Elizabeth ſaw, without uneaſineſs, this emulation among her courtiers, which ſerved to augment her authority: and tho ſhe ſupported Cecil, wherever matters came to extremity, and diſſipated every conſpiracy againſt him, particularly one laid about this time to have him thrown into the Tower on ſome pretence or other [g], ſhe never gave him ſuch unlimited confidence as might enable him entirely to cruſh his adverſaries.

Norfolk, ſenſible of the difficulty, which he muſt meet with in controling Cecil's councils, eſpecially where they concurred with the inclinations, as well as intereſts of the Queen, durſt not open to her his intentions of marrying the Queen of Scots; but proceeded ſtill in the ſame courſe of encreaſing his intereſt in the kingdom, and engaging more of the nobility to take part in his meaſures. A letter was wrote to Mary by Leiceſter, and ſigned by ſeveral men of the firſt rank, recommending Norfolk for her huſband, and ſtipulating conditions for the advantage of both kingdoms; particularly, that ſhe ſhould give ſufficient ſurety to Elizabeth, and the heirs of her body, for the free enjoyment of the crown of England; that a perpetual league, offenſive and defenſive, be made between their realms and ſubjects; that the proteſtant religion be eſtabliſhed by law in Scotland; and that ſhe ſhould grant an amneſty to her rebels in that kingdom [h]. When Mary returned a favourable anſwer to this application, Norfolk employed himſelf with new ardor in the exe-

[g] Camden, p. 417. [h] Leſley, p. 50. Camden, p. 420. Haynes, p. 535, 539.

CHAP. XL. 1569.

cution of his project; and beſides ſecuring the intereſts of many of the conſiderable gentry and nobility who reſided at court, he wrote letters to ſuch as lived at their country ſeats, and poſſeſſed the greateſt authority in the ſeveral counties [i]. The Kings of France and Spain, who intereſted themſelves extremely in Mary's cauſe, were ſecretly conſulted, and expreſſed their approbation of theſe meaſures [k]. And tho' Elizabeth's conſent was always ſuppoſed as a previous condition to the finiſhing this alliance, it was apparently Norfolk's intention, when he proceeded ſuch lengths without conſulting her, to render his party ſo ſtrong, that it ſhould no longer be in her power to refuſe it [l].

It was impoſſible, that ſo extenſive a conſpiracy could entirely eſcape the Queen's vigilance and that of Cecil. She dropt ſeveral ſurmiſes to the duke, by which he might learn, that ſhe was acquainted with his deſigns; and ſhe frequently warned him to beware on what pillow he repoſed his head [m]; But he never had the prudence or the courage to open to her his full intentions. Certain intelligence of this dangerous combination was given her firſt by Leiceſter, then by Murray [n], who, if ever he was ſincere in promoting Norfolk's marriage, which is much to be ſuſpected, had at leaſt propoſed, for his own ſafety and that of his party, that Elizabeth ſhould, in reality as well as in appearance, be entire arbiter of the conditions, and ſhould not have her conſent extorted by any confederacy of her own ſubjects. This information gave great alarm to the court of England; and the more ſo, as thoſe intrigues were attended with

i Leſly, p. 62. k Ibid, p. 63. l State Trials, vol. I. p. 82.
m Camden, p. 420. Spotſwood, p. 231.
n Leſly, p. 7. It appears by Haynes, p. 521, 525, that Queen Elizabeth had heard rumours of Norfolk's dealing with Murray; and charged the latter to inform her of the whole truth, which he accordingly did. See alſo the earl of Murray's letter produced on Norfolk's trial.

other

other circumſtances, of which, it is probable, Elizabeth was not wholly ignorant.

AMONG the nobility and gentry, that ſeemed to enter into Norfolk's views, there were many, who were zealouſly attached to the catholic religion, who had no other deſign than that of reſtoring Mary to her liberty, and who would gladly, by a combination with foreign powers, or even at the expence of a civil war, have placed her on the throne of England. The earls of Northumberland and Weſtmoreland, who poſſeſſed great power in the north, were leaders of this party: and the former nobleman made offer to the Queen of Scots, by Leonard Dacres, brother to lord Dacres, that he would free her from confinement, and convey her to Scotland or any other place, to which ſhe ſhould think proper to retire [o]. Sir Thomas and Sir Edward Stanley, ſons to the earl of Derby, Sir Thomas Gerrard, Rolſtone, and other gentlemen, whoſe intereſt lay in the neighbourhood of the place where Mary reſided, concurred in the ſame views, and required, that, in order to facilitate the execution of the ſcheme, a diverſion ſhould, in the mean time, be made from the ſide of Flanders [p]. Norfolk diſcouraged, and even in appearance ſuppreſſed, theſe conſpiracies; both becauſe his duty to Elizabeth would not allow him to think of effecting his purpoſe by rebellion, and becauſe he foreſaw, that, if the Queen of Scots came into the poſſeſſion of theſe men, they would rather chooſe for her huſband the King of Spain, or ſome foreign prince, who had power, as well as inclination, to re-eſtabliſh the catholic religion [q].

WHEN men of honour and good principles, like the duke of Norfolk, engage in dangerous enterprizes, they are commonly ſo unfortunate as to be criminal by halves; and while they ballance between the execution of their deſigns and their remorſes, their fear of puniſhment and their hope of pardon, they ren-

[o] Leſly, p. 76. [p] Ibid. p. 98. [q] Ibid. p. 77.

CHAP. XL.

1569.

der themſelves an eaſy prey to their enemies. The duke, in order to repreſs the ſurmizes, ſpread againſt him, ſpoke contemptuouſly to Elizabeth of the Scots alliance; affirmed that his eſtate in England was more valuable than the revenue of a kingdom waſted by civil wars and factions; and declared, that, when he amuſed himſelf in his own-tennis court at Norwich amidſt his friends and vaſſals, he eſteemed himſelf at leaſt a petty prince, and was fully contented with his condition [r]. Finding, that he did not convince her by theſe aſſeverations, and that he was looked on with a jealous eye by the courtiers, he retired to his country-ſeat without taking leave [s]. He ſoon after repented of this meaſure, and ſet out on his return to court, with a view of uſing every expedient to regain the Queen's good graces; but he was met at St. Albans by Fitz-Garret, lieutenant of the band of penſioners, by whom he was conveyed to Burnham, three miles from Windſor, where the court then reſided [t]. He was ſoon after committed to the Tower, under the cuſtody of Sir Henry Nevil [u]. Leſley, biſhop of Roſs, the Queen of Scots ambaſſador, was examined and confronted with Norfolk before the council [x]. The earl of Pembroke was confined to his own houſe: Arundel, Lumley, and Throcmorton were taken into cuſtody. The Queen of Scots herſelf was removed to Coventry; all acceſs to her was, during ſome time, more ſtrictly prohibited; and the viſcount Hereford was joined to the earls of Shrewſbury and Huntingdon, in the office of guarding her.

Inſurrections in the north.

A RUMOUR had been very generally diffuſed in the north of an intended rebellion; and the earl of Suſſex, preſident of York, alarmed with the danger ſent for Northumberland and Weſtmoreland, in order to examine them; but not finding any proof againſt them,

[r] Camden, p. 420. [s] Haynes, p. 528. [t] Ibid. p. 339.
[u] Camden, p. 421. Haynes, p. 540. [x] Leſly, p. 80.

he

he allowed them to depart. The report meanwhile gained ground daily; and many appearances of its reality being diſcovered, orders were diſpatched by Elizabeth to theſe two noblemen, to appear at court, and anſwer for their conduct[y]. They had already proceeded ſo far in their criminal deſigns, that they dared not to truſt themſelves in her hands: They had prepared meaſures for a rebellion; had communicated their deſign to Mary and her miniſters[z]; had entered into a correſpondence with the duke of Alva, governor of the Low Countries; had obtained his promiſe of a reinforcement of troops, and of a ſupply of arms and ammunition; and had prevailed on him to ſend over to London Chiapini Vitelli, one of his moſt famous captains, on pretence of adjuſting ſome differences with the Queen, but in reality with a view of putting him at the head of the northern rebels. The ſummons ſent to the two earls, precipitated the riſing before they were fully prepared; and Northumberland remained in ſuſpence between oppoſite dangers, when he was informed, that ſome of his enemies were on the way with a commiſſion to arreſt him. He took horſe inſtantly, and haſtened to his aſſociate Weſtmoreland, whom he found ſurrounded with his friends and vaſſals, and deliberating with regard to the meaſures, which he ſhould follow in the preſent emergence. They determined to begin the inſurrection without delay; and the great credit of theſe two noblemen, with that zeal for the catholic religion, which ſtill prevailed in the neighbourhood, ſoon drew together multitudes of the common people. They publiſhed a manifeſto, in which they maintained, that they intended to attempt nothing againſt the Queen, to whom they vowed unſhaken allegiance; and that their ſole aim was to re-eſtabliſh the religion of their anceſtors, to remove evil counſellors, and to

CHAP. XL. 1569.

[y] Haynes, p. 552. [z] Ibid. p. 595. Strype, vol. II. append. p. 30. MS. in the Advocate's Library from Cott. Lib. Cal. c. 9.

reſtore

CHAP. XL.

1569.

restore the duke of Norfolk and other faithful peers to their liberty and to the Queen's favour[a]. Their number amounted to four thousand foot and sixteen hundred horse, and they expected the concurrence of all the catholics in England[b].

THE Queen was not negligent in her defence, and she had beforehand, from her prudent and wise conduct, acquired the general good will of her people, the best security of a sovereign; insomuch that even the catholics in most counties expressed an affection for her service[c]; and the duke of Norfolk himself, tho' he had lost her favour, and lay in confinement, was not wanting, as far as his situation permitted, to promote the levies among his friends and retainers. Sussex, attended with the earls of Rutland, the lords Hunsdon, Evers, and Willoughby of Parham, marched against the rebels at the head of seven thousand men, and found them already advanced to the bishoprick of Durham, of which they had taken possession. They retired before him to Hexham; and hearing that the earl of Warwic and lord Clinton were advancing against them with a greater body, they found no other expedient but to disperse themselves without striking a blow. The common people retired to their houses: The leaders fled into Scotland. Northumberland was found skulking in that country, and was confined by Murray to the castle of Lochlevin. Westmoreland received shelter from the chieftanes of the Kers and Scots, partizans of Mary; and persuaded them to make an inroad into England, with a view of exciting a quarrel between the two kingdoms. After they had committed great ravages, they retreated to their own country; and Westmoreland made his escape into Flanders, where he was protected. This sudden and precipitate rebellion was followed soon after by another still more imprudent, raised by Leonard Dacres. Lord

a Cabbala, p. 169. Strype, vol. I. p. 547. b Stowe, p. 663.
c Cabbala, p. 170. Digges, p. 4.

Hunsdon,

CHAP XL.

1569.

Hunſdon, at the head of the garriſon of Berwic, was able, without other aſſiſtance, to quell theſe rebels. Great ſeverity was exerciſed againſt thoſe, who had taken part in theſe raſh enterprizes. Sixty-ſix petty conſtables were hanged [d]; and no leſs than eight hundred perſons are ſaid, on the whole, to have ſuffered by the hands of the executioner [e]. But the Queen was ſo well pleaſed with Norfolk's behaviour, that ſhe releaſed him from the Tower, allowed him to live under ſome ſhew of confinement in his own houſe, and only exacted a promiſe from him not to proceed any farther in his pretenſions to marriage with the Queen of Scots [f].

ELIZABETH now found that the detention of Mary was attended with all the ill conſequences, which ſhe had foreſeen when ſhe firſt embraced that meaſure. This latter princeſs recovering, by means of her misfortunes and her own natural good ſenſe, from that delirium, in which ſhe ſeems to have been thrown during her attachment to Bothwel, had behaved with ſuch modeſty and judgment, and even dignity, that every one, who approached her, was charmed with her demeanor; and her friends were enabled, on ſome plauſible grounds, to deny the reality of all thoſe crimes, which had been imputed to her [g]. The compaſſion for her ſituation, and the neceſſity of effecting her relief, proved an incitement among all her partizans to be active in promoting her cauſe; and as her delivery from captivity, it was thought, could no wiſe be effected but by attempts, dangerous to the eſtabliſhed government, Elizabeth had reaſon to expect little tranquillity ſo long as the Scottiſh Queen remained a priſoner in her hands. But as this inconvenience had been preferred to the danger of allowing that princeſs to enjoy her liberty, and to ſeek relief in all the catholic courts of Europe, it

[d] Camden, p. 423. [e] Leſley, p. 82. [f] Ibid. p. 98. Camden, p. 429. Haynes, p. 597. [g] Leſley, p. 232. Haynes, p. 511. 548.

behoved

CHAP. XL. 1569.

behoved the Queen to support the measure which she had adopted, and to guard by every prudent expedient against the mischiefs to which it was exposed. She still flatttered Mary with hopes of her protection, maintained an ambiguous conduct between that Queen and her enemies in Scotland, negotiated perpetually concerning the terms of her restoration, made constant professions of friendship to her; and by these artifices endeavoured both to prevent her from making any desperate efforts for her delivery, and to satisfy the French and Spanish ambassadors, who never intermitted their sollicitations, sometimes accompanied with menaces, in her favour. This deceit was received with the same deceit by the Queen of Scots: Professions of confidence were returned by professions equally insincere; And while an appearance of friendship was maintained on both sides, the animosity and jealousy, which had long prevailed between them, was every day becoming more inveterate and incurable. These two princesses, in address, capacity, activity, and spirit, were nearly a match for each other; but unhappily, Mary, besides her present forlorn condition, was always inferior in personal conduct and discretion, as well as in power, to her illustrious rival.

ELIZABETH and Mary wrote at the same time letters to the regent. The Queen of Scots desired, that her marriage with Bothwel might be examined, and a divorce be legally pronounced between them. The Queen of England gave Murray the choice of three conditions; that Mary should be restored to her dignity on certain terms; that she should be associated with her son, and the administration remain in the regent's hands, till the young prince should come to years of discretion; or that she should be allowed to live at liberty as a private person in Scotland, and have an honourable settlement made in her favour[h]. Murray summoned a conventi-

[h] MSS. in the advocate's library. A. 329. p. 137. from Cott. Lib. caval. c. 1.

on,

on, in order to deliberate on theſe propoſals of the two Queens. No anſwer was made by them to Mary's letter, on pretence that ſhe had there maintained the ſtyle of a ſovereign, addreſſing herſelf to her ſubjects; but in reality, becauſe they ſaw that her requeſt was calculated to prepare the way for a marriage with Norfolk, or ſome powerful prince, who could ſupport her cauſe, and reſtore her to the throne. They replied to Elizabeth, that the two former conditions were ſo derogatory to the royal authority of their prince, that they could not ſo much as deliberate concerning them: The third alone could be the ſubject of treaty. It was evident, that Elizabeth, in propoſing conditions ſo unequal in their importance, invited the Scots to a refuſal of thoſe which were moſt advantageous to Mary; and as it was difficult, if not impoſſible, to adjuſt all the terms of the third, ſo as to render it ſecure and eligible to all parties, it was concluded that ſhe was not ſincere in any of them [i]. 1569.

It is pretended, that Murray had entered into a private negociation with the Queen, to get Mary delivered into his hands [k]; and as Elizabeth found the detention of her in England ſo dangerous, it is probable, that ſhe would have been pleaſed, on any honourable or ſafe terms, to rid herſelf of a priſoner who gave her ſo much inquietude [l]. But all theſe projects vaniſhed by the ſudden death of the regent, who was aſſaſſinated, in revenge of a private injury, by a gentleman of the name of Hamilton. Murray was a perſon of conſide- 1570. 23 January.

i Sporſwood, p. 230, 231. Leſly, p. 71. k Camden, p. 425. Leſly, p. 83.

l By Murden's ſtate papers, publiſhed after the printing of this paſſage, it appears, that an agreement had been made between Elizabeth and the regent for the delivery of Mary. The Queen afterwards ſent down Killigrew to the earl of Marre when regent, offering to deliver up Mary to him. Killigrew was inſtructed to take good ſecurity from the regent, that that Queen ſhould be tryed for her crimes, and that the ſentence ſhould be executed upon her. It appears that Marre refuſed the offer; becauſe we hear no more of it.

rable

CHAP. XL.

1570. Aſſaſſination of the earl of Murray.

rable vigour, ability, and conſtancy; but tho' he was not unſucceſsful, during his regency, in compoſing the diſſenſions in Scotland, his talents ſhone out more eminently in the beginning than in the end of his life. His manners were rough and auſtere; and he poſſeſſed not that perfect integrity, which frequently accompanies, and can alone atone for, that unamiable character.

By the death of the regent, Scotland relapſed into its former anarchy. Mary's party aſſembled together and made themſelves maſters of Edinburgh. The caſtle, commanded by Kirkaldy of Grange, ſeemed to favour her cauſe; and as many of the principal nobility had embraced that ſide, it became probable, tho' the people were in general averſe to her, that her authority might again acquire the aſcendant. To check its progreſs, Elizabeth diſpatched Suſſex, with an army, to the North, under colour of chaſtizing the ravages committed by the borderers. He entered Scotland, and laid waſte the lands of the Kers and Scots, ſeized the caſtle of Hume, and committed hoſtilities on all Mary's partizans, who, he ſaid, had offended his miſtreſs, by harbouring the Engliſh rebels. Sir William Drury was afterwards ſent with a body of troops, and he threw down the houſes of the Hamiltons, who were engaged in the ſame faction. The Engliſh armies were afterwards recalled by agreement with the Queen of Scots, who promiſed, that no French troops ſhould be introduced into Scotland, and that the Engliſh rebels ſhould be delivered up to the Queen by her partizans [m].

But tho' the Queen, covering herſelf with the pretence of revenging her own quarrel, ſo far contributed to ſupport the party of the young King, ſhe was cautious not to declare openly againſt the Queen of Scots, and ſhe even ſent a requeſt, which was equal to a command, to the enemies of that princeſs, not to elect,

[m] Leſly, p. 91.

during

CHAP. XL. 1570.

during ſome time, a regent in the place of Murray [n]. Lenox, the King's grandfather, was, therefore, choſen temporary governor, under the title of Lieutenant. Hearing afterwards that Mary's partizans, inſtead of delivering up Weſtmoreland, and the other fugitives, as they had promiſed, had allowed them to eſcape into Flanders; ſhe permitted the King's party to give Lenox the title of regent [o], and ſhe ſent Randolf, as her reſident, to maintain a correſpondence with him. But notwithſtanding this ſtep, taken in favour of Mary's enemies, ſhe never laid aſide her ambiguous conduct, or quitted the pretenſions of amity to that princeſs. Being importuned by the biſhop of Roſs, and her other agents, as well as by foreign ambaſſadors, ſhe twice procured a ſuſpenſion of arms between the Scots factions, and by that means ſtopped the hands of the regent, who was likely to obtain advantages over the oppoſite party [p]. By theſe ſeeming contrarieties ſhe kept alive the factions in Scotland, increaſed their mutual animoſity, and rendered the whole country a ſcene of devaſtation and of miſery [q]. She had no intention to conquer the kingdom, and conſequently no intereſt or deſign to inſtigate the parties againſt each other [r]; but this conſequence was an accidental effect of her cautious politics, by which ſhe was engaged, as far as poſſible, to keep on good terms with the Queen of Scots, and never to violate the appearances of friendſhip with her, at leaſt thoſe of neutrality [r].

n Spotſwood, p. 240. o Ibid. p. 241. p Ibid. p. 243.
q Crawford, p. 136.

r Sir James Melvil, p. 108, 109, aſcribes to Elizabeth a poſitive deſign of animating the Scots factions againſt each other; but his evidence is too inconſiderable to counterballance many other authorities, and is, indeed, contrary to her ſubſequent conduct, as well as her intereſts, and the neceſſity of her ſituation. It was plainly her intereſt, that the King's party ſhould prevail, and nothing could have engaged her to ſtop their progreſs, or even forbear from openly aſſiſting them, but her intention of ſtill amuſing the Queen of Scots, by the hopes of being peaceably reſtored to her throne. See farther, Strype, vol. II. Appen. p. 20.

CHAP. XL.

1570.

THE better to amuſe Mary with the proſpect of an accommodation, Cecil and Sir Walter Mildway were ſent to her with propoſals from Elizabeth. The terms were ſomewhat rigorous, ſuch as a captive Queen might expect from a jealous rival; and they thereby bore the greater appearance of ſincerity on the part of the Engliſh court. It was required, that the Queen of Scots, beſides renouncing all title to the crown of England during the life-time of Elizabeth, ſhould make a perpetual league, offenſive and defenſive, between the kingdoms; that ſhe ſhould marry no Engliſhman without Elizabeth's conſent, nor any other perſon without the conſent of the ſtates of Scotland; that redreſs ſhould be made for the late ravages committed in England; that juſtice ſhould be executed on the murderers of the late King; that the young prince ſhould be ſent into England, to be educated there; that ſix hoſtages, all of them noblemen, ſhould be delivered to the Queen of England, with the caſtle of Hume, and ſome other fortreſs, for the ſecurity of performance[s]. Such were the conditions upon which Elizabeth promiſed to contribute her endeavours towards the reſtoration of the depoſed Queen. The neceſſity of Mary's affairs obliged her to conſent to them; and the Kings of France and Spain, as well as the pope, when conſulted by her, approved of her conduct; chiefly on account of the civil wars by which all Europe was at that time agitated, and which incapacitated the catholic princes from giving her any aſſiſtance[t].

ELIZABETH'S commiſſioners propoſed alſo to Mary a plan of accommodation with her ſubjects in Scotland; and after ſome reaſoning on that head, it was agreed, that the Queen ſhould require Lenox, the regent, to ſend up commiſſioners, to treat of conditions under her mediation. The partizans of Mary boaſted, that all terms were fully ſettled with the court of England, and that the Scots

[s] Spotſwood, p. 245. Leſly, p. 101.

[t] Leſly, p. 109, &c.

rebels

rebels would ſoon be conſtrained to ſubmit to the reſtoration of their ſovereign: But Elizabeth took care that theſe rumours ſhould meet with no credit, and that the King's party ſhould not be diſcouraged, nor ſink too low in their demands. Cecil wrote to inform the regent, that all the Queen of England's propoſals, ſo far from being fixed and irrevocable, were to be diſcuſſed anew in the conference; and deſired him to ſend commiſſioners, who ſhould be conſtant to the King's cauſe, and cautious not to make conceſſions which might be prejudicial to their party[u]. Suſſex alſo, in his letters, dropped hints to the ſame purpoſe; and Elizabeth herſelf ſaid to the abbot of Dunfermling, whom Lenox had ſent to the court of England, that ſhe would not inſiſt on Mary's reſtoration, provided the Scots could make the juſtice of their cauſe appear to her ſatisfaction; and that even, if their reaſons ſhould fall ſhort of full conviction, ſhe would take effectual care to provide for their future ſecurity[x]. CHAP. XL. 1570.

THE Scots Parliament appointed the Earl of Morton, the Abbot of Dunfermling, and Sir James Macgill to manage the treaty. Theſe commiſſioners firſt preſented memorials, containing reaſons for the depoſition of their Queen; and they ſeconded their arguments, with examples drawn from the Scots hiſtory, with the authority of laws, and with the ſentiments of many famous divines. The lofty ideas, which Elizabeth had entertained of the abſolute, indefeizable right of ſovereigns, made her be ſhocked with theſe republican topics; and ſhe told the Scots commiſſioners, that ſhe was no-wiſe ſatisfied with their reaſons for juſtifying the conduct of their countrymen; and that they might therefore proceed to open the conditions, which they required for their ſecurity[y]. They replied, that their commiſſion did not empower them to treat of any terms, which 1571. 1ſt of March.

[u] Spotſwood, p. 245. [x] Ibid. p. 247, 248.
[y] Ibid. p. 248, 249.

CHAP. XL. 1571.

might infringe the title and ſovereignty of their young king; but they would gladly hear whatever propoſals ſhould be made them by her majeſty. The conditions, recommended by the Queen, were not diſadvantageous to Mary; but as the commiſſioners ſtill inſiſted that they were not authorized to treat, in any manner, concerning the reſtoration of that Princeſs [z], the conferences were neceſſarily at an end; and Elizabeth diſmiſſed the Scots commiſſioners with injunctions, that they ſhould return, after having procured more ample powers from their Parliament [a]. The biſhop of Roſs complained openly to the Engliſh council, that they had abuſed his miſtreſs by fair promiſes and profeſſions; and Mary herſelf was no longer at a loſs to judge of Elizabeth's inſincerity. By reaſon of theſe diſappointments, matters came ſtill nearer to extremity between the two Princeſſes; and the Queen of Scots, finding all her hopes eluded, was more ſtrongly incited to make, at all hazards, every poſſible attempt for her liberty and ſecurity.

An incident alſo happened about this time, which tended to widen the breach between Mary and Elizabeth, and to encreaſe the vigilance and jealouſy of the latter Princeſs. Pope Pius the fifth, who had ſucceeded Paul, after having endeavoured in vain to conciliate by gentle means the friendſhip of Elizabeth, whom his predeceſſor's violence had irritated, iſſued at laſt a bull of excommunication againſt her, deprived her of all title to the crown, and abſolved her ſubjects from their oaths of allegiance [b]. It ſeems probable, that this attack on the Queen's authority was made in concert with Mary, who intended by that means to forward the northern rebellion; a meaſure which was at that time projected [c]. John Felton affixed this bull to the gates of the biſhop of London's

[z] Haynes, 623. [a] Spotſwood, p. 249, 250, &c. Leſly, p. 133. 236 Camden, p. 431, 432. [b] Camden, p. 427.
[c] Ibid. p. 441, from Cajetanus' life of Pius the fifth.

CHAP. XL.

1571.

palace; and ſcorning either to fly or deny the fact, he was ſeized, and condemned, and received the crown of martyrdom, for which he appears to have entertained ſo violent an ambition [d].

2d of April. A Parliament.

A new Parliament, after five years interval, was aſſembled at Weſtminſter; and as the Queen, by the rage of the pope againſt her, was become ſtill more the head of the ruling party, it might be expected, both from this incident and from her own prudent and vigorous conduct, that her authority over the two houſes would be abſolutely uncontroulable. It was ſo in fact; yet it is remarkable, that it prevailed not without ſome ſmall oppoſition; and that too ariſing chiefly from the height of zeal for proteſtantiſm; a diſpoſition of the Engliſh, which, in general, contributed extremely to encreaſe the Queen's popularity. We ſhall be ſomewhat particular in relating the tranſactions of this ſeſſion, becauſe they ſhow, as well the extent of the royal power during that age, as the diſpoſition of Elizabeth and the genius of her government. It will be curious alſo to obſerve the faint dawnings of the ſpirit of liberty in the Engliſh, the jealouſy with which that ſpirit was repreſſed by the ſovereign, the imperious conduct which was maintained in oppoſition to it, and the eaſe with which it was ſubdued by this arbitrary Princeſs.

THE Lord keeper, Bacon, after the ſpeaker of the commons was elected, told the Parliament, in the Queen's name, that ſhe enjoined them not to meddle with any matters of ſtate [e]: Such was his expreſſion; by which he probably meant, the queſtions of the Queen's marriage and the ſucceſſion, about which they had before given her ſome trouble: For as to the other great points of government, alliances, peace and war, or foreign negotiations; no Parliament in that age ever ventured to take them under conſideration, or queſtion, in theſe particulars, the conduct of their ſovereign.

[d] Camden, p. 428. [e] D'Ewes, p. 141.

CHAP. XL. 1571.

In the former Parliament, the puritans had introduced ſeven bills for a farther reformation in religion; but they had not been able to prevail in any one of them [f]. This houſe of commons had ſat a very few days, when Stricland, a member, revived one of the bills, that for the amendment of the liturgy [g]. The chief objection, which he mentioned, was the ſign of the croſs in baptiſm. Another member added, the kneeling at the ſacrament; and remarked, that if a poſture of humiliation was requiſite in that act of devotion, it were better that the communicants ſhould throw themſelves proſtrate on the ground, in order to keep at the wideſt diſtance from former ſuperſtition [h].

RELIGION was a point, of which Elizabeth was, if poſſible, ſtill more jealous than of matters of ſtate. She pretended, that, in quality of ſupreme head or governor of the church, ſhe was fully empowered, by her prerogative alone, to decide all queſtions which might ariſe with regard to doctrine, diſcipline, or worſhip; and ſhe never would allow her Parliaments ſo much as to take theſe points into conſideration [i]. The courtiers forgot not to inſiſt on this topic: The treaſurer of the houſhold, tho' he allowed, that any hereſy might be condemned by Parliament, (a conceſſion which ſeems to have been very raſh and unguarded; ſince the act, inveſting the crown with the ſupremacy, or rather recognizing that prerogative, gave the ſovereign full power to reform all hereſies) yet he affirmed, that it belonged to the Queen alone, as head of the church, to regulate every queſtion of ceremony in worſhip [k]. The comptroller ſeconded this argument; inſiſted on the extent of the Queen's prerogative; and ſaid, that the houſe might, from former examples, have taken warning not to meddle with ſuch matters. One Piſtor oppoſed theſe remonſtrance of the courtiers. He was ſcandalized,

[f] D'Ewes, p. 185. [g] Ibid. p. 156, 157. [h] Ibid. p. 167. [i] Ibid. p. 158. [k] Ibid. p. 166.

he

CHAP. XL. 1571.

he said, that affairs of such infinite consequence (viz. kneeling and making the sign of the cross) should be passed over so lightly. These questions, he added, concern the salvation of our souls, and interest every one of us more deeply than the monarchy of the whole world. This cause he shewed to be God's; the rest were all but terrene, yea trifles in comparison, call you them ever so great: Subsidies, crowns, kingdoms, he knew not what weight they had, when laid in the ballance with subjects of such unspeakable importance[l]. Tho' the zeal of this member seems to have been highly approved of, the house, overawed by the prerogative, voted upon the question, that a petition should be presented to her majesty, for her licence to proceed farther in this bill; and in the mean time to stop all debate or reasoning concerning it [m].

Matters would probably have rested here, had not the Queen been so highly offended with Stricland's presumption, in moving the bill for reformation of the liturgy, that she sent for him to the council, and prohibited him thenceforth to appear in the house of commons[n]. That act of power was too violent even for this submissive Parliament to endure. Carleton took notice of the matter, complained that the liberties of the house were violated; observed that Stricland was not a private man, but represented a multitude; and moved, that he might be sent for, and, if he was guilty of any offence, might answer for it at the bar of the house, which he insinuated to be the only competent tribunal [o]. Yelverton enforced the principles of liberty with still greater boldness. He said, that the precedent was dangerous: And tho' in this happy time of lenity, among so many good and honourable personages as were at present invested with authority, nothing of extremity or injury was to be apprehended; yet the times might alter; what now is permitted, hereafter might be construed as duty, and might be enforced even

[l] D'Ewes, p. 166. [m] Ibid. p. 167. [n] Ibid. p. 175. [o] Ibid.

CHAP. XL. 1571.

on the ground of the preſent permiſſion. He added, that all matters not treaſonable, or which implied *too much* derogation of the imperial crown, might, without offence, be introduced into Parliament, where every queſtion that concerned the community muſt be conſidered, and where even the right of the crown itſelf muſt finally be determined. He remarked, that men ſat not in that houſe in their private capacities, but as elected by their country; and tho' it was proper, that the prince ſhould retain his prerogative, yet was that prerogative limited by law: As the ſovereign could not of himſelf make laws, neither could he break them, merely from his own authority [p].

THESE principles were popular, and noble, and generous; but the open aſſertion of them was, at that time, ſomewhat new in England: And the courtiers were more warranted by preſent practice, when they advanced a contrary doctrine. The treaſurer warned the houſe to be cautious in their proceedings; neither to venture farther than their aſſured warrant might extend, nor hazard their good opinion with her majeſty in any doubtful cauſe. The member, he ſaid, whom they required, was not detained on account of any liberty of ſpeech, but for the exhibiting a bill in the houſe againſt the prerogative of the Queen; a temerity which was not to be tolerated. And he concluded with obſerving, that even ſpeeches made in that houſe, have been queſtioned and examined by the ſovereign [q]. Cleere, another member, remarked, that the ſovereign's prerogative is not ſo much as diſputable, and that the ſafety of the Queen is the ſafety of the ſubjects. He added, that, in queſtions of divinity, every man was for his inſtruction to repair to his ordinary; and he ſeems to inſinuate, that the biſhops themſelves, for their inſtruction, muſt repair to the Queen [r]. Mr. Fleetwood obſerved, that, in his memory, he knew a man,

[p] D'Ewes, p. 175, 176. [q] Ibid. p. 175. [r] Ibid.

who,

CHAP. XL.

1571.

who, in the fifth of the preſent Queen, had been called to account for a ſpeech in the houſe. But leſt this example ſhould be too recent, he would inform them, from the parliament rolls, that in the reign of Henry the fifth, a biſhop was committed to priſon by the King's command, on account of his freedom of ſpeech; and the Parliament preſumed not to go farther than to be humble ſuitors for him: In the ſubſequent reign the ſpeaker himſelf was committed, with another member; and the houſe found no other remedy than a like ſubmiſſive application. He adviſed the houſe to have recourſe to the ſame expedient; and not to preſume, either to ſend for their member, or demand him as of right [s]. During this ſpeech, thoſe members of the council who ſat in the houſe, whiſpered together; upon which the ſpeaker moved, that the houſe ſhould make ſtay of all farther proceedings: A motion, which was immediately complied with. The Queen finding that the experiment which ſhe had made, was likely to exite a great commotion, ſaved her honour by this ſilence of the houſe; and that the queſtion might no more be reſumed, ſhe ſent next day to Stricland her permiſſion to give his attendance in Parliament [t].

NOTWITHSTANDING this rebuke from the throne, the zeal of the commons ſtill engaged them to continue the diſcuſſion of thoſe other bills which regarded religion; but they were interrupted by a ſtill more arbitrary proceeding of the Queen, in which the lords condeſcended to be her inſtrument. That houſe ſent a meſſage to the commons, deſiring that a committee might attend them. Some members were accordingly appointed for that purpoſe; and the upper houſe informed them, that the Queen's majeſty being informed of the articles of reformation which they had canvaſſed, approved of them, intended to publiſh them, and to make the

[s] D'Ewes, p. 176. [t] Ibid. p. 176.

CHAP. XL.

1571.

biſhops execute them, by virtue of her regal authority, as ſupreme head of the church of England: But that ſhe would not permit them to be treated of in Parliament [u]. The houſe, tho' they did not entirely ſtop proceedings on account of this injunction, ſeem to have been no-wiſe offended at ſuch haughty treatment; and in the iſſue all their bills came to nothing.

A MOTION, made by Robert Bell, a puritan, againſt an excluſive patent granted to a company of merchants at Briſtol [x], gave alſo occaſion to ſome remarkable incidents. The Queen, ſome days after the motion was made, ſent her orders, by the mouth of the ſpeaker, commanding the houſe to ſpend little time in motions, and to avoid long ſpeeches. All the members underſtood that ſhe had been offended, becauſe a matter had been moved which ſeemed to touch her prerogative [y]. Fleetwood accordingly ſpoke of this delicate ſubject. He obſerved, that the Queen had a prerogative of granting patents; that to queſtion the validity of any patent, was to invade the royal prerogative; that all foreign trade was entirely ſubjected to the pleaſure of the ſovereign; that even the ſtatute which gave liberty of commerce, admitted of all prohibitions from the crown; and that the prince, when he granted an excluſive patent, only employed the power veſted in him, and prohibited all others from dealing in any particular branch of commerce. He quoted the Clerk of the Parliament's book, to prove, that no man might ſpeak in Parliament of the ſtatute of wills, unleſs the King firſt gave licence; becauſe the royal prerogative in the wards was thereby touched. He ſhewed likewiſe the ſtatutes of Edward the firſt, Edward the third, and Henry the fourth, with a ſaving of the prerogative. And in Edward the ſixth's time, the protector was

[u] D'Ewes, p. 180, 158. [x] Ibid. p. 185. [y] Ibid. p. 159.

applied

applied to, for his allowance to mention matters of prerogative [z].

CHAP. XL. 1571.

Sir Humphrey Gilbert, the gallant ſea-adventurer, carried theſe topics ſtill farther. He endeavoured to prove the motion made by Bell to be a vain device, and perilous to be treated of; ſince it tended to the derogation of the prerogative imperial, which whoever ſhould attempt ſo much as in fancy, could not, he ſaid, be otherwiſe accounted than an open enemy. For what difference is there between ſaying, that the Queen is not to uſe the privilege of the crown, and ſaying that ſhe is not Queen? And tho' experience has ſhewn ſo much clemency in her majeſty, as might, perhaps, make the ſubjects forget their duty; it is not good to ſport or venture too much with princes. He remembered them of the fable of the hare, who, upon the proclamation, that all horned beaſts ſhould depart the court, immediately fled, leſt his ears ſhould be conſtrued to be horns; and by this apologue he ſeems to inſinuate, that even thoſe who heard or permitted ſuch dangerous ſpeeches, would not themſelves be entirely free from danger. He deſired them to beware, leſt, if they meddled farther with theſe matters, the Queen might look to her own power, and finding herſelf able to ſuppreſs their challenged liberty, and to exert an arbitrary authority, might imitate the example of Lewis the eleventh of France, who, as he termed it, delivered the crown from wardſhip [a].

Tho' this ſpeech gave ſome diſguſt, no body, at the time, replied any thing, but that Sir Humphrey miſtook the meaning of the houſe, and of the member who made the motion: They never had other purpoſe, than to repreſent their grievances in due and ſeemly form unto her majeſty. But, in a ſubſequent debate, Peter Wentworth, a man of a ſuperior free ſpirit, called that ſpeech an inſult on the houſe; noted Sir Hum-

[z] D'Ewes, p. 160. [a] Ibid. p. 168.

phrey's

CHAP. XL.

1571.

phrey's diſpoſition to flatter and fawn on the prince; compared him to the cameleon, which can change itſelf into all colours, except white; and recommended to the houſe, a due care of liberty of ſpeech, and of the privileges of Parliament [b]. It appears, on the whole, that the motion againſt the excluſive patent had no effect. Bell, the member who firſt introduced it, was ſent for by the council, and was ſeverely reprimanded for his temerity. He returned to the houſe with ſuch an amazed countenance, that all the members, well informed of the reaſon, were ſtruck with terror; and during ſome time, no one durſt riſe to ſpeak of any matter of importance, for fear of giving offence to the Queen and the council. Even after the fears of the commons were ſomewhat abated, the members ſpoke with extreme precaution; and by employing moſt of their diſcourſe in preambles and apologies, they ſhewed their conſcious terror of the rod which was hanging over them. Wherever any delicate point was touched, tho' ever ſo gently; nay ſeemed to be approached, tho' at ever ſo great a diſtance, the whiſper ran about the houſe, "The Queen will be offended; the council "will be extremely diſpleaſed:" And by theſe ſurmizes men were warned of the danger to which they expoſed themſelves. It is remarkable, that the patent which the Queen defended with ſuch imperious violence, was contrived for the profit of four courtiers, and was attended with the utter ruin of ſeven or eight thouſand of her induſtrious ſubjects [c].

29th May.

THUS every thing which paſſed the two houſes, was extremely reſpectful and ſubmiſſive; yet did the Queen think it incumbent on her, at the concluſion of the ſeſſion, to check, and that with great ſeverity, thoſe feeble efforts for liberty, which had appeared in the motions and ſpeeches of ſome members. The lord keeper told the commons, in her majeſty's name, that, tho' the majority of the lower houſe had ſhewed themſelves, in

[b] D' Ewes, p. 175. [c] Ibid. p. 242.

their

their proceedings, discreet and dutiful, yet a few of them had discovered a contrary character, and had justly merited the reproach of audacious, arrogant, and presumptuous: Contrary to their duty, both as subjects and parliament-men, nay contrary to the express injunctions given them from the throne at the beginning of the session; injunctions, which it might well have become them to have better attended to; they had presumed to call in question her majesty's grants and prerogatives. But her majesty warns them, that since they will thus wilfully forget themselves, they are otherwise to be admonished: Some other species of correction must be found for them; since neither the commands of her majesty, nor the example of their wiser brethren, can reclaim their audacious, arrogant, and presumptuous folly, by which they are thus led to meddle with what no way belongs to them, and what lies not within the compass of their understanding [d].

CHAP. XL. 1571.

In all these transactions appears clearly the opinion which Elizabeth had entertained of the duty and authority of Parliaments. They were not to canvass any matters of state: Still less were they to meddle with the church. Questions of either kind were far above their reach, and were appropriated to the prince alone, or to those councils and ministers with whom he was pleased to entrust them. What then was the office of Parliaments? They might give directions for the due tanning of leather, or milling of cloth; for the preservation of pheasants and partridges; for the reparation of bridges and highways; for the punishment of vagabonds or common beggars. Regulations concerning the police of the country came properly under their inspection; and the laws of this kind which they prescribed, had, if not a greater, yet a more durable authority, than those derived solely from the proclamations of the sovereign. Precedents or reports could fix a rule for deci-

[d] D'Ewes, p. 151.

sions

CHAP. XL.

1571.

sions in private property, or the punishment of crimes; but no alteration or innovation in the municipal law could proceed from any other source than the Parliament; nor would the courts of justice be induced to change their established practice by an order of council. But the most acceptable part of parliamentary transactions was the granting of subsidies; the attainting and punishing the obnoxious nobility, or any minister of state after his fall; the countenancing such great efforts of power, as might be deemed somewhat exceptionable, when they proceeded entirely from the sovereign. The redress of grievances was sometimes promised to the people; but seldom could have place, while it was an established rule, that the prerogatives of the crown must not be abridged, or so much as questioned and examined in Parliament. Even tho' monopolies and exclusive companies had already reached an enormous height, and were every day encreasing, to the destruction of all liberty, and extinction of all industry; it was criminal in a member to propose, in the most dutiful and regular manner, a parliamentary application against any of them.

These maxims of government were not kept secret by Elizabeth, or smoothed over by any fair appearances or plausible pretences. They were openly avowed in her speeches and messages to Parliament; and were accompanied with all the haughtiness, nay sometimes bitterness of expression, which the meanest servant could look for from his offended master. Yet notwithstanding this conduct, Elizabeth continued to be the most popular sovereign that ever swayed the sceptre of England; because the maxims of her reign were conformable to the principles of the times, and to the opinion which was generally entertained with regard to the constitution. The continued encroachments of popular assemblies on Elizabeth's successors have so changed our ideas of these matters, that the passages above mentioned appear to

CHAP. XL. 1575.

us extremely curious, and even at firſt ſurprizing; but they were ſo little remarked, during the time, that neither Camden, tho' a contemporary writer, nor any other hiſtorian, has taken any notice of them. So abſolute was the authority of the crown, that the precious ſpark of liberty had been kindled, and was preſerved, by the puritans alone; and it was to this ſect, whoſe principles appear ſo frivolous and habits ſo ridiculous, that the Engliſh owe the whole freedom of their conſtitution. Actuated by that zeal which belongs to innovators, and by the courage which enthuſiaſm inſpires, they hazarded the utmoſt indignation of their ſovereign; and employing all their induſtry to be elected into Parliament; a matter not difficult, while a ſeat was rather regarded as a burthen than an advantage [e]; they firſt acquired a majority in that aſſembly, and then obtained an aſcendant over the church and monarchy.

THE following were the principal laws enacted this ſeſſion of Parliament. It was declared treaſon, during the life-time of the Queen, to affirm, that ſhe was not the lawful ſovereign, or that any other poſſeſſed a better title, or that ſhe was a heretic, ſchiſmatic, or infidel, or that the laws and ſtatutes cannot limit and determine the right of the crown and the ſucceſſor thereof: To maintain in writing or printing, that any perſon, except the *natural iſſue* of her body, is or ought to be the Queen's heir or ſucceſſor, ſubjected the perſon and all his abettors, for the firſt offence, to impriſonment during a year, and to the forfeiture of half their goods: The ſecond offence ſubjected them to the penalty of a premunire [f]. This law was plainly leveled againſt the Queen of Scots and her partizans; and implyed an avowal, that Elizabeth never intended to declare her ſucceſſor. It may be noted, that the uſual phraſe of *lawful iſſue*,

[e] It appeared this ſeſſion, that a bribe of four pounds had been given to a mayor for a ſeat in Parliament. D' Ewes, p. 181. It is probable, that the member had no other view but the privilege of being free from arreſts.

[f] 13 Eliz. c. 1.

which

CHAP. XL.

1571.

which the Parliament thought indecent towards the Queen, as if ſhe could be ſuppoſed to have any other, was changed into that of *natural iſſue*. But this alteration was the ſource of great ridicule during the time; and ſome perſons ſuſpected a deeper deſign, as if Leiceſter intended, in caſe of the Queen's death, to produce ſome baſtard of his own, and affirm that he was her offſpring [g].

It was alſo enacted, that whoſoever by bulls ſhall publiſh abſolutions or other reſcripts of the pope, or ſhall by means of them reconcile any man to the church of Rome, ſuch offenders, as well as thoſe who were ſo reconciled, ſhould be guilty of treaſon. The penalty of a premunire was impoſed on every one who imported any *Agnus Dei*, crucifix, or ſuch other implement of ſuperſtition, conſecrated by the pope [h]. The former laws againſt taking intereſt, which was denominated uſury, were enforced by a new ſtatute [i]. A ſupply of one ſubſidy and two fifteenths was granted by Parliament. The Queen, as ſhe was determined to yield to them none of her power, was very cautious of aſking them for any ſupplies. She endeavoured, either by a rigid frugality to make her ordinary revenues ſuffice for the neceſſities of the crown, or ſhe employed her prerogative and acquired money by the granting of patents, monopolies, or by ſome ſuch ruinous expedient.

Tho' Elizabeth poſſeſſed ſuch uncontrouled authority over her parliaments, and ſuch extenſive influence over her people; tho' during a courſe of thirteen years, ſhe had been able to maintain the public tranquillity, which was only interrupted by the haſty and ill-concerted inſurrection of the north; ſhe was ſtill kept in great anxiety, and felt her throne perpetually totter under her. The violent commotions, excited in France and the Low Countries, as well as in Scotland, ſeemed in one view to ſecure her againſt any diſturbance; but

g Camden, p. 436. h 13 Eliz. c. 2. i Ibid. c. 8.

they

CHAP. XL.

1571.

they ſerved, on more reflection, to inſtruct her in the danger of her ſituation, when ſhe remarked, that England, no leſs than theſe neighbouring countries, contained the ſeeds of inteſtine diſcord, the differences of religious opinion, and the furious intolerance and animoſity of the oppoſite ſectaries.

Civil wars of France.

THE league, formed at Bayonne in 1566 for the extermination of the proteſtants, had not been concluded ſo ſecretly but intelligence of it had reached Condé, Coligni, and the other leaders of the hugonots; and finding, that the meaſures of the court agreed with their ſuſpicions, they determined to prevent the cruel perfidy of their enemies, and to ſtrike a blow before the catholics were aware of the danger. The hugonots, tho' diſperſed over the whole kingdom, formed a kind of ſeparate empire; and being cloſely united, as well by their religious zeal, as by the dangers, to which they were perpetually expoſed, they obeyed with entire ſubmiſſion the orders of their leaders, and were ready on every alarm to fly to arms. The King and Queen mother were living in great ſecurity at Monceaux in Brie; when they found themſelves ſurrounded by proteſtant troops, which had ſecretly marched thither from all quarters; and had not a body of Swiſs come haſtily to their relief, and conducted them with great intrepidity to Paris, they muſt have fallen, without reſiſtance, into the hands of the malecontents. A battle was afterwards fought in the plains of St. Dennis, where, tho' the old conſtable Montmorency, the general of the catholics, was killed combating bravely at the head of his troops, the hugonots were finally defeated. Condé collecting his broken troops, and receiving a ſtrong reinforcement from the German proteſtants, appeared again in the field; and laying ſiege to Chartres, a place of great importance, obliged the court to agree to a new accommodation. Such was the mutual animoſity of theſe religioniſts, that, even had the leaders on both ſides been ever ſo ſincere in their intentions for peace,

and

CHAP. XL.

1571.

which the Parliament thought indecent towards the Queen, as if ſhe could be ſuppoſed to have any other, was changed into that of *natural iſſue*. But this alteration was the ſource of great ridicule during the time; and ſome perſons ſuſpected a deeper deſign, as if Leiceſter intended, in caſe of the Queen's death, to produce ſome baſtard of his own, and affirm that he was her offspring [g].

It was alſo enacted, that whoſoever by bulls ſhall publiſh abſolutions or other reſcripts of the pope, or ſhall by means of them reconcile any man to the church of Rome, ſuch offenders, as well as thoſe who were ſo reconciled, ſhould be guilty of treaſon. The penalty of a premunire was impoſed on every one who imported any *Agnus Dei*, crucifix, or ſuch other implement of ſuperſtition, conſecrated by the pope [h]. The former laws againſt taking intereſt, which was denominated uſury, were enforced by a new ſtatute [i]. A ſupply of one ſubſidy and two fifteenths was granted by Parliament. The Queen, as ſhe was determined to yield to them none of her power, was very cautious of aſking them for any ſupplies. She endeavoured, either by a rigid frugality to make her ordinary revenues ſuffice for the neceſſities of the crown, or ſhe employed her prerogative and acquired money by the granting of patents, monopolies, or by ſome ſuch ruinous expedient.

Tho' Elizabeth poſſeſſed ſuch uncontrouled authority over her parliaments, and ſuch extenſive influence over her people; tho' during a courſe of thirteen years, ſhe had been able to maintain the public tranquillity, which was only interrupted by the haſty and ill-concerted inſurrection of the north; ſhe was ſtill kept in great anxiety, and felt her throne perpetually totter under her. The violent commotions, excited in France and the Low Countries, as well as in Scotland, ſeemed in one view to ſecure her againſt any diſturbance; but

g Camden, p. 436. h 13 Eliz. c. 2. i Ibid. c. 8.

they

1571.

they ſerved, on more reflection, to inſtruct her in the danger of her ſituation, when ſhe remarked, that England, no leſs than theſe neighbouring countries, contained the ſeeds of inteſtine diſcord, the differences of religious opinion, and the furious intolerance and animoſity of the oppoſite ſectaries.

Civil wars of France.

THE league, formed at Bayonne in 1566 for the extermination of the proteſtants, had not been concluded ſo ſecretly but intelligence of it had reached Condé, Coligni, and the other leaders of the hugonots; and finding, that the meaſures of the court agreed with their ſuſpicions, they determined to prevent the cruel perfidy of their enemies, and to ſtrike a blow before the catholics were aware of the danger. The hugonots, tho' diſperſed over the whole kingdom, formed a kind of ſeparate empire; and being cloſely united, as well by their religious zeal, as by the dangers, to which they were perpetually expoſed, they obeyed with entire ſubmiſſion the orders of their leaders, and were ready on every alarm to fly to arms. The King and Queen mother were living in great ſecurity at Monceaux in Brie; when they found themſelves ſurrounded by proteſtant troops, which had ſecretly marched thither from all quarters; and had not a body of Swiſs come haſtily to their relief, and conducted them with great intrepidity to Paris, they muſt have fallen, without reſiſtance, into the hands of the malecontents. A battle was afterwards fought in the plains of St. Dennis, where, tho' the old conſtable Montmorency, the general of the catholics, was killed combating bravely at the head of his troops, the hugonots were finally defeated. Condé collecting his broken troops, and receiving a ſtrong reinforcement from the German proteſtants, appeared again in the field; and laying ſiege to Chartres, a place of great importance, obliged the court to agree to a new accommodation. Such was the mutual animoſity of theſe religioniſts, that, even had the leaders on both ſides been ever ſo ſincere in their intentions for peace,

and

CHAP. XI.

1571.

and repoſed ever ſo great confidence in each other, it would have been difficult to have retained the people in tranquillity; much more, where ſuch extreme jealouſy prevailed, and where the court employed every pacification as a ſnare for their enemies. A plan was laid for ſeizing the perſon of the prince and admiral; who narrowly eſcaped to Rochelle, and ſummoned their partizans to their aſſiſtance [k]. The civil wars were renewed with greater fury than ever, and the parties became ſtill more exaſperated againſt each other. The young duke of Anjou, brother to the King, commanded the forces of the catholics; and fought in 1569 a great battle at Jarnac with the hugonots, where the prince of Condé was killed, and his army defeated. This diſcomfiture, with the loſs of ſo great a leader, reduced not the hugonots to deſpair. The admiral ſtill ſupported the cauſe; and having placed at the head of the proteſtants, the prince of Navarre, then ſixteen years of age, and the young prince of Condé, he encouraged the party rather to periſh bravely in the field, than ignominiouſly by the hands of the executioner. He collected ſuch numbers, ſo determined to endure every extremity, that he was enabled to make head againſt the duke of Anjou; and being ſtrengthened by a new reinforcement of Germans, he obliged that prince to retreat and to divide his forces. Coligni then laid ſiege to Poitiers; and as the eyes of all France were turned on this enterprize, the duke of Guiſe, emulous of the renown, which his father had acquired by the defence of Mentz, threw himſelf into the place, and ſo animated the garriſon by his valour and conduct, that the admiral was obliged to raiſe the ſiege. Such was the commencement of that unrivaled fame and grandeur, afterwards attained by this duke of Guiſe. The attachment, which all the catholics had borne to his father, was immediately transferred to the ſon; and men pleaſed themſelves

[k] Davila, lib. 4.

in

CHAP. XL. 1571.

in comparing all the great and heroic qaulities, which seemed, in a manner, hereditary in that family. Equal in affability, in munificence, in addreſs, in eloquence, and in every quality, which engages the affections of men; equal alſo in valour, in conduct, in enterprize, in capacity; there ſeemed only this difference between them, that the ſon, educated in more turbulent times, and finding a greater diſſolution of all law and order, exceeded the father in ambition and temerity, and was engaged in enterprizes ſtill more deſtructive to the authority of his ſovereign and to the repoſe of his native country.

ELIZABETH, who kept her attention fixed on the civil commotions of France, was no wiſe pleaſed with this new riſe of her enemies, the Guiſes; and being anxious for the fate of the proteſtants, whoſe intereſts were connected with her own [l], ſhe was engaged, notwithſtanding her averſion againſt all rebellion, and all oppoſition to the will of the ſovereign, to give them ſecretly ſome aſſiſtance. Beſides employing her authority with the German princes, ſhe ſent money to the Queen of Navarre, and received ſome jewels as pledges for the loan. And ſhe permitted Henry Champernon to levy, and tranſport over into France, a regiment of an hundred gentlemen voluntiers; among whom Walter Raleigh, then a young man, began to diſtinguiſh himſelf in that great ſchool of military valour [m]. The admiral, conſtrained by the impatience of his troops, and by the difficulty of ſubſiſting them, fought with the duke of Anjou, the battle of Moncontour in Poictou, where he was wounded and defeated. The court of France, notwithſtanding their frequent experience of the obſtinacy of the hugonots, and the vigour of Coligni, vainly flattered themſelves that the force of the rebels was at laſt finally annihilated; and they neglected farther preparations againſt a foe, who, they thought,

[l] Haynes, p. 471. [m] Camden, p. 423.

CHAP. XL.

1571.

could never more become dangerous. They were surprized to hear, that that leader had appeared in another quarter of the kingdom; had encouraged the young princes, whom he governed, to equal conſtancy; had aſſembled an army; had taken the field; and was even ſtrong enough to threaten Paris. The public finances, diminiſhed by the continued diſorders of the kingdom, and waſted by ſo many fruitleſs military enterprizes, could no longer bear the charge of a new armament; and the King, notwithſtanding his extreme animoſity againſt the hugonots, was obliged, in 1570, to conclude an accommodation with them, to grant them a pardon for all paſt offences, and to renew the edicts for liberty of conſcience.

THO' a pacification was ſeemingly concluded, the mind of Charles was no wiſe reconciled to his rebellious ſubjects; and this accommodation, like all the foregoing, was nothing but a ſnare, by which the perfidious court had projected to deſtroy at once, without danger, all its formidable enemies. As the two young princes, the admiral, and all the leaders of the hugonots, inſtructed by paſt experience, diſcovered an extreme diſtruſt of the King's intentions, and kept themſelves in ſecurity, at a diſtance, all poſſible artifices were employed to remove their apprehenſions, and convince them of the ſincerity of the new counſels, which ſeemed to be embraced. The terms of the peace were ſtrictly obſerved to them; the toleration was regularly maintained; all attempts, made by the zealous catholics to infringe it, were puniſhed with ſeverity; offices, and favours, and honours were beſtowed on the principal nobility among the proteſtants; and the King and council every where declared, that, tired of civil diſorders, and convinced of the impoſſibility of forcing men's conſciences, they were thenceforth determined to allow every one the free exerciſe of his religion.

AMONG the other artifices, employed to lull the proteſtants into a fatal ſecurity, Charles affected to enter into

into close connexions with Elizabeth; and as it seemed not the interest of France to forward the union of the two kingdoms of Great Britain, that princess the more easily flattered herself, that the French monarch would prefer her friendship to that of the Queen of Scots. The better to deceive her, proposals of marriage were made her with the duke of Anjou; a prince whose youth, beauty, and reputation for valour might naturally be supposed to recommend him to a woman, who had appeared not altogether indifferent to these endowments. The Queen immediately founded on this offer the project of deceiving the court of France; and being intent on the artifice of that scheme, she laid herself the more open to be deceived. Negotiations were entered into with regard to the marriage; terms of the contract were proposed; difficulties started and removed; and the two courts, equally insincere, tho' not equally criminal, seemed to approach every day nearer to each other in their demands and concessions. The great obstacle seemed to lie in adjusting the differences of religion; because Elizabeth, who recommended toleration to Charles, was determined not to grant it in her own dominions, not even to her husband; and the duke of Anjou seemed unwilling to submit, for the sake of interest, to the dishonour of an apostacy[n]. 1571.

The artificial politics of Elizabeth never triumphed so much in any contrivances as in those which were conjoined with her coquetry; and as her character in this particular was generally known, the court of France thought that they might, without danger of forming any final conclusion, venture the farther in their concessions and offers to her. The Queen also had other motives for dissimulation. Besides the advantage of discouraging Mary's partizans by the prospect of an alliance between France and England, her situation

[n] Camden, p. 433. Davila, lib. 5. Digges's Compleat Ambassador, p. 84, 110, 111.

CHAP. XL.

1571.

with Philip demanded her utmoſt vigilance and attention; and the preſent revolutions in the Low Countries made her glad of fortifying herſelf even with the appearance of a new confederacy.

Affairs of the Low-Countries.

THE theological controverſies, which had long agitated Europe, had, from the beginning, penetrated into the Low Countries; and as theſe provinces maintained a very extenſive commerce, they had early received from every kingdom, with which they correſponded, a tincture of religious innovation. An opinion at that time prevailed, which had been zealouſly propagated by the prieſts, and implicity received by ſovereigns, that hereſy was cloſely connected with rebellion, and that every great or violent alteration in the church involved a like revolution in the ſtate and civil government. The forward zeal of the reformers would ſeldom allow them to wait the conſent of the magiſtrate to their innovations; they became leſs dutiful when they were oppoſed and perſecuted; and tho' their pretended ſpirit of reaſoning and enquiry was in reality, among the greateſt part of them, nothing but a new ſpecies of implicit faith, the prince took the alarm; as if no inſtitutions could be ſecure from the temerity of their reſearches. The emperor Charles, who propoſed to augment his authority under the pretence of defending the catholic faith, eaſily adopted theſe political principles; and notwithſtanding the limited prerogative, which he poſſeſſed in the Netherlands, he publiſhed the moſt arbitrary, ſevere, and tyrannical edicts againſt the proteſtants, and he took care that the execution of them ſhould be no leſs violent and ſanguinary. He was neither cruel nor bigotted in his natural diſpoſition; yet an hiſtorian, celebrated for moderation and caution, has computed, that, in the ſeveral perſecutions, promoted by that monarch, no leſs than an hundred thouſand perſons periſhed by the hands

hands of the executioner [o]. But these severe remedies, so far from answering the purpose intended, had rather served to augment the numbers as well as zeal of the reformers; and the magistrates of the several towns, seeing no end of those barbarous executions, felt their humanity rebel against their principles, and declined any farther persecution of the new doctrines.

When Philip succeeded to his father's dominions, the Flemings were justly alarmed with new apprehensions; lest their prince, observing the lenity of the magistrates, should take the execution of the edicts from such remiss hands, and should establish the inquisition in the Low Countries, accompanied with all the iniquities and barbarities which attended it in Spain. The severe and unrelenting character of the man, his professed attachment to Spanish manners, the inflexible bigotry of his principles; all these circumstances encreased their terror: And when he left the Netherlands, with a known intention never to return, the disgust of the inhabitants was extremely augmented, and their dread of those tyrannical orders, which their sovereign, surrounded with Spanish ministers, would issue from his cabinet of Madrid. He left the dutchess of Parma governess of the Low Countries and the natural good sense and good temper of that princess, had she been entrusted with the sole power, would have preserved the submission of those opulent provinces, which were lost from that refinement of treacherous and barbarous politics, on which Philip so highly valued himself. The Flemings found, that the name alone of regent remained with the dutchess; that cardinal Granville possessed entirely the King's confidence; that attempts were every day made on their liberties; that a resolution was taken never more to assemble the states; that new bishoprics were arbitrarily erected, in order to enforce the executi-

[o] Grotii Annal. lib. 1. Father Paul, another great authority, computes, in a passage above cited, that 50,000 persons were put to death in the Low-Countries alone.

on

CHAP. XL.

1571

on of the perſecuting edicts; and that on the whole, they muſt make account of being reduced to the condition of a province under the Spaniſh monarchy. The diſcontents of the nobility gave countenance to the complaints of the gentry, which encouraged the mutiny of the populace; and all orders of men ſhowed a ſtrong diſpoſition to revolt. Aſſociations were formed, tumultuary petitions preſented, names of diſtinction aſſumed, badges of party diſplayed; and the current of the people, impelled by religious zeal and irritated by feeble reſiſtance, roſe to ſuch a height, that in ſevetal towns, particularly in Antwerp, they made an open invaſion on the eſtabliſhed worſhip, pillaged the churches and monaſteries, broke the images, and committed the moſt unwarrantable diſorders.

THE wiſer part of the nobility, particularly the prince of Orange, and the counts Egmont and Horn, were alarmed with theſe exceſſes, to which their own diſcontents had at firſt given countenauce; and ſeconding the wiſdom of the governeſs, they ſuppreſſed thoſe dangerous inſurrections, puniſhed the ringleaders, and reduced all the provinces to a ſtate of order and ſubmiſſion. But Philip was not contented with the re-eſtabliſhment of his antient authority: He conſidered, that provinces, ſo remote from the ſeat of government, could not be ruled by a limited prerogative; and that a prince, who muſt entreat rather than command, would neceſſarily, when he reſided not among the people, feel every day a diminution of his power and influence. He determined, therefore, to lay hold of the late popular mutinies as a pretence for aboliſhing entirely the privileges of the Low Country provinces; and for ruling them thenceforth with a military and arbitrary authority. In the execution of this violent deſign, he employed a man, who was a proper inſtrument in the hands of ſuch a tyrant Ferdinand of Toledo, duke of Alva, had been educated entirely

amidſt

CHAP. XL.

1571.

amidſt arms; and having attained a conſummate knowlege in the military art, his habits led him to transfer into all government the ſevere diſcipline of a camp, and to conceive no meaſures between prince and ſubject but thoſe of rigid command and implicit obedience. This general, in 1568, conducted from Italy to the Low Countries a powerful body of veteran Spaniards; and his avowed animoſity to the Flemings, with his known character, ſtruck that whole people with terror and conſternation. It belongs not to our ſubject to relate at length thoſe violences, with Alva's natural barbarity, ſteeled by reflection, and aggravated by inſolence exerciſed on thoſe flouriſhing provinces. It ſuffices to ſay, that all their privileges, the gift of ſo many princes, and the inheritance of ſo many ages, were openly and expreſsly aboliſhed by edict; arbitrary and ſanguinary tribunals erected; the counts Egmont and Horn, notwithſtanding their great merits and paſt ſervices, brought to the ſcaffold; multitudes of all ranks thrown into priſon; and thence delivered over to the executioner: And notwithſtanding the peaceable ſubmiſſion of all men, nothing was heard of but confiſcation, impriſonment, exile, torture, and death.

ELIZABETH was equally diſpleaſed to ſee the progreſs of that ſcheme, laid for the extermination of the proteſtants, and to obſerve the erection of ſo great a military power, in a ſtate ſituated ſo near her. She gave protection to all the Flemiſh exiles who took ſhelter in her dominions; and as many of theſe were the moſt induſtrious inhabitants of the Netherlands, and had rendered that country ſo celebrated for its arts, ſhe reaped the advantage of introducing into England ſome uſeful manufactures, which were formerly unknown in that kingdom. Foreſeeing that the violent government of Alva could not long ſubſiſt without exciting ſome commotion, ſhe ventured to commit an inſult upon him, which ſhe would have been cautious not to hazard againſt a more eſtabliſhed authority. Some Genoeſe mer-

CHAP. XL.

1571.

chants had engaged by contract with Philip, to transport into Flanders the sum of four hundred thousand crowns; and the vessels in which this money was embarked, had been attacked in the Channel by some privateers equipped by the French Hugonots, and had taken shelter in Plymouth and Southampton. The commanders of the ships pretended, that the money belonged to the King of Spain; but the Queen finding, upon enquiry, that it was the property of Genoese merchants, took possession of it as a loan; and by that means deprived the duke of Alva of this resource in the time of his greatest necessity. Alva, in revenge, seized all the English merchants in the Low Countries, threw them into prison, and confiscated their effects. The Queen retaliated by a like violence on the Flemish and Spanish merchants; and gave all the English liberty to make reprizals on the subjects of Philip. These differences were afterwards accommodated by treaty, and mutual reparations were made to the merchants: But nothing could repair the loss which so well-timed a blow inflicted on the Spanish government in the Low Countries. Alva, in want of money, and dreading the immediate mutiny of his troops, to whom large arrears were due, imposed by his arbitrary will the most ruinous taxes on the people. He not only required the hundredth penny, and the twentieth of all immoveable goods: He also demanded the tenth of all moveable goods on every sale; an absurd tyranny, which would not only have destroyed all arts and commerce, but even have restrained the common intercourse of life. The people refused compliance: The duke had recourse to his usual expedient of hanging: And thus matters came still nearer the last extremity between the Flemings and the Spaniards[p].

All the enemies of Elizabeth, in order to revenge themselves for her insults, had naturally recourse to one policy, the supporting the cause and pretensions of the

[p] Bentivoglio, part I. lib. V. Camden, p. 416.

Queen

CHAP. XL.

1751.

New conſpiracy of the duke of Norfolk.

Queen of Scots; and Alva, whoſe meaſures were ever violent, ſoon opened a ſecret intercourſe with that princeſs. There was one Rodolphi, a Florentine merchant, who had reſided about fifteen years in London, and who, at the ſame time that he conducted his commerce in England, had managed all the intrigues of the court of Rome with the catholic nobility and gentry [q]. He had been thrown into priſon at the time when the duke of Norfolk's intrigues with Mary were diſcovered; but either no proof was found againſt him, or the part which he had acted was not very criminal; and he ſoon after recovered his liberty. This man, zealous for promoting the catholic faith, had formed a ſcheme, in concert with the Spaniſh ambaſſador, for ſubverting the government, by a foreign invaſion, and a domeſtic inſurrection; and when he communicated his project, by letter, to Mary, he found, that as ſhe was now fully convinced of Elizabeth's artifices, and deſpaired of ever recovering her authority, or even her liberty, by pacific meaſures, ſhe very willingly gave her concurrence. The great number of diſcontented catholics were the chief ſource of their hopes on the ſide of England; and they alſo obſerved, that the kingdom was, at that time, full of indigent gentry chiefly younger brothers, who having at preſent, by the late decay of the church, and the yet languiſhing ſtate of commerce, no proſpect of a livelihood ſuitable to their birth, were ready to throw themſelves into any deſperate enterprize [r]. But in order to inſpire ſpirit and courage into all theſe malecontents, it was requiſite, that ſome great nobleman ſhould put himſelf at their head; and no one appeared to Rodolphi, and to the biſhop of Roſs, who entered into all theſe intrigues, ſo proper, both on account of his power and his popularity, as the duke of Norfolk.

THIS nobleman, when releaſed from confinement in the Tower, had given his promiſe, that he would drop

[q] Leſley, p. 123. State Trials, vol. I. p. 87.
[r] Leſley, p. 123.

all

CHAP. XL.

1571.

all intercourſe with the Queen of Scots [s]; but finding that he had loſt, and, as he feared, beyond all recovery, the confidence and favour of Elizabeth, and being ſtill, in ſome degree, reſtrained from his liberty, he was tempted, by impatience and deſpair, to violate his word, and to open anew his correſpondence with the captive princeſs [t]. A promiſe of marriage was renewed between them; the duke engaged to enter into all her intereſts; and as his remorſes gradually decayed in the courſe of theſe tranſactions, he was puſhed to give his aſſent to enterprizes ſtill more criminal. Rodolphi's plan was, that the duke of Alva ſhould, on ſome other pretence, aſſemble a great quantity of ſhipping in the Low Countries; ſhould tranſport a body of ſix thouſand foot, and four thouſand horſe, into England; ſhould land them at Harwich, where the duke of Norfolk was to join them with all his friends; ſhould thence march directly to London, and oblige the Queen to ſubmit to whatever conditions the conſpirators ſhould pleaſe to impoſe upon her [u]. Norfolk gave his conſent to this plan; and three letters in conſequence of it, were wrote in his name by Rodolphi, one to Alva, another to the pope, and a third to the King of Spain; but the duke, apprehenſive of the danger, refuſed to ſign them [x]. He only ſent to the Spaniſh ambaſſador a ſervant and confident, named Barker, as well to notify his concurrence in the plan, as to vouch for the authenticity of theſe letters; and Rodolphi, having obtained a letter of credence from the ambaſſador, proceeded on his journey to Bruſſels and to Rome. The duke of Alva and the pope embraced the ſcheme with alacrity: Rodolphi informed Norfolk of their intentions [y]; and every thing ſeemed to concur in forwarding the undertaking.

s Haynes, p. 571. t State Trials, vol. I. p. 102.
u Leſley, p. 155. State Trials, vol. I. p. 86, 87.
x Leſley, p. 159, 161. Camden, p. 432. y State Trials, vol. I. p. 93.

NORFOLK,

CHAP. XL. 1571.

NORFOLK, notwithstanding these criminal enterprizes, had never entirely forgot his duty to his sovereign, his country, and his religion; and tho' he had laid the plan both for an invasion and an insurrection, he still flattered himself, that the innocence of his intentions would justify the violence of his measures, and that, as he aimed at nothing but the liberty of the Queen of Scots, and the obtaining Elizabeth's consent to his marriage, he could not justly reproach himself as a rebel and a traitor [z]. It is certain, however, that, considering the Queen's vigour and spirit, the scheme, if successful, must finally have ended in her dethronement; and her authority was here exposed to the utmost danger. The conspiracy had hitherto entirely escaped the vigilance of Elizabeth, and that of secretary Cecil, who now bore the title of lord Burleigh. It was from another attempt of Norfolk, that they first obtained a hint, which, being diligently traced, led at last to a full discovery. Mary had intended to send a sum of money to lord Herreis, and her partizans in Scotland; and Norfolk undertook to have it conveyed to Banniſter, a servant of his, at that time in the north, who was to find some expedient to have it delivered to lord Herreis [a]. He entrusted the money to a servant, who was not in the secret, and told him that the bag contained a sum of silver, which he was to deliver to Banniſter with a letter: But the servant, conjecturing from the weight and size of the bag, that it was full of gold, carried the letter to Burleigh; who immediately ordered Banniſter, Barker, and Hicford, the duke's secretary, to be put under arrest, and to undergoe a severe examination. The torture made them confess the whole truth; and as Hicford, tho' ordered to burn all papers, had carefully kept them concealed under the mats of the duke's chamber, and under the tiles of the house, full evidence now

[z] Lesley, p. 158. [a] Ibid. p. 769. State Trials, vol. I. p. 87. Camden, p. 434. Digges, p. 134, 137, 140. Strype, vol. II. p. 82.

appeared

CHAP. XL.

1568. appeared againſt his maſter [b]. Norfolk himſelf, who was entirely ignorant of the diſcoveries made by his ſervants, was brought before the council, and tho' exhorted to atone for his guilt by a full confeſſion, he perſiſted in denying every accuſation with which he was charged. The Queen always declared, that if he had given her this proof of his ſincere repentance, ſhe would have pardoned all his former offences [c]; but finding him obſtinate, ſhe committed him to the Tower, and ordered him to be brought to his trial. The biſhop of Roſs had, on ſome ſuſpicion, been committed to cuſtody before the diſcovery of Norfolk's guilt; and every expedient was employed to make him reveal his ſhare in the conſpiracy. He at firſt inſiſted on his privilege as an ambaſſador; but he was told, that as his miſtreſs was no longer a ſovereign, he would not be regarded as an ambaſſador, and that even if that character was allowed, it did not warrant him in conſpiring againſt the ſovereign in whoſe court he reſided [d]. As he ſtill refuſed to anſwer interrogatories, he was informed of the confeſſion made by Norfolk's ſervants; after which he entertained no longer any ſcruple to make a full diſcovery, and his evidence put the guilt of that nobleman beyond all queſtion. A jury of twenty-five peers unanimouſly paſſed ſentence upon him. The trial was quite regular, even according to the ſtrict rules obſerved at preſent in theſe matters; except that the witneſſes gave not their evidence in court, and were not confronted with the criminal: A laudable practice, which was not at that time obſerved in trials for high treaſon.

1572.

12 January. Trial of Norfolk.

THE Queen ſtill heſitated concerning Norfolk's execution; whether that ſhe was really moved by friendſhip and compaſſion, towards a peer of that rank and merit, or, that affecting the praiſe of clemency, ſhe only put on the appearance of theſe ſentiments. Twice

[b] Leſley, p. 173. [c] Ibid. p. 175. [d] Ibid. p. 189. Spotſwood.

ſhe

CHAP. XL.

1569.

she signed a warrant for his execution, and twice revoked the fatal sentence [d]; and tho' her ministers and counsellors pushed her to rigour, she still appeared irresolute and undetermined. After four months hesitation, a Parliament was assembled; and the commons addressed her, in very strong terms, for the execution of the duke; a sanction which, when added to the greatness and certainty of his guilt, would, she thought, justify, in the eyes of all the world, her severity against that nobleman. Norfolk died with great calmness and constancy; and tho' he cleared himself of any disloyal intentions against the Queen's authority, he acknowleged the justice of the sentence by which he suffered [e]. That we may relate together affairs of a like nature, we shall mention, that the earl of Northumberland, being delivered up to the Queen by the regent of Scotland, was also a few months after brought to the scaffold for his rebellion.

His execution.

8 May.

2 June.

The Queen of Scots was either the occasion or the cause of all these disturbances; but as she was a sovereign princess, and might reasonably, from the harsh treatment which she had met with, think herself entitled to use any expedient for her relief, Elizabeth durst not, as yet, form any resolution of proceeding to extremity against her. She only sent lord Delawar, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Thomas Bromley, and Dr. Wilson, to expostulate with her, and to require satisfaction for all those parts of her conduct, which, from the beginning of her life, had given exception to Elizabeth: Her assuming the arms of England, refusing to ratify the treaty of Edinburgh, her intending to marry Norfolk without the Queen's consent, her concurring in the northern rebellion [f], practising with Rodolphi to engage the King of Spain in an invasion of England [g], procu-

[d] Carte, p. 327. from Fenelon's dispatches. Digges, p. 166. Strype, vol. II. p. 83. [e] Camden, p. 440. Strype, vol. II. App. p. 23.
[f] Digges, p. 18, 203. Strype, vol. II. p. 51, 52.
[g] Ibid. p. 194, 208, 209. Strype, vol. II. p. 40, 51.

ring

CHAP. XL. 1572.

ring the pope's bull of excommunication, and allowing her friends abroad to give her the title of Queen of England. Mary juſtified herſelf from the ſeveral articles of this charge, either by denying the facts imputed to her, or by throwing the blame on others [h]. But the Queen was little ſatisfied with her apology; and the Parliament was ſo enraged againſt her, that the commons made a direct application for her immediate trial and execution. They employed ſome topics derived from practice and reaſon, and the laws of nations; but the chief ſtreſs was laid on paſſages and examples from the Old Teſtament [i], which, if conſidered as a general rule of conduct, (an intention which it is unreaſonable to ſuppoſe) would imply conſequences dangerous to all the principles of humanity and morality. Matters were here carried farther than Elizabeth intended; and being ſatisfied with ſhewing Mary the diſpoſition of the nation, ſhe ſent to the houſe her expreſs commands not to deal any farther at preſent in the affair of the Scottiſh Queen [k]. Nothing could be a ſtronger proof that the puritanical intereſt prevailed in the houſe, than the intemperate uſe of authorities derived from ſcripture, eſpecially from the Old Teſtament; and the Queen was ſo little a lover of that ſect, that ſhe was not likely to make any conceſſion merely in deference to their ſollicitation. She ſhewed this ſeſſion her diſapprobation of their ſchemes in another remarkable inſtance. There had paſſed in the lower houſe two bills, for regulating eccleſiaſtical ceremonies; but ſhe ſent them a like imperious meſſage with the foregoing, and by the terror of her prerogative ſtopt all farther proceedings [l].

BUT tho' Elizabeth would not proceed to ſuch extremities againſt Mary, as were recommended to her by the Parliament, ſhe was alarmed with the great intereſt and the reſtleſs ſpirit of that princeſs, as well as

[h] Camden, p. 442. [i] D'Ewes, p. 207, 208, &c. [k] Ibid. p. 219, 241. [l] D'Ewes, p. 213, 238.

her

her closd connections with Spain; and she thought it necessary both to increase the rigour and strictness of her confinement, and to follow maxims different from what she had hitherto pursued in her management of Scotland [m]. That kingdom remained still in a state of anarchy. The castle of Edingburgh, commandeded by Kirkaldy of Grange, had de clared for the Queen; and the lords of that party, encouraged by his countenance, had taken possession of the capital, and carried on a vigorous war against the regent. By a sudden and unexpected inroad, they seized that nobleman at Stirling; but finding that his friends, sallying from the castle, were likely to relieve him, they instantly put him to death. The earl of Marre was chosen regent in his place; and found the same difficulties to encounter in the government of that divided country. He was therefore glad to accept of the mediation of the French and English ambassadors, and to conclude on equal terms a truce with the Queen's party [n]. He was a man of a free and generous spirit, and scorned to submit to any dependance on England; and for this reason Elizabeth, who had formed close connections with France, yielded with less reluctance to the sollicitations of that court, still maintained the appearance of neutrality between the parties, and allowed matters to remain on a ballance in Scotland [o]. But affairs soon after took a new turn: Marre died of melancholy, with which the distracted state of the country affected him: Morton was chosen regent; and as this nobleman had secretly taken all his measures with Elizabeth, who no longer relied on the friendship of the French court, she resolved to exert herself more effectually for the support of that party, whom she had always favoured. She sent Sir Henry Killigrew ambassador into Scotland, who found Mary's partizans so discouraged by the discovery and

CHAP. XL.

1572.

1587.

Scots affairs.

[m] Digges, p. 152. [n] Spotswood, p. 263. [o] Digges, p. 156, 165, 169.

punishment

CHAP. XL. 1572.

punishment of Norfolk's conspiracy, that they were glad to submit to the King's authority, and accept of an indemnity for all past offences [p]. The duke of Chatelrault, and the earl of Huntley, with the most considerable of Mary's friends, laid down their arms on these conditions. The garrison alone of the castle of Edinburgh continued refractory. Kirkaldy's fortunes were desperate; and he flattered himself with the hopes of receiving assistance from the Kings of France and Spain, who encouraged his obstinacy, in the view of being able, from that quarter, to give disturbance to England. Elizabeth was alarmed with the danger; she no more apprehended the making an entire breach with the Queen of Scots, who, she found, could not any longer be amused by her artifices; she had an implicite reliance on Morton; and she saw, that, by the submission of all the considerable nobility, the pacification of Scotland would be an easy, as well as a most important undertaking. She, therefore, ordered Sir William Drury, governor of Berwic, to march with some troops and artillery to Edinburgh, and to besiege the castle [q]. The garrison submitted at discretion; Kirkaldy was delivered to his countrymen, by whom he was tried and executed: Secretary Lidington, who had taken part with him, died soon after a voluntary death, as is supposed; and Scotland, submitting entirely to the regent, gave not, during a long time, any farther inquietude to Elizabeth.

French affairs.

THE events which happened in France, were not so agreeable to the Queen's interests and inclinations. The fallacious pacifications, which had been so often made with the Hugonots, gave them good reason to suspect the present intentions of the court; and after all the other leaders of that party were deceived into a dangerous credulity, the sagacious admiral still remained doubtful and uncertain. But his suspicions were

[p] Spotswood, p. 268. [q] Camden, p. 449.

at

CHAP. XL.

1572.

at last overcome, partly by the profound dissimulation of Charles, partly by his own earnest desire to end the miseries of France, and return again to the performance of his duty towards his prince and country. He considered besides, that as the former violent conduct of the court had ever met with such fatal success, it was not unlikely, that a prince, who had newly come to years of discretion, and appeared not to be rivetted in any dangerous animosities or prejudices, would be induced to govern himself by more moderate maxims. And as Charles was young, was of a passionate hasty temper, and addicted to pleasures[s], such deep perfidy seemed either remote from his character, or difficult, and almost impossible to be so uniformly supported by him. Moved by these considerations, the admiral, the Queen of Navarre, and all the Hugonots began to repose themselves in full security, and gave credit to the treacherous caresses and professions of the French court. Elizabeth herself, notwithstanding her great experience and penetration, entertained not the least mistrust of Charles's sincerity; and being pleased to find her enemies of the house of Guise removed from all authority, and to observe an animosity every day growing between the French and Spanish monarchs, she concluded a defensive league with the former[t], and regarded this alliance as an invincible barrier to her throne. Walsingham, her ambassador sent her over, by every courier, the most satisfactory accounts of the honour, and plain-dealing, and fidelity of that perfidious prince. 11th April.

The better to blind the eyes of the jealous Hugonots and draw their leaders into the snare prepared for them, Charles offered his sister, Margaret, in marriage to the prince of Navarre; and the admiral, with all the considerable nobility of that party, had come to Paris, in order to assist at the celebration of these nup-

[s] Digges, p. 8, 39. [t] Camden, p. 443.

CHAP. XL.

1572.

tials, which, it was hoped, would finally, if not compose the differences, at leaſt appeaſe the bloody animoſity of the two religions. The Queen of Navarre was poiſoned by orders from the court; the admiral was dangerouſly wounded by an aſſaſſin: Yet Charles, by redoubling his diſſimulation, was ſtill able to retain the Hugonots in their ſecurity: Till on the evening of St. Bartholomew, a few days after the marriage, the ſignal was given for a general maſſacre of thoſe religioniſts, and the King himſelf in perſon led the way to theſe aſſaſſinations. The hatred long entertained by the Pariſians againſt the proteſtants, made them ſecond, without any preparation, the fury of the court; and all conditions, ages and ſexes, ſuſpected of any propenſity to that religion, were involved in an undiſtinguiſhed ruin. The admiral, his ſon in-law Teligni, Soubize, Rochefoucaut, Pardaillon, Piles, Lavardin; men, who, during the late wars, had diſtinguiſhed themſelves by the moſt heroic action were miſerably butchered without reſiſtance; the ſtreets of Paris flowed with blood; and the people more enraged than ſatiated with their cuelty, as if repining that death had ſaved the victims from farther inſult, exerciſed on their dead bodies all the rage of the moſt licentious brutality. About five hundred gentlemen and men of rank periſhed in this maſſacre; and near ten thouſand of inferior condition[u]. Orders were ſuddenly diſpatched to all the provinces for a like general execution of the proteſtants; and in Roüen, Lyons, and many other cities, the people emulated the fury of the capital. Even the murder of the King of Navarre, and the prince of Condé had been propoſed by the duke of Guiſe; but Charles, ſoftened by the amiable manners of the King of Nevarre, and hoping that theſe young princes might eaſily be converted to the catholic faith, determined to ſpare their lives, tho' he obliged them to purchaſe their ſafety by a ſeeming change of their religion.

24 Auguſt. Maſſacre of Paris.

[u] Davila, lib. V.

CHARLES

CHAP. XL.

1572.

CHARLES, in order to cover this barbarous perfidy, pretended, that a conſpiracy of the Hugonots to ſeize his perſon had been ſuddenly diſcovered; and that he had been neceſſitated, for his own defence, to proceed to this ſeverity againſt them. He ſent orders to Fenelon, his ambaſſador in England, to aſk an audience, and to give Elizabeth this account of the late tranſaction. That miniſter, who was a man of probity, abhorred the treachery and cruelty of his court, and even ſcrupled not to declare, that he was now aſhamed to bear the name of a Frenchman [x]; yet was he obliged to obey his orders, and make uſe of the apology, which had been preſcribed to him. He met with that reception from all the courtiers, which, he knew, the conduct of his maſter had ſo well merited. Nothing could be more awful and affecting than the ſolemnity of his audience. A melancholy ſorrow ſat on every face: Silence, as in the dead of night, reigned thro' all the chambers of the royal apartment: The courtiers and ladies, clad in deep mourning, were ranged on each ſide, and allowed him to paſs, without affording him one ſalute or favourable look; till he was admitted to the Queen herſelf [y]. That princeſs received him with a more eaſy, if not a more gracious countenance; and heard his apology, without diſcovering any viſible ſymptoms of indignation. She then told him, that, tho', on the firſt rumour of this dreadful intelligence, ſhe had been aſtoniſhed, that ſo many brave men and loyal ſubjects, who reſted ſecure on the faith of their ſovereign, ſhould have been ſuddenly butchered in ſo barbarous a manner; ſhe had hitherto ſuſpended her judgment, till farther and more certain information ſhould be brought her: That the account, which he had given, even if founded on no miſtake or bad information; tho' it might alleviate, would by no means remove the blame of the King's counſellors, or juſtify

[x] Digges, p. 247. [y] Carte vol. III. p. 522. from Fenelon's Diſpatches.

CHAP. XL.

1572.

tials, which, it was hoped, would finally, if not compose the differences, at leaſt appeaſe the bloody animoſity of the two religions. The Queen of Navarre was poiſoned by orders from the court; the admiral was dangerouſly wounded by an aſſaſſin: Yet Charles, by redoubling his diſſimulation, was ſtill able to retain the Hugonots in their ſecurity: Till on the evening of St. Bartholomew, a few days after the marriage, the ſignal was given for a general maſſacre of thoſe religioniſts, and the King himſelf in perſon led the way to theſe aſſaſſinations. The hatred long entertained by the Pariſians againſt the proteſtants, made them ſecond, without any preparation, the fury of the court; and all conditions, ages and ſexes, ſuſpected of any propenſity to that religion, were involved in an undiſtinguiſhed ruin. The admiral, his ſon in-law Teligni, Soubize, Rochefoucaut, Pardaillon, Piles, Lavardin; men, who, during the late wars, had diſtinguiſhed themſelves by the moſt heroic action, were miſerably butchered without reſiſtance; the ſtreets of Paris flowed with blood; and the people more enraged than ſatiated with their cuelty, as if repining that death had ſaved the victims from farther inſult, exerciſed on their dead bodies all the rage of the moſt licentious brutality. About five hundred gentlemen and men of rank periſhed in this maſſacre; and near ten thouſand of inferior condition[a]. Orders were ſuddenly diſpatched to all the provinces for a like general execution of the proteſtants; and in Roüen, Lyons, and many other cities, the people emulated the fury of the capital. Even the murder of the King of Navarre, and the prince of Condé had been propoſed by the duke of Guiſe; but Charles, ſoftened by the amiable manners of the King of Nevarre, and hoping that theſe young princes might eaſily be converted to the catholic faith, determined to ſpare their lives, tho' he obliged them to purchaſe their ſafety by a ſeeming change of their religion.

24 Auguſt. Maſſacre of Paris.

[a] Davila, lib. V.

CHARLES

CHAP. XL.

1572.

CHARLES, in order to cover this barbarous perfidy, pretended, that a conſpiracy of the Hugonots to ſeize his perſon had been ſuddenly diſcovered; and that he had been neceſſitated, for his own defence, to proceed to this ſeverity againſt them. He ſent orders to Fenelon, his ambaſſador in England, to aſk an audience, and to give Elizabeth this account of the late tranſaction. That miniſter, who was a man of probity, abhorred the treachery and cruelty of his court, and even ſcrupled not to declare, that he was now aſhamed to bear the name of a Frenchman [x]; yet was he obliged to obey his orders, and make uſe of the apology, which had been preſcribed to him. He met with that reception from all the courtiers, which, he knew, the conduct of his maſter had ſo well merited. Nothing could be more awful and affecting than the ſolemnity of his audience. A melancholy ſorrow ſat on every face: Silence, as in the dead of night, reigned thro' all the chambers of the royal apartment: The courtiers and ladies, clad in deep mourning, were ranged on each ſide, and allowed him to paſs, without affording him one ſalute or favourable look; till he was admitted to the Queen herſelf [y]. That princeſs received him with a more eaſy, if not a more gracious countenance; and heard his apology, without diſcovering any viſible ſymptoms of indignation. She then told him, that, tho', on the firſt rumour of this dreadful intelligence, ſhe had been aſtoniſhed, that ſo many brave men and loyal ſubjects, who reſted ſecure on the faith of their ſovereign, ſhould have been ſuddenly butchered in ſo barbarous a manner; ſhe had hitherto ſuſpended her judgment, till farther and more certain information ſhould be brought her: That the account, which he had given, even if founded on no miſtake or bad information; tho' it might alleviate, would by no means remove the blame of the King's counſellors, or juſtify

[x] Digges, p. 247. [y] Carte vol. III. p. 522. from Fenelon's Diſpatches.

CHAP. XL.

1572.

the ſtrange irregularity of their proceedings: That the ſame force, which without reſiſtance had maſſacred ſo many defenceleſs men, could eaſily have ſecured their perſons, and have reſerved them for a trial, and for puniſhment by a formal ſentence, which would have diſtinguiſhed the innocent from the guilty; That the admiral in particular, being dangerouſly wounded, and environed by the guards of the King, on whoſe protection he ſeemed entirely to rely, had no means of eſcape, and might ſurely, before his death, have been convicted of the crimes imputed to him: That it was more worthy of a ſovereign to reſerve in his own hands the ſword of juſtice, than to commit it to bloody murderers, who, being the declared and mortal enemies of the perſons accuſed, employed it without mercy and without diſtinction: That if theſe ſentiments were juſt, even ſuppoſing the conſpiracy of the proteſtants to be real; how much more ſo, if that crime was nothing but a calumny of their enemies, invented for their ruin and deſtruction? That if upon enquiry the innocence of theſe unhappy victims ſhould afterwards appear, it was the King's duty to turn his vengeance on their enemies and calumniators, who had thus cruelly abuſed his confidence, had murdered ſo many of his brave ſubjects, and had done what in them lay to cover him with infamy and diſhonour: And that for her part, ſhe ſhould form her judgment of his intentions by his ſubſequent conduct; and in the mean time ſhould act as deſired by the ambaſſador, and rather pity than blame his maſter for the extremities, to which he had been carried [z].

ELIZABETH was fully ſenſible of the dangerous ſituation in which ſhe now ſtood. In the maſſacre of Paris, ſhe ſaw the reſult of that general conſpiracy, which had been formed for the extermination of the proteſtants; and ſhe knew, that ſhe herſelf, as the head

z Digges, p. 247, 248.

and

CHAP. XL. 1572.

and protector of that religion, was exposed to the utmost fury and resentment of the catholics. The violences and cruelties of the Spaniards in the Low Countries were another branch of the same conspiracy; and as Charles and Philip, two princes nearly allied in perfidy and barbarity, as well as in bigotry, had now laid aside their pretended quarrel, and had avowed the most entire friendship [a], she had reason, so soon as they had appeased their domestic commotions, to dread the effects of their united councils. The duke of Guise also and his family, whom Charles, in order to deceive the admiral, had hitherto kept at a distance, had now acquired an open and entire ascendant in the court of France; and she was sensible, that these princes, from personal as well as political reasons, were her declared and implacable enemies. The Queen of Scots, their near relation and close confederate, was the pretender to her throne; and tho' detained in custody, was actuated by a restless spirit, and besides her foreign allies, possessed very numerous and zealous partizans in the heart of the kingdom. For these reasons, Elizabeth thought it more prudent not to break all terms with the French monarch; but still to listen to the professions of friendship, which he made her. She allowed even the negotiations to be renewed for her marriage with the duke of Alançon, Charles's third brother [b]: Those with the duke of Anjou had already been broke off. She sent the earl of Worcester to assist in her name at the baptism of a young princess, born to Charles; but before she agreed to give this last mark of condescension, she thought it becoming her dignity, to renew her expressions of blame and even of detestation against the cruelties exercised on his protestant subjects [c]. Meanwhile, she prepared herself for that attack, which seemed to threaten her

[a] Digges, p. 267, 282. [b] Ibid. passim. Camden, p. 447. [c] Digges, p. 297, 298. Camden, p. 447.

CHAP. XL.

1572. from the combined power and violence of the Romaniſts: She fortified Portſmouth, put her fleet in order, exerciſed her militia, cultivated popularity with her ſubjects, acted with vigour for the farther reduction of Scotland under obedience to the young King, and renewed her alliance with the German princes, who were no leſs alarmed than herſelf at theſe treacherous and ſanguinary meaſures, ſo univerſally embraced by the catholics.

But tho' Elizabeth cautiouſly avoided the coming to extremities with Charles, the greateſt ſecurity, which ſhe poſſeſſed againſt his violence, was derived from the difficulties, which the obſtinate reſiſtance of the hugonots ſtill created to him. Such of that ſect as lived near the frontiers, immediately, on the firſt news of the maſſacres, fled into England, Germany or Switzerland, where they excited the compaſſion and indignation of the proteſtants, and prepared themſelves, with encreaſed forces and redoubled zeal, to return into France, and revenge the treacherous ſlaughter of their brethren. Thoſe who lived in the middle of the kingdom, took ſhelter in the neareſt garriſons occupied by the hugonots; and finding, that they could repoſe no faith in capitulations, and expect no clemency, were determined to defend themſelves to the laſt extremity. The ſect, which Charles had thought at one blow to exterminate, had now an army of eighteen thouſand men on foot, and poſſeſſed in different parts of the kingdom above an hundred cities, caſtles, or fortreſſes[d]; nor could that prince deem himſelf ſecure from the invaſion threatened him by all the other proteſtants of Europe. The nobility and gentry of England were rouzed to ſuch a pitch of reſentment, that they offered to levy an army of twenty-two thouſand foot and four thouſand horſe, to tranſport them into France, and to maintain them ſix months at their own charge;

French affairs.

1573.

[d] Digges, p. 343.

But

But Elizabeth, who was cautious in her measures, and who feared to inflame the quarrel between the two religions by these dangerous crusades, refused her consent, and moderated the zeal of her subjects [e]. The German princes, less political, or more secure from the resentment of France, forwarded the levies made by the protestants; and the prince of Condé, having escaped from court, put himself at the head of these troops, and prepared to enter the kingdom. The duke of Alençon, the King of Navarre, the family of Montmorenci, and many considerable men even among the catholics, displeased, either on a private or public account, with the measures of the court, favoured the progress of the hugonots; and every thing relapsed into confusion. The King, instead of repenting his violent councils, which had brought matters to such extremity, called aloud for new severities [f]; nor could even the mortal distemper, under which he laboured, moderate the rage and animosity, by which he was actuated. He died without male issue, at the age of twenty-five years; a prince, whose character, containing that unusual mixture of dissimulation and ferocity, of quick resentment, and unrelenting vengeance, executed the greatest mischiefs, and threatened still worse, both to his native country and to all Europe. Henry, duke of Anjou, who had, some time before, been elected King of Poland, no sooner heard of his brother's death, than he hastened to take possession of the crown of France; and found the kingdom, not only involved in the greatest present disorders, but exposed to infirmities, for which it was extremely difficult to provide any suitable remedy. The people were divided into two theological factions, furious from their zeal, and mutually enraged from the injuries which they had committed or received; and as all faith had been violated and moderation banished, it seemed impracti-

CHAP. XL.

1573.

1574.

30th May.

1575.

[e] Digges, p. 335, 341. [f] Davila, lib. 5.

CHAP. XL.

cable to frame any terms of compoſition between them. Each party had devoted itſelf to leaders, whoſe com-
1575. mands had more authority than the will of the ſovereign; and even the catholics, to whom the King was attached, were conducted entirely by the councils of Guiſe and his family. The religious connexions had, on both ſides, ſuperſeded the civil; or rather (for men will always be guided by preſent intereſt) two empires being ſecretly formed in the kingdom, every individual was engaged by new views of intereſt to follow thoſe leaders, to whom, during the courſe of paſt convulſions, he had been indebted for his honours and preferment. Henry, obſerving the low condition of the crown, had laid a ſcheme for reſtoring his own authority, by acting as umpire between the parties, by moderating their differences, and by reducing both to a dependance upon himſelf. He poſſeſſed all the talents of diſſimulation requiſite for the execution of this delicate plan; but being deficient in vigour, application, and ſound underſtanding, inſtead of acquiring a ſuperiority over both factions, he loſt the confidence of both, and taught the partizans of each to adhere more cloſely to their particular leaders, whom they found more hearty, cordial, and ſincere, in the cauſe,
1576. which they purſued. The hugonots were fortified by the acceſſion of a German army under the prince of Condé and prince Caſimir; but much more, by the credit and perſonal virtues of the King of Navarre, who, having fled from court, had placed himſelf at the head of that formidable party. Henry, in proſecution of his plan, entered into a compoſition with them; and being deſirous of preſerving a balance between the ſects, he granted them peace on the moſt advantageous conditions. This was the fifth general peace made with the hugonots; but tho' it was no more ſincere on the part of the court than any of the former, it gave the higheſt diſguſt to the catholics; and afforded the

duke

duke of Guiſe the deſired pretence of declaiming againſt the meaſures, and maxims, and conduct of the King. That artful and bold leader took thence an occaſion of reducing his party into a more formed and regular body; and he laid the firſt foundations of the famous LEAGUE, which, without paying any regard to the royal authority, aimed at the entire ſuppreſſion of the hugonots. Such was the unhappy condition of France, from the paſt ſeverities and violences of its princes, that toleration could no longer be admitted; and a conceſſion for liberty of conſcience, which would have probably appeaſed the reformers, excited the moſt violent reſentment and animoſity in the catholics. Henry, in order to divert the force of the league from himſelf, rnd even to elude its efforts againſt the hugonots, declared himſelf the head of that ſeditious confederacy, and took the field as leader of the Romaniſts. But his dilatory and feeble meaſures diſcovered his reluctance to the undertaking; and after ſome unſucceſsful attempts, he concluded a new peace, which, tho' leſs favorable than the former to the proteſtants, gave no contentment to the catholics. Mutual diffidence ſtill prevailed between the parties; the King's moderation was ſuſpicious to both; each faction continued to fortify itſelf againſt that breach, which, they foreſaw, muſt ſpeedily enſue; theological controverſy daily whetted the animoſity of the ſects; and every private injury became the ground of a public quarrel. The King, hoping, by his artifice and ſubtlety, to allure the nation into a love of pleaſure and repoſe, was himſelf caught in the ſnare; and ſinking into diſſoluteneſs and indolence, wholly loſt the eſteem, and, in a great meaſure, the affections of the nation. Inſtead of advancing ſuch men of character and ability, as were neuters between theſe dangerous factions, he gave all his confidence to young agreeable favourites, who, unable to prop his falling authority, leaned

CHAP. XL.

1576.

1577.

1578.

CHAP. XL.

1578.

entirely upon it, and encreaſed the general odium againſt his adminiſtration. The public burthens, encreaſed by his profuſe liberality, and feeling more heavy on a diſordered kingdom, became another ground of complaint; and the uncontrouled animoſity of parties, joined to the multiplicity of taxes, rendered peace more calamitous than any open ſtate of foreign or even domeſtic hoſtility. The artifices of the King were too refined to ſucceed, and too frequent to be concealed; and the plain, direct, and avowed conduct of the duke of Guiſe on the one ſide, and that of the King of Navarre on the other, drew by degrees the generality of the nation to devote themſelves without reſerve to the one or the other of thoſe great leaders.

1579.

THE civil commotions of France were of too great importance to be overlooked by the other princes of Europe; and Elizabeth's foreſight and vigilance, tho' ſomewhat reſtrained by her frugality, led her to take ſecretly ſome part in them. Beſides employing on all occaſions her good offices in favour of the hugonots, ſhe had expended no inconſiderable ſums of money in levying that army of Germans, which the prince of Condé and prince Caſimir conducted into France[s]; and notwithſtanding all her negotiations with the court, and her profeſſions of amity, ſhe always conſidered her own intereſts as connected with the proſperity of the French proteſtants and the depreſſion of the houſe of Guiſe. Philip, on the other hand, had declared himſelf protector of the league; had entered into the cloſeſt correſpondence with Guiſe; and had employed all his authority in ſupporting the credit of that factious leader. The ſympathy of religion, which of itſelf begot a connexion of intereſts, was one conſiderable inducement; but that monarch had alſo in view, the ſubduing his rebellious ſubjects in the Netherlands; who, as they received great encouragement from the

[s] Camden, p. 452.

French

1579.

French protestants, would, he hoped, finally despair of success, after the entire suppression of their friends and confederates.

Civil wars of the Low Countries.

THE same political views, which engaged Elizabeth to support the hugonots, would have led her to assist the distressed protestants in the Low Countries; but the mighty power of Philip, the tranquillity of all his other dominions, and the great force, which he maintained in these mutinous provinces, kept her in awe, and obliged her, notwithstanding all temptations and all provocations, to preserve some terms of amity with that monarch. The Spanish ambassador remonstrated to her, that many of the Flemish exiles, who infested the seas, and preyed on his master's subjects, were received into the harbours of England, and were there permitted to dispose of their prizes; and by these remonstrances the Queen found herself under a necessity of denying them all entrance into her dominions. But this measure proved in the issue extremely prejudicial to the interests of Philip. These desperate exiles, finding no longer any possibility of subsistance, were forced to attempt the most perilous enterprizes; and they made an assault on the Brille, a seaport town in Holland, where they met with success, and, after a short resistance, became masters of the place [h]. The duke of Alva was alarmed with the danger; and stopping those bloody executions, which he was making on the defenceless Flemings, he hastened with his army to extinguish the flame, which, falling on materials so well prepared for combustion, seemed to menace a general conflagration. His fears soon appeared to be well grounded. The people in the neighbourhood of the Brille, enraged by that complication of cruelty, oppression, insolence, usurpation, and persecution, under which they laboured, flew to arms; and in a few days almost the whole province of Hol-

[h] Camden, p. 443.

land

CHAP. XL.

1579.

land and that of Zealand had revolted from the Spaniards, and had openly declared againſt the tyranny of Alva. This event happened in the year 1572.

WILLIAM, prince of Orange, deſcended from a ſovereign family of great luſtre and antiquity in Germany, inheriting the poſſeſſions of a ſovereign family in France, had fixed his reſidence in the Low Countries; and on account of his noble birth and immenſe riches, as well as of his perſonal virtues, was univerſally regarded as the greateſt ſubject, who lived in thoſe provinces. He had oppoſed by all regular and dutiful means the progreſs of the Spaniſh uſurpations; and when Alva conducted his army into the Netherlands, and aſſumed the government, this prince, well acquainted with the violent character of the man, and the tyrannical ſpirit of the court of Madrid, wiſely fled from the danger which threatened him, and retired to his paternal eſtate and dominions in Germany. He was cited to appear before Alva's tribunal, was condemned in abſence, was declared a rebel, and his ample poſſeſſions in the Low Countries were confiſcated. In revenge, he levied an army of proteſtants in the empire, and made ſome attempts to reſtore the Flemings to liberty; but was ſtill repulſed with loſs by the vigilance and military conduct of Alva, and by the great bravery as well as diſcipline, of thoſe veteran Spaniards who ſerved under that general. The revolt of Holland and Zealand, provinces which the prince of Orange formerly commanded, and where he was infinitely beloved, called him anew from his retreat; and he added conduct, no leſs than ſpirit, to that obſtinate reſiſtance, which was here made to the Spaniſh dominion. By uniting the revolted towns into a league, he laid the foundation of that illuſtrious commonwealth, the offspring of induſtry and liberty, whoſe arms and policy have made long ſo ſignal a figure in every tranſaction of Europe. He inflamed the inhabitants by every motive, which

which religion, resentment, or love of freedom could inspire. Tho the present greatness of the Spanish monarchy might deprive them of all courage, he still flattered them with the concurrence of the other provinces, and with assistance from the neighbouring states; and he exhorted them, in defence of their religion, their liberties, their lives, to endure the utmost extremities of war. From this spirit proceeded the desperate defence of Harlem; a defence, which nothing but the most consuming famine could overcome, and which the Spaniards revenged by the execution of more than two thousand of the inhabitants[i]. This extreme severity, instead of striking terror into the Hollanders, animated them by despair; and the vigorous resistance made at Alcmaer, where Alva was finally repulsed, showed them that their insolent enemies were not wholly invincible. The duke, finding at last the pernicious effects of his violent councils, sollicited to be recalled from the government: Medina-celi, who was appointed his successor, refused to accept the charge; Requesens, commendator of Castile, was sent from Italy to replace Alva; and this tyrant departed from the Netherlands in 1574; leaving his name in execration to the inhabitants, and boasting in his turn, that, during the course of five years government, he had delivered above eighteen thousand of these rebellious heretics into the hands of the executioner[k].

Requesens, tho' a man of milder dispositions, could not appease the violent hatred, which the revolted Hollanders had entertained against the Spanish government; and the war continued as obstinate as ever. In the siege of Leyden, undertaken by the Spaniards, the Dutch opened the dykes and sluices, in order to drive them from that enterprize; and the very peasants were active in ruining their fields by an inundation, rather

[i] Bentivoglio, lib. 7. [k] Grotius, lib. 2.

than

CHAP. XL.

1579. than fall again under the hated tyranny of Spain. But notwithſtanding this repulſe, the governor ſtill purſued the war; and the conteſt ſeemed too unequal between ſo mighty a monarchy, and two ſmall provinces, however fortified by nature, and however defended by the deſperate reſolution of the inhabitants. The prince of Orange, therefore, in 1575, was reſolved to ſue for foreign aſſiſtance, and to make applications to one or other of his great neighbours, Henry or Elizabeth. The court of France was not exempt from that ſpirit of tyrannny and perſecution which prevailed among the Spaniards; and that kingdom, torne by domeſtic diſſenſions, ſeemed not to enjoy, at preſent, either leiſure or ability to pay regard to foreign intereſts. But England, long connected both by commerce and alliance with the Netherlands, and now more concerned in the fate of the revolted provinces by a ſympathy in religion, ſeemed naturally intereſted in their defence; and as Elizabeth had juſtly entertained great jealouſy againſt Philip, and governed her powerful and opulent kingdom in perfect tranquillity, great hopes were entertained, that her policy, her ambition, or her generoſity, would engage her to ſupport them under their preſent calamities. They ſent, therefore, a ſolemn embaſſy to London, conſiſting of St. Aldegonde, Douza, Nivelle, Buys, and Melſen; and after employing the moſt humble ſupplicatonis to the Queen, they proferred her the poſſeſſion and ſovereignty of their provinces, if ſhe would employ her power in their defence.

THERE were many ſtrong motives which might impel Elizabeth to accept ſo liberal an offer. She was apprized of the injuries which Philip had done her, by his intrigues with the malecontents in England and Ireland [1]: She was diſpleaſed to ſee a violent and military government erected in her neighbourhood:

[1] Digge, p. 73.

She

She foreſaw the danger which ſhe ſhould incur from a total prevalence of the catholics in the Low Countries: And the maritime ſituation of thoſe provinces, as well as their command over the great rivers, was a very inviting circumſtance to a nation like the Engliſh, who were beginning to cultivate commerce and naval power. But this princeſs, tho' magnanimous, had never entertained the ambition of making conqueſts, or gaining new acquiſitions; and the whole purpoſe of her vigilant and active politics, was to maintain, by the moſt frugal and cautious expedients, the tranquillity of her own dominions. An open war with the Spaniſh monarchy was the apparent conſequence of her accepting the dominion of theſe provinces; and after taking the inhabitants under her protection, ſhe could never afterwards in honour abandon them, but, however deſperate their defence might become, ſhe muſt embrace it, even farther than her convenience or intereſt would permit. For theſe reaſons, ſhe refuſed, in plain terms, the ſovereignty profered her; but told the ambaſſadors, that, in return for the good-will which the prince of Orange and the States had ſhown her, ſhe would endeavour to mediate an agreement for them, on the moſt reaſonable conditions which could be obtained [m]. She ſent accordingly Sir Henry Cobham to Philip; and repreſented to him, the danger which he would incur of loſing all the Low-Countries, if France could obtain the leaſt interval from her inteſtine diſorders, and find leiſure to offer her protection to the mutinous and diſcontented inhabitants. Philip ſeemed to take this remonſtrance in good part; but no accord enſued, and the war continued with the ſame rage and violence as before.

CHAP. XI. 1579.

It was an accident that delivered the Hollanders from their preſent deſperate ſituation. Requeſens, the governor, dying ſuddenly, the Spaniſh troops, diſ-

[m] Camden, p. 453, 454.

CHAP. XL. 1579.

contented for want of pay, and licentious for want of a proper authority to commend them, broke out into a furious mutiny; and threw every thing into confuſion. They ſacked and pillaged the cities of Maeſtricht and Antwerp, and committed great ſlaughter on the inhabitants: They threatned all the other cities with a like fate: And all the provinces, excepting Luxembourg, united for mutual defence againſt their violence, and called in the prince of Orange and the Hollander, as their protectors. A treaty, commonly called the Pacification of Ghent, was formed by common agreement; where the removal of foreign troops, and the reſtoration of their ancient liberties, were the objects which the provinces ſtipulated to purſue. Don John of Auſtria, natural brother to Philip, being appointed governor, found, on his arrival at Luxembourg, that the States had ſo fortified themſelves, and that the Spaniſh troops were ſo divided by their ſituation, that there was no poſſibility of reſiſtance; and he agreed to the terms required of him. The Spaniards were recalled; and theſe provinces ſeemed at laſt to breathe a little from their calamities.

BUT it was not eaſy for an entire peace to be ſettled, while the thirſt of revenge and dominion governed the King of Spain, and while the Flemings were ſo ſtrongly agitated with reſentment of paſt, and fear of future injuries. The ambition of Don John, who coveted this great theatre for his military talents, engaged him rather to enflame than appeaſe the quarrel; and as he found the States determined to impoſe very ſtrict limitations on his authority, he broke all articles, ſeized Namur, and procured the recall of the Spaniſh army from Italy. This prince, endowed with a lofty genius, and animated by the proſperous ſucceſſes of his youth, had opened his mind to vaſt undertakings; and looking much beyond the conqueſt of the

CHAP. XL.

1579.

the revolted provinces, had projected to marry the Queen of Scots, and to acquire in her right the dominion of the British kingdoms [n]. Elizabeth was aware of his intentions; and seeing now, from the union of all the provinces, a fair prospect of making a long and vigorous defence against Spain, she no longer scrupled to embrace the protection of their liberties, which seemed to be so intimately connected with her own safety. After sending them a sum of money, about twenty thousand pounds, for the immediate pay of their troops, she concluded a treaty with them; in which she stipulated to assist them with five thousand foot and a thousand horse, at the charge of the Flemings; and to lend them a hundred thousand pounds, on receiving the bonds of some of the most considerable towns of the Netherlands, for her repayment within the year. It was farther agreed, that the commander of the English army, should be admitted into the council of the States; and nothing be determined concerning war or peace, without previously informing the Queen or him of it; that they should enter into no league without her consent; that if any discord arose among themselves, it should be referred to her arbitration; and that, if any prince, on any pretext, should attempt hostilities against her, they should send to her assistance an army equal to that which she had employed in their defence. This alliance was signed on the 7th of January, 1578 [o]. One considerable inducement to the Queen for entering into treaty with the States, was to prevent their throwing themselves into the arms of France; and she was desirous to make the King of Spain believe, that it was her sole motive. She represented to him, by her ambassador, Thomas Wilkes, that she had hitherto acted religiously the part of a good neighbour and ally; had refused the sovereignty of Holland and Zealand, when profered

[n] Camden, p. 466. Grotius, lib. iii. [o] Camden, p. 466.

CHAP. XL. 1579.

contented for want of pay, and licentious for want of a proper authority to commend them, broke out into a furious mutiny; and threw every thing into confuſion. They ſacked and pillaged the cities of Maeſtricht and Antwerp, and committed great ſlaughter on the inhabitants: They threatned all the other cities with a like fate: And all the provinces, excepting Luxembourg, united for mutual defence againſt their violence, and called in the prince of Orange and the Hollander, as their protectors. A treaty, commonly called the Pacification of Ghent, was formed by common agreement; where the removal of foreign troops, and the reſtoration of their ancient liberties, were the objects which the provinces ſtipulated to purſue. Don John of Auſtria, natural brother to Philip, being appointed governor, found, on his arrival at Luxembourg, that the States had ſo fortified themſelves, and that the Spaniſh troops were ſo divided by their ſituation, that there was no poſſibility of reſiſtance; and he agreed to the terms required of him. The Spaniards were recalled; and theſe provinces ſeemed at laſt to breathe a little from their calamities.

But it was not eaſy for an entire peace to be ſettled, while the thirſt of revenge and dominion governed the King of Spain, and while the Flemings were ſo ſtrongly agitated with reſentment of paſt, and fear of future injuries. The ambition of Don John, who coveted this great theatre for his military talents, engaged him rather to enflame than appeaſe the quarrel; and as he found the States determined to impoſe very ſtrict limitations on his authority, he broke all articles, ſeized Namur, and procured the recall of the Spaniſh army from Italy. This prince, endowed with a lofty genius, and animated by the proſperous ſucceſſes of his youth, had opened his mind to vaſt undertakings; and looking much beyond the conqueſt of the

CHAP. XL.

1579.

the revolted provinces, had projected to marry the Queen of Scots, and to acquire in her right the dominion of the Britiſh kingdoms [n]. Elizabeth was aware of his intentions; and ſeeing now, from the union of all the provinces, a fair proſpect of making a long and vigorous defence againſt Spain, ſhe no longer ſcrupled to embrace the protection of their liberties, which ſeemed to be ſo intimately connected with her own ſafety. After ſending them a ſum of money, about twenty thouſand pounds, for the immediate pay of their troops, ſhe concluded a treaty with them; in which ſhe ſtipulated to aſſiſt them with five thouſand foot and a thouſand horſe, at the charge of the Flemings; and to lend them a hundred thouſand pounds, on receiving the bonds of ſome of the moſt conſiderable towns of the Netherlands, for her repayment within the year. It was farther agreed, that the commander of the Engliſh army, ſhould be admitted into the council of the States; and nothing be determined concerning war or peace, without previouſly informing the Queen or him of it; that they ſhould enter into no league without her conſent; that if any diſcord aroſe among themſelves, it ſhould be referred to her arbitration; and that, if any prince, on any pretext, ſhould attempt hoſtilities againſt her, they ſhould ſend to her aſſiſtance an army equal to that which ſhe had employed in their defence. This alliance was ſigned on the 7th of January, 1578 [o]. One conſiderable inducement to the Queen for entering into treaty with the States, was to prevent their throwing themſelves into the arms of France; and ſhe was deſirous to make the King of Spain believe, that it was her ſole motive. She repreſented to him, by her ambaſſador, Thomas Wilkes, that ſhe had hitherto acted religiouſly the part of a good neighbour and ally; had refuſed the ſovereignty of Holland and Zealand, when profered

[n] Camden, p. 466. Grotius, lib. iii. [o] Camden, p. 466.

CHAP. XL. 1579.

her; had counſelled the prince of Orange to ſubmit to the King; and had even accompanied her advice with menaces, in caſe of his refuſal. She perſevered, ſhe ſaid, in the ſame friendly intentions; and, as a proof of it, would venture to interpoſe with her advice for the compoſure of the preſent differences: Let Don John, whom ſhe could not but regard as her mortal enemy, be recalled; let ſome other prince more popular be ſubſtituted in his place; let the Spaniſh armies be withdrawn; let the Flemings be reſtored to their ancient liberties and privileges: And if, after theſe conceſſions, they were ſtill obſtinate not to return to their duty, ſhe promiſed to join her arms to thoſe of the King of Spain, and force them to a compliance. Philip diſſembled his reſentment againſt the Queen; and ſtill continued to ſupply Don John with money and troops. That prince, tho' once repulſed at Rimenant, by the valour of the Engliſh under Norris, and tho' oppoſed, as well by the army of the States as by prince Caſimir, who had conducted to the Low Countries a great body of Germans, paid by the Queen, gained a great advantage over the Flemings at Gemblours; but was cut off in the midſt of his proſperity by poiſon, given him ſecretly, as was ſuſpected, by orders from Philip, who dreaded his ambition. The prince of Parma ſucceeded to the command, who uniting valour and clemency, negociation and military exploits, made great progreſs againſt the revolted Flemings, and advanced the progreſs of the Spaniards by his arts as well as by his arms.

DURING theſe years, while Europe was almoſt every where in great commotion, England enjoyed a profound tranquillity; owing chiefly to the prudence and vigour of the Queen's adminiſtration, and to the wiſe precautions which ſhe employed in all her meaſures. By ſupporting the zealous proteſtants in Scotland, ſhe had twice given them the ſuperiority over their antagoniſts,

gonists, had connected their interests closely with her own, and had procured herself entire security from that quarter, whence the most dangerous invasions could be made upon her. She saw in France her enemies, the Guises, tho' extremely powerful, yet counterballanced by the Hugonots, her zealous partizans; and even hated by the King, who was jealous of their restless and exorbitant ambition. The bigotry of Philip gave her just ground of anxiety; but the same bigotry had happily excited the most obstinate opposition among his own subjects, and had created him enemies, which his arms and policy were not likely soon to overcome. The Queen of Scots, her antagonist and rival, and the pretender to her throne, was a prisoner in her hands; and by her impatience and high spirit had been engaged in practices which afforded the Queen a pretence for rendring her confinement more rigorous, and for cutting off her communication with her partizans in England. Religion was the capital point, on which depended all the political transactions of that age; and the Queen's conduct in this particular, making allowance for the prevailing prejudices of the age, could scarcely be accused of severity or imprudence. She established no inquisition into men's bosoms; she imposed no oaths of supremacy, except on those who received trust or emolument from the public: And tho' the exercise of all religion but the established was prohibited, the violation of this law, by the saying mass, and receiving the sacrament, in private houses, was, in many instances, connived at [P]; while, at the same time, the catholics, in the beginning of her reign, shewed little reluctance against going to church, or frequenting the ordinary duties of public worship. The pope, sensible that this practice would by degrees reconcile all his partizans to the reformed

[P] Camden, p. 459.

CHAP. XL. 1579.

religion, haſtened the publication of the bull, excommunicating the Queen, and freeing her ſubjects from all oaths of allegiance; and great pains were taken by the emiſſaries of Rome, to render the breach between the two religions as wide as poſſible, and to make the frequenting proteſtant churches appear highly criminal to the catholics [q]. Theſe practices, with the rebellions, which enſued, increaſed the vigilance and ſeverity of the government; but the Romaniſts, if their condition was compared with that of the Nonconformiſts in other countries, and with their own practices where they domineered, could not juſtly complain much of violence or perſecution. The Queen appeared rather more anxious to keep a ſtrict hand over the puritans; who, tho' their pretenſions were not ſo immediately dangerous to her authority, ſeemed to be actuated by a more unreaſonable obſtinacy, and to retain claims, of which, both in civil and eccleſiaſtical matters, it was, as yet, difficult to diſcern the full ſcope and intention. Some ſecret attempts of that ſect to eſtabliſh a ſeparate congregation and diſcipline, had been carefully repreſſed in the beginning of this reign [r]; and when any of the eſtabliſhed clergy diſcovered a tendency to their principles, by omitting the legal habits or ceremonies, the Queen had ſhewn a determined reſolution to puniſh them by fines and deprivations [s]; tho' her orders to that purpoſe had, by the protection which theſe ſectaries received from ſome of the moſt conſiderable courtiers, been frequently eluded. But what chiefly tended to gain Elizabeth the hearts of her ſubjects, was, her frugality, which, tho' carried ſometimes to an extreme, led her not to amaſs treaſures, but only to prevent impoſitions upon the people, who

[q] Walſingham's Letter in Burnet, vol. II. 418. Cabbala, p. 406.
[r] Strype's Life of Parker, p. 342. Ibid. Life of Grindal, p. 315.
[s] Heylin, p. 165, 166.

were

were at that time very little accuſtomed to bear the burthens of government. By means of her rigid oeconomy, ſhe paid all the debts which ſhe found on the crown, with their full intereſt; tho' ſome of theſe debts had been contracted even during the reign of her father [t]. She repaid ſome loans, which ſhe had exacted at the commencement of her reign; a practice in that age ſomewhat unuſual [u]: And ſhe eſtabliſhed her credit on ſuch a footing, that no ſovereign in Europe could more readily command any ſum which the public exigences might at any time require [x]. During this peaceable and uniform government, England furniſhes few materials for hiſtory; and except the ſmall part which Elizabeth took in foreign tranſactions, there ſcarce paſſed any occurrence which requires a particular detail. CHAP. XL. 1579.

A Parliament.

THE moſt memorable event in this period was a ſeſſion of Parliament, ſummoned on the 8th of February, 1576, where debates were ſtarted, which may appear ſomewhat curious and ſingular. Peter Wentworth, a puritan, who had ſignalized himſelf in former Parliaments, by his free and undaunted ſpirit, opened this ſeſſion with a premeditated harangue, which drew on him the indignation of the houſe, and gave great offence to the Queen and the courtiers. As it ſeems to contain the firſt rude ſketch of thoſe principles of liberty which happily gained afterwards the aſcendant in England, it may not be improper to give, in a few words, the ſubſtance of it. He premiſed, that the very name of liberty is ſweet; but the thing itſelf is precious beyond the moſt ineſtimable treaſure: And that it behoved them to be careful, leſt, contenting themſelves with the ſweetneſs of the name, they forego the ſubſtance, and abandon what of all earthly poſſeſſions was of the higheſt value to the kingdom. He then proceeded to obſerve, that freedom of

[t] D'Ewes, p. 245, Camden, p. 446. [u] D'Ewes, p. 246.
[x] Ibid. p. 245.

CHAP. XL.

1579.

ſpeech in that houſe, a privilege ſo uſeful both to ſovereign and ſubject, had been formerly infringed in many eſſential articles, and was, at preſent, expoſed to the moſt imminent danger: That it was uſual, when any ſubject of importance was handled, eſpecially if it regarded religion, to ſurmize, that theſe topics were diſagreeable to the Queen, and that the farther proceeding in them would draw down her indignation upon their temerity: That Solomon had juſtly affirmed the King's diſpleaſure to be a meſſenger of death; and it was no wonder that men, even tho' urged by motives of conſcience and duty, ſhould be inclined to ſtop ſhort, when they found themſelves expoſed to ſo ſevere a penalty: That by employing this arguiment, the houſe was incapacitated from ſerving their country, or even from ſerving the Queen herſelf; whoſe ears, beſieged by pernicious flatterers, were thereby rendered inacceſſible to the moſt ſalutary truths: That it was a mockery to call an aſſembly a Parliament, and yet deny them that privilege, which was ſo eſſential to their being, and without which they muſt degenerate into an abject ſchool of ſervitude and diſſimulation: That as the Parliament was the great guardian of the laws, they ought to have liberty to diſcharge their truſt, and to maintain that authority whence even Kings themſelves derive their being: That a King was conſtituted ſuch by law, and tho' he was not dependant on man, yet was he ſubordinate to God and the law, and was obliged to make their preſcriptions, not his own will, the rule of his conduct: That even his commiſſion, as God's vicegerent, enforced, inſtead of looſening, this obligation; ſince he was thereby inveſted with authority to execute on earth the will of God, which is nothing but law and juſtice: That tho' theſe ſurmizes of diſpleaſing the Queen by their proceedings, had impeached, in a very eſſential point, all freedom of ſpeech, a privilege granted them

1579.

by a ſpecial law; yet was there a more expreſs and more dangerous invaſion made on their liberties, by frequent meſſages from the throne: That it had become a practice, when the houſe were entering on any queſtion, either eccleſiaſtical or civil, to bring an order from the Queen, inhibiting them abſolutely to treat of ſuch matters, and barring them all farther diſcuſſion of theſe momentuous articles: That the prelates, emboldened by her royal protection, had aſſumed a deciſive power in all queſtions of religion, and required that every one ſhould implicitly ſubmit his faith to their arbitrary determinations: That the love which he bore his ſovereign, forbad him to be ſilent under ſuch abuſes, or to ſacrifice, on this important occaſion, his duty to ſervile flattery and complaiſance: And that, as no earthly creature was exempt from fault, ſo neither was the Queen herſelf; but in impoſing this ſervitude on her faithful commons, had committed a great, and even dangerous, fault againſt herſelf and the whole realm [y].

It is eaſy to obſerve, from this ſpeech, that in theſe dawnings of liberty, the parliamentary ſtile was ſtill crude and unformed; and that the proper decorum of attacking miniſters and counſellors, without intereſting the honour of the crown, or mentioning the perſon of the ſovereign, was not as yet entirely eſtabliſhed. The commons expreſſed great diſpleaſure at this unuſual licence: They ſequeſtered Wentworth from the houſe, and committed him priſoner to the ſerjeant at arms. They even ordered him to be examined by a committee, conſiſting of all thoſe members who were alſo members of the privy-council, and a report to be made next day to the houſe. This committee met in the Star-chamber, and wearing the aſpect of that arbitrary court, ſummoned Wentworth to appear before them, and anſwer for his behaviour. But tho'

[y] D'Ewes, p. 236, 237, &c.

CHAP. XL.

1579.

the commons had discovered so little delicacy or precaution, in thus confounding their own authority with that of the Star-chamber; Wentworth understood better the principles of liberty, and refused to give these counsellors any account of his conduct in Parliament, till he was satisfied that they acted not as members of the privy-council, but as a committee of the house [z]. He justified himself by pleading the rigour and hardship of the Queen's messages; and notwithstanding that the committee shewed him, by instances in other reigns, that the practice of sending such messages was not unprecedented, he would not agree to express any sorrow or repentance. The issue of the affair was, that, after a month's confinement, the Queen sent to the commons, informing them, that, from her special grace and favour, she had restored him to his liberty and to his place in the house [a]. By this seeming lenity, she indirectly retained the power which she had assumed, of imprisoning the members, and obliging them to answer before her for their conduct in Parliament. And Sir Walter Mildmay endeavoured to make the house sensible of her Majesty's goodness, in so gently remitting the indignation which she might justly conceive at the temerity of their member: But he informed them, that they had not the liberty of speaking what and of whom they pleased; and that indiscreet freedoms used in that house, had, both in the present and foregoing ages, met with a proper punishment. He warned them, therefore, not to abuse farther the Queen's clemency; lest she be constrained, contrary to her inclination, to turn an unsuccessful lenity into a necessary severity [b].

THE behaviour of the two houses was, in other respects, equally tame and submissive. Instead of a bill, which was at first introduced [c], for the reformation of

[z] D'Ewes. p. 241. [a] Ibid. p. 244. [b] Ibid. p. 259.
[c] Ibid. p. 252.

the

the church, they were contented to preſent a petition to her majeſty for that purpoſe: And when ſhe told them, that ſhe would give orders to her biſhops, to amend all abuſes, and if they were negligent, ſhe would herſelf, by her ſupreme power and authority over the church, give ſuch redreſs as would entirely ſatisfy the nation; the Parliament willingly acquieſced in this ſovereign and peremptory deciſion [d].

THO' the commons ſhewed ſo little ſpirit in oppoſing the authority of the crown, they maintained, this ſeſſion, their dignity againſt an incroachment of the lords, and would not agree to a conference which, they thought, was deſired of them in an irregular manner. They acknowleged, however, with all humbleneſs, (ſuch was their expreſſion) the ſuperiority of the lords: They only refuſed to give that houſe any reaſon for their proceedings; and aſſerted, that where they altered a bill ſent them by the peers, it belonged to them to deſire a conference, not to the upper houſe to require it [e].

THE commons granted an aid of one ſubſidy and two fifteenths. Mildmay, in order to ſatisfy the houſe concerning the reaſonableneſs of this grant, entered into a detail of the Queen's paſt expences in ſupporting the government, and of the increaſing charges of the crown, from the daily increaſe in the price of all commodities. He did not, however, forget to admoniſh them, that they were to regard this detail as the pure effect of the Queen's condeſcenſion, ſince ſhe was not bound to yield them any account how ſhe employed her treaſure [f].

[d] Ibid. p. 257. [e] Ibid. p. 263. [f] Ibid. p. 246.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI.

Scots affairs.—Spaniſh affairs.—Sir Francis Drake.—A Parliament.—Negociations of marriage with the duke of Anjou.—Scots affairs.—Letter of Queen Mary to Elizabeth.—Conſpiracies in England.—A Parliament.—The eccleſiaſtical commiſſion.—Affairs of the Low Countries.—Hoſtilities with Spain.

1580. THE greateſt and moſt abſolute ſecurity which Elizabeth enjoyed during her whole reign, never exempted her from vigilance and attention; but the ſcene began now to be more overcaſt, and dangers gradually multiplied on her from more than one quarter.

Scots affairs. THE earl of Morton had hitherto retained Scotland in ſtrict alliance with the Queen, and had alſo reſtored domeſtic tranquillity: But it was not likely, that the factitious and legal authority of a regent would long maintain itſelf in a country unacquainted with law and order; where even the natural dominion of hereditary princes ſo often met with oppoſition and controul. The nobility began anew to break into factions: The people were diſguſted with ſome inſtances which appeared of Morton's avarice: And the clergy, who complained of farther incroachments on their narrow revenue, joined and increaſed the diſcontent of the other orders. The regent was ſenſible of his dangerous ſituation; and having dropt ſome peeviſh expreſſions, as if he were willing or deſirous to reſign the government, the noblemen of the oppoſite party, favourites of the young King, laid hold of this conceſſion, and required that demiſſion which he ſeemed ſo frankly to offer them. James was at this time but eleven years of age; yet Morton, having ſecured himſelf, as he imagined, by a general pardon, reſigned his authority into the

the hands of the King, who pretended to conduct, in his own name, the adminiſtration of the kingdom. The regent retired from the government, and ſeemed to employ himſelf entirely in the care of his domeſtic affairs; but either tired with this tranquillity, which appeared inſipid after the agitations of ambition, or thinking it time to throw off diſſimulation, he returned again to court, acquired an aſcendant in the council; and tho' he reſumed not the title of regent, governed with the ſame authority as before. The oppoſite party, after holding ſeparate conventions, took to arms, on pretence of delivering their prince from captivity, and reſtoring him to the free exerciſe of his government: Queen Elizabeth interpoſed by her ambaſſador, Sir Robert Bowes, and mediated an agreement between the factions: Morton kept poſſeſſion of the government; but his enemies were numerous and vigilant, and his authority ſeemed to become every day more precarious. CHAP. XLI. 1580.

THE count d' Aubigney, of the houſe of Lenox, couſin-german to the King's father, had been born and educated in France; and being a young nobleman of a good addreſs, and a ſweet diſpoſition, he appeared to the duke of Guiſe a very proper inſtrument for detaching James from the Engliſh intereſt, and connecting him with his mother and her relations. He no ſooner appeared at Stirling, where James reſided, than he acquired the affections of the young monarch; and joining his intereſts with James Stuart of the houſe of Ochiltree, a young man of profligate manners, who had acquired the King's favour, he employed himſelf, under the appearance of play and amuſement, in inſtilling into the tender mind of the prince new ſentiments of politics and government. He repreſented to him the injuſtice which had been done Mary in her depoſition, and made him entertain thoughts, either of reſigning the crown into her hands, or of aſſociating her with

CHAP. XLI.

1580.

with him in the adminiſtration[g]. Elizabeth, alarmed with the danger which might enſue from the prevalence of this intereſt in Scotland, ſent anew Sir Robert Bowes to Stirling; and accuſing Aubigney, now created earl of Lenox, of an attachment to the French, warned James againſt entertaining ſuch ſuſpicious and dangerous connections[h]. The King excuſed himſelf, by Alexander Hume his ambaſſador; and Lenox, finding that the Queen had openly declared againſt him, was farther confirmed in his intention of overturning the Engliſh intereſt, and particularly of ruining Morton, who was regarded as the head of it. That nobleman was arreſted in council, accuſed as an accomplice in the late King's murder, committed to priſon, brought to trial, and condemned to ſuffer as a traitor. He confeſſed, that Bothwel had communicated to him the deſign, had pleaded Mary's aſſent, and had deſired his concurrence; but he denied, that he had ever given his approbation to that crime; and in excuſe for his concealment, alledged the danger of revealing it, either to Henry, who had no reſolution nor conſtancy, or to Mary, who appeared to be an accomplice in the murder[i]. Sir Thomas Randolph was ſent by the Queen to intercede in favour of Morton; and that ambaſſador, not content with diſcharging this duty of his function, engaged, by his perſuaſion, the earls of Argyle, Montroſe, Angus, Marre, and Glencarne, to enter into a confederacy for protecting, even by force of arms, the life of the priſoner. The more to overawe that nobleman's enemies, Elizabeth ordered forces to be aſſembled on the borders of England; but this expedient ſerved only to haſten his ſentence and execution[k]. Morton died with that conſtancy and reſolution which had attended him thro' all the various events of his life; and left a reputation, which was leſs diſput-

g Digges, p. 412, 428. Melvil, p. 130.
h Spotſwood, p. 309.
i Ibid. p. 314. Crawford, p. 333. Moyſe's Memoirs, p. 54.
k Spotſwood, p. 312.

ed

CHAP. XLI.

1580.

ed with regard to ability than probity and virtue. But this concluſion of the ſcene happened not till the ſubſequent year.

Spaniſh affairs.

ELIZABETH was at this time extremely anxious on account of every revolution in Scotland; becauſe that country alone, not being ſeparated from England by ſea, and bordering on all the catholic and malecontent counties, afforded her enemies a ſafe and eaſy method of attacking her; and becauſe ſhe was ſenſible, that Mary, thinking herſelf abandoned by the French monarch, had been engaged by the Guiſes to have recourſe to the powerful protection of Philip, who, tho' he had not yet come to an open rupture with the Queen, was every day, both by the injuries which he committed and received, more exaſperated againſt her. That he might retaliate for the aſſiſtance which ſhe gave to his rebels in the Low Countries, he had ſent under the name of the pope [l], a body of ſeven hundred Spaniards and Italians into Ireland; where the inhabitants, always turbulent, and diſcontented with the Engliſh government, were now more alienated by religious prejudices, and were ready to join every invader. The Spaniſh general, San Joſepho, built a fort in Kerry; and being there beſieged by the earl of Ormond, preſident of Munſter, who was ſoon after joined by lord Gray, the deputy, he made a very weak and cowardly reſiſtance. After ſome aſſaults, feebly ſuſtained, he ſurrendered at diſcretion; and Gray, who was attended with a very ſmall force, finding himſelf embarraſſed with ſo many priſoners, put all the Spaniards and Italians to the ſword without mercy, and hanged about fifteen hundred Iriſh: A cruelty which gave great diſpleaſure to Elizabeth [m].

Sir Francis Drake.

WHEN the Engliſh ambaſſador made complaints of this invaſion, he was anſwered by like complaints of the pyracies committed by Francis Drake, a bold ſea-

[l] Digges, p. 359, 370. [m] Camden, p. 475. Cox's Hiſtory of Ireland, p. 368.

CHAP. XLI.

1580.

with him in the adminiſtration[g]. Elizabeth, alarmed with the danger which might enſue from the prevalence of this intereſt in Scotland, ſent anew Sir Robert Bowes to Stirling; and accuſing Aubigney, now created earl of Lenox, of an attachment to the French, warned James againſt entertaining ſuch ſuſpicious and dangerous connections[h]. The King excuſed himſelf, by Alexander Hume his ambaſſador; and Lenox, finding that the Queen had openly declared againſt him, was farther confirmed in his intention of overturning the Engliſh intereſt, and particularly of ruining Morton, who was regarded as the head of it. That nobleman was arreſted in council, accuſed as an accomplice in the late King's murder, committed to priſon, brought to trial, and condemned to ſuffer as a traitor. He confeſſed, that Bothwel had communicated to him the deſign, had pleaded Mary's aſſent, and had deſired his concurrence; but he denied, that he had ever given his approbation to that crime; and in excuſe for his concealment, alledged the danger of revealing it, either to Henry, who had no reſolution nor conſtancy, or to Mary, who appeared to be an accomplice in the murder[i]. Sir Thomas Randolph was ſent by the Queen to intercede in favour of Morton; and that ambaſſador, not content with diſcharging this duty of his function, engaged, by his perſuaſion, the earls of Argyle, Montroſe, Angus, Marre, and Glencarne, to enter into a confederacy for protecting, even by force of arms, the life of the priſoner. The more to overawe that nobleman's enemies, Elizabeth ordered forces to be aſſembled on the borders of England; but this expedient ſerved only to haſten his ſentence and execution[k]. Morton died with that conſtancy and reſolution which had attended him thro' all the various events of his life; and left a reputation, which was leſs diſput-

g Digges, p. 412, 428. Melvil, p. 130. h Spotſwood, p. 309.
i Ibid. p. 314. Crawford, p. 333. Moyſe's Memoirs, p. 54.
k Spotſwood, p. 312.

ed

1580.

ed with regard to ability than probity and virtue. But this concluſion of the ſcene happened not till the ſubſequent year.

Spaniſh affairs.

ELIZABETH was at this time extremely anxious on account of every revolution in Scotland; becauſe that country alone, not being ſeparated from England by ſea, and bordering on all the catholic and malecontent counties, afforded her enemies a ſafe and eaſy method of attacking her; and becauſe ſhe was ſenſible, that Mary, thinking herſelf abandoned by the French monarch, had been engaged by the Guiſes to have recourſe to the powerful protection of Philip, who, tho' he had not yet come to an open rupture with the Queen, was every day, both by the injuries which he committed and received, more exaſperated againſt her. That he might retaliate for the aſſiſtance which ſhe gave to his rebels in the Low Countries, he had ſent under the name of the pope[l], a body of ſeven hundred Spaniards and Italians into Ireland; where the inhabitants, always turbulent, and diſcontented with the Engliſh government, were now more alienated by religious prejudices, and were ready to join every invader. The Spaniſh general, San Joſepho, built a fort in Kerry; and being there beſieged by the earl of Ormond, preſident of Munſter, who was ſoon after joined by lord Gray, the deputy, he made a very weak and cowardly reſiſtance. After ſome aſſaults, feebly ſuſtained, he ſurrendered at diſcretion; and Gray, who was attended with a very ſmall force, finding himſelf embarraſſed with ſo many priſoners, put all the Spaniards and Italians to the ſword without mercy, and hanged about fifteen hundred Iriſh: A cruelty which gave great diſpleaſure to Elizabeth[m].

Sir Francis Drake.

WHEN the Engliſh ambaſſador made complaints of this invaſion, he was anſwered by like complaints of the pyracies committed by Francis Drake, a bold ſea-

[l] Digges, p. 359, 370. [m] Camden, p. 475. Cox's Hiſtory of Ireland, p. 368.

CHAP. XLI.

1580.

man, who had assaulted the Spaniards in the place where they deemed themselves the most secure, in the new world. This man, sprung from mean parents in the county of Devon, having acquired considerable riches by some depredations made on the Spaniards in the isthmus of Panama, and having there got a sight of the Pacific ocean, was so stimulated by ambition and avarice, that he scrupled not to employ his whole fortune in a new adventure thro' those seas, so much unknown at that time to all the European nations[n]. By means of Sir Christopher Hatton, then vice chamberlain, a great favourite of the Queen, he obtained her consent and approbation; and set sail from Plymouth in 1577, with four ships and a pinnace, on board of which were 164 able sailors[o]. He passed into the South Sea by the Straits of Magellan, and falling on the Spaniards, who expected no enemy in these quarters, he took many rich prizes, and prepared to return with the immense booty, which he had acquired. Apprehensive of being intercepted by the enemy, if he took the same way homewards, by which he had reached the Pacific Ocean, he attempted to find a passage by the north of California; and failing in that enterprize, he set sail for the East Indies, and returned safely this year by the Cape of Good Hope. He was the first Englishman who sailed round the Globe; and the first commander in chief: For Magellan, whose ship executed the same adventure, died in his passage. His name became very celebrated on account of so bold and fortunate an attempt; but many, apprehending the resentment of the Spaniards, endeavoured to persuade the Queen, that it would be more prudent to disown the enterprize, to punish Drake, and to restore the treasure. But Elizabeth, who admired valour, and who was allured by the pro-

n Camden, p. 478. Stow, p. 689. Hakluyt's Voyages, vol. III. p. 730, 748.

o Camden, p. 478. Purchas's Pilgrim, vol. I. p. 46.

spect

ſpect of ſharing in the riches, determined to countenance that gallant ſailor: She conferred on him the honour of knighthood, and accepted of a banquet from him at Deptford, on board the ſhip which had atchieved ſo memorable a voyage. When Philip's ambaſſador, Mendoza, exclaimed againſt Drake's pyracies, ſhe told him, that the Spaniards, by arrogating a right to the whole new world, and excluding thence all other European nations, who ſhould ſail thither, even with a view of exerciſing the moſt lawful commerce, very naturally tempted others to make a violent irruption into theſe countries[p]. To pacify, however, the Spaniſh monarch, ſhe cauſed part of the booty to be reſtored to Pedro Sebura, a Spaniard, who pretended to be agent for the merchants, whom Drake had ſpoiled. Having learned afterwards, that Philip had ſeized the money, and had employed part of it againſt herſelf in Ireland, part of it in the pay of the prince of Parma's troops, ſhe determined to make no more reſtitutions.

CHAP. XLI.

1580.

1581.

THERE was another cauſe, which induced the Queen to take this reſolution: She was in ſuch want of money, that ſhe was obliged to aſſemble a Parliament; a meaſure, which as ſhe herſelf openly declared, ſhe never embraced, except when obliged by the neceſſity of her affairs. The Parliament, beſides granting her a ſupply of one ſubſidy and two fifteenths, enacted ſome ſtatutes for the ſecurity of the government, chiefly againſt the attempts of the catholics. Whoever, in any way, reconciled any one to the church of Rome, or was himſelf reconciled, was declared to be guilty of treaſon: To ſay maſs was ſubjected to the penalty of a year's impriſonment, and a fine of two hundred merks; the hearing it was puniſhable by a year's impriſonment and a fine of an hundred merks: A fine of twenty

16th January. A Parliament.

[p] Camden, p. 480.

pounds

CHAP. XLI.

1581.

pounds a month was impoſed on every one who continued, during that time, abſent from church [q]. To utter ſlanderous or ſeditious words againſt the Queen was puniſhable, for the firſt offence, with the pillory and loſs of ears; the ſecond offence was declared felony: The writing or printing ſuch words was felony even on the firſt offence [r]. The puritans prevailed to have farther application made for reformation in religion [s]: Paul Wentworth, brother to the member of that name, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the preceding ſeſſion, moved, that the commons, from their own authority, ſhould appoint a general faſt and prayers; and the commons, raſhly aſſented to his motion. For this preſumption, they were ſeverely reprimanded by a meſſage from the Queen, as encroaching on the royal prerogative and ſupremacy; and they were obliged to ſubmit, and aſk forgiveneſs [t].

THE Queen and Parliament were engaged to paſs theſe ſevere laws againſt the catholics, by ſome late diſcoveries, which had been made of the treaſonable practices of the Romiſh prieſts. When the worſhip of the catholics was ſuppreſſed, and the reformation introduced into the univerſities, the King of Spain reflected, that as ſome ſpecies of literature was requiſite for the ſupport of theſe doctrines and controverſies, the Romiſh communion muſt totally decay in England, if no means were found to give erudition to the eccleſiaſtics; and for this reaſon, he founded a ſeminary at Doüay, where the catholics ſent their children, chiefly thoſe intended for the prieſthood, in order to receive the rudiments of their education. The cardinal of Lorraine imitated this example by erecting a like ſeminary in his dioceſe of Rheims; and tho' Rome was ſomewhat diſtant, the pope would not neglect to adorn, with a foundation of the ſame nature,

[q] 23 Eliz. cap. 1. [r] Ibid. c. 2. [s] D'Ewes, p. 302.
[t] Ibid. p. 284, 285.

that

1581.

that capital of orthodoxy. These seminaries, founded with this hostile intention, sent over every year a colony of priests, who maintained the catholic superstition in the full height of its bigotry; and being educated with a view to the crown of martyrdom, were not deterred, either by danger or fatigue, from maintaining and propagating their principles. They infused into all their votaries an extreme hatred against the Queen; whom they treated as an usurper, a schismatic, a heretic, a persecutor of the orthodox, and one solemnly and publickly anathematized by the holy father. Sedition, rebellion, and even sometimes assassination, were the expedients, by which they proposed to effectuate their purposes against her; and the severe restraint, not to say persecution, under which the catholics laboured, made them the more willingly receive, from their ghostly fathers, such violent doctrines.

These seminaries were all of them under the direction of the jesuits, a new order of regular priests erected in Europe; when the court of Rome perceived, that the lazy monks and beggarly friars, who sufficed in times of ignorance, were no longer able to defend the ramparts of the church, assailed on every side, and that the inquisitive spirit of the age required a society more active and more learned, to oppose its dangerous progress. These men, as they stood foremost in the contest against the protestants, drew on them the extreme animosity of that whole sect; and by assuming a superiority over the other more numerous and and more antient orders of their own communion, were even exposed to the envy of their brethren: So that it is no wonder, if the blame to which their principles and conduct might be exposed, has, in many instances, been much exaggerated. This reproach, however, they must bear from posterity, that, by the very nature of their institution, they were en-

CHAP. XLI. 1581.

gaged to pervert learning, the only effectual remedy againſt ſuperſtition, into a nouriſhment of that infirmity; and as their erudition was chiefly of the eccleſiaſtical and ſcholaſtic kind (tho' a few members have cultivated polite literature) they were only the more enabled, by that acquiſition, to refine away the plaineſt dictates of morality, and to erect a regular ſyſtem of caſuiſtry, by which prevarication, perjury, and every crime, where it ſerved their ghoſtly purpoſes, might be juſtified and defended.

The jeſuits, as devoted ſervants to the court of Rome exalted the prerogative of the ſovereign pontiff above all earthly power; and by maintaining his authority of depoſing Kings, ſet no bounds, either to his ſpiritual or temporal juriſdiction. This doctrine became ſo prevalent among the zealous catholics in England, that the excommunication, fulminated againſt Elizabeth, excited many ſcruples of a ſingular kind, to which it behoved the holy father to provide a remedy. The bull of Pius, in abſolving the ſubjects from their oaths of allegiance, required them to reſiſt the Queen's uſurpation; and many Romaniſts were apprehenſive, that, by this clauſe, they were obliged in conſcience, even tho' no favourable opportunity offered, to rebel againſt her, and that no dangers nor difficulties could free them from this indiſpenſable duty. But Parſons and Campian, two jeſuits, were ſent over with a mitigation and explanation of the doctrine; and they taught their votaries, that, tho' the bull was for ever binding on Elizabeth and her partizans, it did not oblige the catholics to obedience, except when the ſovereign pontiff ſhould think proper, by a new ſummons, to require it [u]. Campian was afterwards detected in treaſonable practices; and being put to the rack, and confeſſing his guilt, he was publickly executed. His execution was ordered at the very time, when the duke

[u] Camden, p. 477.

of

1581.

of Anjou was in England, and profecuted with the greateſt appearance of ſucceſs his marriage with the Queen; and this ſeverity was probably intended to appeaſe her proteſtant ſubjects, and to ſatisfy them, that, whatever meaſures ſhe might purſue, ſhe never would depart from the principles of the reformation.

WHILE hoſtilities were daily multiplying between Spain and England, and while Elizabeth knew, that Philip, from reſentment, from bigotry, and from intereſt, was ſtrongly, tho' ſecretly, induced to effect her ruin, ſhe ſaw the neceſſity of ſecuring herſelf againſt the efforts of ſo powerful and politic a monarch. The obſtinate reſiſtance of the ſtates in the Netherlands gave her hopes, that his force and treaſure would be waſted in ſubduing theſe provinces; but the admirable conduct and rapid progreſs of the prince of Parma ſtruck her with apprehenſions; and as the acquiſition, which Philip, about this time, made of Portugal, brought him a great acceſſion of riches and naval power, the expediency of ſeeking the protection of ſome powerful alliance became every day the more apparent. The animoſity, which ſtill encreaſed between the French monarch and the duke of Guiſe, and the confederacy, which the latter prince had ſecretly formed with Philip, opened the proſpect of a cloſe alliance between the ſovereigns of France and England; and the general apprehenſions, entertained by all Europe of the Spaniſh power, ſeemed to require ſome general union for reſiſting its farther progreſs.

Negotiations of marriage with the duke of Anjou.

THE duke of Alençon, now created duke of Anjou, had never entirely dropped his pretenſions to eſpouſe Elizabeth; and that princeſs, tho' her ſuitor was near twenty-five years younger than herſelf, and had no knowlege of her perſon but by pictures or deſcriptions, was ſtill pleaſed with the counterfeit image, which his addreſſes afforded her of love and tenderneſs. The duke, in order to forward his ſuit, beſides employing

CHAP. XLI.

1581.

his brother's ambaſſador, ſent over Simier, an agent of his own; an artful man, of an agreeable converſation, who, ſoon remarking the Queen's humour, amuſed her with gay diſcourſe, and inſtead of ſerious political reaſonings, which, he found, only awakened her ambition, and hurt his maſter's intereſts, introduced every moment all the topics of paſſion and of gallantry. The pleaſure, which ſhe found in this man's ſociety, ſoon produced a great familiarity between them; and amidſt the greateſt hurry of buſineſs, her wiſeſt miniſters had not ſuch ready acceſs to her perſon, as had Simier, who, on pretence of negotiation, entertained her with accounts of the tender attachment borne her by the duke of Anjou. The earl of Leiceſter, who had never before been alarmed with any courtſhip made to her, and who always truſted that her love of dominion would prevail over her inclination to marriage, began to apprend, that ſhe was at laſt caught in her own ſnare, and that the artful encouragement, which ſhe had given to this young ſuitor, had unawares engaged her affections. To render Simier odious, he availed himſelf of the credulity of the times, and ſpread reports, that that miniſter had gained an aſcendant over the Queen, not by any natural principles of her conſtitution, but by incantations and love potions. Simier, in revenge, endeavoured to diſcredit Leiceſter, and revealed to her a ſecret which none of her courtiers dared to diſcover, that this nobleman was ſecretly, without her conſent, married to the widow of the earl of Eſſex; an action, which the Queen interpreted either to proceed from want of reſpect to her, or as a violation of their mutual attachment; and which ſo provoked her, that ſhe threatned to ſend him priſoner to the Tower [x]. The quarrel went ſo far between Leiceſter and the French agent, that the former was ſuſpected of having

[x] Camden, p. 471.

employed

employed one Tudor, a bravo, to take away the life of his enemy; and the Queen thought it neceſſary, by proclamation, to take Simier under her own protection. It happened, that while the Queen was rowed in her barge on the Thames, attended by Simier, and ſome of her courtiers, a ſhot was fired which wounded one of her bargemen; but Elizabeth finding, upon enquiry, that the piece had been diſcharged by accident, gave the perſon his liberty, without farther puniſhment. So far was ſhe from entertaining any ſuſpicion againſt her people, that ſhe was many times heard to ſay, "That ſhe would lend credit to nothing "againſt them, which parents would not believe of "their own children [y]."

CHAP. XLI. 1581.

THE duke of Anjou, encouraged by the accounts, which he received of the Queen's prepoſſeſſions in his favour, paid her ſecretly a viſit at Greenwich; and after ſome conference with her, the purport of which is not known, he departed. It appeared, that, tho' his figure was not advantageous, he had loſt no ground by being perſonally known to her; and ſoon after, ſhe commanded Burleigh, now treaſurer, Suſſex, Leiceſter, Bedford, Lincoln, Hatton, and ſecretary Walſingham, to concert with the French ambaſſadors the terms of the intended contract. Henry had ſent over on this occaſion a very ſplendid embaſſy to England, conſiſting of Francis de Bourbon, prince of Dauphiny, and many conſiderable noblemen; and as the Queen had in a manner the power of preſcribing what terms ſhe pleaſed, the articles were ſoon ſettled with the Engliſh commiſſioners. It was agreed, that the marriage ſhould be celebrated within ſix weeks after the ratification of the articles; that the duke and his retinue ſhould have the exerciſe of their religion; that after the marriage he ſhould bear the title of King, but the adminiſtration ſhould remain ſolely in the Queen; that their children,

[y] Camden, p. 471.

CHAP. XLI. 1581.

male or female, ſhould ſucceed to the crown of England; that if there be two males, the eldeſt, in caſe of Henry's death without iſſue, ſhould be King of France, the younger of England; that if there be but one male, and he ſucceed to the crown of France, he ſhould be obliged to reſide in England eight months every two years; that the laws and cuſtoms of England ſhould be preſerved inviolate; and that no foreigner ſhould be promoted by the duke to any office in England [z]. Theſe articles, providing for the ſecurity of England, in caſe of its annexation to the crown of France, opened but a diſmal proſpect to the Engliſh; had not the age of the Queen, who was now in her forty-ninth year, contributed very much to allay their apprehenſions of this nature. The Queen alſo, as a proof of her ſtill remaining uncertainty, added a clauſe, that ſhe was not bound to compleat the marriage, till farther articles, which were not ſpecified, ſhall be agreed on between the parties, and till the King of France be certified of their agreement. Soon after the Queen ſent over Walſingham, as ambaſſador to France, in order to form cloſer connexions with Henry, and enter into a league offenſive and defenſive againſt the encreaſing power and dangerous uſurpations of Spain. The French King, who had been extremely diſturbed with the unquiet ſpirit, the reſtleſs ambition, the enterprizing, and yet timid and inconſtant diſpoſition of Anjou, had already ſought to free the kingdom from his intrigues, by opening a ſcene for his activity in Flanders; and having allowed him to embrace the protection of the ſtates, had ſecretly ſupplied him with men and money for that undertaking. The proſpect of ſettling him in England was for a like reaſon very agreeable to that monarch; and he was deſirous to cultivate, by every expedient, the favourable ſentiments, which Elizabeth ſeemed to entertain towards them.

[z] Camden, p. 484.

But

CHAP. XLI.

1581.

But this princeſs, tho' ſhe had gone farther in her amorous dalliance [a] than could be juſtified or accounted for by any principles of policy, was not yet determined to bring matters to a final concluſion; and ſhe confined Walſingham, in his inſtructions, to the negotiating conditions of a mutual alliance between France and England [b]. Henry with reluctance ſubmitted to hold conferences on that ſubject; but no ſooner had Walſingham begun to ſettle the conditions of alliance, than he was informed, that the Queen, foreſeeing hoſtility with Spain to be the reſult of this confederacy, had declared, that ſhe would prefer the marriage with the war, before the war without the marriage [c]. The French court, pleaſed with this change of reſolution, broke off the conferences concerning the league, and opened a negotiation for the marriage [d]. But matters had not long proceeded in this train, before the Queen again declared for the league in preference to the marriage, and ordered Walſingham to renew the conferences for that purpoſe. Before he had leizure to bring this point to maturity, he was interrupted by a new change of reſolution [e]; and not only the court of France, but Walſingham himſelf, Burleigh, and all the wiſeſt miniſters of Elizabeth, were in amaze, doubtful where this conteſt between inclination and reaſon, love and ambition, would at laſt terminate.

In the courſe of this affair, Elizabeth felt another variety of intentions, from a new conteſt between her reaſon and her ruling paſſions. The duke of Anjou expected ſome aſſiſtance of money, by which he might be enabled to open the campaign in Flanders; and the Queen herſelf, tho' her frugality made her long reluctant, was ſenſible that this ſupply was neceſſary; and ſhe was at laſt induced, after much heſitation, to com-

[a] Digges, p. 387, 396, 408, 426. [b] Ibid. p. 352.
[c] Ibid. p. 375, 391. [d] Ibid. p. 392. [e] Ibid. p. 408, 414.

CHAP. XLI.

1581.

ply with his requeſt[f]. She ſent him a preſent of an hundred thouſand crowns; by which, joined to his own demeſnes and the aſſiſtance of his brother and the Queen dowager, he levied an army, and took the field againſt the prince of Parma. He was ſucceſsful in raiſing the ſiege of Cambray; and being choſen by the ſtates governor of the Netherlands, he put his army into winter quarters, and came over to England, in order to proſecute his ſuit to the Queen. The reception, which he met with, made him lay his account with entire ſucceſs, and gave him certain hopes, that Elizabeth had ſurmounted all ſcruples, and was finally determined to make choice of him for her huſband. In the midſt of the pomp, which attended the anniverſary of her coronation, ſhe was ſeen, after long and intimate diſcourſe with him, to take a ring from her own finger, and to put it upon his; and all the ſpectators concluded, that, in this ceremony, ſhe had given him a promiſe of marriage, and was even deſirous of ſignifying her intention to all the world. St. Aldegonde, ambaſſador from the ſtates, diſpatched immediately a letter to his maſters, informing them of this great event; and the inhabitants of Antwerp, who, as well as the other Flemings, regarded the Queen as a kind of tutelar divinity, teſtified their joy by bonefires and the diſcharge of their great ordnance[g]. A puritan of Lincoln's Inn had wrote a paſſionate book, which he intituled, "The Gulph in which England will be ſwallowed by the French Marriage." He was apprehended and proſecuted by order of the Queen, and was condemned to loſe his right hand as a libeller. Such was the conſtancy and loyalty of the man, that, immediately after the ſentence was executed, he took off his hat with his other hand, and waving it over his head, cried "God ſave the Queen."

7th November.

BUT notwithſtanding this attachment, which Eliza-

[f] Digges, p. 357, 387, 388, 409, 426, 439. Rymer, XV. p. 793.
[g] Camden, p. 486. Thuan. lib. 74.

beth

beth ſo openly diſcovered to the duke of Anjou, the combat of her ſentiments was not entirely over; and her ambition, as well as prudence, rouſing itſelf by intervals, ſtill filled her breaſt with doubt and heſitation. Almoſt all the courtiers, whom ſhe truſted and favoured, Leiceſter, Hatton, and Walſingham, diſcovered an extreme averſion to the marriage; and the ladies of her bed-chamber made no ſcruple of oppoſing her reſolution with the moſt zealous remonſtrances [h]. Among other enemies to the match, Sir Philip Sidney, ſon to Sir Henry Sidney, lord deputy of Ireland, and nephew to Leiceſter; a young man the moſt accompliſhed of that age; uſed the freedom to write her a letter, in which he diſſwaded her from her preſent reſolution, with an unuſual elegance of expreſſion, as well as force of reaſoning. He told her, that the ſecurity of her government depended entirely on the affections of her proteſtant ſubjects; and ſhe could not, by any meaſure, more effectually diſguſt them than by eſpouſing a prince, who was ſon to the perfidious Catherine, brother to the cruel and perfidious Charles, and who had himſelf embrued his hands in the blood of the innocent and defenceleſs proteſtants: That the catholics were her mortal enemies, and believed either that ſhe had originally uſurped the crown, or was now lawfully depoſed by the pope's bull of excommunication; and nothing had ever ſo much elevated their hopes as the proſpect of her marriage with the duke of Anjou: That her chief ſecurity at preſent againſt the efforts of ſo numerous, rich, and united a faction was, that they poſſeſſed no head who could conduct their dangerous enterprizes; and ſhe herſelf was raſhly ſupplying that defect, by giving an intereſt in the kingdom to a prince, whoſe education had zealouſly attached him to that communion: That tho' he was a ſtranger to the royal blood of England, the diſpoſitions of men were now ſuch, that

[h] Camden, p. 486.

they

CHAP. XLI. 1581.

they preferred the religious to the civil connexions; and were more influenced by the ſympathy of theological opinions than by the principles of legal and hereditary government: That the duke himſelf had diſcovered a very reſtleſs and turbulent ſpirit; and having often violated his loyalty to his elder brother and his ſovereign, there remained no hopes that he would paſſively ſubmit to a woman, whom he might think himſelf intitled, in quality of huſband, to command: That the French nation, ſo populous, ſo much abounding in ſoldiers, ſo full of nobility, who were devoted to arms, and, for ſome time, accuſtomed to ſerve for plunder, would ſupply him with partizans, dangerous to a people, unwarlike and defenceleſs like the generality of her ſubjects: That the plain and honourable path, which ſhe had followed, of cultivating the affections of her people, had hitherto rendered her reign ſecure and happy; and however her enemies might ſeem to multiply upon her, the ſame invincible rampart was ſtill able to protect and defend her: That ſo long as the throne of France was filled by Henry or his poſterity, it was in vain to hope that the ties of blood would enſure the amity of that kingdom, preferably to the maxims of policy or the prejudices of religion; and if ever the crown devolved to the duke of Anjou, the conjunction of France and England would prove a burthen, rather than a protection, to the latter kingdom: That the example of her ſiſter Mary was ſufficient to inſtruct her in the danger of ſuch connections; and to prove, that the affections and confidence of the Engliſh could never be maintained, where they had ſuch reaſon to apprehend that their intereſts would every moment be ſacrificed to thoſe of a foreign and hoſtile nation: That notwithſtanding theſe great inconveniences, diſcovered by paſt experience, the houſe of Bugundy, it muſt be confeſſed, was more popular in the nation than the family of France; and, what was of chief moment,

Philip

CHAP. XLI. 1582.

Philip was of the ſame communion with Mary, and was connected with her by this great band of intereſt and affection: And that however the Queen might remain childleſs, even tho' old age ſhould grow upon her, the ſingular felicity and glory of her reign would preſerve her from contempt; the affections of her ſubjects, and thoſe of all the proteſtants in Europe, would defend her from attacks; and her own prudence, without other aid or aſſiſtance, would baffle all the efforts of her moſt malignant enemies[i].

THESE reflections kept the Queen in great anxiety and irreſolution; and ſhe was obſerved to paſs ſeveral nights without any ſleep or repoſe. At laſt her ſettled habits of prudence and ambition prevailed over her temporary inclination; and having ſent for the duke of Anjou, ſhe had a long converſation with him in private, where ſhe was ſuppoſed to have made him apologies for the breaking her former engagements. He expreſſed great diſguſt on his leaving her; threw away the ring which ſhe had given him; and uttered many curſes on the mutability of women, and of iſlanders[k]. Soon after he went over to his government of the Netherlands; loſt the confidence of the States by a raſh and violent attempt on their liberties; was expelled that country; retired into France; and there died. The Queen, by her timely reflection, ſaved herſelf from the numerous miſchiefs which muſt have attended ſo imprudent a marriage: And the preſent diſtracted ſtate of the French monarchy, prevented her from feeling any effects of that reſentment which ſhe had reaſon to dread from the affront ſo wantonly put upon that royal family.

Scots affairs.

THE anxiety of the Queen, from the attempts of the Engliſh catholics, never ceaſed during the whole courſe of her reign; but the variety of revolutions which hap-

[i] Letters of the Sydneys, vol. I. p. 287, and ſeq. Cabbala, p. 363.
[k] Camden, p. 46.

pened

CHAP. XLI.

1582.

pened in all the neighbouring kingdoms, were the ſource ſometimes of her hopes, ſometimes of her apprehenſions. This year the affairs of Scotland ſtrongly engaged her attention. The influence which the earl of Lenox, and James Stuart, who now aſſumed the title of earl of Arran, had acquired over the young King, was but a ſlender foundation of authority; while the generality of the nobles, and all the preachers, were ſo much diſcontented with their adminiſtration. The aſſembly of the church appointed a ſolemn faſt; of which one of the avowed reaſons was the danger in which the King ſtood from the company of wicked perſons[l]: And on that day the pulpits reſounded with declamations againſt Lenox, Arran, and all the King's preſent counſellors. When the minds of the people were ſufficiently prepared by theſe lectures, a conſpiracy of the nobility was formed, probably with the concurrence of Elizabeth, for ſeizing the perſon of James at Ruthven, a ſeat of the earl of Gowry; and

23 Auguſt.

the deſign, being kept very ſecret, ſucceeded without any oppoſition. The leaders in this enterprize were, the earl of Gowry himſelf, the earl of Marre, the lords Lindeſey and Boyd, the maſters of Glamis and Oliphant, the abbots of Dunfermline, Paiſley, and Cambuſkenneth. The King wept when he found himſelf detained a priſoner; but the maſter of Glamis ſaid, No "matter for his tears: Better that boys ſhould weep "than bearded men:" An expreſſion which James could never afterwards forgive[m]. But notwithſtanding his reſentment, he found it neceſſary to ſubmit to the preſent neceſſity. He pretended an entire acquieſcence in the conduct of the aſſociators; acknowleged the detention of his perſon to be acceptable ſervice; and agreed to ſummon both an aſſembly of the church and a convention of eſtates, in order to ratify that enterprize. The aſſembly, tho' they had eſtabliſhed it as

[l] Spotſwood, p. 319.

[m] Ibid. p. 320.

an

an inviolable rule, that the King, on no account and on no occaſion, ſhould ever intermeddle in eccleſiaſtical matters, made no ſcruple of taking civil affairs under their cognizance, and of giving their verdict, that the attempt of the conſpirators was acceptable to all that feared God, or tendered the preſervation of the King's perſon, and proſperous ſtate of the realm. They even enjoined all the clergy to recommend theſe ſentiments from the pulpit; and they threatned with eccleſiaſtical cenſures every man who ſhould oppoſe the authority of the confederated lords [n]. The convention, being compoſed chiefly of theſe lords themſelves, added their ſanction to theſe proceedings. Arran was confined a priſoner to his own houſe: Lenox, tho' he had power to reſiſt, yet rather than exite a civil war, or be the cauſe of bloodſhed [o], choſe to retire into France, where he ſoon after died. He perſevered to the laſt in his converſion to the proteſtant religion; which the Scots clergy would never be perſuaded that he had ſincerely embraced. The King ſent for his family, reſtored his ſon to his paternal honours and eſtate, took care to eſtabliſh the fortunes of all his other children; and to his laſt moments never forgot the early friendſhip which he had borne their father: A ſtrong proof of the good diſpoſitions of that prince [p].

No ſooner was this revolution known in England, than the Queen ſent Sir Henry Cary, and Sir Robert Bowes to James, in order to congratulate him on his deliverance from the pernicious counſels of Lenox and Arran; to exhort him not to reſent the ſeeming violence of the lords' enterprize; and to procure from him permiſſion for the return of the earl of Angus, who, ever ſince Morton's fall, had lived in England. They eaſily prevailed in the laſt application; and as James ſuſpected, that Elizabeth had not been entirely unac-

[n] Spotſwood, p. 322. [o] Heylin's Hiſt. Preſbyter. p. 227. Spotſwood.
[p] Spotſwood, p. 328.

quainted

CHAP. XLI.

quainted with the project of his detention, he thought proper, before the Engliſh ambaſſadors, to diſſemble his reſentment againſt the confederated noblemen. Soon after, La Mothe-Fenelon, and Menneville, appeared as ambaſſadors from France: Their errand was to enquire concerning the ſituation of the King, make profeſſions of their maſter's friendſhip, confirm the ancient league with France, and procure an accommodation between him and the Queen of Scots. This laſt propoſal gave great umbrage to the clergy; and the aſſembly had already voted the ſettling of terms between the mother and ſon to be a moſt wicked undertaking. The pulpits reſounded with declamations againſt the French ambaſſadors; particularly Fenelon, whom they called the Meſſenger of the bloody murderer, meaning the duke of Guiſe: And as that miniſter, being knight of the Holy Ghoſt, wore a white croſs on his ſhoulder, they commonly denominated it in contempt, the badge of Antichriſt. The King endeavoured, tho' in vain, to repreſs theſe inſolencies; but in order to make the ambaſſadors ſome compenſation, he deſired the magiſtrates of Edinburgh to give them a ſplendid dinner before their departure. To prevent this entertainment, the clergy appointed that very day for a public faſt; and finding that their orders were not regarded, they employed their ſermons in thundering curſes on the magiſtrates, who, by the King's direction, had put this mark of reſpect on the ambaſſadors. They even purſued them afterwards with the cenſures of the church; and it was with difficulty they were prevented from paſſing the ſentence of excommunication againſt them, on account of their ſubmiſſion to royal, preferably to clerical, authority [q].

1582.

1583.

WHAT encreaſed the alarm with regard to an accommodation between James and Mary, was, that the Engliſh ambaſſadors ſeemed to concur with the French

[q] Spotſwood, p. 324.

in

CHAP. XLI.

1583.

in this propoſal; and the clergy were ſo ignorant as to credit the ſincerity of the profeſſions made by the former. The Queen of Scots had often made overtures to Elizabeth, which had been entirely neglected; but hearing of James's detention, ſhe wrote a letter in a more pathetic and more ſpirited ſtrain than uſual; craving the aſſiſtance of that princeſs, both for her own and her ſon's liberty. She ſaid, that the account of the prince's captivity had excited her moſt tender concern; and the experience which ſhe herſelf, during ſo many years, had of the extreme infelicity attending that ſituation, had made her the more apprehenſive, leſt a like fate ſhould purſue her unhappy offspring: That the long train of injuſtice which ſhe had ſuffered; the calumnies to which ſhe had been expoſed; were ſo grievous, that, finding no place for right or truth among men, ſhe was reduced to make her laſt appeal to heaven, the only competent tribunal between princes of equal juriſdiction, degree, and dignity: That after her rebellious ſubjects ſecretly inſtigated by Elizabeth's miniſters, had expelled her from the throne, had confined her to priſon, had purſued her with arms, ſhe had voluntarily thrown herſelf under the protection of England, fatally allured by thoſe reiterated profeſſions of amity which had been made her, and by her confidence in the generoſity of a friend, an ally, and a kinſwoman: That not contented with debarring her from her preſence, with ſupporting the uſurpers of her throne, with contributing to the deſtruction of her faithful ſubjects, Elizabeth had reduced her to a worſe captivity than that from which ſhe had eſcaped, and had made her this cruel return for the unlimited truſt which ſhe had repoſed in her: That tho' her reſentment of ſuch ſevere uſage had never carried her farther than to uſe ſome diſappointed efforts for her deliverance, unhappy to

Letter of Queen Mary to Elizabeth.

CHAP. XLI.

quainted with the project of his detention, he thought proper, before the Engliſh ambaſſadors, to diſſemble his reſentment againſt the confederated noblemen. Soon after, La Mothe-Fenelon, and Menneville, appeared as ambaſſadors from France: Their errand was to enquire concerning the ſituation of the King, make profeſſions of their maſter's friendſhip, confirm the ancient league with France, and procure an accommodation between him and the Queen of Scots. This laſt propoſal gave great umbrage to the clergy; and the aſſembly had already voted the ſettling of terms between the mother and ſon to be a moſt wicked undertaking. The pulpits reſounded with declamations againſt the French ambaſſadors; particularly Fenelon, whom they called the Meſſenger of the bloody murderer, meaning the duke of Guiſe: And as that miniſter, being knight of the Holy Ghoſt, wore a white croſs on his ſhoulder, they commonly denominated it in contempt, the badge of Antichriſt. The King endeavoured, tho' in vain, to repreſs theſe inſolencies; but in order to make the ambaſſadors ſome compenſation, he deſired the magiſtrates of Edinburgh to give them a ſplendid dinner before their departure. To prevent this entertainment, the clergy appointed that very day for a public faſt; and finding that their orders were not regarded, they employed their ſermons in thundering curſes on the magiſtrates, who, by the King's direction, had put this mark of reſpect on the ambaſſadors. They even purſued them afterwards with the cenſures of the church; and it was with difficulty they were prevented from paſſing the ſentence of excommunication againſt them, on account of their ſubmiſſion to royal, preferably to clerical, authority [q].

1582.

1583.

WHAT encreaſed the alarm with regard to an accommodation between James and Mary, was, that the Engliſh ambaſſadors ſeemed to concur with the French

[q] Spotſwood, p. 324.

in

CHAP. XLI.

1583.

in this propoſal; and the clergy were ſo ignorant as to credit the ſincerity of the profeſſions made by the former. The Queen of Scots had often made overtures to Elizabeth, which had been entirely neglected; but hearing of James's detention, ſhe wrote a letter in a more pathetic and more ſpirited ſtrain than uſual; craving the aſſiſtance of that princeſs, both for her own and her ſon's liberty. She ſaid, that the account of the prince's captivity had excited her moſt tender concern; and the experience which ſhe herſelf, during ſo many years, had of the extreme infelicity attending that ſituation, had made her the more apprehenſive, leſt a like fate ſhould purſue her unhappy offspring: That the long train of injuſtice which ſhe had ſuffered; the calumnies to which ſhe had been expoſed; were ſo grievous, that, finding no place for right or truth among men, ſhe was reduced to make her laſt appeal to heaven, the only competent tribunal between princes of equal juriſdiction, degree, and dignity: That after her rebellious ſubjects ſecretly inſtigated by Elizabeth's miniſters, had expelled her from the throne, had confined her to priſon, had purſued her with arms, ſhe had voluntarily thrown herſelf under the protection of England, fatally allured by thoſe reiterated profeſſions of amity which had been made her, and by her confidence in the generoſity of a friend, an ally, and a kinſwoman: That not contented with debarring her from her preſence, with ſupporting the uſurpers of her throne, with contributing to the deſtruction of her faithful ſubjects, Elizabeth had reduced her to a worſe captivity than that from which ſhe had eſcaped, and had made her this cruel return for the unlimited truſt which ſhe had repoſed in her: That tho' her reſentment of ſuch ſevere uſage had never carried her farther than to uſe ſome diſappointed efforts for her deliverance, unhappy to

Letter of Queen Mary to Elizabeth.

CHAP. XLI.

1583. herſelf, and fatal to others, ſhe found the rigourous confinement daily multiplied upon her; and at length carried to ſuch a height as ſurpaſſed the bounds of all human patience any longer to endure them: That ſhe was cut off from all communication, not only with the reſt of mankind, but alſo with her only ſon; and her maternal fondneſs, which was now more enlivened by their unhappy ſympathy in ſituation, and was her ſole remaining attachment to the world, deprived even of that melancholy ſolace, which letters or meſſages could give: That the bitterneſs of her ſorrows, ſtill more than her cloſe confinement, had preyed upon her health, and had added the inſufferable weight of bodily infirmity to all thoſe other calamities under which ſhe laboured: That while the daily experience of her maladies opened to her the comfortable proſpect of an approaching deliverance into a region where pain and ſorrow are no more, her enemies envied her that laſt conſolation; and having ſecluded her from every joy on earth, had done what in them lay to debar her from all hopes in her future and eternal exiſtence: That the exerciſe of her religion was refuſed her; the uſage of thoſe ſacred rites in which ſhe had been educated; the commerce with thoſe holy miniſters, whom heaven had appointed to receive the acknowlegement of our tranſgreſſions, and to ſeal our penitence by a ſolemn re-admiſſion into heavenly favour and forgiveneſs: That it was in vain to complain of the rigours of perſecution exerciſed in other kingdoms; when a Queen, and an innocent woman, was excluded from an indulgence which never yet, in the moſt barbarous countries, had been denied to the meaneſt and moſt criminal malefactor: That could ſhe ever be induced to deſcend from that royal dignity in which Providence had placed her, or depart from her appeal to Heaven, there was only one other tribunal to which ſhe would appeal from all her enemies; to the juſtice and humani-

CHAP. XLI. 1583.

ty of Elizabeth's own breaſt, and to that lenity, which, uninfluenced by malignant counſel, ſhe would naturally be induced to exerciſe towards her: And that ſhe finally intreated her, to reſume her natural diſpoſition, and to reflect on the ſupport, as well as comfort, which ſhe might receive from her ſon and herſelf, if, joining the obligations of gratitude to the ties of blood, ſhe would deign to raiſe them from their preſent melancholy ſituation, and reinſtate them in that liberty and authority to which they were entitled [r].

ELIZABETH was chiefly induced to obſtruct Mary's reſtoration, becauſe ſhe foreſaw an unhappy alternative attending that event. If this princeſs recovered any conſiderable ſhare of authority in Scotland, her reſentment, ambition, zeal, and connections, both domeſtic and foreign, might render her a dangerous neighbour to England, and enable her, after ſuppreſſing the Engliſh party among her ſubjects, to revive thoſe pretenſions which ſhe had formerly advanced to the crown, and which her partizans in both kingdoms ſtill ſupported with great induſtry and aſſurance. If ſhe was reinſtated in power, with ſuch ſtrict limitations as could not be broken, ſhe might be diſguſted with her ſituation; and flying abroad, form more deſperate attempts than any ſovereign, who had a crown to hazard, would willingly undertake. Mary herſelf, ſenſible of theſe difficulties, and convinced by experience, that Elizabeth would for ever debar her the throne, was now become more humble in her wiſhes; and as age and infirmities had repreſſed thoſe ſentiments of ambition and indignation, by which ſhe was formerly ſo much agitated, ſhe was willing to ſacrifice all her hopes of power and grandeur, in order to obtain a little more liberty; a bleſſing to which ſhe very naturally aſpired with the fondeſt impatience

[r] Camden, p. 489.

CHAP. XLI.

1583.

She propoſed, therefore, that ſhe ſhould be aſſociated with her ſon in the title to the crown of Scotland, but that the adminiſtration ſhould remain ſolely in him: And ſhe was contented to live in England, in a private ſtation, and even in a kind of reſtraint; but with ſome more liberty, both for exerciſe and company, than ſhe had enjoyed ſince the firſt diſcovery of her intrigues with the duke of Norfolk. But Elizabeth, who was afraid leſt ſuch a looſe method of guarding her, would facilitate her eſcape into France or Spain, or, at leaſt, would encourage and increaſe her partizans, and enable her to conduct thoſe intrigues to which ſhe had already diſcovered ſo ſtrong a propenſity, was ſecretly determined to deny her requeſts; and tho' ſhe feigned to aſſent to them, ſhe well knew how to diſappoint the expectations of the unhappy princeſs. While Lenox maintained his authority in Scotland, ſhe never gave any reply to all the applications made to her by the Scottiſh Queen[a]: At preſent, when her own creatures had acquired poſſeſſion of the government, ſhe was reſolved to throw the odium of the refuſal upon them; and pretending, that nothing was required to a perfect accommodation, but the concurrence of the council of ſtate in Scotland, ſhe ordered her ambaſſador, Bowes, to open the negociation for Mary's liberty, and her aſſociation with her ſon in the title to the crown. Tho' ſhe ſeemed to make this conceſſion to Mary, ſhe refuſed her the liberty of ſending any ambaſſador of her own; and that princeſs could eaſily conjecture, from this circumſtance, what would be the reſult of the pretended negociation. The Scots council, inſtigated by the clergy, rejected all treaty: and James, who was now a captive in their hands, affirmed, that he had never aſſented to an aſſociation with his mother, and that the matter had

[a] Jebb, vol. II. p. 540.

never

never gone farther than ſome looſe propoſals for that purpoſe [t]. CHAP. XLI.

THE affairs of Scotland remained not long on the preſent footing. James, impatient of reſtraint, made his eſcape from his keepers; and flying to St. Andrews, ſummoned his friends and partizans to attend him. The earls of Argyle, Marſhal, Montroſe, and Rothes, haſtened to pay their duty to their ſovereign; and the oppoſite party found themſelves unable to reſiſt ſo powerful a combination. They were offered a pardon, upon their ſubmiſſion, and an acknowlegement of their fault, in ſeizing the King's perſon, and reſtraining him from his liberty. Some of them accepted of the terms: The greater number, particularly Angus, Hamilton, Marre, Glamis, left the country; and took ſhelter in Ireland or England, where they were protected by Elizabeth. The earl of Arran was recalled to court; and the malecontents, who could not brook the authority of Lenox, a man of virtue and moderation, found, that, by their reſiſtance, they had thrown all the power into the hands of a perſon whoſe councils were as violent as his manners were profligate [u]. 1583.

ELIZABETH wrote a letter to James; in which ſhe quoted a moral ſentence from Iſocrates, and indirectly reproached him with inconſtancy, and a breach of his engagements. James, in his reply, juſtified his meaſures; and turned two paſſages of Iſocrates againſt her, for one which ſhe had directed againſt him [x]. She next ſent Walſingham in an embaſſy to him; and her chief purpoſe in employing that aged miniſter on an errand where ſo little buſineſs was to be tranſacted, was to learn, from a man of ſo much penetration and diſcernment, the real character of James.

[t] MS. in the Advocate's library, A. 3. 28. p. 401. from the Cott. Lib. Calig. c. 9. [u] Spotſwood, p. 325, 326, & ſeq. [x] Melvil, p. 140, 141. Strype, vol. III. p. 165.

CHAP. XLI.

1583. This young prince poſſeſſed very good parts, tho' not accompanied with that vigour and induſtry which his ſtation required; and as he excelled in general diſcourſe and converſation, Walſingham entertained a higher idea of his talents than he was afterwards found, when real buſineſs was tranſacted, to have fully merited [y]. The account which he gave his miſtreſs, induced her to treat him thenceforth with ſome more regard than ſhe had hitherto been inclined to pay him.

1584. THE King of Scots, perſevering in his preſent views, ſummoned a Parliament; where it was enacted, that no clergyman ſhould preſume, in his ſermons, to utter falſe, untrue, or ſcandalous ſayings againſt the King, the council, or the public meaſures, or to meddle, in an improper manner, with the affairs of his majeſty and the ſtates [z]. The clergy, finding that the pulpit would be no longer a ſanctuary for them, were extremely offended: They ſaid, that the King was become popiſh in his heart; and they gave their adverſaries the epithets of groſs libertines, belly gods, and infamous perſons [a]. The violent conduct of Arran ſoon brought over the popularity to their ſide. The earl of Gowry, tho' pardoned for the late attempt, was committed to priſon, was tried on ſome new accuſations, condemned, and executed. Many innocent perſons ſuffered from the tyranny of this favourite; and the baniſhed lords, being aſſiſted by Elizabeth, now found the time favourable for the recovery of their eſtates and authority. After they had been foiled in one attempt upon Stirling, they prevailed in another; and being admitted to the King's preſence, were pardoned, and reſtored to his favour.

ARRAN was degraded from authority; deprived of that eſtate and title which he had uſurped; and the

[y] Melvil, p. 348. Jebb, vol. II. p. 536. [z] Spotſwood, p. 333. [a] Ibid. p. 334.

whole

whole country ſeemed to be compoſed to tranquillity. Elizabeth, after oppoſing, during ſome time, the credit of this favourite, had found it more expedient, before his fall, to compoſe all differences with him, by the means of Daviſſon, a miniſter whom ſhe ſent to Scotland: But having more confidence in the lords, whom ſhe had helped to reſtore, ſhe was pleaſed with this alteration of affairs; and maintained a good correſpondence with the new court and miniſtry of James. 1584.

THESE revolutions in Scotland would have been regarded as of ſmall importance to the repoſe and ſecurity of Elizabeth, had her own ſubjects been entirely united, and had not the zeal of the catholics, excited by conſtraint more properly than perſecution, daily threatened her with ſome dangerous inſurrection. The vigilance of the miniſters, particularly of Burleigh and Walſingham, was raiſed in proportion to the activity of the malecontents; and many arts, which had been blameable in a more peaceable government, were employed to detect conſpiracies, and even diſcover the ſecret inclinations of men. Counterfeit letters were wrote in the name of the Queen of Scots, or of the Engliſh exiles, and privately conveyed to the houſes of the catholics: Spies were hired to obſerve the actions and diſcourſe of ſuſpected perſons: Informers were countenanced: And tho' the ſagacity of theſe two great miniſters helped them to diſtinguiſh the true from the falſe intelligence, many calumnies were, no doubt, hearkened to, and all the ſubjects, particularly the catholics, kept in the utmoſt anxiety and inquietude. Henry Piercy, earl of Northumberland, brother to the earl beheaded ſome years before, and Philip Howard, earl of Arundel, ſon to the unfortunate duke of Norfolk, fell under ſuſpicion; and the latter was, by order of the council, confined to his own houſe. Francis Throcmorton, a private gentleman, was commit- Conſpiracies in England,

CHAP. XLI. 1584.

ted to cuſtody, on account of a letter which he had wrote to the Queen of Scots, and which was intercepted. Lord Paget, and Charles Arundel, who had been engaged with him in treaſonable deſigns, immediately withdrew beyond ſea. [b] Throcmorton confeſſed, that a plan for an invaſion and inſurrection had been laid; and tho', on his trial, he was deſirous of retracting this confeſſion, and imputing it to the fear of torture, he was found guilty and executed. Mendoza, the Spaniſh ambaſſador, having promoted this conſpiracy, was ordered to depart the kingdom; and Wade was ſent into Spain, to excuſe his diſmiſſion, and to deſire the King to ſend another ambaſſador in his place: But Philip would not ſo much as admit the Engliſh ambaſſador to his preſence. Creighton, a Scots Jeſuit, coming over on board a veſſel which was ſeized, tore ſome papers, with an intention of throwing them into the ſea; but the wind blowing them back upon the ſhip, they were put together, and diſcovered ſome dangerous ſecrets [b].

MANY of theſe conſpiracies were, with great appearance of reaſon, imputed to the contrivances of the Queen of Scots [c]; and as her name was employed in all of them, the council thought, that they could not uſe too many precautions againſt the danger of her claims, and the reſtleſs activity of her temper. She was removed from under the care of the earl of Shrewſbury, who, tho' vigilant and faithful in that truſt, had alſo been indulgent to his priſoner, particularly with regard to air and exerciſe: And ſhe was committed to the cuſtody of Sir Amias Paulet and Sir Drue Drury; men of honour, but inflexible and rigid in their care and attention. An aſſociation was alſo ſet on foot by the earl of Leiceſter and other courtiers; and as Elizabeth was extremely beloved by the whole nation, except the more zealous catholics, men of all ranks willingly

[b] Camden, p. 499. [c] Strype, vol. III. p. 246.

flocked to the ſubſcription of it. The purport of this aſſociation was to defend the Queen, to revenge her death or any injury committed againſt her, and to exclude from the throne all claimants, whatever title they poſſeſſed, by whoſe ſuggeſtion, or for whoſe behoof, any violence ſhould be offered to her majeſty [d]. The Queen of Scots was ſenſible, that this aſſociation was levelled againſt her; and to remove all ſuſpicion from herſelf, ſhe alſo deſired leave to ſubſcribe it. CHAP. XL. 1584.

ELIZABETH, that ſhe might the more diſcourage malecontents, by ſhewing them the concurrence of the nation in her favour, ſummoned a new Parliament; and ſhe met with that dutiful attachment, which ſhe expected. The aſſociation was confirmed by Parliament; and a clauſe was added, by which the Queen was empowered to name commiſſioners for the trial of any pretender to the crown, who ſhould attempt or imagine any invaſion, inſurrection, or aſſaſſination againſt the Queen: Upon condemnation, pronounced by theſe commiſſioners, the perſon was excluded from all claim to the ſucceſſion, and was farther puniſhable, as her majeſty ſhould direct. And for the greater ſecurity, a council of regency, in caſe of the Queen's violent death, was appointed to govern the kingdom, to ſettle the ſucceſſion, and to take vengeance of that act of treaſon [e]. 23d November. A Parliament.

A SEVERE law was alſo enacted againſt jeſuits and popiſh prieſts: That they ſhould depart the kingdom within forty days; that thoſe who ſhould remain beyond that time, or ſhould afterwards return, ſhould be guilty of high treaſon; that thoſe who harboured or relieved them ſhould be guilty of felony; that thoſe who were educated in ſeminaries, if they returned not in ſix months after notice given, and ſubmitted not themſelves, to the Queen, before a biſhop or two juſtices, ſhould be guilty of high treaſon: And that if

[d] State Trials, vol. I. p. 122, 123. [e] 27 Eliz. cap. 1.

CHAP. XLI. 1584.

any, ſo ſubmitting themſelves, ſhould, within ten years, approach the Queen's court, or come within ten miles of it, their ſubmiſſion ſhould be void [f]. By this law, the exerciſe of the catholic religion, which had formerly been prohibited under lighter penalties, and which was, in many inſtances, connived at, was totally ſuppreſſed. In the ſubſequent part of the Queen's reign, the law was ſometimes executed, by the capital puniſhment of prieſts; and tho' the partizans of that princeſs aſſerted, that they were puniſhed for their treaſon, not their religion, the apology muſt only be underſtood in this ſenſe, that the law was enacted on account of the treaſonable views and attempts of the ſect, not that every individual, who ſuffered the penalty of the law, was convicted of treaſon [g]. The catholics, therefore, might now juſtly complain of a very violent perſecution; which, we may ſafely affirm, in ſpite of the rigid and bigotted maxims of that age, not to be the beſt method of converting them, or of reconciling them to the eſtabliſhed government and religion.

The Parliament, beſides arming the Queen with theſe powers, granted her a ſupply of one ſubſidy and two fifteenths. The only circumſtance, in which their proceedings were diſagreeable to her, was an application, which the commons made for a farther reformation in eccleſiaſtical matters. Yet even in this attempt, which affected her, as well as them, in a very delicate point, they diſcovered how much they were overawed by her authority. The majority of the houſe were puritans, or inclined to that ſect [h]; but the ſevere re-

[f] 27 Eliz. cap. 2. [g] Some even of thoſe who defend the Queen's meaſures, allow that in ten years fifty prieſts were executed, and fifty-five baniſhed. Camden, p. 649

[h] Beſides the petition a ter-mentioned, another proof of the prevalency of the puritans among the commons was their paſſing a bill for the reverend obſervance of Sunday, which they called the Sabbath, and the depriving

primands,

primands, which they had already, in former ſeſſions, met with from the throne, deterred them from introducing any bill concerning religion; a proceeding which would have been interpreted as an incroachment on the royal prerogative: They were contented to proceed by way of humble petition, and that not to her majeſty, which would certainly have given ſome offence, but to the houſe of lords, or rather to the biſhops, who had a ſeat in that houſe, and from whom alone they were contented to receive all advances towards a reformation [1]. A ſtrange departure from what we now apprehend to be the dignity of the commons!

THE commons deſired in their humble petition, that no biſhop ſhould exerciſe his function of ordination but with the conſent and concurrence of ſix preſbyters: A demand, which as it would have introduced a change of eccleſiaſtical government, was firmly rejected by the prelates. They deſired, that no clergyman ſhould be inſtituted into any benefice, without previous warning being given to the pariſh, that they might examine whether there lay any objection to his life or doctrine: But this attempt towards a popular model naturally met with the ſame fate. In another article of the petition, they prayed, that the biſhops ſhould not inſiſt upon every ceremony, or deprive incumbents for omitting part of the ſervice: As if uniformity in public worſhip had not been eſtabliſhed by law; or as if the prelates had been endowed with a diſpenſing power. They complained of abuſes, which prevailed, in denouncing the ſentence of excommunication, and entreated the reverend fathers to think of ſome law for the remedy of theſe abuſes: Implying, that thoſe mat-

the people of thoſe amuſements, which they were accuſtomed to take on that day. D'Ewes, p. 335. It was a ſtrong ſymptom of a contrary ſpirit in the upper houſe, that they propoſed to add Wedneſday to the faſt days, and to prohibit entirely the eating of fleſh on that day. D'Ewes, p. 373.

[1] D'Ewes, p. 357.

ters

CHAP. XLI.

1584.

ters were too high for the commmons of themſelves to meddle with them.

But the moſt material article, which the commons touched upon in their petition, was the eccleſiaſtical commiſſion, and the oath *ex officio*, as it was called, exacted by that court. This is a ſubject of ſuch importance, as to merit ſome explanation.

The eccleſiaſtical court.

The firſt primate after the Queen's acceſſion, was Parker; a man rigid in exacting conformity to the eſtabliſhed worſhip, and in puniſhing, by fines or deprivations, all the puritans, who attempted to innovate any thing in the habits, ceremonies, or liturgy of the church. He died in 1575; and was ſucceeded by Grindal, who, as he himſelf was inclined to the new ſect, was with great difficulty brought to execute the law againſt them, or to puniſh the nonconforming clergy. He declined obeying the Queen's orders for the ſuppreſſion of *prophecyings*, which, ſhe apprehended, had become ſo many academies of fanaticiſm; and for this offence, ſhe had, by an order of the Star Camber, ſequeſtered him from his archiepiſcopal function, and confined him to his own houſe. Upon his death, which happened in 1583, ſhe determined not to fall into the ſame error in her next choice; and ſhe named Whitgift, a zealous churchman, who had already ſignalized his pen in controverſy, and who, having in vain attempted to convince the puritans by argument, was now reſolved to open their eyes by power, and by the execution of penal ſtatutes. He informed the Queen, that all the ſpiritual authority lodged in the prelates was inſignificant without the ſanction of the crown; and as there was no eccleſiaſtical commiſſion at that time in force, he engaged her to iſſue a new one; more arbitrary than any of the former, and conveying more unlimited authority [k]. She appointed forty-four commiſſioners, twelve of whom were ec-

[k] Neal's Hiſtory of the Puritans, vol. I. p. 410.

cleſiaſtics;

cleſiaſtics; three commiſſioners could exerciſe the whole power of the court; their juriſdiction extended over the whole kingdom, and over all orders of men; and every circumſtance of their authority, and all their methods of proceeding, were contrary to the cleareſt principles of law and natural equity. They were empowered to viſit and reform all errors, hereſies, ſchiſms, in a word, to regulate all opinions, as well as to puniſh all breach of uniformity in the exerciſe of public worſhip. They were directed to make enquiry, not only by the legal methods of juries and witneſſes, but by all other means and ways, which they could deviſe; that is, by the rack, by torture, by inquiſition, by impriſonment. Where they thought proper to ſuſpect any perſon, they might adminiſter to him an oath, called *ex Officio*, by which he was bound to anſwer all queſtions, and might thereby be obliged to accuſe himſelf or his moſt intimate friend. The fines, which they impoſed, were merely diſcretionary, and often occaſioned the total ruin of the offenders, contrary to the eſtabliſhed laws of the kingdom. The impriſonment, to which they condemned any delinquent, was limited by no rule but their own pleaſure. They aſſumed a power of impoſing on the clergy what new articles of ſubſcription, and conſequently of faith, they thought proper. Tho' all other ſpiritual courts were ſubject, ſince the reformation, to inhibitions from the ſupreme courts of law, the eccleſiaſtical commiſſioners exempted themſelves from that legal juriſdiction, and were liable to no controul. And the more to enlarge their authority, they were empowered to puniſh all inceſts, adulteries, fornications; all outrages, miſbehaviours, and diſorders in marriage: And the puniſhments, which they might inflict, were according to their wiſdom, conſcience, and diſcretion. In a word this court was a real *inquiſition*; attended with all the iniquities, as well as cruelties, inſeparable from that

CHAP. XLI. 1584.

that horrid tribunal. And as the juridiction of the eccleſiaſtical court was deſtructive of all law, ſo its erection was deemed by many a mere uſurpation of this imperious princeſs, and had no other foundation than a clauſe of a ſtatute, reſtoring the ſupremacy to the crown, and empowering the ſovereign to appoint commiſſioners for exerciſing that prerogative. But prerogative in general, and eſpecially the ſupremacy, were ſuppoſed in that age to involve powers, which no law, precedent, or reaſon could limit and determine.

But tho' the commons, in their humble petition to the prelates, had touched ſo gently and ſubmiſſively on the eccleſiaſtical grievances, the Queen, in a ſpeech from the throne at the end of the ſeſſion, could not forbear taking notice of their preſumption, and reproving them for thoſe murmurs, which, for fear of offending her, they had pronounced ſo low as not directly to reach her royal ears. After giving them ſome general thanks for their attachment to her, and making profeſſions of affection to her ſubjects, ſhe told them, that whoever found fault with the church threw a ſlander upon her, ſince ſhe was appointed *by God* ſupreme ruler over it, and no hereſies nor ſchiſms could prevail in the kingdom but by her permiſſion and negligence: That ſome abuſes muſt neceſſarily have place in every thing; but ſhe warned the prelates to be watchful; for if ſhe found them careleſs of their charge, ſhe was fully determined to depoſe them: That ſhe was commonly ſuppoſed to have employed herſelf in many ſtudies, particularly, philoſophical (by which, I ſuppoſe, ſhe meant theological) and ſhe would confeſs, that few, whoſe leiſure had not allowed them to make profeſſion of ſcience, had read or reflected more: That as ſhe could diſcern the preſumption of many, in curiouſly canvaſſing the ſcriptures, and ſtarting innovations, ſhe would

would no longer endure this licence; but meant to guide her people, by God's rule, in the juſt mean between the corruptions of Rome and the errors of modern ſectaries: And that as the Romaniſts were the inveterate enemies of her perſon, ſo the other innovators were dangerous to all kingly government; and under colour of preaching the word of God, preſumed to exerciſe their private judgment, and to cenſure the actions of the prince [l].

CHAP. XLI. 1584.

From the whole of this tranſaction, we may obſerve, that the commons, in making their general application to the prelates, as well as in ſome particular articles of their petition, ſhowed themſelves wholly ignorant, no leſs than the Queen, of the principles of liberty and a legal conſtitution. And it may not be unworthy of remark, that Elizabeth, ſo far from yielding to the diſpleaſure of the Parliament againſt the eccleſiaſtical commiſſion, granted a new commiſſion before the end of her reign; in which ſhe enlarged, rather than reſtrained, the powers of the commiſſioners [m].

During this ſeſſion of Parliament, there was diſcovered a conſpiracy, which much encreaſed the general animoſity againſt the catholics, and ſtill farther widened the breach between the religious parties. William Parry, a catholic gentleman, had received the Queen's pardon for a crime, by which he was expoſed to capital puniſhment; and having got permiſſion to travel, he retired to Milan, and made open profeſſion of his religion, which he had concealed while he remained

[l] D'Ewes, p. 328. This ſect had indeed gone ſo far, that a book of diſcipline was ſecretly ſubſcribed by above five hundred clergymen; and the preſbyterian government thereby eſtabliſhed in the midſt of the church, notwithſtanding the rigour of the prelates and of the high commiſſion. So impoſſible is it by penal ſtatutes, however ſovere, to ſuppreſs all religious innovation. See Neal's Hiſt. of the Puritans, Vol. I. p. 483. Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 291.

[m] Rymer, tom XVI. p. 292, 386, 400.

CHAP. XLI.

1584.

in England. He was here perſuaded by Palmio, a jeſuit, that he could not perform a more meritorious action, than to take away the life of his ſovereign and his benefactors; the nuncio, Campeggio, when conſulted, approved extremely of this pious undertaking; and Parry, tho' ſtill agitated with doubts, came to Paris, with an intention of paſſing over to England, and executing his bloody purpoſe. He was here encouraged in the deſign by Thomas Morgan, a gentleman of great credit in the party; and tho' Watts and ſome other catholic prieſts told him, that the enterprize was criminal and impious, he preferred the authority of Raggazzoni, the pope's nuncio at Paris, and determined to perſiſt in his reſolution. He here wrote a letter to the pope, which was conveyed to cardinal Como; he communicated his intention to the holy father; and craved his abſolution and paternal benediction. He received an anſwer from the cardinal, by which he perceived that his purpoſe was extremely applauded; and he came over to England with a full deſign of carrying it into execution. So deeply are the ſentiments of morality engraved in mens breaſts, that it is very difficult even for the prejudices of falſe religion totally to efface them; and this bigotted aſſaſſin reſolved, before he came to extremity, to try every other expedient for alleviating the perſecutions, under which the catholics at that time laboured. He found means of being introduced to the Queen; aſſured her that many conſpiracies were formed againſt her; and exhorted her, as the only means of ſaving her life, to give the Romaniſts ſome more indulgence in the exerciſe of their religion: But leſt he ſhould be tempted by the opportunity to aſſaſſinate her, he always came to court unprovided of every offenſive weapon. He even procured himſelf to be elected member of Parliament; and having made a vehement ſpeech againſt the ſevere laws enacted this laſt ſeſſion, was committed to

cuſtody

CHAP. XLI. 1584.

cuſtody for his freedom, and ſequeſtered from the houſe. His failure in theſe attempts confirmed him the more in his former reſolution, and he communicated his intentions to Nevil, who entered zealouſly into the deſign, and was determined to have a ſhare in the merits of its execution. A book, newly publiſhed by Dr. Allen, afterwards created a cardinal, ſerved farther to efface all their ſcruples, with regard to the murder of an heretical prince; and having agreed to ſhoot the Queen, while ſhe ſhould be taking the air on horſeback, they reſolved, if they could not make their eſcape, to ſacrifice their lives in fulfilling a duty, ſo agreeable, as they imagined, to the will of God, and to true religion. But while they were watching an opportunity for the execution of their purpoſe, the earl of Weſtmoreland happened to die in exile; and as Nevil was next heir to that family, he began to entertain hopes, that, by doing ſome acceptable ſervice to the Queen, he might recover the eſtate and honours which had been forfeited by the rebellion of the laſt earl. He betrayed the whole conſpiracy to the miniſters; and Parry, being thrown into priſon, confeſſed the guilt, both to them, and to the jury who tried him. The letter from cardinal Como being produced in court, put Parry's narrative beyond all queſtion, and that criminal, having received ſentence of death [a], ſuffered the puniſhment, which the law appointed for his treaſonable conſpiracy [b].

[a] State Trials, vol. I. p. 103 & ſeq. Strype, vol. III. p. 255 & ſeq.

[b] This year, the earl of Northumberland, brother to the earl beheaded ſome years before, had been engaged in conſpiracy with lord Paget for the delivery of the Queen of Scots. He was thrown into the Tower; and being conſcious that his guilt could be proved upon him, at leaſt, that ſentence would infallibly be pronounced againſt him, he freed himſelf from farther proſecution by a voluntary death. He ſhot himſelf into the breaſt with a piſtol. About the ſame time, the earl of Arundel, ſon to the unfortunate duke of Norfolk, having entered into ſome exceptionable meaſures, and reflecting on the unhappy fate, which had attended his family, endeavoured

THESE

CHAP. XLI.

1584.

THESE bloody designs now appeared every where, as the result of that bigotted spirit by which the two religions, especially the catholic, were at this time actuated. One Somerville, a gentleman of the county of Warwic, somewhat disordered in his understanding, had heard so much of the merit attending the assassination of heretics and persecutors, that he came to London with a view of murdering the Queen; but having betrayed his design by some extravagances, he was thrown into prison, and there perished by a voluntary death [p]. About the same time, Baltazar Gerard, a Burgundian, undertook, and executed the same design against the prince of Orange; and that great man perished at Delft, by the hands of a desperate assassin, who, with a resolution worthy of a better cause, sacrificed his own life in order to destroy the famous restorer and protector of religious liberty. The Flemings, who regarded that prince as their father, were filled with infinite regret, as well when they considered the miserable end of so brave a patriot, as their own forlorn condition, from the loss of so powerful and prudent a leader, and from the rapid progress of the Spanish arms. The prince of Parma had made every year great advances upon them, had reduced several of the provinces to obedience, and had laid close siege to Antwerp, the richest and most populous city of the Netherlands, whose subjection, it was foreseen, would give a mortal blow to the already declining affairs of the revolted States. The only hopes which remained to them, arose from

The affairs of the Low Countries.

to depart secretly beyond sea, but was discovered and thrown into the Tower. In 1587 this nobleman was brought to his trial for high treason; chiefly because he had dropped some expressions of affection to the Spaniards and had affirmed that he would have masses said for the success of the armada. His peers found him guilty of treason: This severe sentence was not executed; but Arundel never recovered his liberty. He died a prisoner in 1595. He carried his religious austerities so far, that they were believed the immediate cause of his death.

[p] Camden, p. 495.

the

the prospect of foreign succours. Being well acquainted with the cautious and frugal maxims of Elizabeth, they expected better success in France; and in the view of engaging Henry to embrace their defence, they tendered him the sovereignty of their provinces. But the present condition of that monarchy obliged the King to reject so advantageous an offer. The duke of Anjou's death, which, he thought, would have delivered him from the intrigues of that fickle and turbulent prince, plunged him into the deepest distress; and the King of Navarre, a professed Hugonot, being next heir to the crown, the duke of Guise took thence occasion to revive the catholic league, and to urge Henry, by the most violent expedients, to seek the exclusion and suppression of that brave and virtuous prince. Henry himself, tho' a zealous catholic, yet, because he declined complying with their precipitate measures, became an object of aversion to the league; and as his zeal in practising all the superstitious observances of the Romish church, was accompanied with a very licentious conduct in private life, the catholic faction, in contradiction to the most vulgar experience, embraced thence the pretext of representing his devotion as mere hypocrisy and deceit. Finding his authority to decline, he was obliged to declare war against the Hugonots, and to put arms into the hands of the League, whom, both on account of their dangerous pretensions at home, and their close alliance with Philip, he secretly regarded as his more dangerous enemies. Constrained by the same policy, he perceived the danger of associating himself with the revolted protestants in the Low Countries, and was obliged to renounce that inviting occasion of revenging himself for all the hostile intrigues and enterprizes of Philip.

The States, reduced to this extremity, sent over a solemn embassy to London, and made offer to the

CHAP. XLI.

1585.

Queen, of acknowleging her for their ſovereign, on condition of obtaining her protection and aſſiſtance. Elizabeth's wiſeſt counſellors were very much divided in opinion with regard to the conduct which ſhe ſhould hold in this critical and important emergence. Some adviſed her to reject the offer of the States, and repreſented the imminent dangers, as well as injuſtice, attending the acceptance of them. They ſaid, that the ſuppreſſion of rebellious ſubjects was the common cauſe of all ſovereigns, and the encouragement of a revolt in the Flemings, might prove the example to a like pernicious practice in the Engliſh: That tho' princes were bound by the laws of the Supreme Being, not to oppreſs their ſubjects, the people never were entitled to forget all duty to their ſovereign, or transfer, from every fancy or diſguſt, or even from the juſteſt ground of complaint, their obedience to any other maſter: That the Queen, in the ſuccours hitherto afforded the Flemings, had conſidered them as labouring under oppreſſion, not as entitled to freedom; and had intended only to admoniſh Philip not to perſevere in his tyranny, without any view of raviſhing from him theſe provinces, which he enjoyed by hereditary right from his anceſtors: That her ſituation in Ireland, and even in England, would afford that powerful monarch ſufficient opportunity of retaliating upon her; and ſhe muſt henceforth expect, that, inſtead of ſecretly fomenting faction, he would openly employ his whole force in the protection and defence of the catholics. That the pope would undoubtedly unite his ſpiritual arms to the temporal ones of Spain; and that the Queen would ſoon repent her making ſo ſmall and precarious an aquiſition in foreign countries, by expoſing her own dominions to ſuch imminent danger [q].

[q] Camden, p. 507. Bentivoglio, part 2. lib. iv.

OTHER

CHAP. XLI. 1585.

OTHER counſellors of Elizabeth maintained a contrary opinion. They aſſerted, that the Queen had not even from the beginning of her reign, but certainly had not at preſent, the choice, whether ſhe would embrace friendſhip or hoſtility with Philip: That by the whole tenor of that prince's conduct it appeared, that his ſole aims were, the extenſion of his empire, and the utter extermination of the proteſtants, under the ſpecious pretence of maintaining the catholic faith: That the provocations which ſhe had already given him, joined to his general ſcheme of policy, would for ever render him her implacable enemy; and as ſoon as he had ſubdued his revolted ſubjects, he would undoubtedly fall, with the whole force of his united empire, on her defenceleſs ſtate: That the only queſtion was, whether ſhe would maintain a war, abroad and ſupported by allies, or wait till the ſubjection of all the confederates of England, ſhould give her enemies leiſure to begin their hoſtilities in the bowels of that kingdom: That the revolted provinces, tho' in a declining condition, poſſeſſed ſtill conſiderable force; and by the aſſiſtance of England, by the advantages of their ſituation, and by their inveterate antipathy to Philip, might ſtill be enabled to maintain the conteſt againſt the Spaniſh monarchy: That their maritime power, united to the Queen's, would give her entire ſecurity on that ſide from which alone ſhe could be aſſaulted, and would even enable her to make inroads on Philip's dominions, both in Europe and the Indies: That a war which was neceſſary, could never be unjuſt; and ſelf-defence was concerned, as well in warding certain dangers at a diſtance, as in repelling any immediate invaſion: And that ſince hoſtility with Spain was the unavoidable conſequence of the preſent intereſts and ſituations of the two monarchies, it was better to compenſate that danger and loſs by the acquiſition of ſuch important provinces to the Engliſh empire[r].

[r] Camden, ibid. Bentivoglio, ibid.

AMIDST

CHAP. XLI.

1585.

AMIDST theſe oppoſite councils, the Queen, apprehenſive of the conſequences attending each extreme, was inclined to ſteer a middle courſe; and tho' ſuch conduct is ſeldom prudent, ſhe was not, in this reſolution, guided by any prejudice or affection. She determined not to ſee, without oppoſition, the total ruin of the revolted provinces, whoſe intereſts ſhe deemed ſo cloſely connected with her own: But foreſeeing, that the acceptance of their ſovereignty would engage her to employ her whole force in their defence, would give umbrage to her neighbours, and would expoſe her to the reproach of ambition and uſurpation, imputations which ſhe had hitherto carefully avoided, ſhe immediately rejected this offer. She concluded a league with the States on the following conditions: That ſhe ſhould ſend over an army to their aſſiſtance, of five thouſand foot and a thouſand horſe, and pay them during the war; that the general, and two others, whom ſhe ſhould appoint, ſhould be admitted into the council of the States; that neither party ſhould make peace without the conſent of the other; that her expences ſhould be refunded after the concluſion of the war; and that the towns of Fluſhing and the Brille, with the caſtle of Rammekins, ſhould, in the mean time, be conſigned into her hands, by way of ſecurity.

THE Queen knew that this meaſure would immediately engage her in open hoſtilities with Philip; yet was ſhe not terrified with the view of the preſent greatneſs of that ambitious monarch. The continent of Spain was at that time rich and populous; and the late addition of Portugal, beſides ſecuring internal tranquillity, had annexed an opulent kingdom to Philip's dominions, had made him maſter of many ſettlements in the Eaſt-Indies, and of the whole commerce of thoſe regions, and had mightily increaſed his naval power, in which he was before chiefly deficient. All the princes of Italy, even the pope and the court of Rome, were

were reduced to a kind of ſubjection under him, and ſeemed to poſſeſs their ſovereignty on very precarious and uncertain terms. The Auſtrian branch in Germany, with their dependant principalities, was cloſely connected with him, and was ready to ſupply him with troops for every enterprize. All the treaſures of the Weſt-Indies were in his poſſeſſion; and the preſent ſcarcity of the precious metals in every country of Europe, rendered the influence of his riches the more forcible and extenſive. The Netherlands ſeemed on the point of relapſing into ſervitude; and ſmall hopes were entertained of their withſtanding thoſe numerous and veteran armies which, under the command of the moſt experienced generals, he employed againſt them. Even France, which was wont to counterballance the Auſtrian greatneſs, had loſt all her force from inteſtine commotions; and as the catholics, the ruling party, were cloſely connected with him, he rather expected thence an augmentation, than a diminution, of his power. Upon the whole, ſuch prepoſſeſſions where every where entertained concerning the force of the Spaniſh monarchy, that the King of Sweden, when he heard that Elizabeth had openly embraced the defence of the revolted Flemings, ſcrupled not to ſay, that ſhe had now taken the diadem from her head, and had adventured it upon the doubtful chance of war[a]. Yet was this princeſs rather cautious than enterprizing in her natural temper: She ever needed more to be impelled by the vigour, than reſtrained by the prudence of her miniſters: But when ſhe ſaw an evident neceſſity, ſhe braved danger with magnanimous courage; and truſting to her own conſummate wiſdom, and to the affections, however divided, of her people, ſhe prepared herſelf to reſiſt, and even to aſſault, the whole force of the catholic monarch.

CHAP. XLI. 1585.

[a] Camden, p. 508.

CHAP. XLI.

1585.

THE earl of Leiceſter was ſent over to Holland, at the head of the Engliſh auxiliary forces. He carried with him a ſplendid retinue; being accompanied with the young earl of Eſſex, his ſon in-law, the lords Audley and North, Sir William Ruſſeil, Sir Thomas Shirley, Sir Arthur Baſſet, Sir Walter Waller, Sir Gervaſe Clifton, and a ſelect troop of five hundred gentlemen. He was received, on his arrival at Fluſhing, by his nephew, Sir Philip Sidney, the governor; and every town thro' which he paſſed, expreſſed their joy by acclamations, and triumphal arches, as if his preſence, and the Queen's protection, had brought them the moſt certain deliverance. The States, deſirous of engaging Elizabeth ſtill farther in their defence, and knowing the intereſt which Leiceſter poſſeſſed with her, conferred on him the title of governor and captain-general of the United Provinces, appointed a guard to attend him, and treated him, in ſome reſpects, as their ſovereign. But this ſtep had a contrary effect to what they expected. The Queen was diſpleaſed with the artifice of the States, and the ambition of Leiceſter. She reprimanded both of them very ſeverely by letters; and it was with ſome difficulty, that, after many humble ſubmiſſions, they were able to appeaſe her.

Hoſtilities with Spain.

AMERICA was regarded as the chief ſource of Philip's power, as well as the moſt defenceleſs part of his dominions; and Elizabeth finding that an open breach with that monarch was unavoidable, reſolved not to leave him unmoleſted on that quarter. The great ſucceſs of the Spaniards and Portugueze in both Indies had excited a ſpirit of emulation in England; and as the ſucceſs of commerce, ſtill more of planting colonies, is ſlow and gradual, it was happy, that a war, in this critical age, had opened a more flattering proſpect to the avarice and ambition of the Engliſh, and had tempted them, by the view of ſudden and exorbitant profit, to

engage

engage in naval enterprizes. A fleet of twenty sail was equipped to attack the Spaniard in the West-Indies: Two thousand three hundred volunteers, besides seamen, engaged on board of it: Sir Francis Drake was appointed admiral; Christopher Carlisle commander of the land forces. They took St. Jago, near Cape Verde, by surprize; and found in it plenty of provisions, but no riches. They sailed to Hispaniola; and easily making themselves master of St. Domingo by assault, obliged the inhabitants to ransom their houses by a sum of money. Carthagena fell next into their hands, after some more resistance, and was treated in the same manner. They burned St. Anthony and St. Helens, two towns on the coast of Florida. Sailing along the coast of Virginia, they found the small remains of a colony which had been planted there by Sir Walter Raleigh, and which had gone extremely to decay. This was the first attempt of the English to form such settlements; and tho' they have since surpassed all European nations, both in the situation of their colonies, and in the noble principles of liberty and industry, on which they are founded; they had here been so unsuccessful, that the miserable planters abandoned their settlements, and prevailed on Drake to carry them with him to England. He returned with so much riches as encouraged the volunteers, and with such accounts of the Spanish weakness in those countries as served extremely to inflame the spirits of the nation to future enterprizes. The great mortality which the climate had produced in his fleet, was, as is usual, but a feeble restraint on the avidity and sanguine hopes of young adventurers[1]. It is thought that Drake's fleet first introduced the use of tobacco into England.

1585.

1586. January.

THE enterprizes of Leicester were much less successful than those of Drake. This man possessed neither courage nor capacity, equal to the trusts reposed

[1] Camden, p. 509.

XLI. 1586.

in him by the Queen; and as he was the only bad choice ſhe made for any conſiderable employment, men naturally believed, that ſhe had here been influenced by an affection ſtill more partial than that of friendſhip. He gained at firſt ſome advantage in an action againſt the Spaniards; and threw ſuccours into Grave, by which that place was enabled to make a vigorous defence: But the cowardice of the governor, Van Hemert, rendered all theſe efforts uſeleſs. He capitulated after a very feeble reſiſtance; and being tried for his conduct, ſuffered a capital puniſhment from the ſentence of a court martial. The Prince of Parma next undertook the ſiege of Venlo, which was ſurrendered to him, after ſome reſiſtance. The fate of Nuys was more diſmal; being taken by aſſault, while the garriſon was treating of a capitulation. Rhimberg, which was garriſoned by twelve hundred Engliſh, under the command of colonel Morgan, was afterwards beſieged by the Spaniards; and Leiceſter, thinking himſelf too weak to attempt raiſing the ſiege, endeavoured to draw off the prince of Parma by forming ſome other enterprize. He firſt attacked Doeſberg, and ſucceeded: He then ſat down before Zutphen, which the Spaniſh general thought ſo important a place, that he haſtened to its relief. He made the marqueſs of Guaſto advance with a convoy, which he intended to throw into the place. They were favoured by a fog; but falling by chance on a body of Engliſh cavalry, a furious action enſued, in which the Spaniards were worſted, and the marqueſs of Gonzaga, an Italian nobleman of great reputation and family, was ſlain. The purſuit was ſtopped by the advance of the prince of Parma with the main body of the Spaniſh army; and the Engliſh cavalry, on their return from the field, found their advantage more than compenſated by the loſs of Sir Philip Sidney, who, being mortally wounded in the action, was carried off by the ſoldiers, and ſoon after died. This perſon is

described by the writers of that age as the most perfect model of an accomplished gentleman which was ever formed even by the wanton imagination of poetry or fiction. Virtuous conduct, polite conversation, heroic valour, and elegant erudition, all concurred to render him the ornament and delight of the English court; and as the credit which he possessed with the Queen and the earl of Leicester, was wholly employed in the encouragement of genius and literature, his praises have been transmitted with advantage to posterity. No person was so low as not to become an object of his humanity. After this last action, while he was lying on the field, mangled with wounds, a bottle of water was brought him to relieve his thirst; but observing a soldier near him in a like miserable condition, he said, *This man's necessity is still greater than mine:* And resigned to him the bottle of water. The King of Scots, struck with admiration of Sidney's virtue, celebrated his memory by a copy of Latin verses, which he composed on occasion of the death of that young hero.

CHAP. XLI. 1586.

The English, tho' a long peace had deprived them of all experience, were strongly possessed of military genius; and the advantages gained by the prince of Parma were not attributed to the superior bravery and discipline of the Spaniards, but solely to the misconduct of Leicester. The States were much discontented with his management of the war; but still more with his arbitrary and imperious conduct; and at the end of the campaign, they applied to him for a redress of all their grievances. But Leicester, without giving them any satisfaction, departed soon after for England [u].

The Queen, while she provoked so powerful an enemy as the King of Spain, was not forgetful to secure herself on the side of Scotland; and she endeavoured both to cultivate the friendship and alliance of her kins-

[u] Camden, p. 512. Bentivoglio, part 2. lib. iv.

man,

CHAP. XLI.

1586.

man, James, and to remove all grounds of quarrel between them. An attempt which she had made some time before, was not well calculated to gain the confidence of that prince. She dispatched Wotton as her ambassador to Scotland; but tho' she gave him private instructions with regard to her affairs, she informed James, that when she had any political business to discuss with him, she would employ another minister; that this man was not fitted for serious negociations; and that her chief purpose in sending him, was to entertain the King with witty and facetious conversation, and to partake without reserve of his pleasures and amusements. Wotton was master of profound dissimulation, and knew how to cover, under the appearance of a careless gaiety, the deepest designs, and most dangerous artifices. When but a youth of twenty, he had been employed by his uncle, Dr. Wotton, ambassador in France during the reign of Mary, to ensnare the constable, Montmorency; and had not his purpose been frustrated by pure accident, his cunning had prevailed over all the caution and experience of that aged minister. It is no wonder, that, after years had so much improved him in all arts of deceit, he should gain an ascendant over a young prince, of so open and unguarded a temper as James, especially when the Queen's recommendation prepared the way for his artifices. He was admitted into all the pleasures of the King; made himself master of his secrets; and had so much the more authority with him in political transactions, as he did not seem to pay the least attention or regard to these matters. The Scots ministers, who observed the growing interest of this man, endeavoured to acquire his friendship; and scrupled not to sacrifice to his intrigues the most essential interests of their master. Elizabeth's usual jealousy,

jouſies with regard to her heirs began now to be levelled againſt James; and as that prince had attained the years proper for marriage, ſhe was apprehenſive, leſt, by being ſtrengthened with children and alliances, he ſhould acquire the greater intereſt and authority with her Engliſh ſubjects. She directed Wotton to form a ſecret concert with ſome Scots noblemen, and to procure their promiſe, that James, during three years, ſhould not, on any account, be permitted to marry. In conſequence of this view, they endeavoured to embroil him with the King of Denmark, who had ſent ambaſſadors to Scotland, on pretence of demanding the reſtitution of the Orkneys, but really with a view of opening a propoſal of marriage between James and his daughter. Wotton is ſaid to have employed his intrigues to purpoſes ſtill more dangerous. He formed a conſpiracy with ſome malecontents, to ſeize the perſon of the King, and to deliver him into the hands of Elizabeth, who would probably have denied all concurrence in the deſign, but who would have been careful to retain him in perpetual thraldom, if not captivity. The conſpiracy was diſcovered, and Wotton fled haſtily from Scotland, without taking leave of the King [x].

JAMES's ſituation obliged him to diſſemble his reſentment of this traiterous attempt, and his natural temper inclined him ſoon to forgive and forget it. The Queen found no difficulty to renew the negotiations for a ſtrict alliance between Scotland and England; and the more effectually to gain the prince's affections, ſhe granted him a penſion, equivalent to his claim on the inheritance of his grandmother the counteſs of Lenox, lately deceaſed [y]. A league was formed between Elizabeth and James, for the mutual defence of their dominions, and of their religion, now menaced

[x] Melvil. [y] Spotſwood, p. 351.

by

CHAP. XLI. 1586.

by the open combination of all the catholic powers of Europe. It was ſtipulated, that if Elizabeth was invaded, James ſhould aid her with a body of two thouſand horſe and five thouſand foot; that Elizabeth, in a like caſe, ſhould ſend to his aſſiſtance three thouſand horſe and ſix thouſand foot; that the charge of theſe armies ſhould be defrayed by the prince who demanded aſſiſtance; that if the invaſion ſhould be made upon England, within ſixty miles of the frontiers of Scotland, this latter kingdom ſhould march its whole force to the aſſiſtance of the former; and that the preſent league ſhould ſuperſede all former alliances of either ſtate with any foreign kingdom, ſo far as religion was concerned [a].

By this league James ſecured himſelf againſt all attempts from abroad, opened a way for acquiring the confidence and affection of the Engliſh, and might entertain ſome proſpect of domeſtic tranquillity, which, ſo long as he lived on bad terms with Elizabeth, he could never expect long to enjoy. Beſides the turbulent diſpoſition, and inveterate feuds of the nobility, ancient maladies of the Scots government, the ſpirit of fanaticiſm had introduced a new diſorder; ſo much the more dangerous, as religion, when corrupted by falſe opinion, is not reſtrained by any rules of morality, and is even ſcarcely to be accounted for in its operations, by any principles of ordinary conduct and policy. The inſolence of the Scots preachers, who triumphed in their dominion over the populace, had, at this time, reached an extreme height; and they carried their arrogance ſo far, not only againſt the King, but againſt the Parliament, and the whole civil power, that they dared to excommunicate the archbiſhop of St. Andrews, becauſe he had been active for promoting a law which reſtrained their ſeditious ſer-

[a] Ibid. p. 349. Camden, p. 513. Rymer, tom. XV. p. 803.
[b] Spotſwood, p. 345, 346.

mons:

mons[a]: Nor could that prelate ſave himſelf any way from this terrible ſentence, but by renouncing all pretenſions to eccleſiaſtical authority. One Gibſon ſaid in the pulpit, that captain James Stuart (meaning the late earl of Arran) and his wife, Jezabel, had been deemed the chief perſecutors of the church; but it was now ſeen, that the King himſelf was the great offender: And for this crime the preacher denounced againſt him, the curſe which fell on Jeroboam, that he ſhould die childleſs, and be the laſt of his race[b].

THE ſecretary, perceiving the King ſo much moleſted with eccleſiaſtical affairs, and with the refractory diſpoſition of the clergy, adviſed him to leave them to their own courſes: For that in a ſhort time they would become ſo intolerable, that the people would riſe againſt them, and chace them out of the country. "True," replied the King: "If I purpoſed to undo "the church and religion, your counſel were good: "But my intention is to maintain both; therefore "cannot I ſuffer the clergy to follow ſuch a conduct, "as will in the end bring religion into contempt[c]."

[b] Ibid. p. 344. [c] Ibid. p. 348.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI. 1586.

by the open combination of all the catholic powers of Europe. It was ſtipulated, that if Elizabeth was invaded, James ſhould aid her with a body of two thouſand horſe and five thouſand foot; that Elizabeth, in a like caſe, ſhould ſend to his aſſiſtance three thouſand horſe and ſix thouſand foot; that the charge of theſe armies ſhould be defrayed by the prince who demanded aſſiſtance; that if the invaſion ſhould be made upon England, within ſixty miles of the frontiers of Scotland, this latter kingdom ſhould march its whole force to the aſſiſtance of the former; and that the preſent league ſhould ſuperſede all former alliances of either ſtate with any foreign kingdom, ſo far as religion was concerned [z].

By this league James ſecured himſelf againſt all attempts from abroad, opened a way for acquiring the confidence and affection of the Engliſh, and might entertain ſome proſpect of domeſtic tranquillity, which, ſo long as he lived on bad terms with Elizabeth, he could never expect long to enjoy. Beſides the turbulent diſpoſition, and inveterate feuds of the nobility, ancient maladies of the Scots government, the ſpirit of fanaticiſm had introduced a new diſorder; ſo much the more dangerous, as religion, when corrupted by falſe opinion, is not reſtrained by any rules of morality, and is even ſcarcely to be accounted for in its operations, by any principles of ordinary conduct and policy. The inſolence of the Scots preachers, who triumphed in their dominion over the populace, had, at this time, reached an extreme height; and they carried their arrogance ſo far, not only againſt the King, but againſt the Parliament, and the whole civil power, that they dared to excommunicate the archbiſhop of St. Andrews, becauſe he had been active for promoting a law which reſtrained their ſeditious ſer-

[z] Ibid. p. 349. Camden, p. 513. Rymer, tom. XV. p. 803.
[a] Spotſwood, p. 345, 346.

mons:

mons[a]: Nor could that prelate ſave himſelf any way from this terrible ſentence, but by renouncing all pretenſions to eccleſiaſtical authority. One Gibſon ſaid in the pulpit, that captain James Stuart (meaning the late earl of Arran) and his wife, Jezabel, had been deemed the chief perſecutors of the church; but it was now ſeen, that the King himſelf was the great offender: And for this crime the preacher denounced againſt him, the curſe which fell on Jeroboam, that he ſhould die childleſs, and be the laſt of his race[b].

THE ſecretary, perceiving the King ſo much moleſted with eccleſiaſtical affairs, and with the refractory diſpoſition of the clergy, adviſed him to leave them to their own courſes: For that in a ſhort time they would become ſo intolerable, that the people would riſe againſt them, and chace them out of the country. "True," replied the King: "If I purpoſed to undo "the church and religion, your counſel were good: "But my intention is to maintain both; therefore "cannot I ſuffer the clergy to follow ſuch a conduct, "as will in the end bring religion into contempt[c]."

[b] Ibid. p. 344. [c] Ibid. p. 342.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLII.

Zeal of the Catholics.—Babington's conspiracy.—Mary assents to the conspiracy.—The conspirators seized and executed.—Resolution to try the Queen of Scots.—The commissioners prevailed on her to submit to the trial.—The trial.—Sentence against Mary.—Interposition of King James.—Reasons for the execution of Mary.—The execution.—Mary's character.—The Queen's affected sorrow.—Drake destroyes the Spanish fleet at Cadiz.—Philip projects the invasion of England.—The Invincible Armada.—Preparations in England.—The Armada arrives in the Channel.—Defeated.—A Parliament.—Expedition against Portugal.—Scots affairs.

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

THE dangers which arose from the character, principles, and pretensions of the Queen of Scots, had engaged, very early, Elizabeth to consult, in her treatment of that unfortunate princess, the dictates of jealousy and politics, rather than of friendship or generosity: Resentment of this usage had pushed Mary into enterprizes, which had very nearly threatned the repose and authority of Elizabeth: The rigour and restraint, which were thence redoubled upon the captive Queen [d], still impelled her to attempt greater extremities; and while her impatience of confinement, her revenge [e], and her high spirit concurred with re-

[d] Digges, p. 139. Haynes, p. 607.

[e] Mary's extreme animosity against Elizabeth may easily be conceived, and broke out, about this time, in an incident, which may appear curious. While the former Queen was kept in custody by the earl of Shrewsbury, she lived during a long time in great intimacy with the countess; but that lady entertaining jealousy of an armour between her and the earl, their

ligious

ligious zeal, and the ſuggeſtions of deſperate bigots, ſhe was at laſt engaged in deſigns, which afforded her enemies, who waited for the opportunity, a pretence or reaſon for effectuating her final ruin.

friendſhip was converted into enmity; and Mary took a method of revenge, which at once gratified her ſpite againſt the counteſs and that againſt Elizabeth. She wrote to the Queen informing her of all the malicious ſcandalous ſtories, which, ſhe ſaid, the counteſs of Shrewſbury had reported of her: That Elizabeth had given a promiſe of marriage to a certain perſon, whom ſhe afterwards often admitted to her bed: That ſhe had been equally indulgent to Simier, the French agent, and to the duke of Anjou: That Hatton was alſo one of her paramours, who was even diſguſted with her exceſſive love and fondneſs: That tho' ſhe was on other occaſions avaritious to the laſt degree, as well as ungrateful, and kind to very few, ſhe ſpared no expence in gratifying her amorous paſſions: That notwithſtanding her licentious amours, ſhe was not made like other women; and all thoſe who courted her marriage would in the end be diſappointed: That ſhe was ſo conceited of her beauty, as to ſwallow the moſt extravagant flattery from her courtiers, who could not, on theſe occaſions, forbear even ſneering at her for her folly: That it was uſual for them to tell her, that the luſtre of her beauty dazled them like that of the ſun, and they could not behold it with a fixed eye: She added, that the counteſs had ſaid, that Mary's beſt policy would be to engage her ſon to make love to the Queen; nor was there any danger that ſuch a propoſal would be taken for mockery; ſo ridiculous was the opinion which ſhe had entertained of her own charms. She pretended, that the counteſs had repreſented her as no leſs odious in her temper than profligate in her manners, and abſurd in her vanity: That ſhe had ſo beaten a young woman of the name of Scudamore as to break that lady's finger; and in order to cover over the matter, it was pretended, that the accident had proceeded from the the fall of a candleſtick: That ſhe had cut another acroſs the hand with a knife, who had been ſo unfortunate as to offend her. Mary added, that the counteſs had informed her, that Elizabeth had ſubordned Rolſtone to pretend friendſhip to her, in order to debauch her, and thereby throw infamy on her rival. See Murden's State Papers, p. 558. This imprudent and malicious letter was wrote a very little before the detection of Queen Mary's conſpiracy; and contributed, no doubt, to render the proceedings againſther more rigorous. How far all theſe imputations againſt Elizabeth can be credited, may perhaps appear doubtful: But her extreme fondneſs for Leiceſter, Hatton, and Eſſex, not to mention Mountjoy and others, with the curious paſſages between her and admiral Seymour, contained in Haynes, render her chaſtity very ſuſpicious. Her ſelf-conceit with regard to beauty, we know from other undoubted authority, to have been extravagant. Even when ſhe was a very old woman, ſhe allowed her courtiers to flatter her with regard to her *excellent beauties*. Birch, vol. II. p. 442, 443.

THE

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

Zeal of the catholics.

THE Engliſh ſeminary at Rheims had wrought themſelves up to a high pitch of rage and animoſity againſt the Queen. The recent perſecutions, from which they had eſcaped: The new rigours, which, they knew, awaited them in the courſe of their miſſions: The liberty which for the preſent they enjoyed of declaiming againſt that princeſs: And the contagion of religious fury, which every where ſurrounded them in France: All theſe cauſes had obliterated with them every maxim of common ſenſe, and every principle of morals or humanity. Intoxicated with admiration of the omnipotence and infallibility of the pope, they revered his bull by which he excommunicated and depoſed the Queen; and ſome of them had gone to that height of extravagance, as to aſſert, that that performance had been immediately dictated by the Holy Ghoſt. The aſſaſſination of heretical ſovereigns, and of that princeſs in particular, was repreſented as the moſt meritorious of all enterprizes; and they taught, that whoever periſhed in ſuch pious attempts enjoyed without diſpute the glorious and never-fading crown of martyrdom. By ſuch doctrines, they inſtigated John Savage, a man of deſperate courage, who had ſerved ſome years in the Low Countries, under the prince of Parma, to attempt the life of Elizabeth; and this aſſaſſin, having made a vow to perſevere in his deſign, was ſent over to England, and recommended to the confidence of the more zealous catholics.

Her paſſionate temper may alſo be proved from many lively inſtances; and it was not unuſual with her to beat her maids of honour. See the Sydney Papers, vol. II. p. 38. The blow ſhe gave to Eſſex before the privy council is another inſtance. Had this Queen been born in a private ſtation, ſhe would not have been very amiable: But her abſolute authority, at the ſame time that it gave an uncontroled ſwing to her violent paſſions, enabled her to compenſate for her infirmities by many great and ſignal virtues.

ABOUT

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

About the same time, John Ballard, a priest of that seminary, had returned to Paris from his mission in England and Scotland; and as he had discovered a spirit of mutiny and rebellion to be very prevalent among the catholic devotees in these countries, he had founded on that disposition the project of dethroning Elizabeth, and of restoring by force of arms the exercise of the antient religion in England [f]. The situation of affairs abroad seemed favourable to this enterprize: The pope, the Spaniard, the duke of Guise, the prince, created by the pope duke, of Parma, concurring in interests, had formed a resolution to make some attempt upon the Queen: And Mendoza, the Spanish ambassador at Paris, strongly encouraged Ballard to hope for succours from these princes. Charles Paget alone, a zealous catholic and a devoted partizan of the Queen of Scots, being well acquainted with the prudence, vigour, and general popularity of Elizabeth, always maintained, that so long as that princess was allowed to live, it was in vain to expect any success from an enterprize upon England. Ballard, persuaded of this truth, saw more clearly the necessity of executing the design, formed at Rheims: He came over to England in the disguise of a soldier, and assumed the name of captain Fortescue: And he bent his endeavours to effectuate at once the project of an assassination, an insurrection and an invasion [g].

Babington's conspiracy.

The first person, to whom he addressed himself, was Anthony Babington of Dethic in the county of Derby. This young gentleman was of a good family, possessed a plentiful fortune, had discovered an excellent capacity, and was accomplished in literature beyond most of his years or station. Being zealously devoted to the catholic communion, he had secretly made a journey to Paris some time before; and had fallen into intimacy with Thomas Morgan, a bigotted fugitive from Eng-

[f] Murden's State Papers, p. 517. [g] Camden, p. 515.

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

gland, and with the biſhop of Glaſgow, Mary's ambaſſador to the court of France. By continually extolling the amiable accompliſhments and heroical virtues of that princeſs, they inflamed the unguarded mind of young Babington to make ſome attempt for her ſervice; and they employed every principle of ambition, gallantry, and religious zeal to give him a contempt of thoſe dangers, which attended any enterprize againſt the vigilant government of Elizabeth. Finding him well diſpoſed for their purpoſe, they ſent him back to England, and ſecretly, unknown to himſelf, recommended him to the Queen of Scots as a perſon worth engaging in her ſervice. She wrote him a letter, full of friendſhip and confidence; and Babington, ſanguine in his temper and zealous in his principles, thought, that theſe advances now bound him in honour to devote himſelf entirely to the ſervice of that unfortunate princes. During ſome time, he had found means of conveying to her all her foreign correſpondence; but after ſhe was put under the cuſtody of Sir Amias Paulet, and reduced to a more rigorous confinement, he experienced ſo much difficulty and danger in rendering her this ſervice, that he had deſiſted from every attempt of that nature.

When Ballard began to open his intentions to Babington, he found his zeal ſuſpended, not extinguiſhed: His former ardour revived on the mention of any enterprize, which ſeemed to promiſe ſucceſs in the cauſe of Mary or of the catholic religion. He had entertained ſentiments conformable to thoſe of Paget, and repreſented the folly of all attempts, which, during the life-time of Elizabeth, could be formed againſt the eſtabliſhed religion and government of England. Ballard, encouraged by this hint, proceeded to diſcover to him the deſign undertaken by Savage[h]; and was pleaſed to obſerve, that, inſtead of being ſhocked with that project, Babington only thought it not

[h] Ibid. State Trials, p. 114.

ſecure

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

ſecure enough, when entruſted to one ſingle hand, and propoſed to join four others with Savage in this deſperate and bloody enterprize.

In proſecution of theſe views, Babington employed himſelf in encreaſing the number of his aſſociates; and he ſecretly drew into the conſpiracy many catholic gentlemen, diſcontented with the preſent government. Barnwel, of a noble family in Ireland, Charnoc, a gentleman of Lancaſhire, and Abbington, whoſe father had been cofferer to the houſhould, readily undertook the aſſaſſination of the Queen. Charles Tilney the heir of a very antient family, and Titchborne of Southampton, when the deſign was propoſed to them, expreſſed ſome ſcruples, which were at laſt removed by the arguments of Babington and Ballard. Savage alone refuſed for ſome time to ſhare the glory of the enterprize with any others [1]; he challenged the whole to himſelf; and it was with ſome difficulty he was induced to depart from this prepoſterous ambition.

The delivery of the Queen of Scots, at the very ſame inſtant, when Elizabeth ſhould be aſſaſſinated, was requiſite for effecting the purpoſe of the conſpirators; and Babington undertook, with a party of an hundred horſe, to attack her guards, while ſhe ſhould be taking the air on horſeback. In this enterprize, he engaged Edward Windſor, brother to the lord of that name, Thomas Saliſbury, Robert Gage, John Travers, John Jones, and Henry Donne; moſt of them men of family and intereſt. The conſpirators much wanted, but could not find, any nobleman of name, whom they might place at the head of their enterprize; but they truſted, that the great events, of the Queen's death and Mary's delivery, would rouze all the zealous catholics to arms; and that foreign forces, taking advantage of the general confuſion, would eaſily fix

[1] State Trials, vol. I. p. 111.

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

the Queen of Scots on the throne, and re-eſtabliſh the antient religion.

THESE deſperate projects had not eſcaped the vigilance of Elizabeth's council, particularly of Walſingham, ſecretary of ſtate. That artful miniſter had engaged Maud, a catholic prieſt, whom he retained in pay, to attend Ballard in his journey to France, and had thereby got a hint of the deſigns, entertained by the fugitives. Polly, another of his ſpies, had found means to inſinuate himſelf among the conſpirators in England; and tho' not entirely truſted, had obtained ſome inſight into their dangerous ſecrets. But the bottom of the conſpiracy was never fully known, till Gifford, a ſeminary prieſt, came over, and made a tender of his ſervice to Walſingham. By his means, the diſcovery became of the utmoſt importance, and involved the fate of Mary, as well as of thoſe zealous partizans of that princeſs.

BABINGTON and his aſſociates, having laid ſuch a ſcheme, as, they thought, promiſed infallible ſucceſs, were impatient to communicate the deſign to the Queen of Scots, and to obtain her approbation and concurrence. For this ſervice, they employed Gifford, who immediately applied to Walſingham, that the intereſt of that miniſter might forward his ſecret correſpondence with Mary. Walſingham propoſed the matter to Paulet, and deſired him to connive at Gifford's corrupting one of his ſervants: But Paulet was averſe to the introducing ſuch a pernicious precedent into his family, and deſired, that they would rather think of ſome other expedient. Gifford found a brewer, who ſupplied the family with ale; and bribed him to convey letters to the captive Queen. The letters, by Paulet's connivance, were thruſt thro' a chink in the wall; and anſwers were returned by the ſame conveyance.

BALLARD

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

BALLARD and Babington were at first diffident of Gifford's fidelity; and to make trial of him, they gave him only blank papers made up like letters: But finding by the answers, that these had been faithfully delivered, they laid aside all farther scruple, and conveyed by his hands the most criminal and dangerous parts of their conspiracy. Babington informed Mary of the design laid for a foreign invasion, the plan of an insurrection at home, the scheme for her delivery, and the conspiracy for assassinating the usurper, by six noble gentlemen, as he termed them, all of them his private friends, who, from the zeal, which they bore to the catholic cause and her majesty's service, would undertake the *tragical execution*. Mary replied, that she approved highly of the design, that the gentlemen might expect all the rewards, which it should ever be in her power to confer, and that the death of Elizabeth was a necessary circumstance, before any attempts were made either for her own delivery or an insurrection [k]. These letters, with others to Mendoza, Charles Paget, the archbishop of Glasgow, and Sir Francis Ingelfield, were carrield by Gifford to secretary Walsingham; were decyphered by the art of Philips, his clerk; and copies taken of them. Walsingham employed a new artifice, in order to obtain full insight into the plot: He subjoined to a letter of Mary's a postscript in the same cypher; in which he made her desire Babington to inform her of the names of the six conspirators. The indiscretion of Babington furnished Walsingham with still another means of detection as well as of defence. That gentleman had made a picture be drawn, where he himself was represented standing amidst the six assassins; and a motto was subjoined, expressing, that their common perils were the band of their confederacy. A copy of this picture was brought to Elizabeth, that she might know the assassin

Mary assents to the conspiracy.

[k] State Trials, vol. I. p. 135. Camden, p. 515.

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

and guard herſelf againſt their approach to her perſon.

MEANWHILE, Babington, anxious to enſure and haſten the foreign ſuccours, reſolved to diſpatch Ballard into France; and he procured for him, under a feigned name, a licence to travel. In order to remove from himſelf all ſuſpicion, he applied to Walſingham, pretended great zeal for the Queen's ſervice, offered to go abroad, and promiſed to employ that confidence, which he had gained among the catholics, to the detection and diſappointment of their conſpiracies. Walſingham commended his loyal purpoſes; and promiſing his own council and aſſiſtance in the execution of them, ſtill fed him with hopes, and maintained a cloſe correſpondence with him. A warrant, meanwhile, was iſſued for ſeizing Ballard; and this incident joined to the conſciouſneſs of guilt, begot in all the conſpirators the utmoſt anxiety and concern. Some adviſed that they ſhould immediately make their eſcape: Others propoſed, that Savage and Charnoc ſhould without delay execute their purpoſe againſt Elizabeth; and Babington, in proſecution of this ſcheme, furniſhed Savage with money, that he might buy good cloaths, and have thereby the more eaſy acceſs to the Queen's perſon. Next day, they began to apprehend, that they had taken the alarm too haſtily; and Babington, having renewed his correſpondence with Walſingham, was perſuaded by that ſubtle miniſter, that the ſeizure of Ballard had proceeded entirely from the uſual diligence of informers in the detection of popiſh and ſeminary prieſts. He even conſented to take ſecretly lodgings in Walſingham's houſe, that they might have more frequent conferences together, before his intended departure for France: But obſerving, that he was watched and guarded, he made his eſcape, and gave the alarm to the other conſpirators. They all took to flight, covered themſelves with ſeveral diſguiſes,

1586.

guiſes, and lay concealed in woods or barns; but were ſoon diſcovered and thrown into priſon. In their examinations, they contradicted each other; and the leaders were obliged to make a full confeſſion of the truth. Fourteen were condemned and executed: Of whom, ſeven acknowleged the crime on their trial; the reſt were convicted by evidence.

The conſpirators ſeized and executed.

September.

The leſſer conſpirators being diſpatched, meaſures were taken for the trial and conviction of the Queen of Scots; on whoſe account, and by whoſe concurrence, all theſe attempts had been made againſt the life of the Queen, and the tranquillity of the kingdom. Some of Elizabeth's counſellors were averſe to this procedure; and thought, that the cloſe confinement of a woman, who was become very ſickly, and who would probably put a ſpeedy end to their anxiety by her natural death, might give ſufficient ſecurity to the government, without attempting a meaſure of which there ſcarcely remains any example in hiſtory. Leiceſter adviſed, that Mary ſhould be ſecretly diſpatched by poiſon; and he ſent a divine to convince Walſingham of the lawfulneſs of that action: But Walſingham declared his abhorrence of it; and inſiſted ſtill, in conjunction with the majority of the counſellors, for the open trial of the Queen of Scots. The ſituation of England, and of the Engliſh miniſters had, indeed, been hitherto not a little dangerous. No ſucceſſor of the crown was declared; but the heir of blood, to whom the people in general were likely to adhere, was, by education, an enemy to the national religion; was, from multiplied injuries, an enemy to the miniſters and principal nobility: And their perſonal ſafety, as well as the ſecurity of the government, ſeemed to hang alone on the Queen's life, who was now ſomewhat advanced in years. No wonder, therefore, that Elizabeth's counſellors knowing themſelves to be ſo obnoxious to the Queen of Scots, endeavoured to puſh every meaſure to

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

extremity againſt her; and were even more anxious than the Queen herſelf, to prevent her from ever mounting the throne of England.

THO' all England was acquainted with the detection of Babington's conſpiracy, every avenue to the Queen of Scots was ſo ſtrictly guarded, that ſhe remained in utter ignorance of the whole matter; and it was a great ſurprize to her, when Sir Thomas Gorges, by Elizabeth's orders, informed her, that all her accomplices were diſcovered and arreſted. He choſe the time for giving her this intelligence, when ſhe was mounted on horſeback to go a hunting; and ſhe was not permitted to return to her former place of abode, but was conducted from one gentleman's houſe to another, till ſhe was lodged in Fotheringay caſtle in the county of Northampton, which it was determined to make the laſt ſtage of her trial and ſufferings. Her two ſecretaries, Nau, a Frenchman, and Curle, a Scot, were immediately arreſted: All her papers were ſeized, and ſent up to the council: Above ſixty different keys to cyphers were diſcovered: There were alſo found many letters from perſons beyond ſea; and ſeveral too from Engliſh noblemen, containing expreſſions of reſpect and attachment. The Queen took no notice of this laſt diſcovery; but the perſons themſelves, knowing their correſpondence to be detected, thought that they had no other method of making atonement for their imprudence, than declaring themſelves thenceforth the moſt inveterate enemies to the Queen of Scots [1].

Reſolution to try the Queen of Scots.

IT was reſolved to try Mary not by the common ſtatutes of treaſon, but by the act which had paſſed the former year, with a view to this very event; and the Queen, in terms of that act, appointed a commiſſion, conſiſting of forty noblemen and privy-counſellors, and empowered them to examine and paſs

[1] Camden, p. 518.

ſentence

ſentence on Mary, whom ſhe denominated the late Queen of Scots, and heir to James the fifth of Scotland. The commiſſioners came to Fotheringay caſtle, and ſent to her Sir Walter Mildmay, Sir Amias Paulet, and Edward Barker, who delivered her a letter from Elizabeth informing her of the commiſſion, and of the approaching trial. Mary received the intelligence without any emotion or aſtoniſhment. She ſaid, however, that it ſeemed ſtrange to her that the Queen ſhould command her, as a ſubject, to ſubmit to a trial and examination before ſubjects: That ſhe was an abſolute independant princeſs, and would yield to nothing which might derogate either from her royal majeſty, from the ſtate of ſovereign princes, or from the dignity and rank of her ſon: That, however oppreſſed by misfortunes and calamities, her ſpirits were not yet ſo much broke, as her enemies flattered themſelves; nor would ſhe, on any account, be acceſſary to her own degradation and diſhonour: That ſhe was ignorant of the laws and ſtatutes of England; was utterly deſtitute of council; and could not conceive who were intitled to be called her peers, or could legally ſit as judges on her trial: That tho' ſhe had lived in England for many years, ſhe had lived in captivity; and not having received the protection of the laws, ſhe could not, merely by her involuntary reſidence in the country, be ſuppoſed to have ſubjected herſelf to their juriſdiction and authority: That notwithſtanding the ſuperiority of her rank, ſhe was willing to give an account of her conduct before an Engliſh Parliament; but could not view theſe commiſſioners in any other light, than as men appointed to juſtify, by ſome colour of legal proceeding, her condemnation and execution: And that ſhe warned them to look to their conſcience and their character, in trying an innocent perſon; and to reflect, that theſe tranſactions would ſomewhere be ſubject to

reviſion,

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

reviſion, and that the theatre of the whole world was much wider than the kingdom of England.

The commiſſioners prevail on her to ſubmit to the trial.

In return, the commiſſioners ſent a new deputation, informing her, that her plea, either from her royal dignity or from her impriſonment, could not be admitted; and that they were empowered to proceed againſt her, even tho' ſhe ſhould refuſe to appear before them. Burleigh, the treaſurer, and Bromley, the chancellor, employed much reaſoning to make her ſubmit to the trial; but the perſon whoſe arguments had the chief influence, was Sir Chriſtopher Hatton, vice-chamberlain. His ſpeech was to this purpoſe. "You are accuſed, Madam," ſaid he, "but not "condemned, of having conſpired the deſtruction of "our Lady and Queen anointed. You ſay, you are "a Queen: But, in ſuch a crime as this, and ſuch "a ſituation as yours, the royal dignity itſelf, neither "by the civil nor canon law, nor by the law of nature "or of nations, is exempt from judgment. If you "be innocent, you wrong your reputation in avoid-"ing a trial. We have been preſent at your pro-"teſtations of innocence; but Queen Elizabeth thinks "otherwiſe; and is heartily ſorry for the appearances "which lie againſt you. To examine, therefore, "your cauſe, ſhe has appointed commiſſioners, honou-"rable perſons, prudent and upright men, who are "ready to hear you with equity, and even with favour, "and will rejoice if you can clear yourſelf of the "imputations which have been thrown upon you. "Believe me, Madam, the Queen herſelf will rejoice, "who affirmed to me at my departure, that nothing "which ever befel her, had given her ſo much uneaſi-"neſs, as that you ſhould be ſuſpected of a concur-"rence in theſe criminal enterprizes. Laying aſide, "therefore, the fruitleſs claim of privilege from your "royal dignity, which can now avail you nothing, "truſt to the better defence of your innocence, make

"it

"it appear in open trial, and leave not upon your "memory that ſtain of infamy which muſt attend your "obſtinate ſilence on this occaſion [m]."

1586.

By this artful ſpeech, Mary was perſuaded to appear before the court; and thereby gave an appearance of legal procedure to the trial, and prevented thoſe difficulties, which the commiſſioners muſt have fallen into, had ſhe perſevered in maintaining ſo ſpecious a plea as that of her ſovereign and independant character. Her conduct in this particular muſt be regarded as the more imprudent, becauſe formerly, when Elizabeth's commiſſioners pretended not to exerciſe any juriſdiction over her, and only entered into her cauſe by her own conſent and approbation, ſhe declined juſtifying herſelf, when her honour, which ought to have been dearer to her than life, ſeemed abſolutely to require it.

On her firſt appearance before the commiſſioners, Mary, either ſenſible of her imprudence, or ſtill unwilling to degrade herſelf by ſubmitting to a trial, renewed her proteſtation againſt the authority of her judges: The chancellor anſwered her by pleading the ſupreme authority of the Engliſh laws over every one who reſided in England: And the commiſſioners accommodated matters, by ordering both her proteſtation and his anſwer to be recorded. The trial.

The lawyers of the crown then opened the charge againſt the Queen of Scots. They proved, by intercepted letters, that ſhe had allowed cardinal Allen and others to treat her as Queen of England; and that ſhe had kept a correſpondence with lord Paget and Charles Paget, in a view of engaging the Spaniards to invade the kingdom. Mary ſeemed not anxious to clear herſelf from either of theſe imputations. She only ſaid, that ſhe could not hinder others from uſing what

[m] Camden, p. 523.

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

ſtyle they pleaſed in writing to her; and that it was lawful for her to try every expedient for the recovery of her liberty.

An intercepted letter of her's to Mendoza was next produced; in which ſhe promiſed to transfer to Philip her right to the kingdom of England, if her ſon ſhould refuſe to be converted to the catholic faith; an event, ſhe ſaid, of which there was no expectation, while he remained in the hands of his Scots ſubjects[n]. Even this part of the charge, ſhe took no pains to deny, or rather ſhe ſeemed to acknowlege it. She ſaid, that ſhe had no kingdoms to diſpoſe of; yet was it lawful for her to give at her pleaſure what was her own, and ſhe was not accountable to any for her actions. She added, that ſhe had formerly rejected that propoſal from Spain, but now, ſince all her hopes in England were gone, ſhe was fully determined not to refuſe foreign aſſiſtance. There was alſo produced evidence to prove, that Allen and Parſons were at that very time negotiating by her orders in Rome the conditions of transferring her Engliſh crown to the King of Spain, and of diſinheriting her heretical ſon[o].

It is remarkable, that Mary's prejudices againſt her ſon were, at this time, carried ſo far, that ſhe had even entered into a conſpiracy againſt him, had appointed lord Claude Hamilton regent of Scotland, and had inſtigated her adherents to ſeize James's per-

n State Trials, vol. I. p. 138.

o Camden, p. 525. This evidence was that of Curle, her ſecretary, whom ſhe allowed to be a very honeſt man; and who, as well as Nau, had given proofs of his integrity, by keeping ſo long ſuch important ſecrets, from whoſe diſcovery he could have reaped the greateſt profit. Mary, after all, thought that ſhe had ſo little reaſon to complain of Curle's evidence, that ſhe took care to have him paid a conſiderable ſum by her teſtament, which ſhe wrote the day before her death. Goodal, vol. I. p. 413. Neither did ſhe forget Nau, tho' leſs ſatisfied with his conduct. Id. ibid.

ſon and deliver him into the hands of the pope or the King of Spain; whence he was never to be delivered but on the condition of his becoming catholic [p].

[p] The detail of this conſpiracy is to be found in a letter of the Queen of Scots to Charles Paget, her great confident. This letter is dated the 20th of May 1586, and is contained in Dr. Forbes's manuſcript collections, at preſent in the poſſeſſion of lord Royſton. It is a copy atteſted by Curle, Mary's ſecretary, and indorſed by lord Burleigh. What proves its authenticity beyond queſtion is that we find in Murden's Collection, p. 516, that Mary actually wrote that very day a letter to Charles Paget: And farther, ſhe mentions, in the manuſcript letter, a letter of Charles Paget's of the 10th of April: Now we find by Murden, p. 506. that Charles Paget did actually write her a letter of that date.

This violence of ſpirit is very conſiſtent with Mary's character. Her maternal affection was too weak to oppoſe the gratification of her paſſions, particularly her pride, her ambition, and her bigotry. Her ſon, having made ſome fruitleſs attempts to aſſociate her with him in the title, and having found this ſcheme impracticable, on account of the prejudices of his proteſtant ſubjects, at laſt deſiſted from that deſign, and entered into an alliance with England, without comprehending his mother. She was in ſuch a rage at this undutiful behaviour, as ſhe imagined it, that ſhe wrote to Queen Elizabeth, that ſhe no longer cared what became of him or her in the world; the greateſt ſatisfaction ſhe could have before her death was to ſee him and all his adherents become a ſignal example of tyranny, ingratitude and impiety, and undergo the vengeance of God for their wickedneſs. She would find in Chriſtendom other heirs, and doubted not to put her inheritance in ſuch hands as would retain the firmeſt hold of it. She cared not, after taking this revenge, what became of her body: The quickeſt death would then be the moſt agreeable to her. And ſhe aſſured her, that, if he perſevered, ſhe would diſown him for her ſon, would give him her malediction, would diſinherit him, as well of his preſent poſſeſſions as of all he could expect by her; abandoning him not only to her ſubjects to treat him as they had done her, but to all ſtrangers to ſubdue and conquer him. It was in vain to employ menaces againſt her: The fear of death or other misfortune would never induce her to make one ſtep or pronounce one ſyllable beyond what ſhe had determined: She would rather periſh with honour, in maintaining the dignity, to which God had raiſed her, than degrade herſelf by the leaſt puſillanimity, or act what was unworthy of her ſtation and of her race. Murden, p. 566, 567,

James ſaid to Courcelles, the French ambaſſador, that he had ſeen a letter under her own hand, where ſhe threatned to diſinherit him, and ſaid that he might betake him to the lordſhip of Darnley: For that was all he had by his father. *Courcelles' Letter, a MS. of Dr. Campbel's.* There is in Jebb, vol. II. p. 573, a letter of her's where ſhe throws out the ſame menace againſt him.

THE

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

THE only part of the charge, which Mary positively denied, was her concurrence in the design of assassinating Queen Elizabeth: This article indeed was the most heavy, and the only one, which could fully justify the Queen in proceeding to extremities against her. In order to prove the accusation, there were produced the following evidence: Copies taken in secretary Walsingham's office of the intercepted letters between her and Babington, in which her approbation of the murder was clearly expressed; the evidence of her two secretaries, Nau and Curle, who had sworn without being put to any torture, that she both received these letters from Babington, and that they had wrote the answers by her order; the confession of Babington, that he had wrote the letters and received the answers [q]; and the confession of Ballard and Savage, that Babington had showed them these letters of Mary, wrote in the cypher, which had been settled between them.

IT is evident, that this seeming complication of evidence resolves itself finally into the testimony of the two secretaries, who alone were acquainted with their mistress's concurrence in Babington's conspiracy, and who knew themselves exposed to all the rigours of imprisonment, torture and death, if they refused to give any evidence, which might be required of them. In the case of an ordinary criminal, this proof, with all its disadvantages, would be esteemed legal, and even satisfactory, if not opposed by some other circumstances, which shake the credit of the witnesses: But on the present trial, where the absolute power of the prosecutor concurred with such important interests and such a strong inclination to have the princess con-

We find this scheme of seizing the King Scots, and delivering him into the hands of the pope or the King of Spain, proposed by Morgan to Mary. See Murden, p. 525.

[q] State Trials, vol. I. p. 113.

demned

demned; the teſtimony of two witneſſes, even tho' men of character, ought to be ſupported by very ſtrong circumſtances, in order to remove all ſuſpicion of tyranny and injuſtice. The proof againſt Mary, it muſt be confeſſed, is not deſtitute of this advantage; and it is very difficult, if not impoſſible, to account for Babington's receiving an anſwer, wrote in her name, and in the cypher concerted between them, without allowing, that the matter had been communicated to that princeſs. Such is the light in which this matter appears, even after time has diſcovered every thing, which could guide our judgment with regard to it: No wonder, therefore, that the Queen of Scots, unaſſiſted by council, and confounded by ſo extraordinary a trial, found herſelf incapable of making a ſatisfactory defence before the commiſſioners. Her reply conſiſted chiefly in her own denial: Whatever force may be in that denial was much weakened, by her poſitively affirming, that ſhe never had had any correſpondence of any kind with Babington; a fact, however, of which there remains not the leaſt queſtion [r]. She aſſerted, that as Nau and Curle had taken an oath of ſecrecy and fidelity to her, their evidence againſt her ought not to be credited. She confeſſed, however, that Nau had been in the ſervice of her uncle, the cardinal of Lorraine, and had been recommended

[r] The volume of State Papers collected by Mr. Murden, prove beyond controverſy, that Mary was long in cloſe correſpondence with Babington, p. 513, 516, 532. 533. She entertained a like correſpondence with Ballard, Morgan, and Charles Paget, and laid a ſcheme with them for an inſurrection, and for the invaſion of England by Spain, p. 528, 531. The ſame papers ſhow, that there had been a diſcontinuance of Babington's correſpondence, agreeable to Camden's narration. See State Papers, p. 513, where Morgan recommends it to Queen Mary to renew the correſpondence with Babington. The former letters, which paſſed between that Queen and Babington, ſeem to have been deſtroyed by ſome accident. Theſe circumſtances prove, that no weight can be laid on Mary's denial of guilt, and that her correſpondence with Babington contained particulars, which could not be avowed.

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

to her by the King of France, as a man in whom she might safely confide. She also acknowleged Curle to be a very honest man, but simple, and easily imposed on by Nau. If these two men had received any letters, or had wrote any answers, without her knowlege; the imputation, she said, could never lie on her. And she was the more inclined, she added, to entertain this suspicion against them, because Nau had, in other instances, been guilty of a like temerity, and had ventured to transact business in her name, without communicating the matter to her[s].

[s] There are three suppositions, by which the letter to Babington may be accounted for, without allowing Mary's concurrence in the conspiracy for assassinating Elizabeth. The first is, that which she seems herself to have embraced, that her secretaries had received Babington's letter, and had ventured of themselves to answer it, without communicating the matter to her: But it is utterly improbable, that a princess of that sense and spirit would, in an affair of that importance, be so treated by her servants who lived in the house with her, and who had every moment an opportunity of communicating the secret to her. If the conspiracy failed, they must expect to suffer the severest punishment from the court of England; if it succeeded, the lightest punishment, which they could hope for from their own mistress, must be disgrace, on account of their temerity, Not to mention, that Mary's concurrence was in some degree requisite for effectuating the design of her escape: It was proposed to attack her guards, while she was employed in hunting: She must therefore concert the time and place with the conspirators. The second supposition is, that these two secretaries were previously traitors; and being gained by Walsingham, had made such a reply in their mistress's cypher, as might involve her in the guilt of the conspiracy. But these two men had lived long with the Queen of Scots, had been entirely trusted by her, and had never fallen under suspicion either with her or her partizans. Camden tells us, that Curle afterwards claimed a reward from Walsingham on pretence of some promise; but Walsingham told him, that he owed him no reward, and that he had made no discoveries on his examination, which were not known with certainty from other quarters. The third supposition is, that neither the Queen nor the two secretaries, Nau and Curle, ever saw Babington's letter, or made any answer; but that Walsingham, having decyphered the former, forged a reply. But this supposition implies the falshood of the whole story, told by Camden, of Gifford's access to the Queen of Scots's family, and Paulet's refusal to concur in allowing his servants to be bribed. Not to mention, that as Nau's and Curle's evidence must, on this supposition, have been extorted by violence and terror, they would necessarily have been engaged, for their

THE

THE ſole circumſtance of her defence, which to us may appear to have ſome force, was her requiring that Nau and Curle ſhould be confronted with her, and own juſtification, to have told the truth afterwards; eſpecially upon the acceſſion of James. But Camden informs us, that Nau, even after that event, perſiſted ſtill in his teſtimony.

We muſt alſo conſider, that the two laſt ſuppoſitions imply ſuch a monſtrous criminal conduct in Walſingham, and conſequently in Elizabeth (for the matter could be no ſecret to her) as exceeds all credibility. If we conſider the ſituation of things and the prejudices of the times, Mary's conſent to Babington's conſpiracy appears much more natural and probable. She believed Elizabeth to be an uſurper and a heretic: She regarded her as a perſonal and a violent enemy: She knew that ſchemes of aſſaſſinating heretics were very familiar in that age, and generally approved of by the zealous catholics: Her own liberty and ſovereignty were connected with the ſucceſs of this enterprize. And it cannot appear ſtrange, that where men of ſo much merit as Babington could be engaged, by bigotry alone, in ſo criminal an enterprize, Mary, who was actuated by the ſame motive, joined to ſo many others, ſhould have given her conſent to a ſcheme projected by her friends. We may be previouſly certain, that, if ſuch a ſcheme was ever communicated to her, with any probability of ſucceſs, ſhe would aſſent to it: And it ſerved the purpoſe of Walſingham and the Engliſh miniſtry to facilitate the communication of theſe ſchemes, as ſoon as they had got an expedient for intercepting her anſwer, and detecting the conſpiracy. Now Walſingham's knowlege of the matter is a ſuppoſition neceſſary to account for the letter delivered to Babington.

As to the not puniſhing of Nau and Curle by Elizabeth, it never is the practice to puniſh leſſer criminals, who had given evidence againſt the principal.

But what ought to induce us to reject theſe three ſuppoſitions, is, that they muſt, all of them, be conſidered as bare poſſibilities; The partizans of Mary can give no reaſon for preferring one to the other: Not the ſlighteſt evidence ever appeared to ſupport any one of them: Neither at that time, nor at any time after, was any reaſon diſcovered, by the numerous zealots at home and abroad who had embraced Mary's defence, to lead us to the belief of any of theſe three ſuppoſitions: and even her apologiſts at preſent ſeem not to have fixed on any choice among theſe ſuppoſed poſſibilities. The poſitive proof of two credible witneſſes, ſupported by the other very ſtrong circumſtances, ſtill remains unimpeached. Babington, who had an extreme intereſt to have communication with the Queen of Scots, believed he had found a means of correſpondence with her, and had received an anſwer from her: He, as well as the other conſpirators, died in that belief: There has not occurred, ſince that time, the leaſt argument to prove they were miſtaken: Can there be any reaſon at preſent to doubt of the truth of their opinion? Camden, tho' a profeſt apologiſt for Mary, is con-

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

to her by the King of France, as a man in whom ſhe might ſafely confide. She alſo acknowleged Curle to be a very honeſt man, but ſimple, and eaſily impoſed on by Nau. If theſe two men had received any letters, or had wrote any anſwers, without her knowlege; the imputation, ſhe ſaid, could never lie on her. And ſhe was the more inclined, ſhe added, to entertain this ſuſpicion againſt them, becauſe Nau had, in other inſtances, been guilty of a like temerity, and had ventured to tranſact buſineſs in her name, without communicating the matter to her[s].

[s] There are three ſuppoſitions, by which the letter to Babington may be accounted for, without allowing Mary's concurrence in the conſpiracy for aſſaſſinating Elizabeth. The firſt is, that which ſhe ſeems herſelf to have embraced, that her ſecretaries had received Babington's letter, and had ventured of themſelves to anſwer it, without communicating the matter to her: But it is utterly improbable, that a princeſs of that ſenſe and ſpirit would, in an affair of that importance, be ſo treated by her ſervants who lived in the houſe with her, and who had every moment an opportunity of communicating the ſecret to her. If the conſpiracy failed, they muſt expect to ſuffer the ſevereſt puniſhment from the court of England; if it ſucceeded, the lighteſt puniſhment, which they could hope for from their own miſtreſs, muſt be diſgrace, on account of their temerity. Not to mention, that Mary's concurrence was in ſome degree requiſite for effectuating the deſign of her eſcape: It was propoſed to attack her guards, while ſhe was employed in hunting: She muſt therefore concert the time and place with the conſpirators. The ſecond ſuppoſition is, that theſe two ſecretaries were previouſly traitors; and being gained by Walſingham, had made ſuch a reply in their miſtreſs's cypher, as might involve her in the guilt of the conſpiracy. But theſe two men had lived long with the Queen of Scots, had been entirely truſted by her, and had never fallen under ſuſpicion either with her or her partizans. Camden tells us, that Curle afterwards claimed a reward from Walſingham on pretence of ſome promiſe; but Walſingham told him, that he owed him no reward, and that he had made no diſcoveries on his examination, which were not known with certainty from other quarters. The third ſuppoſition is, that neither the Queen nor the two ſecretaries, Nau and Curle, ever ſaw Babington's letter, or made any anſwer; but that Walſingham, having decyphered the former, forged a reply. But this ſuppoſition implies the falſhood of the whole ſtory, told by Camden, of Gifford's acceſs to the Queen of Scots's family, and Paulet's refuſal to concur in allowing his ſervants to be bribed. Not to mention, that as Nau's and Curle's evidence muſt, on this ſuppoſition, have been extorted by violence and terror, they would neceſſarily have been engaged, for their

THE

THE ſole circumſtance of her defence, which to us may appear to have ſome force, was her requiring that Nau and Curle ſhould be confronted with her, and

own juſtification, to have told the truth afterwards; eſpecially upon the acceſſion of James. But Camden informs us, that Nau, even after that event, perſiſted ſtill in his teſtimony.

We muſt alſo conſider, that the two laſt ſuppoſitions imply ſuch a monſtrous criminal conduct in Walſingham, and conſequently in Elizabeth (for the matter could be no ſecret to her) as exceeds all credibility. If we conſider the ſituation of things and the prejudices of the times, Mary's conſent to Babington's conſpiracy appears much more natural and probable. She believed Elizabeth to be an uſurper and a heretic: She regarded her as a perſonal and a violent enemy: She knew that ſchemes of aſſaſſinating heretics were very familiar in that age, and generally approved of by the zealous catholics: Her own liberty and ſovereignty were connected with the ſucceſs of this enterprize. And it cannot appear ſtrange, that where men of ſo much merit as Babington could be engaged, by bigotry alone, in ſo criminal an enterprize, Mary, who was actuated by the ſame motive, joined to ſo many others, ſhould have given her conſent to a ſcheme projected by her friends. We may be previouſly certain, that, if ſuch a ſcheme was ever communicated to her, with any probability of ſucceſs, ſhe would aſſent to it: And it ſerved the purpoſe of Walſingham and the Engliſh miniſtry to facilitate the communication of theſe ſchemes, as ſoon as they had got an expedient for intercepting her anſwer, and detecting the conſpiracy. Now Walſingham's knowlege of the matter is a ſuppoſition neceſſary to account for the letter delivered to Babington.

As to the not puniſhing of Nau and Curle by Elizabeth, it never is the practice to puniſh leſſer criminals, who had given evidence againſt the principal.

But what ought to induce us to reject theſe three ſuppoſitions, is, that they muſt, all of them, be conſidered as bare poſſibilities; The partizans of Mary can give no reaſon for preferring one to the other: Not the ſlighteſt evidence ever appeared to ſupport any one of them: Neither at that time, nor at any time after, was any reaſon diſcovered, by the numerous zealots at home and abroad who had embraced Mary's defence, to lead us to the belief of any of theſe three ſuppoſitions: and even her apologiſts at preſent ſeem not to have fixed on any choice among theſe ſuppoſed poſſibilities. The poſitive proof of two credible witneſſes, ſupported by the other very ſtrong circumſtances, ſtill remains unimpeached. Babington, who had an extreme intereſt to have communication with the Queen of Scots, believed he had found a means of correſpondence with her, and had received an anſwer from her: He, as well as the other conſpirators, died in that belief: There has not occurred, ſince that time, the leaſt argument to prove they were miſtaken: Can there be any reaſon at preſent to doubt of the truth of their opinion? Camden, tho' a profeſt apologiſt for Mary, is con-

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

to her by the King of France, as a man in whom she might safely confide. She also acknowleged Curle to be a very honest man, but simple, and easily imposed on by Nau. If these two men had received any letters, or had wrote any answers, without her knowlege; the imputation, she said, could never lie on her. And she was the more inclined, she added, to entertain this suspicion against them, because Nau had, in other instances, been guilty of a like temerity, and had ventured to transact business in her name, without communicating the matter to her [s].

s There are three suppositions, by which the letter to Babington may be accounted for, without allowing Mary's concurrence in the conspiracy for assassinating Elizabeth. The first is, that which she seems herself to have embraced, that her secretaries had received Babington's letter, and had ventured of themselves to answer it, without communicating the matter to her: But it is utterly improbable, that a princess of that sense and spirit would, in an affair of that importance, be so treated by her servants who lived in the house with her, and who had every moment an opportunity of communicating the secret to her. If the conspiracy failed, they must expect to suffer the severest punishment from the court of England; if it succeeded, the lightest punishment, which they could hope for from their own mistress, must be disgrace, on account of their temerity, Not to mention, that Mary's concurrence was in some degree requisite for effectuating the design of her escape: It was proposed to attack her guards, while she was employed in hunting: She must therefore concert the time and place with the conspirators. The second supposition is, that these two secretaries were previously traitors; and being gained by Walsingham, had made such a reply in their mistress's cypher, as might involve her in the guilt of the conspiracy. But these two men had lived long with the Queen of Scots, had been entirely trusted by her, and had never fallen under suspicion either with her or her partizans. Camden tells us, that Curle afterwards claimed a reward from Walsingham on pretence of some promise; but Walsingham told him, that he owed him no reward, and that he had made no discoveries on his examination, which were not known with certainty from other quarters. The third supposition is, that neither the Queen nor the two secretaries, Nau and Curle, ever saw Babington's letter, or made any answer; but that Walsingham, having decyphered the former, forged a reply. But this supposition implies the falshood of the whole story, told by Camden, of Gifford's access to the Queen of Scots's family, and Paulet's refusal to concur in allowing his servants to be bribed. Not to mention, that as Nau's and Curle's evidence must, on this supposition, have been extorted by violence and terror, they would necessarily have been engaged, for their

THE

THE ſole circumſtance of her defence, which to us may appear to have ſome force, was her requiring that Nau and Curle ſhould be confronted with her, and

own juſtification, to have told the truth afterwards; eſpecially upon the acceſſion of James. But Camden informs us, that Nau, even after that event, perſiſted ſtill in his teſtimony.

We muſt alſo conſider, that the two laſt ſuppoſitions imply ſuch a monſtrous criminal conduct in Walſingham, and conſequently in Elizabeth (for the matter could be no ſecret to her) as exceeds all credibility. If we conſider the ſituation of things and the prejudices of the times, Mary's conſent to Babington's conſpiracy appears much more natural and probable. She believed Elizabeth to be an uſurper and a heretic: She regarded her as a perſonal and a violent enemy: She knew that ſchemes of aſſaſſinating heretics were very familiar in that age, and generally approved of by the zealous catholics: Her own liberty and ſovereignty were connected with the ſucceſs of this enterprize. And it cannot appear ſtrange, that where men of ſo much merit as Babington could be engaged, by bigotry alone, in ſo criminal an enterprize, Mary, who was actuatedby theſame motive, joined to ſo manyothers, ſhould have given her conſent to a ſcheme projected by her friends. We may be previouſly certain, that, if ſuch a ſcheme was ever communicated to her, with any probability of ſucceſs, ſhe would aſſent to it: And it ſerved the purpoſe of Walſingham and the Engliſh miniſtry to facilitate the communication of theſe ſchemes, as ſoon as they had got an expedient for intercepting her anſwer, and detecting the conſpiracy. Now Walſingham's knowlege of the matter is a ſuppoſition neceſſary to account for the letter delivered to Babington.

As to the not puniſhing of Nau and Curle by Elizabeth, it never is the practice to puniſh leſſer criminals, who had given evidence againſt the principal.

But what ought to induce us to reject theſe three ſuppoſitions, is, that they muſt, all of them, be conſidered as bare poſſibilities; The partizans of Mary can give no reaſon for preferring one to the other: Not the ſlighteſt evidence ever appeared to ſupport any one of them: Neither at that time, nor at any time after, was any reaſon diſcovered, by the numerous zealots at home and abroad who had embraced Mary's defence, to lead us to the belief of any of theſe three ſuppoſitions: and even her apologiſts at preſent ſeem not to have fixed on any choice among theſe ſuppoſed poſſibilities. The poſitive proof of two credible witneſſes, ſupported by the other very ſtrong circumſtances, ſtill remains unimpeached. Babington, who had an extreme intereſt to have communication with the Queen of Scots, believed he had found a means of correſpondence with her, and had received an anſwer from her: He, as well as the other conſpirators, died in that belief: There has not occurred, ſince that time, the leaſt argument to prove they were miſtaken: Can there be any reaſon at preſent to doubt of the truth of their opinion? Camden, tho' a profeſt apologiſt for Mary, is con-

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

affirming that they never would to her face persist in their evidence. But that demand, however equitable, was not supported by law in trials of high treason, and was often refused even in other trials where the crown was prosecutor. The clause, contained in an act of the 13th of the Queen, was a novelty; that the species of treason there enumerated must be proved by two witnesses, confronted with the criminal. But Mary was not tried upon that act; and the ministers and crown lawyers of this reign were always sure to refuse every indulgence beyond what the strict letter of the law and the settled practice of the courts of justice required of them. Not to mention, that these secretaries were not probably at Fotheringay during the time of the trial, and could not, upon Mary's demand, be produced by the commissioners [t].

THERE passed two incidents in this trial, which may be worth observing. A letter between Mary and Babington was read, in which mention was made of the earl of Arundel and his brothers: On hearing their names she broke into a sigh, "Alas," said she,

strained to tell the story in such a manner as evidently supposes her guilt. Such was the impossibility of finding any other consistent account, even by a man of parts, who was a contemporary!

In this light might the question have appeared even during Mary's trial. But what now puts her guilt beyond all controversy is the following passage of her letter to Thomas Morgan, dated the 27th of July 1586. "As "to Babington, he hath both kindly and honestly offered himself and all his "means to be employed any way I would. Whereupon I hope to have sa- "tisfied him by two of my several letters, since I had his; and the rather, "for that I opened him the way, whereby I received his with your afore- "said." Murden, p. 533. Babington confessed, that he had offered her to assassinate the Queen; It appears by this, that she had accepted the offer: So that all the suppositions of Walsingham's forgery, or her secretary's temerity or treachery, fall to the ground.

t Queen Elizabeth was willing to have allowed Curle and Nau to be produced in the trial, and writes to that purpose, to Burleigh and Walsingham, in her letter of the 7th of October, in Forbes's MS. collections. She only says, that she thinks it needless, tho' she was willing to agree to it. The not confronting the witnesses was not the result of design, but the practice of the age.

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

« what has that noble houſe of the Howards ſuffered « for my ſake!" She affirmed, with regard to the ſame letter, that it was eaſy to forge the hand-writing and cypher of another; ſhe was afraid, that this was too familiar a practice with Walſingham, who, ſhe alſo heard, had frequently practiſed both againſt her life and her ſon's. Walſingham, who was one of the commiſſioners, roſe up. He proteſted, that in his private capacity, he had never acted any thing againſt the Queen of Scots: In his public capacity, he owned, that his concern for his ſovereign's ſafety had made him very diligent in ſearching out, by every expedient, all deſigns againſt her ſacred perſon or her authority. For attaining that end, he would not only make uſe of the aſſiſtance of Ballard or any other conſpirator: He would alſo reward them for betraying their companions. But if he had tampered in any manner, unworthy of his character and office, why did none of the late criminals either at their trial or execution, accuſe him of ſuch practices? Mary endeavoured to pacify him by ſaying that ſhe ſpoke from information; and ſhe begged him, that he would thenceforth give no more credit to ſuch as ſlandered her, than ſhe would to ſuch as accuſed him. The great character indeed, which Sir Francis Walſingham bears for probity and honour, ſhould remove from him all ſuſpicion of ſuch baſe arts as forgery and ſubornation; arts, which even the moſt corrupt miniſters in the moſt corrupt times would ſcruple to employ.

HAVING finiſhed the trial, the commiſſioners adjourned from Fotheringay, and met in the Star Chamber at London; where, after taking the oaths of Mary's two ſecretaries, who, voluntarily, without hope or reward, vouched the authenticity of thoſe letters before produced, they pronounced ſentence of death upon the Queen of Scots, and confirmed it by their ſeals and ſubſcriptions. The ſame day, a declaration was publiſhed

25th October.

Sentence againſt Mary.

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

liſhed by the commiſſioners and the judges, "that the "ſentence did no wiſe derogate from the title and honour "of James, King of Scotland; but that he was in the "ſame place, degree, and right, as if the ſentence "had never been pronounced [u]."

THE Queen had now brought her affairs with Mary to that ſituation, which ſhe had long ardently deſired; and had found a plauſible reaſon for executing vengeance on a competitor, whom, from the beginning of her reign, ſhe had ever equally dreaded and hated. But ſhe was reſtrained from gratifying inſtantly her reſentment, by ſeveral important conſiderations. She foreſaw the invidious colours in which this example of uncommon juriſdiction would be repreſented by the numerous partizans of Mary, and the reproach, to which ſhe herſelf might be expoſed with all foreign princes, perhaps with all poſterity. The rights of hoſpitality, of kindred, and of royal majeſty, ſeemed in one ſignal inſtance to be all violated; and this ſacrifice of generoſity to intereſt, of clemency to revenge, might appear equally unbecoming a ſovereign and a woman. Elizabeth, therefore, who was an excellent hypocrite, pretended the utmoſt reluctance to proceed to the execution of the ſentence, affected the moſt tender ſympathy with her priſoner, diſplayed all her ſcruples and difficulties, rejected the ſollicitation of her courtiers and miniſters, and affirmed, that, were ſhe not moved by the deepeſt concern for her people's ſafety, ſhe would not heſitate a moment in pardoning all the injuries, which ſhe herſelf had received from the Queen of Scots.

THAT the voice of her people might be more audibly heard in the demand of juſtice upon Mary, ſhe ſummoned a new Parliament; and ſhe knew, both from the uſual diſpoſitions of that aſſembly, and from the influence of her miniſters over them, that ſhe ſhould not want the moſt earneſt ſollicitation to conſent to

29th October.

[u] Camden, p. 526.

that

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

that meaſure, which was ſo agreeable to her ſecret inclinations. She did not open this aſſembly in perſon, but appointed for that purpoſe three commiſſioners, the chancellor Bromley, the treaſurer Burleigh, and the earl of Derby. The reaſon aſſigned for this meaſure, was, that the Queen, foreſeeing that the affair of the Queen of Scots would be tried in Parliament, found her tenderneſs and delicacy ſo much hurt by that melancholy incident, that ſhe had not the courage to be preſent while it was under deliberation, but withdrew her eyes from what ſhe could not behold without the utmoſt reluctance and uneaſineſs. She was alſo willing, that, by this unuſual caution, the people ſhould ſee the danger, to which her perſon was hourly expoſed; and ſhould thence be more ſtrongly incited to take vengeance on the criminal, whoſe reſtleſs intrigues and bloody conſpiracies had ſo long expoſed her to the moſt imminent perils [x].

THE Parliament anſwered the Queen's expectations: The ſentence againſt Mary was unanimouſly ratified by both houſes; and an application was agreed on to obtain Elizabeth's conſent to its publication and execution [y]. She gave them an anſwer ambiguous, embarraſſed; full of real artifice, and ſeeming irreſolution. She mentioned the extreme danger to which her life was continually expoſed; ſhe declared her willingneſs to die, did ſhe not foreſee the great calamities, which would thence fall upon the nation; ſhe made profeſſions of the greateſt tenderneſs to her people; ſhe diſplayed the clemency of her temper, and expreſſed her violent reluctance to proceed to extremities againſt her unhappy kinſwoman; ſhe affirmed, that the late law, by which that princeſs was tried, ſo far from being made to enſnare her, was only intended to give her warning beforehand, not to engage in ſuch attempts, as might expoſe her to the penalties, with which ſhe was thus

[x] D'Ewes, p. 375. [y] Ibid, p. 379.

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

openly menaced; and ſhe begged them to think once again, whether it was poſſible to find any other expedient beſides the death of the Queen of Scots for ſecuring the public tranquillity [z]. The Parliament, in obedience to her commands, took the affair again under conſideration; but could find no other poſſible expedient. They reiterated their ſollicitations, and entreaties, and arguments: They even remonſtrated, that mercy to the Queen of Scots was cruelty to them, her ſubjects and children: And they affirmed, that it were injuſtice to deny execution of the law to any individual; much more, to the whole body of the people, now unanimouſly and earneſtly ſuing for this pledge of her parental care and tenderneſs. This ſecond addreſs ſet the pretended doubts and ſcruples of Elizabeth anew in agitation: She complained of her own unfortunate ſituation; expreſſed her uneaſineſs from their importunity; renewed the profeſſions of affection to her people; and diſmiſſed the committee of Parliament in an uncertainty, what, after all this deliberation, might be her final reſolution [a].

z D'Ewes, p. 402, 403.

a This Parliament granted the Queen a ſupply of a ſubſidy and two fifteenths. They adjourned, and met again after the execution of the Queen of Scots; when there paſſed ſome remarkable incidents, which it may be proper not to omit. We ſhall give them in the words of Sir Simon D'Ewes, p. 410, 411, which are almoſt wholly tranſcribed from Townſend's Journal. On Monday the 27th of February, Mr. Cope, firſt uſing ſome ſpeeches touching the neceſſity of a learned miniſtry and the amendment of things amiſs in the eccleſiaſtical eſtate, offered to the houſe a bill and a book written; the bill containing a petition, that it might be enacted, that all laws now in force touching eccleſiaſtical government ſhould be void: And that it might be enacted that that book of common prayer now offered, and none other, might be received into the church to be uſed. The book contained the form of prayer and adminiſtration of the ſacraments, with divers rites and ceremonies to be uſed in the church; and he deſired that the book might be read. Whereupon Mr. Speaker in effect uſed this ſpeech: For that her majeſty before this time had commanded the houſe not to meddle with this matter, and that her

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

But tho' the Queen affected reluctance to execute the ſentence againſt Mary, ſhe complied with the Parliament's requeſt to publiſh it; and the proclamation

majeſty had promiſed to take order in thoſe cauſes, he doubted not but to the good ſatisfaction of all her people, he deſired that it would pleaſe them to ſpare the reading of it. Notwithſtanding the houſe deſired the reading of it. Whereupon Mr. Speaker deſired the clerk to read. And the court being ready to read it, Mr. Dalton made a motion againſt the reading of it; ſaying, that it was not meet to be read, and it did appoint a new form of adminiſtration of the ſacraments and ceremonies of the church, to the diſcredit of the book of common prayer and of the whole ſtate; and thought that this dealing would bring her majeſty's indignation againſt the houſe, thus to enterprize this dealing with thoſe things which her majeſty eſpecially had taken into her own charge and direction. Whereupon Mr. Lewkenor ſpake, ſhewing the neceſſity of preaching and of a learned miniſtry, and thought it very fit that the petition and book ſhould be read. To this purpoſe ſpake Mr. Hurleſton and Mr. Bainbrigg; and ſo, the time being paſſed, the houſe broke up, and neither the petition nor book read. This done, her majeſty ſent to Mr. Speaker, as well for this petition and book, as for that other petition and book for the like effect, that was delivered the laſt ſeſſion of Parliment, which Mr. Speaker ſent to her majeſty. On Tueſday the 28th of February, her Majeſty ſent for Mr. Speaker, by occaſion whereof the houſe did not ſit. On Wedneſday the firſt day of March, Mr. Wentworth delivered to Mr. Speaker certain articles, which contained queſtions touching the liberties of the houſe, and to ſome of which he was to anſwer, and deſired they might be read. Mr. Speaker deſired him to ſpare his motion, until her Majeſty's pleaſure was further known touching the petition and book lately delivered into the houſe; but Mr. Wentworth would not be ſo ſatisfied, but required his articles might be read. Mr. Wentworth introduced his queries by lamenting, that he as well as many others were deterred from ſpeaking, by their want of knowlege and experience in the liberties of the houſe; and the queries were as follow: Whether this council were not a place for any member of the ſame here aſſembled, freely and without controulment of any perſon or danger of laws, by bill or ſpeech to utter any of the griefs of this commonwealth whatſoever touching the ſervice of God, the ſafety of the prince and this noble realm? Whether that great honour may be done unto God, and benefit and ſervice unto the prince and ſtate, without free ſpeech in this council that may be done with it? Whether there be any council which can make, add, or diminiſh from the laws of the realm but only this council of Parliament? Whether it be not againſt the orders of this council to make any ſecret or matter of weight, which is here in hand, known to the prince or any other, concerning the high ſervice of God, prince or ſtate, without the conſent of the houſe? Whether the ſpeaker or any other may interrupt any member of this council in his ſpeech uſed in this houſe tending to any of the forenamed ſervices? Whether the ſpeaker may riſe when he will, any matter being pro-

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

ſeemed to be attended with the unanimous and hearty rejoicings of the people. The lord Buckhurſt, and

pounded, without conſent of the houſe or not? Whether the ſpeaker may over-rule the houſe in any matter or cauſe there in queſtion, or whether he is to be ruled or over-ruled in any matter or not? Whether the prince and ſtate can continue, and ſtand, and be maintained, without this council of Parliament, not altering the government of the ſtate? At the end of theſe queſtions, ſays Sir Simon D'Ewes, I found ſet down this ſhort note or memorial enſuing: By which it may be perceived, both what ſerjeant Puckering, the ſpeaker, did with the ſaid queſtions after he had received them, and what became alſo of this buſineſs, viz. "Theſe queſtions "Mr. Puckering pocketed up and ſhewed Sir Thomas Heneage, who ſo "handled the matter, that Mr. Wentworth went to the Tower, and the "queſtions not at all moved. Mr. Buckler of Eſſex herein brake his faith "in forſaking the matter, &c. and no more was done." After ſetting down, continues Sir Simon D'Ewes, the ſaid buſineſs of Mr. Wentworth in the original journal book, there follows only this ſhort concluſion of the day itſelf, viz. "This day, Mr. Speaker being ſent for to the "Queen's majeſty, the houſe departed." On Thurſday the ſecond of March, Mr. Cope, Mr. Lewkenor, Mr. Hurlſton, and Mr. Bainbrigg were ſent for to my lord chancellor and by divers of the privy council, and from thence were ſent to the Tower. On Saturday, the fourth day of March, Sir John Higham made a motion to this houſe, for that divers good and neceſſary members thereof were taken from them, that it would pleaſe them to be humble petitioners to her majeſty for the reſtitution of them again to the houſe. To which ſpeeches Mr. vice-chamberlain anſwered, that if the gentlemen were committed for matter within the compaſs of the privilege of this houſe, then there might be a petition; but if not, then we ſhould give occaſion to her majeſty's farther diſpleaſure: And therefore adviſed to ſtay until they heard more, which could not be long: And farther, he ſaid touching the book and the petition, her majeſty had, for diverſe good cauſes beſt known to herſelf, thought fit to ſuppreſs the ſame, without any farther examination thereof; and yet thought it very unfit for her majeſty to give any account of her doings.——But whatſoever Mr. vice-chamberlain pretended, it is moſt probable theſe members were committed for intermeddling with matters touching the church, which her majeſty had often inhibited, and which had cauſed ſo much diſputation and ſo many meetings between the two houſes the laſt Parliament."

This is all we find of the matter in Sir Simon D'Ewes and Townſend; and it appears that thoſe members, who had been committed, were detained in cuſtody till the Queen thought fit to releaſe them. Theſe queſtions of Mr. Wentworth are curious; becauſe they contain the firſt faint dawnings of the preſent Engliſh conſtitution; tho' ſuddenly eclipſed by the arbitrary government of Elizabeth. Wentworth was indeed, by his puritaniſm, as well as his love of liberty (for theſe two characters, of ſuch unequal merit, aroſe and advanced together) the true forerunner of the Hambdens, the Pyms,

Beale, clerk to the Council, were ſent to the Queen of Scots, and notified to her the ſentence pronounced againſt her, its ratification by Parliament, and the earneſt applications made for its execution by that aſſembly, who thought, that their religion could never, while ſhe was alive attain a full ſettlement and ſecurity. Mary was no wiſe diſmayed at this intelligence: On the contrary, ſhe joyfully laid hold of the laſt circumſtance mentioned to her; and inſiſted, that ſince her death was demanded by the proteſtants for the eſtabliſhment of their faith, ſhe was really a martyr to her religion, and was intitled to all the merits, attending that glorious character. She added, that the Engliſh had often imbrued their hands in the blood of their ſovereigns: No wonder, they exerciſed cruelty towards her, who derived her deſcent from theſe monarchs [b]. Paulet her keeper, received orders to take down her canopy, and to ſerve her no longer with that reſpect, due to ſovereign princes. He told her, that ſhe was now to be conſidered as a dead perſon; and incapable of any dignity [c]. This inſult ſhe received without any ſeeming emotion. She only replied, that ſhe received her royal character from the hands of the Almighty, and no earthly power was ever able to bereave her of it.

THE Queen of Scots wrote her laſt letter to Elizabeth; full of dignity, without departing from that ſpirit of meekneſs and of charity, which appeared ſuitable to this concluding ſcene of her unfortunate life. She preferred no petition for averting the fatal ſentence: On the contrary, ſhe expreſſed her gratitude to heaven

and the Hollises, who, in the next age, with leſs courage, becauſe with leſs danger, rendered their principles ſo triumphant. I ſhall only aſk, whether it be not ſufficiently clear from all theſe tranſactions, that in the two ſucceeding reigns it was the people who encroached upon the ſovereign; not the ſovereign, who attempted, as is pretended, to uſurp upon people?

[b] Camden, p. 528. [c] Jebb, vol. II. p. 293.

for

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

for thus bringing to a ſpeedy period her ſad and lamentable pilgrimage. She requeſted ſome favours of Elizabeth, and intreated her, that ſhe might be beholden for them to her own goodneſs alone, without making applications to thoſe miniſters, who had diſcovered ſuch an extreme antipathy to her perſon and her religion. She deſired, that, after her enemies ſhould be ſatiated with her innocent blood, her body, which, it was determined, ſhould never enjoy reſt, while her ſoul was united to it, might be conſigned to her ſervants, and be conveyed by them into France, there to repoſe in a catholic land, with the ſacred relicts of her mother. In Scotland, ſhe ſaid, the ſepulchres of her anceſtors were violated, and the churches either demoliſhed or profaned; and in England, where ſhe might be enterred among the antient kings, her own and Elizabeth's progenitors, ſhe could entertain no hopes of being accompanied to the grave with thoſe rites and ceremonies, which her religion required. She deſired that no one might have the power of inflicting a private death upon her, without Elizabeth's knowlege; but that her execution ſhould be public, and attended by her antient ſervants, who might bear teſtimony of her perſeverance in the faith, and of her ſubmiſſion to the will of heaven. She begged, that theſe ſervants might afterwards be allowed to depart whither they pleaſed, and might enjoy thoſe legacies which ſhe ſhould bequeath them. And ſhe conjured her to grant theſe favours, by their near kindred, by the ſoul and memory of Henry the ſeventh, the common anceſtor of both, and by the royal dignity of which they equally participated [d]. Elizabeth made no anſwer to this letter; being unwilling to give Mary a refuſal in her preſent ſituation, and foreſeeing inconveniencies from granting ſome of her requeſts.

[d] Camden, p. 529. Jebb, vol. II. p. 295.

WHILE

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

WHILE the Queen of Scots thus prepared herſelf to meet her fate, great efforts were made by foreign powers with Elizabeth to prevent the execution of the ſentence, pronounced againſt her. Beſides employing L'Aubeſpine, the French reſident at London, a man devoted to the houſe of Guiſe, Henry ſent over Bellievre, with a profeſſed intention of interceding for the life of Mary. The duke of Guiſe and the league, at that time, threatened very nearly the King's authority; and Elizabeth knew, that, tho' that monarch might, from decency and policy, think himſelf obliged to interpoſe publicly in behalf of the Queen of Scots, he could not ſecretly be much diſpleaſed with the death of a princeſs, on whoſe fortune and elevation his mortal enemies had always founded ſo many daring and ambitious projects [e]. It is even pretended, that Bellievre had orders, after making public and vehement remonſtrances againſt the execution of Mary, to exhort privately the Queen, in his maſter's name, not to defer an act of juſtice, ſo neceſſary for their common intereſts [f]. But whether the French King's interceſſion was ſincere or not, it had no weight with the Queen; and ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her former reſolution.

Interpoſition of King James.

THE interpoſition of the young King of Scots, tho' it was not able to change Elizabeth's determination, ſeemed, on every account, to merit more attention. So ſoon as James heard of the trial and condemnation of his mother, he ſent Sir William Keith, gentleman of his bed chamber, to London; and wrote a letter to the Queen, in which he remonſtrated, in very ſevere terms, againſt the indignity of the procedure. He ſaid, that he was aſtoniſhed to hear of the preſumption of Engliſh noblemen and counſellors, who had dared to ſit in judgment and paſs ſentence upon a Queen of Scotland, deſcended from the royal blood

[e] Camden, p. 494. [f] Du Maurier.

of

CHAP. XLII.

1586.

of England; but was ſtill more aſtoniſhed to hear, that thoughts were ſeriouſly entertained of putting that ſentence in execution: That he entreated Elizabeth to reflect on the diſhonour, which ſhe would draw on her name by embruing her hands in the blood of her near kinſwoman, a perſon of the ſame royal dignity and of the ſame ſex with herſelf: That in this unparalleled attempt, ſhe offered an affront to all diadems, and even to her own; and by reducing ſovereigns to a level with other men, taught the people to neglect all duty towards thoſe whom Providence had appointed to rule over them: That for his part, he muſt eſteem the injury and inſult ſo enormous, as to be incapable of all attonement; nor was it poſſible for him thenceforth to remain on any terms of correſpondence with a perſon, who, without any pretence of legal authority, had deliberately inflicted an ignominious death upon his parent: And that even if the ſentiments of nature and duty did not inſpire him with this purpoſe of vengeance, his own honour required it of him; nor could he ever acquit himſelf in the eyes of the world, if he did not uſe every effort, and endure every hazard, to revenge ſo great an indignity [g]. Soon after, James ſent the maſter of Gray and Sir Robert Melvil to enforce the remonſtrances of Keith; and to employ with the Queen every expedient of argument and menaces. Elizabeth was at firſt offended with the ſharpneſs of theſe applications; and ſhe replied in a like ſtrain to the Scots ambaſſadors. When ſhe afterwards reflected, that this earneſtneſs was no more than what duty required of James, ſhe was pacified; but retained ſtill her reſolution of proceeding to extremities againſt Mary [h]. It is believed, that the maſter of Gray, gained by the enemies of that princeſs, gave ſecretly his advice not to ſpare

[g] Spotſwood, p. 351. [h] Ibid. p. 353.

her,

her, and undertook, in all events, to pacify his maſter. The Queen alſo, from many circumſtances, was induced to pay ſmall attention to the applications of James, and to diſregard all the efforts, which he could employ in behalf of his mother. She was well acquainted with his character and intereſts, the factions which prevailed among his people, and the inveterate hatred, which the zealous proteſtants, particularly the preachers, bore to the Queen of Scots. The preſent incidents put theſe diſpoſitions of the clergy in a full light. James, obſerving the fixed purpoſe of Elizabeth, ordered prayers to be offered up for his mother in all the churches; and knowing the captious humour of the eccleſiaſtics, he took care that the form of the petition ſhould be moſt cautious, as well as humane and charitable: "That it might pleaſe God to illumi- "nate Mary with the light of his truth, and ſave "her from the apparent danger with which ſhe was "threatned." But excepting the King's own chaplains, and one clergyman more, all the preachers refuſed to pollute their churches by prayers for a papiſt, and would not ſo much as prefer a petition for her converſion. James, unwilling or unable to puniſh this diſobedience, and deſirous of giving the preachers an opportunity of amending their fault, appointed a new day when prayers ſhould be ſaid for his mother; and that he might at leaſt ſecure himſelf from any inſult in his own preſence, he deſired the archbiſhop of St. Andrews to preach before him. In order to diſappoint this purpoſe, the clergy inſtigated one Couper, a young man, who had not yet received holy orders, to take poſſeſſion of the pulpit early in the morning, and to exclude the prelate. When the King came to church, and ſaw the pulpit occupied by Couper, he called to him from his ſeat, and told him, that the place was deſtined for another; yet ſince he was there, if he

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

CHAP. XLII. 1586.

he would obey the charge given, and remember the Queen in his prayers, he might proceed to divine ſervice. The preacher replied, that he would do as the ſpirit of God ſhould direct him. This anſwer, ſufficiently inſtructed James in his purpoſe; and he commanded him to leave the pulpit. As Couper ſeemed not diſpoſed to obey, the captain of the guard went to pull him from his place; upon which the young man cried aloud, that this day would be a witneſs againſt the King in the great day of the Lord; and he denounced a woe upon the inhabitants of Edinburgh for permitting him to be treated in that manner [1]. The audience at firſt appeared deſirous to take part with him; but the ſermon of the prelate brought them over to a more dutiful and more humane diſpoſition.

ELIZABETH, when ſollicited, either by James or by foreign princes, to pardon the Queen of Scots, ſeemed always determined to proceed to extremities againſt her: But when her miniſters urged her to interpoſe no more delays in the execution, her ſcruples and her heſitation returned; her humanity could not allow her to embrace ſuch violent and ſanguinary meaſures; and ſhe was touched with compaſſion for the misfortunes, and with reſpect for the dignity, of the unhappy priſoner. The courtiers, ſenſible that they could do nothing more acceptable to her, than to employ perſuaſion on this head, failed not to enforce every motive for the puniſhment of Mary, and to combat all the objections urged againſt that act of juſtice. They ſaid, that the treatment of that princeſs in England had been, on her firſt reception, ſuch as ſound reaſon and policy required; and if ſhe had been governed by principles of equity, ſhe would not have refuſed willingly to acquieſce in it: That the obvious

Reaſons for the execution of Mary.

[1] Spotſwood, p. 354.

inconve-

inconveniences, either of allowing her to retire into France, or of reſtoring her by force to her throne, in oppoſition to the proteſtants, and the Engliſh party in Scotland, had obliged the Queen to detain her in England, till time ſhould offer ſome opportunity of ſerving her, without danger to the kingdom, or to the proteſtant religion: That her uſage there had been ſuch as became her rank; her own ſervants, in conſiderable numbers, had been permitted to attend her; exerciſe had been allowed her for her health, and all acceſs of company for amuſement; and theſe indulgencies would, in time, have been carried farther, if by her ſubſequent conduct ſhe had appeared worthy of them: That after ſhe had inſtigated the rebellion of Northumberland, the conſpiracy of Norfolk, the bull of excommunication of pope Pius, an invaſion from Flanders; after ſhe had ſeduced the Queen's friends, and incited every enemy, foreign or domeſtic, againſt her; it became neceſſary to treat her as a moſt dangerous rival, and to render her confinement more ſtrict and rigorous: That the Queen, notwithſtanding theſe repeated provocations, had, in her favour, rejected the importunity of her Parliaments, and the advice of her ſageſt miniſters [k]; and was ſtill, in hopes of her amendment, determined to delay coming to the laſt extremity againſt her: That Mary, even in this forlorn condition, retained ſo high and unconquerable a ſpirit, that ſhe acted as competitor to the crown, and allowed her partizans every where, and in their very letters, addreſſed to herſelf, to treat her as Queen of England: That ſhe had carried her animoſity ſo far as to encourage the atrocious deſign of aſſaſſinating the Queen; and this crime was unqueſtionably proved upon her, by her own letters, by the evidence of her ſecretaries, and by the dying confeſ-

[k] Digges, p. 276. Strype, vol. II. p. 48, 135, 136, 139.

ſion

CHAP. XLII.

1586. ſion of her accomplices: That ſhe was but a titular Queen, and at preſent poſſeſſed no where any right of ſovereignty; much leſs in England, where every one was ſubject to the laws, and to Elizabeth, the only true ſovereign: That even allowing her to be ſtill the Queen's equal in rank and dignity, ſelf-defence was permitted by a law of nature, which could never be abrogated; and every one, ſtill more a Queen, had ſufficient juriſdiction over an enemy, who by open violence, and ſtill more, who by ſecret treachery, threatned the utmoſt danger againſt her life: That the general combination of the catholics to exterminate the proteſtants, was no longer a ſecret; and as the ſole reſource of the latter perſecuted ſect lay in Elizabeth, ſo the chief hope which the former entertained of final ſucceſs, conſiſted in the perſon, and in the title of the Queen of Scots: That this very circumſtance brought matters to extremity between theſe princeſſes, and rendering the life of the one the death of the other, pointed out to Elizabeth the path, which either regard to ſelf-preſervation, or to the happineſs of her people, ſhould direct her to follow: And that neceſſity, more powerful than policy, thus demanded of the Queen, that reſolution which equity would authorize, and which duty preſcribed [1].

1587. WHEN Elizabeth thought that as many importunities had been uſed, and as much delay interpoſed, as decency required, ſhe at laſt determined to carry the ſentence into execution: But even in this laſt reſolution ſhe could not proceed without diſplaying a new ſcene of duplicity and artifice. In order to alarm the vulgar, rumours were previouſly diſperſed, that the Spaniſh fleet was arrived in Milford Haven; that the Scots had made an irruption into England; that the duke of Guiſe was landed in Suſſex with a ſtrong army; that the Queen of Scots was eſcaped from priſon,

[1] Camden, p. 533.

and

and had raiſed an army; that the northern counties had begun an inſurrection; that there was a new conſpiracy on foot to aſſaſſinate the Queen, and ſet the city of London on fire; nay, that the Queen was actually aſſaſſinated [m]. A criminal attempt of this nature was even imputed to L'Aubeſpine, the French ambaſſador; and that miniſter was obliged to leave the kingdom. The Queen, affecting to be in great terror and perplexity, was obſerved to ſit much alone, penſive and ſilent, and ſometimes to mutter to herſelf half ſentences, importing the difficulty and diſtreſs to which ſhe was reduced [n]. She at laſt called Daviſon, a man of parts, but eaſy to be impoſed on, and who had lately, for that very reaſon, been made ſecretary; and ſhe ordered him, to draw out ſecretly a warrant for the execution of the Queen of Scots; which, ſhe afterwards ſaid, ſhe intended to keep by her, in caſe any attempt ſhould be made for the delivery of that princeſs. She ſigned the warrant; and then commanded Daviſon to carry it to the chancellor, in order to have the ſeal affixed to it. Next day ſhe ſent Killigrew to Daviſon, enjoining him to forbear ſome time executing her former orders; and when Daviſon came and told her, that the warrant had already paſſed the ſeals, ſhe ſeemed to be ſomewhat moved, and blamed him for his precipitation. Daviſon, being in ſome perplexity, acquainted the council with this whole tranſaction; and they endeavoured to perſuade him to ſend off Beale, clerk of the council, with the warrant: If the Queen ſhould be diſpleaſed, they promiſed to juſtify his conduct, and to take on themſelves the whole blame of this meaſure *.

[m] Camden, p. 533. [n] Ibid. p. 534.

* It appears by ſome letters publiſhed by Strype, vol. III. book ii. c. 1. that Elizabeth had not expreſsly communicated her intention to any of her miniſters, not even to Burleigh: They were ſuch experienced courtiers, that they knew they could not gratify her more than by ſerving her without waiting till ſhe deſired them.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

The ſecretary, not perceiving their intention, complied with the advice, and the warrant was diſpatched to the earls of Shrewſbury and Kent, and ſome others, ordering them to ſee the ſentence executed upon the Queen of Scots.

7th February.

The execution.

THE two earls came to Fotheringay; and being introduced to Mary, informed her of their commiſſion, and told her to prepare for death next morning at eight o' clock. She ſeem'd not terrifyed, tho' ſomewhat ſurprized, with the intelligence. She ſaid, with a chearful, and even a ſmiling countenance, that ſhe did not think the Queen, her ſiſter, would have conſented to her death, or have executed the ſentence againſt a perſon who was not ſubject to the laws and juriſdiction of England. "But as ſuch is her will," ſaid ſhe, "death, which puts an end to all my miſeries, ſhall "be to me moſt welcome; nor can I eſteem that ſoul "worthy the felicities of heaven, which cannot ſup-"port the body under the horrors of the laſt paſſage "to theſe bliſsful manſions[p]." She then requeſted the two noblemen, that they would permit ſome of her ſervants, and particularly her confeſſor, to attend her: But they told her, that compliance with this laſt demand was contrary to their conſcience[q], and that Dr. Fletcher, dean of Peterborow, a man of great learning, ſhould be preſent, to inſtruct her in the principles of true religion. Her refuſal to have any conference with this divine inflamed the earl of Kent's zeal; and he bluntly told her, that her death would be the life of their religion; as, on the contrary, her life would have been the death of it. Mention being made of Babington, ſhe conſtantly denied his conſpiracy to have been at all known to her; and the revenge of her wrong, ſhe reſigned into the hands of the Almighty.

[p] Camden, p. 534. Jebb, vol. II. p. 301. MS. in the Advocate's library, p. 2. from the Cott. Lib. Cal. c. 9.

[q] Jebb, vol. II. p. 302.

WHEN

CHAP. XLII. 1587.

WHEN the earls had left her ſhe ordered ſupper to be haſtened, that ſhe might have the more leiſure to finiſh the few affairs which remained to her in this world, and to prepare for her paſſage to another. It was neceſſary for her, ſhe ſaid, to take ſome ſuſtenance, leſt a failure of her bodily ſtrength ſhould depreſs her ſpirits on the morrow, and leſt her behaviour ſhould thereby betray a weakneſs unworthy of herſelf[r]. She ſupped ſparingly, as her manner uſually was; and her wonted chearfulneſs did not even deſert her on this occaſion. She comforted her ſervants under the affliction which overwhelmed them, and which was too powerful for them to conceal from her. Turning to Burgoin, her phyſician, ſhe aſked him, whether he did not remark the great and invincible force of truth. "They pretend," ſaid ſhe, "that I muſt die, be-"cauſe I conſpired againſt the Queen's life: But the "earl of Kent avowed, that there was no other cauſe "of my death, but the apprehenſions, which, if I "ſhould live, they entertain for their religion. My "conſtancy in the faith is my real crime: The reſt is "only a colour, invented by intereſted and deſigning "men." Towards the end of ſupper, ſhe called in all her ſervants, and drank to them: They pledged her, in order, on their knees; and craved her pardon for any paſt neglect of their duty: She deigned, in return, to aſk their pardon for her offences towards them; and a plentiful effuſion of tears attended this laſt ſolemn farewel, and exchange of mutual forgiveneſs [s].

HER care of her ſervants was the ſole remaining affair which employed her concern in this world. She peruſed her will, in which ſhe had provided for them by legacies: She ordered the inventory of her goods, cloaths, and jewels to be brought her; and ſhe wrote

[r] Jebb, p. 489. [s] Ibid. vol. II. p. 302, 626. Camden, p. 534.

CHAP. XLII. 1587.

The ſecretary, not perceiving their intention, complied with the advice, and the warrant was diſpatched to the earls of Shrewſbury and Kent, and ſome others, ordering them to ſee the ſentence executed upon the Queen of Scots.

7th February. The execution.

THE two earls came to Fotheringay; and being introduced to Mary, informed her of their commiſſion, and told her to prepare for death next morning at eight o' clock. She ſeem'd not terrifyed, tho' ſomewhat ſurprized, with the intelligence. She ſaid, with a chearful, and even a ſmiling countenance, that ſhe did not think the Queen, her ſiſter, would have conſented to her death, or have executed the ſentence againſt a perſon who was not ſubject to the laws and juriſdiction of England. "But as ſuch is her will," ſaid ſhe, "death, which puts an end to all my miſeries, ſhall "be to me moſt welcome; nor can I eſteem that ſoul "worthy the felicities of heaven, which cannot ſup-"port the body under the horrors of the laſt paſſage "to theſe bliſsful manſions[p]." She then requeſted the two noblemen, that they would permit ſome of her ſervants, and particularly her confeſſor, to attend her: But they told her, that compliance with this laſt demand was contrary to their conſcience[q], and that Dr. Fletcher, dean of Peterborow, a man of great learning, ſhould be preſent, to inſtruct her in the principles of true religion. Her refuſal to have any conference with this divine inflamed the earl of Kent's zeal; and he bluntly told her, that her death would be the life of their religion; as, on the contrary, her life would have been the death of it. Mention being made of Babington, ſhe conſtantly denied his conſpiracy to have been at all known to her; and the revenge of her wrong, ſhe reſigned into the hands of the Almighty.

p Camden, p. 534. Jebb, vol. II. p. 301, MS. in the Advocate's library, p. 2. from the Cott. Lib. Cal. c. 9.

q Jebb, vol. II. p. 302.

WHEN

CHAP. XLII. 1587.

WHEN the earls had left her ſhe ordered ſupper to be haſtened, that ſhe might have the more leiſure to finiſh the few affairs which remained to her in this world, and to prepare for her paſſage to another. It was neceſſary for her, ſhe ſaid, to take ſome ſuſtenance, leſt a failure of her bodily ſtrength ſhould depreſs her ſpirits on the morrow, and leſt her behaviour ſhould thereby betray a weakneſs unworthy of herſelf[r]. She ſupped ſparingly, as her manner uſually was; and her wonted chearfulneſs did not even deſert her on this occaſion. She comforted her ſervants under the affliction which overwhelmed them, and which was too powerful for them to conceal from her. Turning to Burgoin, her phyſician, ſhe aſked him, whether he did not remark the great and invincible force of truth. "They pretend," ſaid ſhe, "that I muſt die, be-"cauſe I conſpired againſt the Queen's life: But the "earl of Kent avowed, that there was no other cauſe "of my death, but the apprehenſions, which, if I "ſhould live, they entertain for their religion. My "conſtancy in the faith is my real crime: The reſt is "only a colour, invented by intereſted and deſigning "men." Towards the end of ſupper, ſhe called in all her ſervants, and drank to them: They pledged her, in order, on their knees; and craved her pardon for any paſt neglect of their duty: She deigned, in return, to aſk their pardon for her offences towards them; and a plentiful effuſion of tears attended this laſt ſolemn farewel, and exchange of mutual forgiveneſs [s].

HER care of her ſervants was the ſole remaining affair which employed her concern in this world. She peruſed her will, in which ſhe had provided for them by legacies: She ordered the inventory of her goods, cloaths, and jewels to be brought her; and ſhe wrote

[r] Jebb, p. 489. [s] Ibid. vol. II. p. 302, 626. Camden, p. 534.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

wrote down the names of thoſe to whom ſhe bequeathed each particular: To ſome ſhe diſtributed money with her own hands; and ſhe adapted the recompence to their different degrees of rank and merit. She wrote alſo letters of recommendation for her ſervants to the French King, and to her couſin the duke of Guiſe, whom ſhe made the chief executor of her teſtament. At her wonted time ſhe went to bed, ſlept ſome hours; and then riſing, ſpent the reſt of the night in prayer. Having foreſeen the difficulty of exerciſing the rites of her religion, ſhe had had the precaution to obtain a conſecrated hoſte from the hands of Pope Pius, and ſhe had reſerved the uſe of it for this laſt period of her life. By this expedient ſhe ſupplied, as much as ſhe could, the want of a prieſt and confeſſor, who was refuſed her [t].

TOWARDS the morning ſhe dreſſed herſelf in a rich habit of ſilk and velvet, the only one which ſhe had reſerved to herſelf. She told her maids, that ſhe would willingly have left them this dreſs rather than the plain garb which ſhe wore the day before: But it was neceſſary for her to appear at the enſuing ſolemnity in a decent habit.

THOMAS Andrews, ſheriff of the county, entered the room, and informed her, that the hour was come, and that he muſt attend her to the place of execution. She replied, that ſhe was ready; and bidding adieu to her ſervants, ſhe leaned on two of Sir Amias Paulet's guards, becauſe of an infirmity in her limbs; and ſhe followed the ſheriff with a ſerene and compoſed aſpect. In paſſing thro' a hall adjoining to her chamber, ſhe was met by the earls of Shrewſbury and Kent, Sir Amias Paulet, Sir Drue Drury, and many other gentlemen of diſtinction. Here ſhe alſo found Sir Andrew Melvil, her ſteward, who flung himſelf on his

[t] Jebb, vol. II. p. 489.

knees

knees before her; and, wringing his hands, cried aloud: "Ah! madam! unhappy me! What man was "ever before the meſſenger of ſuch heavy tidings as I "muſt carry, when I ſhall return to my native country, "and ſhall report, that I ſaw my gracious Queen and "Miſtreſs beheaded in England?" His tears prevented further ſpeech; and Mary too felt herſelf moved, more from ſympathy than affliction. "Ceaſe, my good ſer-"vant," ſaid ſhe, "ceaſe to lament: Thou haſt cauſe "rather to rejoice than to mourn: For now ſhalt thou "ſee the troubles of Mary Stuart receive their long "expected period and completion." "Know," continued ſhe, "good ſervant, that all the world at beſt "is vanity, and ſubject ſtill to more ſorrow than a "whole ocean of tears is able to bewail. But I pray "thee, carry this meſſage from me, that I die a true "woman to my religion, and unalterable in my af-"fections to Scotland and to France. Heaven forgive "them, that have long deſired my end, and have thirſt-"ed for my blood as the hart panteth after the wa-"ter brooks." "O God," added ſhe, "thou that "art the author of truth and truth itſelf, thou know-"eſt the inmoſt receſſes of my heart: Thou knoweſt, "that I was ever deſirous, to preſerve an entire union "between Scotland and England, and to obviate the "ſource of all theſe fatal diſcords. But recommend "me, Melvil, to my ſon, and tell him, that, notwith-"ſtanding all my diſtreſſes, I have done nothing pre-"judicial to the ſtate and kingdom of Scotland." After theſe words, reclining herſelf, with weeping eyes, and face bedewed with tears, ſhe kiſſed him. "And "ſo," ſaid ſhe, "good Melvil, farewell: Once again, "farewell, good Melvil; and grant the aſſiſtance of "thy prayers to thy Queen and miſtreſs [u]."

[u] MS. p. 4. Jebb, vol. II. p. 624. Strype, vol. III. p. 384.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

SHE then turned to the noblemen who attended her, and made a petition in behalf of her ſervants, that they might be well treated, that they might be allowed to enjoy the preſents which ſhe had made them, and be ſent ſafely into their own country. Having received a favourable anſwer, ſhe moved another requeſt, that they might be permitted to attend her at her death: In order, ſaid ſhe, that their eyes may behold, and their hearts bear witneſs, how patiently their Queen and miſtreſs can bear her execution, and how conſtantly ſhe perſeveres in her attachments to her religion. The earl of Kent oppoſed this deſire, and told her, that they would be apt, by their ſpeeches and cries, both to diſturb herſelf and the ſpectators: He was alſo apprehenſive, leſt they ſhould practiſe ſome ſuperſtition, unmeet for him to ſuffer; ſuch as dipping their handkerchiefs in her blood: For that was the inſtance which he made uſe of. "My lord," ſaid the Queen of Scots, "I will give my word (altho' it be "but dead) that they ſhall not incur any blame in any "of the actions which you have named. But alas! "poor ſouls! it would be a great conſolation to them "to bid their miſtreſs farewel. And I hope," added ſhe, "that your miſtreſs, being a maiden Queen, "would vouchſafe, in regard of womanhood, that I "ſhould have ſome of my own people about me at my "death. I know, that her majeſty hath not given you "any ſuch ſtrict command, but that you might grant "me a requeſt of far greater courteſy, even tho' I "were a woman of much inferior rank to that which "I bear." Finding that the earl of Kent perſiſted ſtill in his refuſal, her mind, which had fortified itſelf againſt the terrors of death, was affected by this circumſtance of indignity, for which ſhe was not prepared. "I am couſin to your Queen," cried ſhe, "and de-"ſcended from the blood-royal of Henry the ſeventh, and "a married Queen of France, and an anointed Queen "of Scotland." The commiſſioners perceiving how

invidious

invidious their obſtinacy would appear, conferred a little together, and agreed, that ſhe might carry a few of her ſervants along with her. She made choice of four men, and two maid-ſervants, for that purpoſe.

She then paſſed into another hall, where was erected the ſcaffold, covered with black; and ſhe ſaw, with an undiſmayed countenance, the two executioners, and all the preparations of death. The room was crowded with ſpectators, and no one was ſo ſteeled againſt all ſentiments of humanity, as not to be moved, when he reflected on her royal dignity, conſidered the ſurprizing train of her misfortunes, beheld her mild but inflexible conſtancy, recalled her amiable accompliſhments, or ſurveyed her beauties, which, tho' faded by years, and yet more by her afflictions, ſtill diſcovered themſelves in this fatal moment. Here the warrant for her execution was read to her; and during this ceremony ſhe was ſilent, but ſhewed, in her behaviour, an indifference and unconcern, as if the buſineſs had no wiſe regarded her. Before the executioners performed their office, the dean of Peterborow ſtepped forth; and tho' the Queen frequently told him, that he needed not concern himſelf about her, that ſhe was ſettled in the antient catholic and Roman religion, and that ſhe meant to lay down her life in defence of that faith; he ſtill thought it his duty to perſiſt in his lectures and exhortations, and to endeavour her converſion. The terms, which he employed, were, under colour of pious inſtructions, very cruel inſults on her unfortunate ſituation; and, beſides their own abſurdity, may be regarded as the moſt mortifying indignities, to which ſhe was ever yet expoſed. He told her, that the Queen of England had in this moment ſhewn a tender care of her; and notwithſtanding the puniſhment juſtly to be inflicted on her, for her manifold treſpaſſes, was determined to uſe every expedient for ſaving her ſoul from that deſtruction

with

CHAP. XLII. 1587.

with which it was ſo nearly threatned; That ſhe was now ſtanding upon the brink of eternity, and had no other means of eſcaping endleſs perdition, but by repenting her of her former wickedneſs, by juſtifying the ſentence pronounced againſt her, by acknowleging the Queen's favours, and by exerting a true and lively faith in Chriſt Jeſus: That the ſcriptures were the only rule of doctrine, the merits of Chriſt the only means of ſalvation; and, if ſhe truſted in the inventions or devices of men, ſhe muſt expect in a moment to fall into utter darkneſs, into a place where ſhall be weeping, howling, and gnaſhing of teeth: That the hand of death was upon her, the ax was laid to the root of the tree, the throne of the great judge of heaven was erected, the book of her life was ſpread wide, and the particular ſentence and judgment was ready to be pronounced upon her: And that it was now, during this important moment, in her choice, either to riſe to the reſurrection of life, and hear that joyful ſalutation, *Come, ye bleſſed of my Father*, or to ſhare the reſurrection of condemnation, replete with ſorrow and grief; and to ſuffer that dreadful denunciation, *Go, ye curſed, into everlaſting fire*[x].

DURING this diſcourſe the Queen could not forbear ſometimes betraying her impatience, by interrupting the preacher; and the dean, finding that he had profited nothing by his lecture, at laſt bid her change her opinion, repent her of her former wickedneſs, and ſettle her faith upon this ground, that only in Chriſt Jeſus could ſhe hope to be ſaved. She anſwered, again and again, with great earneſtneſs: "Trouble "not yourſelf any more about the matter: For I was "born in this religion, I have lived in this religion, "and in this religion I am reſolved to die." Even the two earls perceived, that it was fruitleſs to harraſs her any further with theological diſputes; and they order-

[x] MS. p. 8, 9, 10, 11. Strype, vol. III. p. 385.

ed

ed the dean to deſiſt from his unſeaſonable exhortations, and to pray for her converſion. During the dean's prayer, ſhe employed herſelf in private devotion from the office of the Virgin; and after he had finiſhed, ſhe pronounced aloud ſome petitions in Engliſh, for the afflicted church, for an end of her own troubles, for her ſon, and for Queen Elizabeth; and prayed God, that that princeſs might long proſper, and be employed in his ſervice. The earl of Kent obſerving, that in her devotions ſhe made frequent uſe of the crucifix, could not forbear reproving her, for her attachment to that popiſh trumpery, as he termed it; and he exhorted her to have Chriſt in her heart, not in her hand [y]. She replied with preſence of mind, that it was difficult to hold ſuch an object in her hand, without feeling her heart touched with ſome compunction [z].

She now began, with the aid of her two women, to diſrobe herſelf; and the executioner alſo lent his hand, to aſſiſt them. She ſmiled, and ſaid, that ſhe was not accuſtomed to undreſs herſelf before ſo large a company, nor to be ſerved by ſuch valets. Her ſervants, ſeeing her in this condition, ready to lay her head upon the block, burſt into tears and lamentations: She turned about to them; put her finger upon her lips, as a ſign of impoſing ſilence upon them [a]; and having given them her bleſſing, deſired them to pray for her. One of her maids, whom ſhe had appointed for that purpoſe, covered her eyes with a handkerchief; ſhe laid herſelf down, without any ſign of fear or trepidation; and her head was ſevered from her body at two ſtrokes by the executioner. He inſtantly held it up to the ſpectators, ſtreaming with blood and agitated with the convulſions of death:

[y] MS. p. 15. Jebb, vol. II. p. 307, 491, 637. [z] Jebb. ibid.
[a] Jebb, p. 307, 492.

The

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

with which it was ſo nearly threatned; That ſhe was now ſtanding upon the brink of eternity, and had no other means of eſcaping endleſs perdition, but by repenting her of her former wickedneſs, by juſtifying the ſentence pronounced againſt her, by acknowleging the Queen's favours, and by exerting a true and lively faith in Chriſt Jeſus: That the ſcriptures were the only rule of doctrine, the merits of Chriſt the only means of ſalvation; and, if ſhe truſted in the inventions or devices of men, ſhe muſt expect in a moment to fall into utter darkneſs, into a place where ſhall be weeping, howling, and gnaſhing of teeth: That the hand of death was upon her, the ax was laid to the root of the tree, the throne of the great judge of heaven was erected, the book of her life was ſpread wide, and the particular ſentence and judgment was ready to be pronounced upon her: And that it was now, during this important moment, in her choice, either to riſe to the reſurrection of life, and hear that joyful ſalutation, *Come, ye bleſſed of my Father*, or to ſhare the reſurrection of condemnation, replete with ſorrow and grief; and to ſuffer that dreadful denunciation, *Go, ye curſed, into everlaſting fire*[x].

DURING this diſcourſe the Queen could not forbear ſometimes betraying her impatience, by interrupting the preacher; and the dean, finding that he had profited nothing by his lecture, at laſt bid her change her opinion, repent her of her former wickedneſs, and ſettle her faith upon this ground, that only in Chriſt Jeſus could ſhe hope to be ſaved. She anſwered, again and again, with great earneſtneſs: "Trouble "not yourſelf any more about the matter: For I was "born in this religion, I have lived in this religion, "and in this religion I am reſolved to die." Even the two earls perceived, that it was fruitleſs to harraſs her any further with theological diſputes; and they order-

[x] MS. p. 8, 9, 10, 11. Strype, vol. III. p. 385.

ed

ed the dean to deſiſt from his unſeaſonable exhortations, and to pray for her converſion. During the dean's prayer, ſhe employed herſelf in private devotion from the office of the Virgin; and after he had finiſhed, ſhe pronounced aloud ſome petitions in Engliſh, for the afflicted church, for an end of her own troubles, for her ſon, and for Queen Elizabeth; and prayed God, that that princeſs might long proſper, and be employed in his ſervice. The earl of Kent obſerving, that in her devotions ſhe made frequent uſe of the crucifix, could not forbear reproving her, for her attachment to that popiſh trumpery, as he termed it; and he exhorted her to have Chriſt in her heart, not in her hand [y]. She replied with preſence of mind, that it was difficult to hold ſuch an object in her hand, without feeling her heart touched with ſome compunction [z].

She now began, with the aid of her two women, to diſtobe herſelf; and the executioner alſo lent his hand, to aſſiſt them. She ſmiled, and ſaid, that ſhe was not accuſtomed to undreſs herſelf before ſo large a company, nor to be ſerved by ſuch valets. Her ſervants, ſeeing her in this condition, ready to lay her head upon the block, burſt into tears and lamentations: She turned about to them; put her finger upon her lips, as a ſign of impoſing ſilence upon them [a]; and having given them her bleſſing, deſired them to pray for her. One of her maids, whom ſhe had appointed for that purpoſe, covered her eyes with a handkerchief; ſhe laid herſelf down, without any ſign of fear or trepidation; and her head was ſevered from her body at two ſtrokes by the executioner. He inſtantly held it up to the ſpectators, ſtreaming with blood and agitated with the convulſions of death:

[y] MS. p. 15. Jebb, vol. II. p. 307, 491, 637. [z] Jebb. ibid.
[a] Jebb, p. 307, 492.

The

CHAP. XLII.

1587. The dean of Peterborow alone exclaimed, "So "periſh all Queen Elizabeth's enemies": The earl of Kent alone reply'd "Amen": The attention of all the other ſpectators was fixed on the melancholy Scene before them; and zeal and flattery alike gave place to preſent pity and admiration of the expiring Princeſs.

Mary's character.

THUS died, in the forty fifth year of her age, and the nineteenth of her captivity in England, Mary Queen of Scots; a princeſs of great accompliſhments both of body and mind, natural as well as acquired; but unfortunate in her life, and during one period, very unhappy in her conduct. The beauties of her perſon, and graces of her air, combined to make her the moſt amiable of women; and the charms of her addreſs and converſation aided the impreſſion which her lovely figure made on the hearts of all beholders. Ambitious and active in her temper, yet inclined to chearfulneſs and ſociety; of a lofty ſpirit, conſtant and even vehement in her purpoſe; yet polite, and gentle, and affable in her demeanor; ſhe ſeemed to partake only ſo much of the male virtues as to render her eſtimable, without relinquiſhing thoſe ſoft graces which compoſe the proper ornaments of her ſex. In order to form a juſt idea of her character, we muſt ſet aſide one part of her conduct, while ſhe abandoned herſelf to the guidance of a profligate man; and muſt conſider theſe faults, whether we admit them to be imprudences or crimes, as the reſult of an inexplicable, tho' not uncommon, inconſtancy in the human mind, of the frailty of our nature, of the violence of paſſion, and of the influence, which ſituations, and ſometimes momentary incidents, have on perſons, whoſe principles are not throughly confirmed by experience and reflection. Enraged by the ungrateful conduct of her huſband, ſeduced by the treacherous counſels of one in whom ſhe repoſed confidence,

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

ſidence, tranſported by the violence of her own temper, which never lay ſufficiently under the guidance of diſcretion; ſhe was betrayed into actions, which may, with ſome difficulty, be accounted for, but which admit of no apology, nor even of alleviation. An enumeration of her qualities might carry the appearance of a panegyric; an account of her conduct muſt, in ſome parts, wear the aſpect of a ſevere ſatire and invective.

HER numerous misfortunes, the ſolitude of her long and tedious captivity, and the perſecutions to which ſhe had been expoſed on account of her religion, had wrought her up to a degree of bigotry during her latter years; and ſuch was the prevalent ſpirit and principles of that age, that it is the leſs wonder, if her zeal, her reſentment, and her intereſt uniting, induced her to give conſent to a deſign, which conſpirators, actuated only by the firſt of theſe motives, had formed againſt the life of Elizabeth.

The Queen's affected ſorrow.

WHEN the Queen heard of Mary's execution, ſhe affected the utmoſt ſurprize and indignation. Her countenance changed, her ſpeech faltered and failed her, and for a long time, her ſorrow was ſo deep that ſhe could not expreſs it, but ſtood fixed, like a ſtatue, in ſilence and mute aſtoniſhment. After her grief was able to find vent, it burſt out in loud wailings and lamentations; ſhe put herſelf into deep mourning for this deplorable event; and ſhe was ſeen perpetually bathed in tears, and ſurrounded only by her maids and women. None of her miniſters or councellors dared to approach her; or if any aſſumed ſuch temerity, ſhe chaced them from her, with the moſt violent expreſſions of rage and reſentment: They had all of them been guilty of an unpardonable crime, in putting to death her dear ſiſter and kinſwoman, contrary

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

trary to her fixed purpose and intention [b], of which they were sufficiently apprized and acquainted.

No sooner was her sorrow so much abated as to leave room for reflexion, than she wrote a letter of apology to the King of Scots, and sent it by Sir Robert Cary, son to lord Hunsdon. She there told him, that she wished he knew, but not felt, the unutterable grief of mind, she experienced, on account of that lamentable accident, which, without her knowledge, much less concurrence, had happened in England: That as her pen trembled, when she attempted to write it, she found herself obliged to commit the relation of it to the messenger, her kinsman; who would likewise inform his majesty of every circumstance, which attended this dismal and unlooked for misfortune: That she appealed to the Supreme Judge of heaven and earth for her innocence; and was also so happy, amidst her other afflictions, as to find, that many persons in her court could bear witness to her veracity in this protestation: That she abhorred hypocrisy and dissimulation, deemed nothing more worthy of a prince than a sincere and open conduct, and could never surely be esteemed so base and poor-spirited, as that, if she had really given orders for this fatal execution, she could, on any consideration, be induced to deny them: That tho' she was sensible of the justice of the sentence, she determined from clemency never to carry it into execution; and could not but resent the temerity of those, who on this occasion had disappointed her intention: And that as no one loved him more dearly than herself, or bore a more anxious concern for his welfare; she hoped, that he would consider every one as his enemy, who endeavoured, on account of the present incident, to excite any animosity between them [c].

[b] Camden, p. 536. Strype, vol. III. Appendix, p. 145. Jebb, vol. II. p. 608. [c] Camden, p. 536. Spotswood, p. 358.

In

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

In order the better to appeaſe James, ſhe committed Daviſon to priſon, and ordered him to be tried in the Star-Chamber, for his miſdemeanour. The ſecretary was confounded; and being ſenſible of the danger, which muſt attend his entering into a conteſt with the Queen, he expreſſed penitence for his error, and ſubmitted very patiently to be railed at by thoſe very counſellors, whoſe perſuaſion had induced him to incur the guilt, and who had promiſed to countenance and protect him. He was condemned to impriſonment during the Queen's pleaſure, and to pay a fine of ten thouſand pounds. He remained a long time in cuſtody; and the fine, tho' it reduced him to want and beggary, was rigorouſly levied upon him. All the favour, which he could obtain from the Queen, was the ſending him ſmall ſupplies from time to time, to keep him from periſhing in neceſſity [d]. He privately wrote an apology to his friend Walſingham, which contains many curious particulars: The French and Scots ambaſſadors, he ſaid, had been remonſtrating with the Queen in Mary's behalf; and immediately after their departure, ſhe commanded him, of her own accord, to deliver her the warrant for the execution of that princeſs. She ſigned it readily and ordered it to be ſealed with the great ſeal of England. She appeared in ſuch good humour on the occaſion, that ſhe ſaid to him in a jocular manner, "Go tell all this to Wal-"ſingham, who is now ſick: Tho' I fear he will die "for ſorrow, when he hears it." She added, that, tho' ſhe had ſo long delayed the execution, leſt ſhe ſhould ſeem to be actuated by malice or cruelty, ſhe was all along ſenſible of the neceſſity of it. In the ſame converſation, ſhe blamed Drury and Paulet, that they had not before eaſed her of this trouble; and ſhe expreſſed her deſire that Walſingham would bring them

[d] Camden, p. 538.

to

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

to a compliance in that particular. She was so bent on this purpose that, some time after, she asked Davison, whether any letter had come from Paulet with regard to the service expected of him. Davison showed her Paulet's letter; in which that gentleman flatly refused to act any thing inconsistent with the principles of honour and justice. The Queen fell into a passion, and accused Paulet, as well as Drury, of perjury, that, having taken the oath of association, in which they had bound themselves to avenge her wrongs, they had yet refused to lend their hand on this occasion. "But "others," she said, "will be found less scrupulous." Davison adds, that nothing but the consent and exhortations of the whole council could have engaged him to send off the warrant. He was well aware of his danger; and remembered, that the Queen, after having ordered the execution of the duke of Norfolk, had endeavoured, in like manner, to throw the whole blame and odium of that action upon lord Burleigh [e].

ELIZABETH's dissimulation was so gross, that it could deceive no body who was not previously resolved to be blinded; but as James's concern for his mother was certainly more sincere and cordial, he discovered the highest resentment, and refused to admit Cary into his presence. He recalled his ambassadors from England; and seemed to breathe nothing but war and vengeance. The States of Scotland, being assembled, entered into the quarrel, and professed that they were ready to spend their lives and fortunes in revenge of his mother's death, and in defence of his title to the crown of England. Many of his nobility instigated him to take arms: Lord Sinclair, when the courtiers appeared in deep mourning, presented himself to the King arrayed in compleat armour, and said, that that was

[e] Camden, p. 538. Strype, vol. III. p. 375, 376. MS. in the Advocate's library, A. 3. 28. p. 17. from the Cott. Lib. Calig. c. 9. Biogr. Brit. p. 1625, 1627.

the

the proper mourning for the Queen. The catholics took the opportunity of exhorting James to ally himſelf with the King of Spain, to lay immediate claim to the crown of England, and to prevent the danger, which, from his mother's example, he might conclude, would certainly, if Elizabeth's power prevailed, overwhelm his perſon and his kingdom. The Queen was ſenſible of the danger attending theſe counſels; and, after allowing James ſome decent interval to vent his grief and anger, ſhe employed her emiſſaries to pacify him, and to ſet before him every motive of hope or fear, which might induce him to live in peace and friendſhip with her. CHAP. XLII. 1587.

WALSINGHAM wrote to lord Thirlſtone, the Scots ſecretary of ſtate, a very judicious letter to the ſame purpoſe. He ſaid, that he was much ſurprized to hear of the violent reſolutions taken in Scotland, and of the paſſion diſcovered by a prince of ſo much judgment and temper as James: That a war, founded merely on the principle of revenge, and that too on account of an act of Juſtice, which neceſſity had extorted, would for ever be expoſed to blame, and could not be excuſed by any principles of equity or reaſon: That if theſe views were deemed leſs momentous among princes, policy and intereſt ought certainly to be attended to; and theſe motives did ſtill more evidently oppoſe all thoughts of a rupture with England, and all revival of exploded claims and pretenſions to the Engliſh throne: That the inequality between the two kingdoms deprived James of any hopes of ſucceſs, if he truſted merely to the force of his own ſtate, and had no recourſe to foreign powers for aſſiſtance: That the objections, attending the introduction of ſuccours from a more powerful monarch, appeared ſo evident from all the tranſactions of hiſtory, that they could not eſcape a perſon of the King's extenſive knowlege; but there were, in the preſent caſe, 4th March.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

ſeveral peculiar circumſtances, which ought for ever to prevent him from having recourſe to ſo dangerous an expedient: That the French monarch, the antient ally of Scotland, might willingly uſe the aſſiſtance of that kingdom againſt England; but would be diſpleaſed to ſee the union of theſe two crowns on the head of James; an union, which would ever after exclude him from all hopes of practicing that policy, formerly ſo uſeful to France and ſo pernicious to the Scottiſh nation: That Henry, beſides, infeſted with faction and domeſtic war, was not in a condition of ſupporting diſtant allies; much leſs, would he undergo any hazard or expence, in order to aggrandize a near kinſman to the houſe of Guiſe, the moſt determined enemies of his repoſe and authority: That the extenſive power and exorbitant ambition of the Spaniſh monarch rendered him a ſtill more dangerous ally to James; and as he evidently aſpired to an univerſal monarchy in the weſt, and had in particular advanced ſome claims on England, as if he were deſcended from the houſe of Lancaſter, he was at the ſame time the common enemy of all princes, who d[illegible]ed maintain their liberty and independance; and the immediate rival and competitor of the King of Scots: That the Queen, by her own naval power, and her alliance with the Hollanders, would probably intercept all ſuccours which might be ſent James from abroad, and be enabled to decide the controverſy in this iſland with the ſuperior forces of her own kingdom, oppoſed to thoſe of Scotland: That if the King revived his mother's pretenſions to the crown of England, he muſt alſo embrace her religion, by which alone they could be juſtified; and muſt thereby undergo the infamy of abandoning thoſe principles, in which he had been ſtrictly educated, and to which he had hitherto religiouſly adhered: That as he would, by ſuch an apoſtaſy, totally alienate all the proteſtants in

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

Scotland and England, he could never gain the confidence of the catholics, who would ſtill entertain a very reaſonable doubt of his honour and ſincerity: That by advancing a preſent claim to the crown, he forfeited the certain proſpect of his ſucceſſion; and revived that national animoſity, which the late peace and alliance between the kingdoms had happily extinguiſhed: That the whole gentry and nobility of England had openly declared themſelves for the execution of the Queen of Scots; and if James ſhowed ſuch violent reſentment againſt that act of juſtice, they would be obliged, for their own ſecurity, to prevent for ever ſo implacable and revengeful a prince from ruling over them: And that, however ſome perſons might repreſent his honour as engaged to ſeek vengeance for the preſent affront and injury, the true honour of a prince conſiſted in wiſdom and moderation and juſtice, not in following the dictates of blind paſſion, or in purſuing revenge at the expence of every motive and every intereſt[f]. Theſe conſiderations, joined to the peaceable unambitious temper of the young prince, prevailed over his reſentment; and he fell gradually into a good correſpondence with the court of England. It is probable, that the Queen's chief object in her diſſimulation with regard to the execution of Mary, was, that ſhe might thereby afford James a decent pretence for renewing his amity with her, on which their mutual intereſts ſo much depended.

WHILE Elizabeth enſured tranquillity from the attempts of her neareſt neighbour, ſhe was not negligent of more diſtant dangers. Hearing that Philip, while he ſeemed to diſſemble the daily inſults and injuries, which he received from the Engliſh, was ſecretly preparing a great navy to attack her; ſhe ſent Sir Francis Drake with a fleet to intercept his ſupplies, to pillage his coaſt, and to deſtroy his ſhipping. Drake carried

[f] Strype, vol. III. p. 377. Spotſwood.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

ſeveral peculiar circumſtances, which ought for ever to prevent him from having recourſe to ſo dangerous an expedient: That the French monarch, the antient ally of Scotland, might willingly uſe the aſſiſtance of that kingdom againſt England; but would be diſpleaſed to ſee the union of theſe two crowns on the head of James; an union, which would ever after exclude him from all hopes of practicing that policy, formerly ſo uſeful to France and ſo pernicious to the Scottiſh nation: That Henry, beſides, infeſted with faction and domeſtic war, was not in a condition of ſupporting diſtant allies; much leſs, would he undergo any hazard or expence, in order to aggrandize a near kinſman to the houſe of Guiſe, the moſt determined enemies of his repoſe and authority: That the extenſive power and exorbitant ambition of the Spaniſh monarch rendered him a ſtill more dangerous ally to James; and as he evidently aſpired to an univerſal monarchy in the weſt, and had in particular advanced ſome claims on England, as if he were deſcended from the houſe of Lancaſter, he was at the ſame time the common enemy of all princes, who d[illegible] ed maintain their liberty and independance; and the immediate rival and competitor of the King of Scots: That the Queen, by her own naval power, and her alliance with the Hollanders, would probably intercept all ſuccours which might be ſent James from abroad, and be enabled to decide the controverſy in this iſland with the ſuperior forces of her own kingdom, oppoſed to thoſe of Scotland: That if the King revived his mother's pretenſions to the crown of England, he muſt alſo embrace her religion, by which alone they could be juſtified; and muſt thereby undergo the infamy of abandoning thoſe principles, in which he had been ſtrictly educated, and to which he had hitherto religiouſly adhered: That as he would, by ſuch an apoſtaſy, totally alienate all the proteſtants in

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

Scotland and England, he could never gain the confidence of the catholics, who would ſtill entertain a very reaſonable doubt of his honour and ſincerity: That by advancing a preſent claim to the crown, he forfeited the certain proſpect of his ſucceſſion; and revived that national animoſity, which the late peace and alliance between the kingdoms had happily extinguiſhed: That the whole gentry and nobility of England had openly declared themſelves for the execution of the Queen of Scots; and if James ſhowed ſuch violent reſentment againſt that act of juſtice, they would be obliged, for their own ſecurity, to prevent for ever ſo implacable and revengeful a prince from ruling over them: And that, however ſome perſons might repreſent his honour as engaged to ſeek vengeance for the preſent affront and injury, the true honour of a prince conſiſted in wiſdom and moderation and juſtice, not in following the dictates of blind paſſion, or in purſuing revenge at the expence of every motive and every intereſt[f]. Theſe conſiderations, joined to the peaceable unambitious temper of the young prince, prevailed over his reſentment; and he fell gradually into a good correſpondence with the court of England. It is probable, that the Queen's chief object in her diſſimulation with regard to the execution of Mary, was, that ſhe might thereby afford James a decent pretence for renewing his amity with her, on which their mutual intereſts ſo much depended.

WHILE Elizabeth enſured tranquillity from the attempts of her neareſt neighbour, ſhe was not negligent of more diſtant dangers. Hearing that Philip, while he ſeemed to diſſemble the daily inſults and injuries, which he received from the Engliſh, was ſecretly preparing a great navy to attack her; ſhe ſent Sir Francis Drake with a fleet to intercept his ſupplies, to pillage his coaſt, and to deſtroy his ſhipping. Drake carried

[f] Strype, vol. III. p. 377. Spotſwood.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

Drake deſtroys the fleet at Cadiz.

out four capital ſhips of the Queen's, and twenty-ſix, great and ſmall, with which the London merchants, in hopes of ſharing in the plunder, had ſupplied him. Having learned from two Dutch ſhips, which he met in his paſſage, that a Spaniſh fleet, richly laden, was lying at Cadiz, ready to ſet ſail for Liſbon, the rendezvous of the intended Armada; he bent his courſe to the former harbour, and boldly, as well as fortunately, made an attack on the enemy. He obliged ſix gallies, which made head againſt him, to take ſhelter under the forts; he burned about an hundred veſſels, laden with ammunition and naval ſtores; and he deſtroyed a great ſhip of the marqueſs of Santa Croce. Thence, he ſet ſail for Cape St. Vincent, and took by aſſault the caſtle ſituated on that promontory, with three other ſtrong holds. He next inſulted Liſbon; and finding, that the merchants, who had engaged entirely in expectation of profit, were diſcontented with theſe military enterprizes, he ſet ſail for the Tercera Iſlands, with an intention of lying in wait for a rich Carrack, which was expected in theſe quarters. He was ſo fortunate as to meet with his prize; and in this ſhort expedition, where the public bore ſo ſmall a ſhare, the adventurers were encouraged to attempt farther enterprizes, the Engliſh ſeamen learned to deſpiſe the great unwieldy ſhips of the enemy, the naval preparations of Spain were deſtroyed, the intended expedition againſt England was retarded a twelvemonth, and the Queen had thereby leizure to take more ſecure meaſures againſt that formidable invaſion [g].

THIS year Thomas Cavendiſh, a gentleman of Devonſhire, who had diſſipated a good eſtate by living at court, being reſolved to repair his fortune at the expence of the Spaniards, fitted out three ſhips at Plymouth, one of an hundred and twenty tons, another of

g Camden, p. 540. Sir William Monſon's Naval Tracts in Churchill's Voyages, vol. III. p. 156.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

ſixty, and a third of forty; and with theſe ſmall veſſels he adventured into the South Seas, and committed great depredations on the Spaniards. He took nineteen veſſels, ſome of which were richly laden: and returning by the Cape of Good Hope, he came to England, and entered the river in a kind of triumph. His mariners and ſoldiers were cloathed in Silk, his ſails were of damaſk, his top-ſail cloth of gold; and his prizes were eſteemed the richeſt that ever had been brought into England [h].

THE land enterprizes of the Engliſh were not, during this campaign, ſo advantageous or honourable to the nation. The important place of Deventer was intruſted by Leiceſter to William Stanley, with a garriſon of twelve hundred Engliſh; and this gentleman, being a catholic, was alarmed with the diſcovery of Babington's conſpiracy, and became apprehenſive, leſt every one of his religion ſhould thenceforth be treated with diſtruſt in England. He entered into a correſpondence with the Spaniards, betrayed the city to them for a ſum of money, and engaged the whole garriſon to deſert with him to the Spaniſh ſervice. Roland York, who commanded a fort near Zutphen, imitated his example; and the Hollanders, formerly diſguſted with Leiceſter, and ſuſpicious of the Engliſh, broke out into loud complaints againſt the improvidence, if not the treachery of his adminiſtration. Soon after, he himſelf arrived in the Low Countries; but his conduct was no-wiſe calculated to give them ſatisfaction, or to remove the ſuſpicions, which they had entertained againſt him. The prince of Parma having beſieged Sluys, he attempted to relieve the place, firſt by ſea, then by land; but failed in both enterprizes; and as he aſcribed his bad ſucceſs to the ill behaviour of the Hollanders, they were equally free in reflections upon his conduct. The breach between them became wider

[h] Birch's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 57.

CHAP. XLII.

1587.

Drake deſtroys the fleet at Cadiz.

out four capital ſhips of the Queen's, and twenty-ſix, great and ſmall, with which the London merchants, in hopes of ſharing in the plunder, had ſupplied him. Having learned from two Dutch ſhips, which he met in his paſſage, that a Spaniſh fleet, richly laden, was lying at Cadiz, ready to ſet ſail for Liſbon, the rendezvous of the intended Armada; he bent his courſe to the former harbour, and boldly, as well as fortunately, made an attack on the enemy. He obliged ſix gallies, which made head againſt him, to take ſhelter under the forts; he burned about an hundred veſſels, laden with ammunition and naval ſtores; and he deſtroyed a great ſhip of the marqueſs of Santa Croce. Thence, he ſet ſail for Cape St. Vincent, and took by aſſault the caſtle ſituated on that promontory, with three other ſtrong holds. He next inſulted Liſbon; and finding, that the merchants, who had engaged entirely in expectation of profit, were diſcontented with theſe military enterprizes, he ſet ſail for the Tercera Iſlands, with an intention of lying in wait for a rich Carrack, which was expected in theſe quarters. He was ſo fortunate as to meet with his prize; and in this ſhort expedition, where the public bore ſo ſmall a ſhare, the adventurers were encouraged to attempt farther enterprizes, the Engliſh ſeamen learned to deſpiſe the great unwieldy ſhips of the enemy, the naval preparations of Spain were deſtroyed, the intended expedition againſt England was retarded a twelvemonth, and the Queen had thereby leizure to take more ſecure meaſures againſt that formidable invaſion [g].

THIS year Thomas Cavendiſh, a gentleman of Devonſhire, who had diſſipated a good eſtate by living at court, being reſolved to repair his fortune at the expence of the Spaniards, fitted out three ſhips at Plymouth, one of an hundred and twenty tons, another of

[g] Camden, p. 540. Sir William Monſon's Naval Tracts in Churchill's Voyages, vol. III. p. 156.

ſixty, and a third of forty; and with theſe ſmall veſſels he adventured into the South Seas, and committed great depredations on the Spaniards. He took nineteen veſſels, ſome of which were richly laden: and returning by the Cape of Good Hope, he came to England, and entered the river in a kind of triumph. His mariners and ſoldiers were cloathed in Silk, his ſails were of damaſk, his top-ſail cloth of gold; and his prizes were eſteemed the richeſt that ever had been brought into England[h].

THE land enterprizes of the Engliſh were not, during this campaign, ſo advantageous or honourable to the nation. The important place of Deventer was intruſted by Leiceſter to William Stanley, with a garriſon of twelve hundred Engliſh; and this gentleman, being a catholic, was alarmed with the diſcovery of Babington's conſpiracy, and became apprehenſive, leſt every one of his religion ſhould thenceforth be treated with diſtruſt in England. He entered into a correſpondence with the Spaniards, betrayed the city to them for a ſum of money, and engaged the whole garriſon to deſert with him to the Spaniſh ſervice. Roland York, who commanded a fort near Zutphen, imitated his example; and the Hollanders, formerly diſguſted with Leiceſter, and ſuſpicious of the Engliſh, broke out into loud complaints againſt the improvidence, if not the treachery of his adminiſtration. Soon after, he himſelf arrived in the Low Countries; but his conduct was no-wiſe calculated to give them ſatisfaction, or to remove the ſuſpicions, which they had entertained againſt him. The prince of Parma having beſieged Sluys, he attempted to relieve the place, firſt by ſea, then by land; but failed in both enterprizes; and as he aſcribed his bad ſucceſs to the ill behaviour of the Hollanders, they were equally free in reflections upon his conduct. The breach between them became wider

[h] Birch's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 57.

CHAP. XLII. 1587.

every day: They ſlighted his authority, oppoſed his meaſures, and neglected his counſels; while he endeavoured, by an imperious behaviour, and by violence, to recover that influence, which he had loſt by his imprudent and ill concerted meaſures. He was even ſuſpected by the Dutch of a deſign to uſurp upon their liberties; and the jealouſy entertained againſt him, began to extend towards the Queen herſelf. That princeſs had made ſome advances towards a peace with Spain: A congreſs had been opened at Bourbourg, a village near Graveline: And tho' the two courts, eſpecially that of Spain, had no other intention than to amuſe each of them its enemy by negotiation, and mutually relax the preparations for defence or aſſault, the Dutch, who were determined, on no condition, to return under the Spaniſh yoke, became apprehenſive leſt their liberty ſhould be ſacrificed to the political intereſts of England[i]. But the Queen, who knew the importance of her alliance with the ſtates in the preſent conjuncture, was reſolved to give them entire ſatisfaction by recalling Leiceſter, and commanding him to reſign his government. Maurice, ſon to the prince of Orange, a youth of twenty years of age, was elected by the ſtates governor in his place; and Peregrine lord Willoughby, was appointed by the Queen commander of the Engliſh forces. The meaſures of theſe two generals were much retarded by the malignity of Leiceſter, who had left a faction behind him, and who ſtill attempted, by means of his emiſſaries, to diſturb all the operations of the ſtates. So ſoon as Elizabeth got intelligence of theſe diſorders, ſhe took care to redreſs them, and ſhe obliged all the partizans of England to fall into unanimity with prince Maurice[k]. But tho' her good ſenſe ſo far prevailed over her partiality to Leiceſter, ſhe never could be made fully ſenſible of his vi-

i Bentivoglio, part II. lib. 4. Strype, vol. IV. N° 246.
k Rymer, tom. XV. p. 66.

ces

CHAP. XLII.

ces and incapacity: The ſubmiſſions, which he made her, reſtored him to her wonted favour; and the lord Buckhurſt, who had accuſed him of miſconduct in Holland, loſt for ſome time her confidence, and was even committed to cuſtody. 1587.

Sir Chriſtopher Hatton was another favourite, who, at this time, received ſome marks of her partiality. Tho' he had never followed the profeſſion of the law, he was made chancellor in the place of Bromley, deceaſed; but notwithſtanding all the expectations and wiſhes of the lawyers, he behaved in a manner not unworthy that high ſtation: His good natural capacity ſupplied the place of experience and ſtudy; and his deciſions were not found deficient either in point of equity or judgment. His enemies had contributed to this promotion, in hopes that his abſence from court, while he attended the buſineſs of chancery, would gradually eſtrange him from the Queen, and give them an opportunity of undermining him in her favour.

These little intrigues and cabals of the court were ſilenced by the account, which came from all quarters, of the vaſt preparations made by the Spaniards for the invaſion of England, and for the entire conqueſt of that kingdom. Philip, tho' he had not yet declared war, on account of the hoſtilities, which Elizabeth every where committed upon him, had long harboured a ſecret and violent deſire of revenge againſt her. His ambition alſo and the hopes of extending his empire were much encouraged by the preſent proſperous ſituation of his affairs; by the conqueſt of Portugal, the acquiſition of the Indian commerce and ſettlements, and the yearly importation of vaſt treaſures from America. The point on which he reſted his higheſt glory, the perpetual object of his policy, was to ſupport orthodoxy and exterminate hereſy; and as the power and credit of Elizabeth were the chief bulwark of the proteſtants, he hoped, if he could ſubdue that princeſs, to acquire

1588.

Philip projects the invaſion of England.

CHAP. XLII.

1588.

the eternal renown, of being able to reunite the whole chriſtian world in the catholic communion. Above all, his indignation againſt his revolted ſubjects in the Netherlands, inſtigated him to attack the Engliſh, who had encouraged that inſurrection, and who, by their near neighbourhood, were ſo well enabled to ſupport the Hollanders, that he could never hope to reduce theſe rebels, while the power of that kingdom remained entire and unbroken. To ſubdue England ſeemed a neceſſary preparative to the reeſtabliſhment of his authority in the Netherlands; and notwithſtanding all appearances, the former was in itſelf, as a more important, ſo a more eaſy, undertaking than the latter. That kingdom lay nearer Spain than the Low Countries, and was more expoſed to invaſions from that quarter; after an enemy had once obtained entrance, it was neither fortified by art nor nature; a long peace had deprived it of all military diſcipline and experience; and the catholics, in which it ſtill abounded, would be ready, it was hoped, to join any invader, who ſhould free them from thoſe grievous perſecutions, at preſent exerciſed againſt them, and revenge the death of the Queen of Scots, on whom they had fixed all their affections. The fate of England muſt be decided in one battle at ſea, and another at land; and what compariſon between the Engliſh and Spaniards, either in point of naval force, or in the numbers, reputation, and veteran bravery of their armies? Beſides the acquiſition of ſo great a kingdom, ſucceſs againſt England enſured the immediate ſubjection of the Hollanders, who, attacked on every hand, and deprived of all ſupport, muſt yield their ſtubborn necks to that yoke, which they had ſo long reſiſted. Happily this conqueſt, as it was of the utmoſt importance to the grandeur of Spain, would not at preſent be oppoſed by the jealouſy of the neighbouring powers, naturally ſo much intereſted to prevent the ſucceſs of that enterprize. A truce was lately concluded

CHAP. XLII.

1588.

ed with the Turks; the empire was in the hands of a friend and near ally; and France, the perpetual rival of Spain, was ſo torn with inteſtine commotions, that ſhe had no leizure to pay attention to her foreign intereſts. This favourable opportunity, therefore, which might never again preſent itſelf, muſt be ſeized; and one bold effort made for acquiring that aſcendant in Europe, to which the preſent greatneſs and proſperity of the Spaniards ſeemed ſo fully to intitle them[l].

THESE hopes and motives engaged Philip, notwithſtanding his cautious temper, to undertake this hazardous enterprize; and tho' the duke of Parma, when conſulted, oppoſed the attempt, at leaſt repreſented the neceſſity of previouſly getting poſſeſſion of ſome ſea-port town in the Netherlands, which might afford a retreat to the Spaniſh navy [m], it was determined by the catholic monarch, to procced immediately to the execution of his ambitious projects. During ſome time he had been ſecretly making preparations; but ſo ſoon as the reſolution was fully taken, every part of his vaſt empire reſounded with noiſe of armaments, and all his miniſters, generals, and admirals, were employed in forwarding the deſign. The marquiſs of Santa Croce, a ſea officer of great reputation and experience, was deſtined to command the fleet; and by his counſel were the naval equipments conducted. In all the ports of Sicily, of Naples, of Spain and Portugal, artizans were employed in building veſſels of uncommon ſize and force; naval ſtores were bought at a prodigious expence; proviſions amaſſed; armies levied and quartered in the maritime towns of Spain; and plans laid for fitting out ſuch a fleet and embarkation as had never before had its equal in Europe. The military preparations in Flanders were no leſs formidable. Troops from all quarters were every moment aſſembling, to reinforce the duke of Parma. Capizuchi and Spinelli,

The invincible Armada.

[l] Camden. Strype, vol. III. p. 512.

[m] Bentivoglio, part II. lib. 4.

CHAP. XLII.

1588.

conducted forces from Italy: The marquess of Borgaut, a prince of the house of Austria, levied troops in Germany: The Walloon and Burgundian regiments were compleated or augmented: The Spanish infantry was supplied with recruits; and an army of thirty four thousand men were assembled in the Netherlands, and kept in a readiness to be trasported into England. The duke of Parma employed all the carpenters whom he could procure, either in Flanders or in Lower Germany, and the coasts of the Baltic; and he built at Dunkirk, and Newport, but especially at Antwerp, a great number of boats and flat bottomed vessels, for the transportation of his infantry and cavalry into England. The most renowned nobility and princes of Italy and Spain were ambitious of sharing in the honour of this great enterprize. Don Amadæus of Savoy, Don John of Medicis, Vespasian Gonzaga, duke of Sabionetta, and the duke of Pastrana, hastened to join the army under the duke of Parma. About two thousand volunteers, many of them men of family, had inlisted in the service in Spain. No doubt was entertained, but such vast preparations, conducted by officers of such consummate skill, must finally be successful. And the Spaniards, ostentatious of their power, and elevated with vain hopes, had already denominated their navy the *Invincible Armada*.

Preparations in England.

News of these extraordinary preparations soon reached England; and notwithstanding the secrecy of the Spanish council, and their pretending to employ this force in the Indies, it was easily concluded, that they meant to make some effort against England. The Queen had foreseen the invasion; and finding that she must now contend for her crown with the whole force of Spain, she made preparations for resistance; nor was she terrified with that power, by which all Europe apprehended she must of necessity be overwhelmed. Her force indeed seemed very unequal to resist

resist so potent an enemy. All the sailors in England amounted at that time only to fourteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five men [n]. The size of the English shipping was, in general, so small, that, except a few of the Queen's ships of war, there were not four vessels belonging to the merchants which exceeded four hundred tuns [o]. The royal navy consisted only of twenty-eight vessels [p], many of which were of very small size; none of them exceeding the bulk of our largest frigates, and most of them deserving rather the name of pinnaces than of ships. The only advantage of the English fleet, consisted in the dexterity and courage of the seamen, who being accustomed to sail in tempestuous seas, and expose themselves to all dangers, as much exceeded in this particular the Spanish mariners, as their vessels were inferior in size and force to those of that nation [q]. All the commercial towns of England were required to furnish ships for reinforcing this small navy; and they discovered, on the present occasion, great alacrity in defending their liberty and religion against those imminent perils with which they were menaced. The citizens of London, in order to shew their vigour in the common cause, instead of fifteen vessels which they were commanded to equip, voluntarily fitted out double the number [r]. The gentry and nobility hired, and armed, and manned, forty-three ships at their own charge [s]; and all the loans of money which the Queen demanded, were frankly granted by the persons applied to. Lord Howard of Effingham, a man of great courage and capacity, was lord admiral, and took on him the command of the navy: Drake, Hawkins, and Frobisher, the most renowned seamen in Europe, served under him. The main fleet was stationed at Plymouth. A smaller squadron, consisting of forty vessels, English and Flemish, was commanded by the

[n] Monson, p. 256. [o] Ibid. p. 268. [p] Ibid. p. 157. [q] Ibid. p. 321. [r] Ibid. p. 267. [s] Lives of the Admirals, vol. I. p. 451.

lord

CHAP. XLII. 1588.

lord Seymour, ſecond ſon of protector Somerſet; and lay off Dunkirk, in order to intercept the duke of Parma.

THE land forces of England, compared to thoſe of Spain, poſſeſſed contrary qualities to its naval power: They were more numerous than the enemy, but much inferior in diſcipline, reputation, and experience. An army of twenty thouſand men was diſpoſed in different bodies along the ſouth coaſt; and orders were given them, if they could not hinder the Spaniards from landing, to retire backwards, to waſte the country around, and to wait for reinforcement from the neighbouring counties, before they approached the enemy. A body of twenty-two thouſand foot, and a thouſand horſe, under the command of the earl of Leiceſter, was ſtationed at Tilbury, in order to defend the capital. The main army, conſiſted of thirty-four thouſand foot, and two thouſand horſe, and was commanded by lord Hunſdon. Theſe forces were reſerved for the guard of the Queen's perſon; and were appointed to march whitherſoever the enemy ſhould appear. The fate of England, if all the Spaniſh armies ſhould be able to land, ſeemed to depend on the iſſue of a ſingle battle; and men of reflection entertained the moſt diſmal apprehenſions, when they conſidered the force of fifty thouſand veteran Spaniards, commanded by experienced officers, under the duke of Parma, the moſt conſummate general of the age; and compared this formidable armament with the military power, which England, not enervated by peace, but long diſuſed to war, could muſter up againſt it.

THE chief ſupport of the kingdom ſeemed to conſiſt in the vigour and prudence of the Queen's conduct; who, undiſmayed by the preſent dangers, iſſued all her orders with tranquillity, animated her people to a ſteddy reſiſtance, and employed every reſource, which either her domeſtic ſituation or her foreign alliances could afford her. She ſent Sir Robert Sydney into

into Scotland; and exhorted the King to remain attached to her, and to conſider the danger which at preſent menaced his ſovereignty no leſs than her own, from the ambition of the Spaniſh tyrant [t]: The ambaſſador found James ſufficiently diſpoſed to cultivate an union with England, and he even kept himſelf prepared to march with the force of his whole kingdom to the aſſiſtance of Elizabeth. Her authority with the King of Denmark, and the tye of their common religion, engaged this prince, upon her application, to ſeize a ſquadron of ſhips which Philip had bought or hired in the Daniſh harbours [u]: The Hanſe Towns, tho' not at that time on good terms with Elizabeth, were induced by the ſame motives, to retard ſo long the equipment of ſome veſſels in their ports, that they became uſeleſs to the purpoſe of invading England. All the proteſtants throughout Europe, regarded this enterprize as the critical event which was to decide for ever the fate of their religion; and tho' unable, by reaſon of their diſtance, to join their force to that of Elizabeth, they kept their eyes fixed on her conduct and fortune, and beheld with anxiety, mixed with admiration, the intrepid countenance with which ſhe encountered that dreadful tempeſt, which was every moment approaching towards her.

THE Queen alſo was ſenſible, that, next to the general popularity which ſhe enjoyed, and the confidence which her ſubjects repoſed in her prudent government, the firmeſt ſupport of her throne conſiſted in the general zeal of the people for the proteſtant religion, and the ſtrong prejudices which they had imbibed againſt popery. She took care, on this occaſion, to revive in the nation this attachment to their own ſect, and this abhorrence of the oppoſite. The Engliſh were remind-

[t] She made him ſome promiſes which ſhe never fulfilled, to give him a dukedom in England, with ſuitable lands and revenue, to ſettle 5000 l. a year on him, and pay him a guard, for the ſafety of his perſon. From a MS. of lord Royſton.

[u] Strype, vol. III. p. 524.

ed

CHAP. XLII.

1588.

ed of their former danger from the tyranny of Spain: All the barbarities exerciſed by Mary againſt the proteſtants, were aſcribed to the counſels of that bigotted and imperious nation: The bloody maſſacres in the Indies, the unrelenting executions in the Low Countries, the horrid cruelties and iniquities of the inquiſition, were ſet before men's eyes: A liſt and deſcription was publiſhed, and pictures diſperſed, of the ſeveral inſtruments of torture, with which, it was pretended, the Spaniſh Armada was loaded: And every artifice, as well as reaſon, was employed, to animate the people to a vigorous defence of their religion, their laws, and their liberties.

BUT while the Queen, in this critical emergence, rouzed the animoſity of the nation againſt popery, ſhe treated the partizans of that ſect with moderation, and gave not way to an undiſtinguiſhing fury againſt them. Tho' ſhe knew, that Sixtus Quintus, the preſent pope, famous for his capacity and his tyranny, had fulminated a new bull of excommunication againſt her, had depoſed her from the throne, had abſolved her ſubjects from their oaths of allegiance, had publiſhed a cruſade againſt England, and had granted plenary indulgences to every one engaged in the preſent invaſion; ſhe would not believe, that all her catholic ſubjects could be ſo blinded, as to ſacrifice to bigotry their duty to their ſovereign, and the liberty and independency of their native country. She rejected all violent counſels, by which ſhe was prompted to ſeek pretences for diſpatching the leaders of that party: She would not even confine any conſiderable number of them: And the catholics, ſenſible of this good uſage, generally expreſſed the higheſt zeal for the public defence. Some gentlemen of that ſect, conſcious that they could not juſtly expect any truſt or authority, entered themſelves as volunteers in the fleet or army [x]: Some equipped ſhips at their own

[x] Stowe, p. 747.

charge,

charge, and gave the command of them to proteſtants: Others were active in animating their tenants and vaſſals, and neighbours, to the defence of their country: And every rank of men, burying for the preſent all party diſtinctions, ſeemed to prepare themſelves, with order as well as vigour, to reſiſt the violence of theſe invaders. CHAP. XLII. 1588.

THE more to excite the martial ſpirit of the nation, the Queen appeared on horſeback in the camp at Tilbury; and riding thro' the lines, diſcovered a chearful and animated countenance, exhorted the ſoldiers to remember their duty to their country and their religion, and profeſſed her intention, tho' a woman, to lead them herſelf into the field againſt the enemy, and rather to periſh in battle than ſurvive the ruin and ſlavery of her people[y]. By this ſpirited behaviour ſhe revived the tenderneſs and admiration of the ſoldiery: An attachment to her perſon became a ſpecies of enthuſiaſm among

[y] *The Queen's ſpeech in the camp of Tilbury was in theſe words:* My loving people, We have been perſuaded by ſome, that are careful of our ſafety, to take heed how we commit ourſelves to armed multitudes, for fear of treachery; but aſſure you, I do not deſire to live to diſtruſt my faithful and loving people. Let tyrants fear: I have always ſo behaved myſelf, that, under God, I have placed my chiefeſt ſtrength and ſafeguard in the loyal hearts and good-will of my ſubjects. And therefore I am come amongſt you at this time, not as for my recreation or ſport, but being reſolved in the midſt and heat of the battle to live or die amongſt you all; to lay down, for my God, and for my kingdom, and for my people, my honour and my blood, even in the duſt. I know I have but the body of a weak and feeble-woman, but I have the heart of a King, and of a King of England too; and think foul ſcorn, that Parma or Spain, or any prince of Europe, ſhould dare to invade the borders of my realms: To which, rather than any diſhonour ſhall grow by me, I myſelf will take up arms; I myſelf will be your general, judge, and rewarder of every one of your virtues in the field. I know already, by your forwardneſs, that you have deſerved rewards and crowns; and we do aſſure you, on the word of a prince, they ſhall be duly paid you. In the mean time, my lieutenant general ſhall be in my ſtead; than whom never prince commanded more noble and worthy ſubject; not doubting, by your obedience to my general, by your concord in the camp, and your valour in the field, we ſhall ſhortly have a famous victory over thoſe enemies of my God, of my kingdom, and of my people.

them:

CHAP. XLII.

1588. them: And they aſked one another, whether it were poſſible that Engliſhmen could abandon this glorious cauſe, could diſplay leſs courage than appeared in the female ſex, or could ever, by any dangers, be induced to relinquiſh the defence of their heroic princeſs.

THE Spaniſh Armada was ready in the beginning of May; but the moment it was preparing to ſail, the marqueſs of Santa Croce, the admiral, was ſeized with a violent fever, of which he ſoon after died. The vice-admiral, the duke of Paliano, by a ſtrange concurrence of accident, at the very ſame time, ſuffered the ſame fate; and the King appointed for admiral the duke of Medina Sidonia, a nobleman of the greateſt family in Spain, but unexperienced in action, and utterly unacquainted with ſea affairs. Alcarede was appointed vice-admiral. This misfortune, beſides the loſs of ſo great an officer as Santa Croce, retarded the ſailing of the Armada, and gave the Engliſh more time for their preparations to oppoſe them. At laſt, the fleet, full of hopes and alacrity, ſet ſail from Liſbon; but next day met with a violent tempeſt, which ſcattered the

29th May. ſhips, ſunk ſome of the ſmalleſt, and forced the reſt to take ſhelter in the Groyne, where they waited till they could be refitted. When news of this event was carried to England, the Queen concluded, that the deſign of an invaſion was diſappointed for this ſummer; and being always ready to lay hold of every pretence for ſaving money, ſhe made Walſingham write to the admiral directing him to lay up ſome of the larger ſhips, and to diſcharge the ſeamen: But lord Effingham, who was not ſo ſanguine in his hopes, uſed the freedom to diſobey theſe orders; and he begged leave to retain all the ſhips in ſervice, tho' it ſhould be at his own expence [z]. He took advantage of a north wind, and ſailed towards the coaſt of Spain, with an intention of attacking the enemy in their harbours; but the

[z] Camden, p. 545.

wind

wind changing to the ſouth, he became apprehenſive, leſt they might have ſet ſail, and by paſſing him at ſea, invade England, now expoſed by the abſence of the fleet. He returned, therefore, with the utmoſt expedition to Plymouth, and lay at anchor in that harbour.

MEANWHILE, the Armada had repaired all her damages; and with freſh hopes ſet out again to ſea, in proſecution of her enterprize. The fleet conſiſted of a hundred and thirty veſſels, of which near a hundred were galleons, and were of greater ſize than any which had ever before been uſed in Europe. It carried on board nineteen thouſand two hundred and ninety-five ſoldiers, eight thouſand four hundred and fifty-ſix mariners, two thouſand and eighty-eight gally ſlaves, and two thouſand ſix hundred and thirty great pieces of braſs ordnance. It was victualled for ſix months; and was attended with twenty leſſer ſhips, called caravals, and ten ſalves with ſix oars apiece [a].

THE plan formed by the King of Spain, was, that the Armada ſhould ſail to the coaſt oppoſite to Dunkirk and Newport; and having chaſed away all Engliſh or Flemiſh veſſels which might obſtruct the paſſage, (for it was never ſuppoſed they could make oppoſition) ſhould join themſelves with the duke of Parma, ſhould thence make ſail to the Thames, and having landed the whole Spaniſh army, thus compleat at one blow the entire conqueſt of England. In proſecution of this plan, Philip gave orders to the duke of Medina, that, in paſſing along the chanel, he ſhould ſail as near the coaſt of France as he could with ſafety; that he ſhould by his policy avoid meeting with the Engliſh fleet; and keeping in view the main enterprize, ſhould neglect all ſmaller ſucceſſes, which might prove an obſtacle, or even interpoſe a delay, to the acquiſition of a kingdom [b]. After the Armada was under ſail, they took

[a] Strype, vol. III. Appen. p. 221. [b] Monſon, p. 157.

a fiſher-

CHAP. XLII. 1588.

a fiſherman, who informed them, that the Engliſh admiral had been lately at ſea, had heard of the tempeſt which ſcattered the Armada, had retired back into Plymouth, and no longer expecting an invaſion this ſeaſon, had laid up his ſhips, and diſcharged moſt of the ſeamen. From this falſe intelligence the duke of Medina conceived the great facility of attacking and deſtroying the Engliſh ſhips in harbour; and he was tempted, by the proſpect of ſo deciſive an enterprize, to break his orders, and make ſail directly for Plymouth: A reſolution which proved the ſafety of England. The Lizard was the firſt land made by the Armada, about ſunſet; and as the Spaniards took it for the Ram-head near Plymouth, they bore out to ſea, with an intention of returning next day, and attacking the Engliſh navy. They were deſcried by Fleming, a Scotiſh pyrate, who was roving in theſe ſeas, and who immediately ſet ſail, to inform the Engliſh admiral of their approach[c]: Another fortunate event, which contributed extremely to the ſafety of the fleet. Effingham had juſt time to get out of port, when he ſaw the Spaniſh Armada coming full ſail towards him, diſpoſed in the form of a half-moon, and ſtretching the diſtance of ſeven miles from the extremity of one diviſion to that of the other.

19th July.

The Armada arrives in the Channel.

THE writers of that age raiſe their ſtile by a pompous deſcription of this ſpectacle; the moſt magnificent which had ever appeared upon the ocean, infuſing equal terror and admiration into the minds of all beholders. The lofty maſts, the ſwelling ſails, and the towering prows of the Spaniſh galleons, ſeem impoſſible to be juſtly painted, otherwiſe than by aſſuming the colours of poetry; and an eloquent hiſtorian of Italy, in imitation of Camden, has aſſerted, that the Armada, tho' the ſhips bore every ſail, yet ad-

[c] Monſon, p. 158.

vanced with a ſlow motion; as if the ocean groaned with ſupporting, and the winds were tired with impelling, ſo enormous a weight [d]. The truth, however, is, the largeſt of the Spaniſh veſſels would ſcarce paſs for third rates in the preſent navy of England; yet were they ſo ill framed, or ſo ill governed, that they were quite unwieldy, and could not ſail upon a wind, nor tack on occaſion, nor be managed in ſtormy weather by the ſeamen. Neither the mechanics of ſhip-building, nor the experience of mariners, had attained ſo great perfection as could ſerve for the ſecurity and government of ſuch bulky veſſels; and the Engliſh, who had already had experience how unſerviceable they commonly were, were not diſmayed with their tremendous appearance.

EFFINGHAM gave orders, not to come to a cloſe fight with the Spaniards, where the ſize of the ſhips, he ſuſpected, and the numbers of the ſoldiers, would be a diſadvantage to the Engliſh; but to cannonade them at a diſtance, and to wait the opportunity which winds, currents, or various chances muſt afford them, of intercepting ſome ſcattered veſſels of the enemy. Nor was it long before the event anſwered expectation. A great ſhip of Biſcay, on board of which was a conſiderable part of the Spaniſh money, was ſet on fire by accident; and while all hands were employed in extinguiſhing it, ſhe fell behind the reſt of the Armada: The great galleon of Andaluzia was detained by the ſpringing of her maſt: and both theſe veſſels were taken, after ſome reſiſtance, by Sir Francis Drake. As the Armada advanced up the channel, the Engliſh hung upon the rear, and ſtill infeſted them with ſkirmiſhes. Each trial abated the confidence of the Spaniards, and added courage to the Engliſh; and the latter ſoon found, that even in cloſe fight the ſize of the Spaniſh ſhips was no advantage to them. Their

[d] Bentivoglia, part ii. lib. 4.

CHAP. XLII. 1588.

bulk expoſed them the more to the fire of the enemy; while their cannon, placed too high, ſhot over the heads of the Engliſh. The alarm having now reached the coaſt of England, the nobility and gentry haſtened out with their veſſels from every harbour, and reinforced the admiral. The earls of Oxford, Northumberland, and Cumberland, Sir Thomas Cecil, Sir Robert Cecil, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Thomas Vavaſor, Sir Thomas Gerrard, Sir Charles Blount; with many others, diſtinguiſhed themſelves by this generous and diſintereſted ſervice of their country. The Engliſh fleet, after the conjunction of theſe ſhips, amounted to an hundred and forty ſail.

THE Armada had now reached Calais, and caſt anchor before that place, in expectation, that the duke of Parma, who had got intelligence of their approach, would put to ſea, and join his forces to them. The Engliſh admiral practiſed here a very ſucceſsful ſtratagem upon the Spaniards. He took eight of his ſmaller ſhips, and filling them with all combuſtible materials, ſent them, one after another, into the midſt of the enemy. The Spaniards fancied, that they were fireſhips of the ſame contrivance with a famous veſſel which had lately done ſo much execution in the Schelde near Antwerp; and they immediately cut their cables, and took to flight with the greateſt diſorder and precipitation. The Engliſh fell upon them next morning, while in confuſion; and beſides doing great damage to other ſhips, they took or deſtroyed about twelve of the enemy.

BY this time, it was become apparent, that the intention, for which theſe great preparations were made by the Spaniards, was entirely fruſtrated. The veſſels, provided by the duke of Parma, were made for tranſporting ſoldiers not for fighting; and that general, when urged to leave the harbour, utterly refuſed to expoſe his flouriſhing army to ſuch apparent hazard, as it

it muſt incur; while the Engliſh, not only were able to keep the ſea, but ſeemed even to triumph over their enemy. The Spaniſh admiral found, in many rencounters, that while he loſt ſo conſiderable a part of his own navy, he had deſtroyed only one ſmall veſſel of the Engliſh; and he foreſaw, that, by continuing ſo unequal a combat, he muſt draw inevitable deſtruction on all the remainder. He prepared therefore to return homewards; but as the winds were contrary to his paſſage thro' the channel, he reſolved to ſail northwards, and making the tour of the whole iſland, reach the Spaniſh harbours by the ocean. The Engliſh fleet followed him during ſome time; and had not their ammunition fallen ſhort, by the negligence of the offices in ſupplying them, they had obliged the whole Armada to ſurrender at diſcretion. The duke of Medina had once taken that reſolution; but was diverted from it by the advice of his confeſſor. This concluſion of the enterprize would have been more glorious to the Engliſh; but the event proved equally fatal to the Spaniards. A violent tempeſt overtook the Armada after it paſſed the Orkneys: The ſhips had already loſt their anchors, and were obliged to keep to ſea: The mariners, unaccuſtomed to ſuch hardſhips, and not able to govern ſuch unwieldy veſſels, yielded to the fury of the ſtorm, and allowed their ſhipe to drive either on the weſtern iſles of Scotland, or on the coaſt of Ireland, where they were miſerably wrecked. Not a half of the navy returned to Spain; and the ſeamen, as well as ſoldiers, who remained, were ſo overcome with hardſhip and fatigue, ſo diſpirited by their diſcomfiture, that they filled all Spain with accounts of the valour of the Engliſh, and of the tempeſtuous violence of that ocean which ſurrounds them.

CHAP. XLII. 1588.

Defeated.

SUCH was the miſerable and diſhonourable concluſion of an enterprize, which had been preparing

CHAP. XLII.

1588. for three years, which had exhauſted the revenue and force of Spain, and which had long filled all Europe with anxiety or expectation. Philip, who was a ſlave to his ambition, but had an entire command over his countenance, no ſooner heard of the mortifying event, which blaſted all his ſchemes, than he fell on his knees, and rendering thanks for that gracious diſpenſation of providence, expreſſed his joy that the calamity was not greater. The Spaniſh prieſts, who had ſo often bleſt this holy cruſade, and foretold its infallible ſucceſs, were ſomewhat at a loſs to account for the victory gained over the catholic monarch by excommunicated heretics and an execrable uſurper: But they at laſt diſcovered, that all the calamities of the Spaniards had proceeded from their allowing the infidel Moors to live among them [e].

A D. 1589. SOON after the defeat and diſperſion of the Spaniſh Armada, the Queen ſummoned a new Parliament; and

4th February. received from them a ſupply of two ſubſidies and four fifteenths payable in four years. This is the firſt inſtance that ſubſidies were doubled in one ſupply; and

e Strype, vol. III. p. 525. On the fourth of September, ſoon after the diſperſion of the Spaniſh Armada, died the earl of Leiceſter, the Queen's great, but unworthy, favourite. Her affection to him continued to the laſt. He had diſcovered no conduct in any of his military enterprizes; and was ſuſpected of cowardice: Yet ſhe entruſted him with the command of her armies during the danger of the Spaniſh invaſion; a partiality, which might have proved fatal to her, had the duke of Parma been able to land his troops in England. She had even ordered a commiſſion to be drawn for him, conſtituting him her lieutenant in the kingdoms of England and Ireland; but Burleigh and Hatton repreſented to her the danger of entruſting ſuch unlimited authority in the hands of any ſubject, and prevented the execution of that deſign. No wonder, that a conduct, ſo unlike the uſual jealouſy of Elizabeth, gave reaſon to ſuſpect, that her partiality was founded on ſome other paſſion than friendſhip. But Elizabeth ſeemed to carry her affection to Leiceſter no farther than the grave: She ordered his goods to be diſpoſed of at a public ſale, to reimburſe herſelf of ſome money which he owed her; and her uſual attention to money was obſerved to prevail over her regard to the memory of the deceaſed. This earl was a great hypocrite, a pretender to the ſtricteſt religion, an encourager of the puritans, and a founder of hoſpitals.

ſq

CHAP. XLII. 1588.

ſo unuſual a conceſſion was probably obtained from the joy of the preſent ſucceſs, and from the general ſenſe of the Queen's neceſſities. Some members objected to this heavy charge, on account of the great burthen of loans, which had lately been impoſed upon them [f].

A Parliament.

ELIZABETH foreſaw, that this houſe of commons, like all the foregoing, would be governed by the puritans; and therefore, to obviate their enterprizes, ſhe renewed, at the beginning of the ſeſſion, her uſual injunction, that the parliament ſhould not, on any account, preſume to treat of matters eccleſiaſtical. Notwithſtanding this ſtrict inhibition, the zeal of one Damport moved him to preſent a bill to the commons

[f] Strype, vol. III. p. 542. Id. appen. p. 239. There are ſome ſingular paſſages in this laſt ſpeech, which may be worth taking notice of; eſpecially as they came from a member who was no courtier: For he argues againſt the ſubſidy. "And firſt," ſays he, "for the *neceſſity* thereof, I cannot "deny, but if it were a charge impoſed upon us by her majeſty's com-"mandment, or a demand proceeding from her majeſty by way of requeſt, "that I think there is not one among us all, either ſo diſobedient a ſub-"ject in regard of our duty, or ſo unthankful a man in reſpect of the ineſti-"mable benefits which, by her or from her, we have received, which would "not with frank conſent, both of voice and heart, moſt willingly ſubmit "himſelf thereunto, without any unreverend enquiry into the cauſes thereof. "For it is continually in the mouth of us all, that our lands, goods, and "lives are at our prince's diſpoſing. And it agreeth very well with that "poſition of the civil law, which ſayeth, *Quod omnia regis ſunt.* But "how? *Ita tamen, ut omnium ſint. Ad regem enim poteſtas omnium per-*"*tinet*; *ad ſingulos proprietas.* So that altho' it be moſt true, that her "majeſty hath over ourſelves and our goods, *poteſtatem imperandi*; yet it "is true, that until that power command (which, no doubt, will not "command without very juſt cauſe) every ſubject hath his own *proprieta-*"*tem poſſidendi.* Which power and commadment from her majeſty, which "we have not yet received, I take it (ſaving reformation) that we are "freed from the cauſe of *neceſſity.* And the cauſe of neceſſity, is the "dangerous eſtate of the common wealth, &c." The tenor of the ſpeech pleads rather for a general benevolence than a ſubſidy: For the law of Richard the third againſt benevolence was never conceived to have any force. The member even proceeds to aſſert, with ſome precaution, that it was in the power of a Parliament to refuſe the King's demand of a ſubſidy. And that there was an inſtance of that liberty in Henry the third's time near four hundred years before. *Sub fine.*

CHAP. XLII. 1588.

for remedying the grievances, and reſtraining the tyranny, of the eccleſiaſtical commiſſion, which were certainly enormous: But when Mr. ſecretary Woley reminded the houſe of her majeſty's commands, no one durſt ſecond the motion; the bill was not ſo much as read; and the ſpeaker returned it back to Damport, without taking the leaſt notice of it [g]. Some members of the houſe, notwithſtanding the general ſubmiſſion, were even committed to cuſtody on account of this attempt [h].

THE imperious conduct of Elizabeth appeared ſtill more clearly in another parliamentary tranſaction. The right of purveyance was an antient prerogative, by which the officers of the crown could at pleaſure take proviſions for the houſhold from all the neighbouring counties, and could make uſe of carts and carriages; and the price of theſe ſervices was fixed and ſtated. The payment of the money was often diſtant and uncertain; and the rates were always much inferior to the market price; ſo that purveyance, beſides the ſlavery of it, was always regarded as a great burthen, and being arbitrary and caſual, was liable to great abuſes. We may fairly preſume, that the hungry courtiers of Elizabeth, ſupported by her unlimited power, would be ſure to render this prerogative very oppreſſive to the people; and the commons had, laſt ſeſſion, found it neceſſary to paſs a bill for regulating theſe exactions: But the bill was loſt in the houſe of peers [i]. The continuance of the abuſes begot a new attempt for redreſs; and the ſame bill was now revived, and ſent up again to the houſe of peers, together with a bill for ſome new regulations in the court of Exchequer. Soon after, the commons received a meſſage from the upper houſe, deſiring them to appoint a committee for a conference. At this conference, the peers

[g] D'Ewes, p. 438. [h] Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 280. Neal, vol. I. p. 500. [i] D'Ewes, p. 434.

informed them, that the Queen, by a meſſage, delivered by lord Burleigh, had expreſſed her diſpleaſure, that the commons ſhould preſume to touch on her prerogative. If their were any abuſes, ſhe ſaid, either in impoſing purveyance, or in the practice of the court of Exchequer, her majeſty was both able and willing to provide due reformation; but would not permit the Parliament to intermeddle in theſe matters [k]. The commons, alarmed at this intelligence, appointed a new committee to attend the Queen, and endeavour to ſatisfy her of their humble and dutiful intentions. Elizabeth gave a gracious reception to the committee: She expreſſed her great *ineſtimable loving care* towards her loving ſubjects; which, ſhe ſaid, was greater than of her own ſelf, or even than any of them could have of themſelves. She told them, that ſhe had already given orders for an enquiry into the abuſes attending purveyance, but the dangers of the Spaniſh invaſion had retarded the progreſs of that deſign; that ſhe had as much ſkill, will, and power to rule her own houſehold as any ſubjects whatſoever to govern theirs, and needed as little the aſſiſtance of her neighbours; that the Exchequer was her chamber, conſequently more near to her than even her houſhold, and therefore the leſs proper for them to intermeddle with; and that ſhe would of herſelf, with the advice of her council and the judges, redreſs every grievance in theſe matters, but would not permit *them*, by laws moved without her privity, to bereave her of the honour attending theſe regulations [l]. The iſſue of this matter was the ſame that attended all conteſts between Elizabeth and her Parliaments [m]. She ſeems even to have been more imperious, in this particular, than her predeceſſors; at leaſt, her more remote ones: For they often permitted the abuſes of

[k] D'Ewes. p. 440. [l] Ibid. p. 444.

[m] *Si rixa eſt, ubi tu pulſas, ego vapulo tantum.* Juven.

CHAP. XLII. 1589.

purveyance [n] to be redreſſed by law [o]. Edward the third, a very arbitrary Prince, allowed ten ſeveral ſtatutes to be enacted for that purpoſe.

[n] We may judge of the extent and importance of theſe abuſes by a ſpeech of Bacon's againſt purveyors, delivered in the firſt Seſſion of the firſt Parliament of the ſubſequent reign. "Firſt," ſays he, "they take in hand "what they ought not to take; ſecondly, they take in quantity a far "greater proportion than cometh to your majeſty's uſe; thirdly, they take "in an unlawful manner, in a manner, I ſay, directly and expreſsly pro- "hibited by ſeveral laws. For the firſt, I am a little to alter their name: "For inſtead of takers, they become taxers: Inſtead of taking proviſions "for your majeſty's ſervice, they tax your people *ad redimendam vexatio-* "*nem*; impoſing upon them and extorting from them divers ſums of mo- "ney, ſometimes in groſs, ſometimes in the nature of ſtipends annually "paid, *ne noceant*, to be freed and eaſed of their oppreſſion. Again, they "take trees, which by law they cannot do; timber trees, which are the "beauty, countenance and ſhelter of men's houſes; that men have long "ſpared from their own purſe and profit; that men eſteem, for their uſe "and delight, above ten times the value; that are a loſs which men can- "not repair or recover. Theſe do they take, to the defacing and ſpoiling "of your ſubjects manſions and dwellings, except they may be com- "pounded with to their own appetites. And if a gentleman be too hard "for them while he is at home, they will watch their time when there is "but a bailiff or a ſervant remaining, and put the ax to the root of the "tree, ere ever the maſter can ſtop it. Again, they uſe a ſtrange and "moſt unjuſt exaction in cauſing the ſubjects to pay poundage of their own "debts, due from your majeſty unto them: So as a poor man, when he "has had his hay or his wood, or his poultry (which perchance he was "full loath to part with, and had for the proviſion of his own family "and not to put to ſale) taken from him, and that not at a juſt price, but "under the value, and cometh to receive his money, he ſhall have after "the rate of twelve pence in the pound abated for poundage of his due pay- "ment upon ſo hard conditions. Nay farther they are grown to that "extremity (as is affirmed, tho' it be ſcarce credible, ſave that in ſuch "perſons all things are credible) that they will take double poundage, "once when the debenture is made, and again the ſecond time, when the "money is paid. For the ſecond point, moſt gracious ſovereign, touching "the quantity which they take far above that which is anſwered to your "majeſty's uſe; it is affirmed unto me by divers gentlemen of good report, "as a matter which I may ſafely avouch unto your majeſty, that there "is no pound profit, which redoundeth unto your majeſty in this courſe "but induceth and begetteth three pound damage upon your ſubjects, "beſide the diſcontentment. And to the end they may make their ſpoil "more ſecurely, what do they? Whereas divers ſtatutes do ſtrictly provide, "that whatſoever they take ſhall be regiſtered and atteſted, to the

In

CHAP. XLII. 1589.

In ſo great awe did the commons ſtand of every courtier, as well as of the crown, that they durſt uſe no freedom of ſpeech, which, they thought, would give the leaſt offence to any of them. Sir Edward Hobby ſhewed in the houſe his extreme grief, that by ſome great perſonage, not a member of the houſe, he had been

" the end that by making a collation of that which is taken from the " country and that which is anſwered above, their deceits might appear, " they, to the end to obſcure their deceits, utterly omit the obſervation of " this, which the law preſcribeth. And therefore to deſcend, if it may " pleaſe your majeſty, to the third ſort of abuſe, which is of the unlaw- " ful manner of their taking, whereof this queſtion is a branch; it is ſo " manifold, as it rather aſketh an enumeration of ſome of the particulars " than a proſecution of all. For their price, by law they ought to take as " they can agree with the ſubject; by abuſe they take at an impoſed and " enforced price: By law they ought to make but one apprizement by " neighbours in the country; by abuſe, they make a ſecond apprizement " at the court gate, and when the ſubjects cattle come up many miles lean " and out of plight by reaſon of their travel, then they prize them anew " at an abated price: By law, they ought to take between ſun and ſun; by " abuſe, they take by twilight and in the night-time, a time well choſen " for malefactors: By law, they ought not to take in the high-ways (a place " by her majeſty's high prerogative protected, and by ſtatute by ſpecial " words excepted) by abuſe, they take in the high-ways: By law, they " ought to ſhew their commiſſion, &c. A number of other particulars " there are, &c." Bacon's works, vol. IV. p. 305, 306.

Such were the abuſes, which Elizabeth would neither permit her Parliaments to meddle with, nor redreſs herſelf. I believe it will readily be allowed, that this ſlight prerogative alone, which has paſſed almoſt unobſerved amidſt other branches of ſo much greater importance, was ſufficient to extinguiſh all regular liberty. For what elector, or member of Parliament, or even juryman, durſt oppoſe the will of the court, while he lay under the laſh of ſuch an arbitrary prerogative? For a farther account of the grievous and incredible oppreſſions of purveyors, ſee the journals of the houſe of commons, vol. I. p. 190. There is a ſtory of a carter, which may be worth mentioning on this occaſion. " A carter had three times " been at Windſor with his cart to carry away, upon ſummons of a remove, " ſome part of the ſtuff of her majeſty's wardrobe; and when he had repair- " ed thither once, twice, and the third time, and that they of the wardrobe " had told him the third time that the remove held not, the carter, clap- " ping his hand on his thigh, ſaid, *Now I ſee, that the Queen is a woman* " *as well as my wife.* Which words being overheard by her majeſty, who " then ſtood at the window, ſhe ſaid, *What a villain is this?* and ſo ſent " him three angels to ſtop his mouth. Birch's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 155.

* See the ſtatutes under this head of purveyance.

CHAP. XLII. 1589.

purveyance [n] to be redreſſed by law [o]. Edward the third, a very arbitrary Prince, allowed ten ſeveral ſtatutes to be enacted for that purpoſe.

[n] We may judge of the extent and importance of theſe abuſes by a ſpeech of Bacon's againſt purveyors, delivered in the firſt Seſſion of the firſt Parliament of the ſubſequent reign. "Firſt," ſays he, "they take in hand "what they ought not to take; ſecondly, they take in quantity a far "greater proportion than cometh to your majeſty's uſe; thirdly, they take "in an unlawful manner, in a manner, I ſay, directly and expreſsly pro- "hibited by ſeveral laws. For the firſt, I am a little to alter their name: "For inſtead of takers, they become taxers: Inſtead of taking proviſions "for your majeſty's ſervice, they tax your people *ad redimendam vexatio-* "*nem*; impoſing upon them and extorting from them divers ſums of mo- "ney, ſometimes in groſs, ſometimes in the nature of ſtipends annually "paid, *ne noceant*, to be freed and eaſed of their oppreſſion. Again, they "take trees, which by law they cannot do; timber trees, which are the "beauty, countenance and ſhelter of men's houſes; that men have long "ſpared from their own purſe and profit; that men eſteem, for their uſe "and delight, above ten times the value; that are a loſs which men can- "not repair or recover. Theſe do they take, to the defacing and ſpoiling "of your ſubjects manſions and dwellings, except they may be com- "pounded with to their own appetites. And if a gentleman be too hard "for them while he is at home, they will watch their time when there is "but a bailiff or a ſervant remaining, and put the ax to the root of the "tree, ere ever the maſter can ſtop it. Again, they uſe a ſtrange and "moſt unjuſt exaction in cauſing the ſubjects to pay poundage of their own "debts, due from your majeſty unto them: So as a poor man, when he "has had his hay or his wood, or his poultry (which perchance he was "full loath to part with, and had for the proviſion of his own family "and not to put to ſale) taken from him, and that not at a juſt price, but "under the value, and cometh to receive his money, he ſhall have after "the rate of twelve pence in the pound abated for poundage of his due pay- "ment upon ſo hard conditions. Nay farther they are grown to that "extremity (as is affirmed, tho' it be ſcarce credible, ſave that in ſuch "perſons all things are credible) that they will take double poundage, "once when the debenture is made, and again the ſecond time, when the "money is paid. For the ſecond point, moſt gracious ſovereign, touching "the quantity which they take far above that which is anſwered to your "majeſty's uſe; it is affirmed unto me by divers gentlemen of good report, "as a matter which I may ſafely avouch unto your majeſty, that there "is no pound profit, which redoundeth unto your majeſty in this courſe "but induceth and begetteth three pound damage upon your ſubjects, "beſide the diſcontentment. And to the end they may make their ſpoil "more ſecurely, what do they? Whereas divers ſtatutes do ſtrictly provide, "that whatſoever they take ſhall be regiſtered and atteſted, to the

In

CHAP. XLII. 1589.

In ſo great awe did the commons ſtand of every courtier, as well as of the crown, that they durſt uſe no freedom of ſpeech, which, they thought, would give the leaſt offence to any of them. Sir Edward Hobby ſhewed in the houſe his extreme grief, that by ſome great perſonage, not a member of the houſe, he had been

" the end that by making a collation of that which is taken from the " country and that which is anſwered above, their deceits might appear, " they, to the end to obſcure their deceits, utterly omit the obſervation of " this, which the law preſcribeth. And therefore to deſcend, if it may " pleaſe your majeſty, to the third ſort of abuſe, which is of the unlaw- " ful manner of their taking, whereof this queſtion is a branch; it is ſo " manifold, as it rather aſketh an enumeration of ſome of the particulars " than a proſecution of all. For their price, by law they ought to take as " they can agree with the ſubject; by abuſe they take at an impoſed and " enforced price: By law they ought to make but one apprizement by " neighbours in the country; by abuſe, they make a ſecond apprizement " at the court gate, and when the ſubjects cattle come up many miles lean " and out of plight by reaſon of their travel, then they prize them anew " at an abated price: By law, they ought to take between ſun and ſun; by " abuſe, they take by twilight and in the night-time, a time well choſen " for malefactors: By law, they ought not to take in the high-ways (a place " by her majeſty's high prerogative protected, and by ſtatute by ſpecial " words excepted) by abuſe, they take in the high-ways: By law, they " ought to ſhew their commiſſion, &c. A number of other particulars " there are, &c." Bacon's works, vol. IV. p. 305, 306.

Such were the abuſes, which Elizabeth would neither permit her Parliaments to meddle with, nor redreſs herſelf. I believe it will readily be allowed, that this ſlight prerogative alone, which has paſſed almoſt unobſerved amidſt other branches of ſo much greater importance, was ſufficient to extinguiſh all regular liberty. For what elector, or member of Parliament, or even juryman, durſt oppoſe the will of the court, while he lay under the laſh of ſuch an arbitrary prerogative? For a farther account of the grievous and incredible oppreſſions of purveyors, ſee the journals of the houſe of commons, vol. I. p. 190. There is a ſtory of a carter, which may be worth mentioning on this occaſion. " A carter had three times " been at Windſor with his cart to carry away, upon ſummons of a remove, " ſome part of the ſtuff of her majeſty's wardrobe; and when he had repair- " ed thither once, twice, and the third time, and that they of the wardrobe " had told him the third time that the remove held not, the carter, clap- " ping his hand on his thigh, ſaid, *Now I ſee, that the Queen is a woman* " *as well as my wife.* Which words being overheared by her majeſty, who " then ſtood at the window, ſhe ſaid, *What a villain is this?* and ſo ſent " him three angels to ſtop his mouth. Birch's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 155.

[a] See the ſtatutes under this head of purveyance.

CHAP. XLII. 1589.

ſharply rebuked for ſpeeches delivered in Parliament: He craved the favour of the houſe, and deſired that ſome of the members might inform that great perſonage of his true meaning and intention in theſe ſpeeches[p]. The commons, to obviate theſe inconveniencies, paſſed a vote, that no one ſhould reveal the ſecrets of the houſe[q].

THE diſcomfiture of the Armada had begot in the nation a kind of enthuſiaſtic paſſion for enterprizes againſt Spain; and nothing ſeemed now impoſſible to be atchieved by the valour and fortune of the Engliſh. Don Antonio, prior of Crato, was a natural ſon of the royal family of Portugal, who, truſting to the averſion of his countrymen againſt the Caſtilians, had advanced a claim to the crown, and flying firſt to France, thence to England, had been encouraged both by Henry and Elizabeth in his pretenſions. A deſign was formed by the people, not the court, of England to conquer the kingdom for Don Antonio: Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Norris were the leaders of this romantic enterprize: Near twenty thouſand voluntiers[r] inliſted themſelves in the ſervice: And ſhips were hired, as well as arms provided, at the ſole charge of the adventurers. The Queen's frugality kept her from contributing more than ſixty thouſand pounds to the expence; and ſhe only allowed ſix of her ſhips of war to attend the expedition[s]. There was more ſpirit and bravery, than foreſight or prudence, in the conduct of this enterprize. The ſmall ſtock of the adventurers could not enable them to buy either proviſions or ammunition ſufficient

Expedition againſt Portugal.

[p] D'Ewes, p. 432. 433. [q] An act was paſſed this ſeſſion, enforcing the former ſtatute, which impoſed twenty pounds a month on every one abſent from public worſhip: But the penalty was reſtricted to two thirds of the income of the recuſant. 29 Eliz. cap. 6.

[r] Birch's Memoirs of Queen Elizabeth, vol. I. p. 61. Monſon, p. 267, ſays, that there were only fourteen thouſand ſoldiers and four thouſand ſeamen in the whole on this expedition: But the account contained in Dr. Birch, is given by one of the moſt conſiderable of the adventurers.

[s] Monſon, p. 267.

for

for ſuch an undertaking: They even wanted veſſels to ſtow the numerous voluntiers, who crowded to them; and they were obliged to ſeize by force ſome ſhips of the Hanſe Towns, which they met with at ſea: An expedient, which ſet them ſomewhat more at eaſe in point of room for their men, but remedied not the deficiency of their proviſions [t]. Had they ſailed directly to Portugal, it is believed, that the good will of the people, joined to the defenceleſs ſtate of the kingdom, might have enſured them of ſucceſs: But hearing, that great preparations were making at the Groine, for the invaſion of England, they were induced to go thither, and deſtroy this new armament of Spain. They broke into the harbour; burned ſome ſhips of war, particularly one commanded by Recalde, vice admiral of Spain; they defeated an army of four or five thouſand men, which was aſſembled to oppoſe them; they aſſaulted the Groine, and took the lower town, which they pillaged; and they would have taken the higher, tho' well fortified, had they not found their ammunition and proviſions beginning to fall ſhort. The young earl of Eſſex, a nobleman of very promiſing hopes, who, fired with the thirſt of military honour, had ſecretly, unknown to the Queen, ſtole from England, here joined the adventurers; and it was then agreed by common conſent to make ſail for Portugal, the main object of their enterprize.

THE Engliſh landed at Paniche, a ſea-port town, twelve leagues from Liſbon; and Norris led the army to that capital, while Drake undertook to ſail up the river, and attack the city with united forces. By this time, the court of Spain had got leizure to prepare againſt the invaſion of the Engliſh. Forces were thrown into Liſbon: The Portugueſe were diſarmed: All ſuſpected perſons were taken into cuſtody: And thus, tho' the inhabitants bore great affection to Don An-

[t] Monſon, p. 159.

tonio,

CHAP. XLII.

1589.

tonio, none of them dared to declare in favour of the invaders. The Engliſh army, however, made themſelves maſters of the ſuburbs, which abounded with riches of all kinds; but as they deſired to conciliate the affections of the Portugueze, and were more intent on honour than profit, they obſerved a ſtrict diſcipline, and abſtained from all plunder. Meanwhile they found their ammunition and proviſions totally exhauſted; they had not a ſingle cannon to make a breach in the walls; the admiral had not been able to paſs ſome fortreſſes, which guarded the river; there was no appearance of any inſurrection in their favour; ſickneſs from fatigue, hunger, and intemperance in wine and fruits had ſeized the army: So that it was found requiſite to make all haſte poſſible to reimbark. They were not purſued by the enemy; and finding, at the mouth of the river, ſixty ſhips laden with naval ſtores, they ſeized them as lawful prize; tho' they belonged to the Hanſe Towns, a neutral power. They ſailed thence to Vigo, which they took and burned; and having ravaged the country round, they ſet ſail and arrived ſafely in England. Above the half of theſe gallant adventurers periſhed by ſickneſs, famine, fatigue, and the ſword[u]; and England reaped much more honour than profit from this extraordinary expedition. It is computed, that eleven hundred gentlemen embarked on board this fleet, and that only three hundred and fifty ſurvived theſe multiplied diſaſters[x].

WHEN theſe ſhips were on their voyage homewards, they met with the earl of Cumberland, who was outward bound, with a fleet of ſeven ſail, all equipped at his own charge, except one ſhip of war, which the Queen had lent him. That nobleman ſupplied Sir Francis Drake with ſome proviſions; a generoſity, which ſaved the lives of many of Drake's men, but which the others ſuffered ſeverely for afterwards.

[u] Birch's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 61. [x] Birch, Ibid.

Cumberland

Cumberland ſailed towards the Terceras, and took ſeveral prizes from the enemy; but the richeſt, valued at an hundred thouſand pounds, periſhed in her return, with all her cargo, near St. Michael's Mount in Cornwal. Many of theſe adventurers were killed in a raſh attempt at the Terceras: A deſtructive mortality ſeized the reſt: And it was with difficulty that the few hands, which remained, were able to ſteer the ſhips home into harbour [y]. CHAP. XLII. 1589.

Scots affairs.

THO' the ſignal advantages, gained over the Spaniards, and the ſpirit, which they infuſed into the Engliſh, gave Elizabeth great ſecurity during the reſt of her reign, ſhe could not forbear keeping an anxious eye on Scotland, whoſe ſituation rendered the revolutions of that kingdom always of importance to her. It might have been expected, that this high-ſpirited princeſs, who knew ſo well how to brave danger, would not have retained that ſuſpicious jealouſy towards Scotland, with which, during the life-time of Mary, ſhe had been ſo much agitated. James had indeed ſucceeded to all his mother's claims; but he had not ſucceeded to the favour of the catholics, which could alone render theſe claims dangerous [z]: And as the Queen was now well advanced in years, and enjoyed the moſt uncontrouled authority over her ſubjects, it was not likely, that the King of Scots, who was of an indolent unambitious temper, would ever give her any diſturbance in the poſſeſſion of her throne. Yet all theſe circumſtances could not remove her timorous ſuſpicions: And ſo far from ſatisfying the nation by a ſettlement of the ſucceſſion, or a declaration of James's title, ſhe was as anxious to prevent every incident, which might raiſe his credit or procure him the regard of the Engliſh, as if he had been her immediate rival and competitor. Moſt of his miniſters and favourites were her penſioners; and as ſhe was deſirous to hinder him from marry-

[y] Monſon, p. 161. [z] Winwood, vol. I. p. 51.

ing

CHAP. XLII.

1589.

ing and having children, ſhe obliged them to throw obſtacles in the way of their alliance, even the moſt reaſonable, which could be offered him; and during ſome years, ſhe ſucceeded in this malignant policy[a]. He had fixed on the eldeſt daughter of the King of Denmark, who being a remote prince and not very powerful, could give her no umbrage; yet did ſhe ſo artfully croſs this negotiation, that the Daniſh monarch, impatient of delay, married his daughter to the Duke of Brunſwic. James then renewed his ſuit to the younger princeſs; and ſtill found obſtacles from the intrigues of Elizabeth, who, merely with a view of interpoſing delay, propoſed to him the ſiſter of the King of Navarre, a princeſs much older than himſelf, and entirely deſtitute of fortune. The young King, beſides the deſire of ſecuring himſelf by the proſpect of iſſue, from thoſe traiterous attempts, too frequent among his ſubjects, had been ſo watched by the rigid auſterity of the eccleſiaſtics, that he had another inducement to marriage, which is not ſo uſual with monarchs. His impatience therefore broke thro' all the politics of Elizabeth: The articles of marriage were ſettled: The ceremony was performed by proxy: And the princeſs embarked for Scotland; but was drove by a ſtorm into a port of Norway. This tempeſt, and ſome others, which happened near the ſame time, were univerſally believed in Scotland and Denmark to have proceeded from a combination of the Scottiſh and Daniſh witches; and the dying confeſſion of the criminals was ſuppoſed to place the accuſation beyond all controverſy[b]. James, however, tho' a great believer in ſorcery, was not deterred by this incident from taking a voyage, in order to conduct his bride home: He arrived in Norway; carried the Queen thence to Copenhagen; and having paſſed the winter in that city, he brought her next ſpring to Scotland, where they were joyfully re-

[a] Melvil, p. 166, 177. [b] Ibid. p. 180.

ceived

ceived by the people. The clergy alone, who never neglected an opportunity of vexing him, made oppoſition to the Queen's coronation, on account of the ceremony of anointing her, which, they alledged, was either a Jewiſh or a popiſh rite; and therefore utterly antichriſtian and unlawful. But James was as much bent on the ceremony, as they were averſe to it; and after much controverſy and many intrigues, his authority, which had not often happened, at laſt prevailed over their oppoſition [c].

[c] Spotſwood, p. 381.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLII.

1589.

ing and having children, she obliged them to throw obstacles in the way of their alliance, even the most reasonable, which could be offered him; and during some years, she succeeded in this malignant policy[a]. He had fixed on the eldest daughter of the King of Denmark, who being a remote prince and not very powerful, could give her no umbrage; yet did she so artfully cross this negotiation, that the Danish monarch, impatient of delay, married his daughter to the Duke of Brunswic. James then renewed his suit to the younger princess; and still found obstacles from the intrigues of Elizabeth, who, merely with a view of interposing delay, proposed to him the sister of the King of Navarre, a princess much older than himself, and entirely destitute of fortune. The young King, besides the desire of securing himself by the prospect of issue, from those traiterous attempts, too frequent among his subjects, had been so watched by the rigid austerity of the ecclesiastics, that he had another inducement to marriage, which is not so usual with monarchs. His impatience therefore broke thro' all the politics of Elizabeth: The articles of marriage were settled: The ceremony was performed by proxy: And the princess embarked for Scotland; but was drove by a storm into a port of Norway. This tempest, and some others, which happened near the same time, were universally believed in Scotland and Denmark to have proceeded from a combination of the Scottish and Danish witches; and the dying confession of the criminals was supposed to place the accusation beyond all controversy[b]. James, however, tho' a great believer in sorcery, was not deterred by this incident from taking a voyage, in order to conduct his bride home: He arrived in Norway; carried the Queen thence to Copenhagen; and having passed the winter in that city, he brought her next spring to Scotland, where they were joyfully re-

[a] Melvil, p. 166, 177. [b] Ibid. p. 180.

ceived

ceived by the people. The clergy alone, who never neglected an opportunity of vexing him, made oppoſition to the Queen's coronation, on account of the ceremony of anointing her, which, they alledged, was either a Jewiſh or a popiſh rite; and therefore utterly antichriſtian and unlawful. But James was as much bent on the ceremony, as they were averſe to it; and after much controverſy and many intrigues, his authority, which had not often happened, at laſt prevailed over their oppoſition [c].

[c] Spotſwood, p. 381.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIII.

French affairs.—Murder of the duke of Guiſe.—Murder of Henry the third.—Progreſs of Henry the fourth.—Naval enterprizes againſt Spain.—A Parliament.—Henry the fourth embraces the catholic religion.—Scotch affairs.—Naval enterprizes.—A Parliament.—Peace of Vervins.—The earl of Eſſex.

CHAP. XLIII.

1590.

AFTER a ſtate of great anxiety and many difficulties, Elizabeth had at length reached a ſituation, where, tho' her affairs ſtill required attention, and found employment for her active temper, ſhe was removed from all danger of any immediate revolution, and might regard the efforts of her enemies with ſome degree of confidence and ſecurity. Her ſucceſsful and prudent adminiſtration had gained her, together with the admiration of foreigners, the affections of her own ſubjects; and after the death of the Queen of Scots, even the catholics, however diſcontented, pretended not to diſpute her title, or adhere to any other perſon as her rival and competitor. James, curbed by his factious nobility and eccleſiaſtics, poſſeſſed at home very little authority; and was ſollicitous to remain on good terms with Elizabeth and the Engliſh nation, in hopes that time, aided by his patient tranquillity, would ſecure him that rich ſucceſſion, to which his birth entitled him. The Hollanders, tho' overmatched in their conteſt with Spain, ſtill made an obſtinate reſiſtance; and ſuch was their unconquerable antipathy to their old maſters, and ſuch the prudent conduct of young Maurice, their governor, that the ſubduing that ſmall territory, if at all poſſible, muſt be the work of years, and the reſult of many and great ſucceſſes. Philip, who, in his powerful effort againſt England, had been

tranſported

transported by resentment and ambition beyond his usual cautious maxims, was now disabled, and still more discouraged, from adventuring again on such hazardous enterprizes. The situation also of affairs in France, began chiefly to employ his attention; but notwithstanding all his artifice, and force, and expence, the events in that kingdom proved every day more contrary to his pretensions, and more favourable to the friends and confederates of England.

French affairs.

THE violence of the League having constrained Henry to declare war against the Hugonots, these religionists seemed exposed to the utmost danger; and Elizabeth, sensible of the intimate connexion between her own interests and those of that party, had supported the King of Navarre by her negociations in Germany, and still more by large sums of money, which she remitted for levying forces in that country. That heroic prince, not discouraged by the great superiority of his enemies, took the field; and in the year 1587 gained, at Coutras, a compleat victory over the army of the French King; but as his allies, the Germans, were at the same time discomfited by the army of the League, under the duke of Guise, his situation, notwithstanding his victory, seemed still as desperate as ever. The chief advantage which he reaped from this diversity of success, was the divisions which, by that means, took place among his enemies. The inhabitants of Paris, intoxicated with admiration of Guise, and strongly prejudiced against their King, whose intentions had become suspicious to them, took to arms, and obliged Henry to fly for his safety. That prince, dissembling his resentment, entered into a negociation with the League; and having conferred many high offices on Guise and his partizans, summoned an assembly of the states at Blois, on pretence of finding means and expedients to support the intended war against the Hugonots. The various scenes of perfidy and cruelty

CHAP. XLIII.

1590.

which had been exhibited in France, had juſtly begot a mutual diffidence among all parties; yet Guiſe, truſting more to the timidity than honour of the King, raſhly put himſelf into the hands of that monarch, and expected, by the aſcendant of his own genius, to make him ſubmit to all his exorbitant pretenſions. Henry, tho' of an eaſy diſpoſition, not ſteddy to his reſolutions, nor even to his promiſes, wanted neither courage nor capacity; and finding all his ſubtilties eluded by the vigour of Guiſe, and even his throne expoſed to the moſt imminent danger, he embraced more violent counſels than were natural to him, and ordered that duke and his brother, the cardinal of Guiſe, to be aſſaſſinated in his palace.

Murder of the duke of Guiſe.

THIS cruel execution, which the neceſſity of it could alone excuſe, had nearly proved fatal to the author, and ſeemed at firſt to plunge him into greater dangers than thoſe, which he ſought to avoid, by taking vengeance on his enemy. The partizans of the League were enflamed with the utmoſt rage againſt him: The populace every where, particularly at Paris, renounced all allegiance to him: The eccleſiaſtics and the preachers filled all places with execrations againſt his name: And the moſt powerful cities, and moſt opulent provinces, appeared to combine in a reſolution of renouncing monarchy, or of changing their monarch. Henry, finding ſlender reſources among his catholic ſubjects, was conſtrained to enter into a confederacy with the Hugonots and the King of Navarre: He enliſted large bodies of Swiſs infantry and German cavalry: And being ſtill ſupported by his chief nobility, he aſſembled, by all theſe means, an army of near forty thouſand men, and advanced to the gates of Paris, ready to cruſh the League, and ſubdue all his enemies. The deſperate reſolution of one man diverted the courſe of theſe great events. Jaques Clement, a Dominican monk, inflamed by that bloody ſpirit of bigotry which diſtin-

CHAP. XLIII.

1590.

guiſhes this century and a great part of the following beyond all other ages of the world, embraced the reſolution of ſacrificing his own life, in order to ſave the church from the perſecutions of an heretical tyrant; and being admitted, under ſome pretext, to the King's preſence, he gave that prince a mortal wound with a knife, and was immediately put to death, by the courtiers, who haſtily revenged the murder of their ſovereign. This remarkable incident happened on the firſt of Auguſt, 1589.

Murder of Henry the third.

THE King of Navarre, next heir to the crown, aſſumed the government, under the title of Henry the fourth; but ſucceeded to much greater difficulties than thoſe which ſurrounded his predeceſſor. The prejudices entertained againſt his religion, made a great part of the nobility deſert him; and it was only by his promiſe of hearkening to conferences and inſtruction, that he could engage any of the catholics to adhere to his undoubted title. The League, governed by duke of Mayenne, brother to Guiſe, gathered new force; and the King of Spain entertained views, either of diſmembering the monarchy, or of annexing the whole to his own dominions. In theſe diſtreſsful circumſtances, Henry addreſſed himſelf to Elizabeth, and found her well diſpoſed to contribute to his aſſiſtance, and to oppoſe the progreſs of the catholic League, and of the King of Spain, her inveterate and dangerous enemies. To prevent the deſertion of his Swiſs and German troops, ſhe made him a preſent of twenty-two thouſand pounds; a larger ſum than, as he declared, he had ever ſeen before: And ſhe ſent him a reinforcement of four thouſand men, under lord Willoughby, an officer of reputation, who joined the French at Dieppe. Strengthened by theſe ſupplies, Henry marched directly to Paris; and having taken the ſuburbs, ſword in hand, he abandoned them to be pillaged by his ſoldiers. He employed this body of Engliſh troops in many other

CHAP. XLIII.

1590.

which had been exhibited in France, had juſtly begot a mutual diffidence among all parties; yet Guiſe, truſting more to the timidity than honour of the King, raſhly put himſelf into the hands of that monarch, and expected, by the aſcendant of his own genius, to make him ſubmit to all his exorbitant pretenſions. Henry, tho' of an eaſy diſpoſition, not ſteddy to his reſolutions, nor even to his promiſes, wanted neither courage nor capacity; and finding all his ſubtilties eluded by the vigour of Guiſe, and even his throne expoſed to the moſt imminent danger, he embraced more violent counſels than were natural to him, and ordered that duke and his brother, the cardinal of Guiſe, to be aſſaſſinated in his palace.

Murder of the duke of Guiſe.

THIS cruel execution, which the neceſſity of it could alone excuſe, had nearly proved fatal to the author, and ſeemed at firſt to plunge him into greater dangers than thoſe, which he ſought to avoid, by taking vengeance on his enemy. The partizans of the League were enflamed with the utmoſt rage againſt him: The populace every where, particularly at Paris, renounced all allegiance to him: The eccleſiaſtics and the preachers filled all places with execrations againſt his name: And the moſt powerful cities, and moſt opulent provinces, appeared to combine in a reſolution of renouncing monarchy, or of changing their monarch. Henry, finding ſlender reſources among his catholic ſubjects, was conſtrained to enter into a confederacy with the Hugonots and the King of Navarre: He enliſted large bodies of Swiſs infantry and German cavalry: And being ſtill ſupported by his chief nobility, he aſſembled, by all theſe means, an army of near forty thouſand men, and advanced to the gates of Paris, ready to cruſh the League, and ſubdue all his enemies. The deſperate reſolution of one man diverted the courſe of theſe great events. Jaques Clement, a Dominican monk, inflamed by that bloody ſpirit of bigotry which diſtin-

CHAP. XLIII.

1590.

guiſhes this century and a great part of the following beyond all other ages of the world, embraced the reſolution of ſacrificing his own life, in order to ſave the church from the perſecutions of an heretical tyrant; and being admitted, under ſome pretext, to the King's preſence, he gave that prince a mortal wound with a knife, and was immediately put to death, by the courtiers, who haſtily revenged the murder of their ſovereign. This remarkable incident happened on the firſt of Auguſt, 1589.

Murder of Henry the third.

THE King of Navarre, next heir to the crown, aſſumed the government, under the title of Henry the fourth; but ſucceeded to much greater difficulties than thoſe which ſurrounded his predeceſſor. The prejudices entertained againſt his religion, made a great part of the nobility deſert him; and it was only by his promiſe of hearkening to conferences and inſtruction, that he could engage any of the catholics to adhere to his undoubted title. The League, governed by duke of Mayenne, brother to Guiſe, gathered new force; and the King of Spain entertained views, either of diſmembering the monarchy, or of annexing the whole to his own dominions. In theſe diſtreſsful circumſtances, Henry addreſſed himſelf to Elizabeth, and found her well diſpoſed to contribute to his aſſiſtance, and to oppoſe the progreſs of the catholic League, and of the King of Spain, her inveterate and dangerous enemies. To prevent the deſertion of his Swiſs and German troops, ſhe made him a preſent of twenty-two thouſand pounds; a larger ſum than, as he declared, he had ever ſeen before: And ſhe ſent him a reinforcement of four thouſand men, under lord Willoughby, an officer of reputation, who joined the French at Dieppe. Strengthened by theſe ſupplies, Henry marched directly to Paris; and having taken the ſuburbs, ſword in hand, he abandoned them to be pillaged by his ſoldiers. He employed this body of Engliſh troops in many other

CHAP. XLIII.

1590. enterprizes; and found ſtill great reaſon to praiſe their courage and fidelity. The time of their ſervice being elapſed, he diſmiſſed them with many high commendations. Sir William Drury, Sir Thomas Baſkerville, and Sir John Boroughs, acquired reputation this campaign, and revived in France the ancient fame of Engliſh valour.

Progreſs of Henry the fourth.

THE army which Henry next campaign led into the field, was much inferior to that of the League; but as it was compoſed of the chief nobility of France, he feared not to encounter his enemies in a pitched battle at Yvrée, and he gained a compleat victory over them. This ſucceſs enabled him to blockade Paris, and he reduced that capital to the laſt extremity of famine: When the duke of Parma, in conſequence of orders from Philip, marched to the relief of the League, and obliged Henry to raiſe the blockade. Having performed this important ſervice, he retired back to the Low Countries: and by his conſummate ſkill in the art of war, performed theſe long marches in the face of the enemy, without affording the French monarch that opportunity which he ſought, of giving him battle, or ſo much as putting his army once in diſorder. The only loſs which he ſuſtained, was in the Low Countries; where prince Maurice took advantage of his abſence, and recovered ſome towns which Parma had formerly conquered from the States [d].

1591. THE ſituation of Henry's affairs, tho' promiſing, was not ſo well advanced or eſtabliſhed as to make the Queen diſcontinue her ſuccours; and ſhe was ſtill

[d] This year the nation ſuffereda great loſs, by the death of Sir Francis Walſingham, ſecretary of ſtate; a man equally celebrated for his ability and his integrity. He had paſſed thro' many employments, had been very frugal in his expences yet died ſo poor, that his family was obliged to give him a private burial. He left only one daughter, firſt married to Sir Philip Sidney, then to the earl of Eſſex, favourite to Queen Elizabeth, and laſtly to the earl of Clanricarde of Ireland. The ſame year died Thomas Randolph, who had been employed by the Queen in ſeveral embaſſies to Scotland; as did alſo the earl of Warwic, elder brother to Leiceſter.

1591.

more confirmed in the reſolution of ſupporting him, by ſome advantages gained by the King of Spain. The duke of Mercœur, governor of Britany, a prince of the houſe of Lorraine, had declared for the League; and finding himſelf hard preſſed by Henry's forces, he had been obliged, in order to his ſecurity, to introduce ſome Spaniſh troops into the ſea-port towns of that province. Elizabeth was alarmed with the danger; and foreſaw, that the Spaniards, beſides infeſting the Engliſh commerce by privateers, might employ theſe harbours as the ſeat of their naval preparations, and might more eaſily, from that near neighbourhood, than from Spain or Portugal, project an invaſion of England. She concluded, therefore, a new treaty with Henry, in which ſhe engaged to ſend over three thouſand men, to be employed in the reduction of Britanny, and ſtipulated, that her charges ſhould, in a twelve month, or ſo ſoon as the enemy was expelled, be refunded her [e]. Theſe forces were commanded by Sir John Norris; and under him by his brother Henry, and by Anthony Shirley. Sir Roger Williams was at the head of a ſmall body which garriſoned Dieppe: And a ſquadron of ſhips, under the command of Sir Henry Palmer, lay upon the coaſt of France, and intercepted all the veſſels belonging to the Spaniards or the Leaguers.

THE events of war can very little be regulated beforehand by any treaty or agreement; and Henry, who found it neceſſary to lay aſide the projected enterprize againſt Britanny, perſuaded the Engliſh commanders to join his army, and to take a ſhare in the war which he carried on in Picardy [f]. Notwithſtanding the diſguſt which Elizabeth received from this diſappointment, he laid before her a plan for expelling the Leaguers from Normandy, and perſuaded her to ſend over a new body of four thouſand men, to aſſiſt him in that

[e] Camden, p. 561. [f] Rymer, tom. XIV. p. 116.

CHAP. XLIII.

1591.

enterprize. The earl of Eſſex was appointed general of theſe forces; a young nobleman, who, by many exterior accompliſhments, and ſtill more real merit, was daily advancing in favour with Elizabeth, and ſeemed to occupy that place in her affections which Leiceſter, who was now deceaſed, had ſo long enjoyed. Eſſex, impatient for military fame, was extremely uneaſy to lie ſome time at Dieppe unemployed; and had not the orders which he received from his miſtreſs been ſo poſitive, he would gladly have accepted of Henry's invitation, and have marched to join the French army now in Champagne. This plan of operations was alſo propoſed to Elizabeth by the French ambaſſador; but ſhe rejected it with great diſpleaſure; and ſhe threatned immediately to recall her troops, if Henry ſhould perſevere any longer in his preſent practice, of breaking all concert with her, and attending to nothing but his own intereſts [g]. Urged by theſe motives, the French King, at laſt, led his army into Normandy, and laid ſiege to Roüen, which he reduced to great difficulties. But the League, who were unable of themſelves to take the field againſt him, had again recourſe to the duke of Parma, who received orders to march to their aſſiſtance. He executed this enterprize with his uſual ability and ſucceſs; and, for the preſent, fruſtrated all the projects of Henry and Elizabeth. This princeſs, who kept ſtill in view the intereſts of her own kingdoms in all her foreign tranſactions, was impatient under theſe diſappointments, blamed Henry for his negligence in the execution of treaties, and complained, that the Engliſh forces were thruſt forward in every hazardous enterprize [h]. It is probable, however, that their own ardent courage, and their deſire of diſtinguiſhing themſelves in ſo celebrated a

[g] Birch's Negociations, p. 5. Rymer, tom. XIV. p. 123, 140.
[h] Camden, p. 562.

theatre

theatre for war, were the cauſe why they ſo often enjoyed this perilous honour.

1591.

NOTWITHSTANDING the indifferent ſucceſs of former enterprizes, the Queen was ſenſible how neceſſary it was to ſupport Henry againſt the League and the Spaniards; and ſhe formed a new treaty with him, in which they agreed, never to make peace with Philip, but by common conſent; *ſhe* promiſed to ſend him a new ſupply of four thouſand men; and *he* ſtipulated to repay her charges in a twelvemonth, to employ theſe forces, joined to a body of French troops, in an expedition againſt Britanny, and to conſign into her hands a ſea-port town of that province, for a retreat to the Engliſh [i]. Henry knew the impoſſibility of executing ſome of theſe articles, and the imprudence of fulfilling others; but finding them rigidly inſiſted on by Elizabeth, he accepted of her ſuccours, and truſted that he might eaſily, on ſome pretence, be able to excuſe his failure in the execution of his part of the treaty. This campaign was the leaſt ſucceſsful to Henry of all thoſe which he had yet carried on againſt the League.

Naval enterprizes againſt Spain.

DURING theſe military operations in France, Elizabeth employed her naval power againſt Spain, and endeavoured to intercept the Weſt-Indian treaſures, the ſource of that greatneſs which rendered Philip ſo formidable to all his neighbours. She ſent a ſquadron of ſeven ſhips, under the command of lord Thomas Howard, for this ſervice; but the King of Spain, informed of her purpoſe, fitted out a navy of fifty-five ſail, and diſpatched them to eſcort the Indian fleet. They fell in with the Engliſh ſquadron; and by the courageous obſtinacy of Sir Richard Greenville, the vice-admiral, who refuſed to make his eſcape by flight, they took one ſhip, the firſt Engliſh man of war which

[i] Rymer, vol. XVI. p. 151, 168, 171, 173.

CHAP. XLIII.

1592.

had yet fallen into the hands of the Spaniards [k]. The reſt of the ſquadron returned ſafely into England, fruſtrated of their expectations, but pleaſing themſelves with the idea that their attempt had not been altogether fruitleſs in hurting the enemy. The Indian fleet had been ſo long detained in the Havanna, from the fear of the Engliſh, that they were obliged at laſt to ſet ſail in an improper ſeaſon, and moſt of them periſhed by ſhipwreck ere they reached the Spaniſh harbours [l]. The earl of Cumberland made a like unſucceſsful enterprize againſt the Spaniſh trade. He carried out one ſhip of the Queen's, and ſeven others, equipped at his own expence; but the prizes which he made, did not compenſate him for the charges [m].

THE ſpirit of theſe expenſive and hazardous adventures was very prevalent in England. Sir Walter

[k] This action of Sir Richard Greenville is ſo ſingular, as to merit a more particular relation. He was engaged alone with the whole Spaniſh fleet of fifty-three ſail, which had ten thouſand men on board; and from the time the fight begun, which was about three in the afternoon, to the break of day next morning, he repulſed the enemy fifteen times, tho' they continually ſhifted their veſſels, and boarded with freſh men. In the beginning of the action he himſelf received a wound; but he continued doing his duty above deck till eleven at night, when receiving a freſh wound, he was carried down to be dreſſed. During this operation he received a ſhot in the head, and the ſurgeon was killed by his ſide. The Engliſh began now to want powder; all their ſmall arms were broke or become uſeleſs; of this number, which were but a hundred and three at firſt, forty were killed, and almoſt all the reſt wounded; their maſts were beat overboard, their tackle cut in pieces, and nothing but a hulk left, unable to move one way or other. In this ſituation Sir Richard propoſed to the ſhip's company, to truſt to the mercy of God, not to that of the Spaniards, and to deſtroy the ſhip with themſelves, rather than yield to the enemy. The maſter gunner, and many of the ſeamen, agreed to this deſperate reſolution; but others oppoſed it, and obliged Greenville to ſurrender himſelf priſoner. He died a few days after; and his laſt words were: "Here die I, Richard Green-"ville, with a joyful and quiet mind; for that I have ended my life as a "true ſoldier ought to do, fighting for his country, Queen, religion, and "honour: My ſoul willingly departing from this body, leaving behind the "laſting fame of having behaved as every valiant ſoldier is in his duty bound "to do." The Spaniards loſt in this ſharp tho' unequal action, four ſhips, and about a thouſand men. And Greenville's veſſel herſelf periſhed ſoon after, with two hundred Spaniards in her. Hackluyt's Voyages, vol. II. part 2. p. 169. Camden, p. 565.

[l] Monſon, p. 163. [m] Ibid. p. 169.

Raleigh,

CHAP. XLIII.

1593.

Raleigh, who had enjoyed great favour with the Queen, finding his intereſt to decline, reſolved to recover her good graces by ſome important undertaking; and as his reputation was high in England, he perſuaded great numbers to engage with him as volunteers, in an attempt on the Weſt-Indies. The fleet was detained, ſo long in the Channel, by contrary winds, that the ſeaſon was loſt: Raleigh was recalled by the Queen: Sir Martin Forbiſher ſucceeded to the command, and made a privateering voyage againſt the Spaniards. He took a rich Carrack near the iſland of Flores, and deſtroyed another [n]. About the ſame time, Thomas White, a Londoner, took two Spaniſh ſhips, which, beſides fourteen hundred cheſts of quickſilver, contained above two millions of bulls for indulgences; a commodity uſeleſs to the Engliſh, but which had coſt the King of Spain three hundred thouſand florins, and would have been ſold by him in the Indies for five millions.

THIS war did great damage to Spain; but it was attended with conſiderable expence to England, and Elizabeth's miniſters computed, that, ſince the commencement of it, ſhe had expended in Flanders and France, and on her naval expeditions, above one million two hundred thouſand pounds [o]; a charge which, notwithſtanding her extreme frugality, was too burthenſome for her narrow revenues to bear. She ſummoned, therefore, a Parliament, in order to obtain ſupply: But ſhe either thought her authority ſo eſtabliſhed, that ſhe needed to make them no conceſſions in return, or ſhe rated her power and prerogative above money: For there was never any Parliament whom ſhe treated in ſo haughty a manner, whom ſhe made more ſenſible of their own weakneſs, or whoſe privileges ſhe more undervalued. When the ſpeaker, Sir Edward Coke, made the three uſual demands, of free-

19 February. A Parliament.

[n] Monſon, p. 165. Camden, p. 569. [o] Strype, vol. III.

dom

CHAP. XLII.

1593.

dom from arreſts, of acceſs to her perſon, and of liberty of ſpeech; ſhe replied to him, by the mouth of Puckering, lord-keeper, that liberty of ſpeech was granted the commons, but they muſt know what liberty they were entitled to; not a liberty for every one to ſpeak what he liſteth, or what cometh in his brain to utter; their privilege extended no farther than a liberty of Aye or No: That ſhe enjoined the ſpeaker, if he perceived any idle heads ſo negligent of their own ſafety, as to attempt reforming the church, or innovating in the commonwealth, that he ſhould refuſe the bills exhibited to that purpoſe, till they were examined by ſuch as were fitter to conſider of theſe things, and could better judge of them: That ſhe would not impeach the freedom of their perſons; but they muſt beware, leſt, under colour of this privilege, they imagined, that any neglect of their duty could be covered or protected: And that ſhe would not refuſe them acceſs to her perſon; provided it was upon urgent and weighty cauſes, and at times convenient, and when ſhe might have leiſure from other important cauſes of the realm [p].

NOTWITHSTANDING the menacing and contemptuous air of this ſpeech, the intrepid and indefatigable Peter Wentworth, not diſcouraged by his former ill ſucceſs, ventured to tranſgreſs the imperial orders of Elizabeth. He preſented to the lord keeper a petition, in which he deſired the upper houſe to join with the lower in a ſupplication to her majeſty, for entailing the ſucceſſion of the crown; and declared, that he had a bill ready prepared for that purpoſe. This method of proceeding was ſufficiently reſpectful and cautious; but the ſubject was always extremely diſagreeable to the Queen, and what ſhe had expreſsly prohibited any one to meddle with: She ſent Wentworth immediately to the Tower; committed Sir Thomas Bromley, who had

[p] D'Ewes, p. 460, 469. Townſend, p. 37.

had ſeconded him, to the Fleet priſon, together with Stevens, and Welſh, two members, to whom Sir Thomas had communicated his intention [q]. About a fortnight after, a motion was made in the houſe, to petition the Queen, for the releaſe of theſe members; but it was anſwered by all the privy counſellors there preſent, that her majeſty had committed them for cauſes beſt known to herſelf, and that to preſs her on that head would only tend to the prejudice of the gentlemen whom they meant to ſerve: She would releaſe them whenever ſhe thought proper, and would be better pleaſed to do it of her own proper motion, than from their ſuggeſtion [r]. The houſe willingly acquieſced in this reaſoning.

So arbitrary an act, at the commencement of the ſeſſion, might well repreſs all farther attempts for freedom: But the religious zeal for the puritans was not ſo eaſily reſtrained; and it inſpired a courage which no human motive was able to ſurmount. Morrice, attorney of the court of wards, made a motion for redreſſing the abuſes in the biſhop's courts, but above all, in the high commiſſion; where ſubſcriptions, he ſaid, were exacted to articles at the pleaſure of the prelates; where oaths were impoſed, obliging perſons to anſwer to all queſtions without diſtinction, even tho' they ſhould tend to their own condemnation; and where every one who refuſed entire ſatisfaction to the commiſſioners, was impriſoned, without relief or remedy [s]. This motion was ſeconded by ſome members; but the miniſters and privy counſellors oppoſed it; and foretold the conſequences which enſued. The Queen ſent for the ſpeaker; and after requiring him to deliver Morrice's bill to her, ſhe told him, that it was in her power to call Parliaments, in her power to diſſolve them, in her power to give aſſent or diſſent to any determination which

[q] D'Ewes, p. 470. Townſend, p. 54. D'Ewes, p. 497.
[r] Ibid. p. 474. Townſend, p. 69.

they

CHAP. XLIII.

1593.

they ſhould form: That her purpoſe in ſummoning this Parliament was twofold, to have laws enacted for the farther enforcement of uniformity in religion, and to provide for the defence of the nation, againſt the exorbitant power of Spain: That theſe two points ought, therefore, to be the object of their deliberation: She had enjoined them already, by the mouth of the lord keeper, to meddle neither with matters of ſtate nor of religion; and ſhe wondered how any one could be ſo aſſuming, as to attempt a ſubject ſo expreſsly contrary to her prohibition: That ſhe was highly offended with this preſumption; and took the preſent opportunity to reiterate the commands given by the keeper, and to require, that no bill, regarding either ſtate affairs, or reformation in cauſes eccleſiaſtical, be exhibited in the houſe: And that in particular ſhe charged the ſpeaker upon his allegiance, that if any ſuch bills were offered, abſolutely to refuſe them a reading, and not ſo much as permit them to be debated by the members[t]. This command from the Queeen was ſubmitted to, without farther queſtion. Morrice was ſeized in the houſe by a ſerjeant at arms, diſcharged from his office of chancellor of the dutchy, diſabled from any practice in his profeſſion as a common lawyer, and kept for ſome years priſoner in Tilbury caſtle[u].

THE Queen having thus expreſsly pointed out, both what the houſe ſhould and ſhould not do, the commons were as obſequious to the one as to the other of her injunctions. They paſſed a very ſevere law againſt recuſants; ſuch a law as was ſuited to the ſevere character of Elizabeth and to the perſecuting ſpirit of that age. It was intitled, An act to retain her majeſty's ſubjects in their due obedience; and was meant, as the preamble declares, to obviate ſuch inconveniencies and perils as might grow from the wicked practices

[t] D'Ewes, p. 474, 478. Townſend, p. 68.

[u] Heylin's Hiſtory of the Preſbyterians, p. 320.

of

of ſeditious ſectaries and diſloyal perſons: For theſe two ſpecies of criminals were always, at that time, confounded together, as equally dangerous to the peace of ſociety. It was enacted, that any perſon, above ſixteen years of age, who obſtinately refuſed, during the ſpace of a month, to attend the public worſhip, ſhould be committed to priſon; that, if after being condemned for this offence, he perſiſt three months in his refuſal, he muſt abjure the realm; and that if he either refuſe this condition, or return after baniſhment, he is to ſuffer capitally as a felon, without benefit of clergy[x]. This law bore equally hard upon the puritans as upon the catholics; and had it not been impoſed by the Queen's authority, was probably, in that reſpect, very much contrary to the private ſentiments and inclinations of the majority in the houſe of commons. Very little oppoſition, however, appears there to have been openly made to it[y]. CHAP. XLIII. 1593.

THE expences of the war with Spain having reduced the Queen to great neceſſity of a ſupply, the grant of ſubſidies ſeems to have been the moſt important buſineſs of this Parliament; and it was a ſingular mark of the high ſpirit of Elizabeth, that, while conſcious of a preſent dependance on the commons, ſhe opened the ſeſſion with the moſt haughty treatment of them, and covered her weakneſs under ſuch a lofty appearance of ſuperiority. The commons readily voted two ſubſidies and four fifteenths; but this ſum not appearing ſufficient to the court, a very unuſual expedient was fallen upon to induce them to make an enlargement in their conceſſion. The peers informed the commons in a conference, that they could not give their aſſent to the ſupply voted, thinking it too ſmall for the Queen's oc-

[x] 35 Eliz. c. 1.

[y] After enacting this ſtatute, the clergy, in order to remove the odium from themſelves, often took care that recuſants ſhould be tried by the civil judges at the aſſizes, rather than by the eccleſiaſtical commiſſioners. Strype's Ann. Vol. IV. p. 264.

caſions:

CHAP. XLIII.

1593.

occaſions: They therefore propoſed a grant of three ſubſidies and ſix fifteenths, and deſired a conference, in order to perſuade the commons to agree to this meaſure. The commons, who had acquired the privilege of beginning all bills of ſubſidy, took offence at this procedure of the lords, and at firſt abſolutely rejected the conference: But being afraid, on reflection, that they had, by this refuſal, given offence to their ſuperiors, they both agreed to the conference, and afterwards voted the additional ſubſidy [z].

THE Queen, notwithſtanding this unuſual conceſſion of the commons, ended the ſeſſion with a ſpeech, containing ſome reprimands to them, and full of the ſame high pretenſions, which ſhe had aſſumed at the opening of the Parliament. She took notice, by the mouth of the keeper, that ſome members ſpent more time than was neceſſary, by indulging themſelves in harangues and reaſonings: And ſhe expreſſed her diſpleaſure on account of their not paying their due reverence to privy counſellors, "who," ſhe told them, "were not "to be accounted as common knights and burgeſſes "of the houſe, who are counſellors but during the "Parliament: Whereas, the others are ſtanding "counſellors, and for their wiſdom and great ſervice "are called to the council of the ſtate [a]." The Queen alſo, in her own perſon, made the Parliament a ſpirited harangue; in which ſhe ſpoke of the juſtice and moderation of her government, expreſſed the ſmall ambition ſhe had ever entertained of making conqueſts, diſplayed the juſt grounds of her quarrel with the King of Spain, and diſcovered how little ſhe apprehended the power of that monarch, even tho' he ſhould make a greater effort than that of his Invincible Armada. "But I am informed," added ſhe, "that when he "attempted this laſt invaſion, ſome upon the ſea-coaſts

z D'Ewes, p. 483, 487, 488. Townſend, p. 66.

a D'Ewes, p. 466. Townſend, p. 47.

"forſook

" forſook their towns, fled up higher into the country, CHAP. XLIII.
" and left all naked and expoſed to his entrance: But
" I ſwear unto you, by God, if I knew thoſe perſons, 1593.
" or may know of any that ſhall do ſo hereafter, I will
" make them feel what it is to be ſo fearful in ſo ur-
" gent a cauſe[b]." By this menace, ſhe probably gave the people to underſtand that ſhe would exerciſe martial law upon ſuch cowards: For there was no ſtatute by which a man could be puniſhed for changing his place of abode.

THE King of France, tho' he had hitherto made war on the League with great bravery and reputation, tho' he had this campaign gained conſiderable advantages over them, and tho' he was aſſiſted by a conſiderable body of Engliſh under Norris, who carried hoſtilities into the heart of Britanny; was become ſenſible, that he never could, by force of arms alone, render himſelf maſter of his kingdom. The nearer his military ſucceſſes ſeemed to approach him to a full poſſeſſion of the throne, the more diſcontent and jealouſy aroſe among thoſe Romaniſts who adhered to him; and a party was formed in his own court to elect ſome catholic monarch of the royal blood, if Henry refuſed any longer to ſatisfy them by declaring his converſion. This excellent prince was far from being a bigot to his ſect; and as he deemed theſe theological diſputes to be entirely ſubordinate to the public good, he had tacitly determined, from the beginning, to come, ſome time or other, to the reſolution required of him. He had found, on the death of his predeceſſor, that the hugonots, who formed the braveſt and moſt faithful part of his army, were ſuch determined zealots, that, if he had, at that time, abjured their faith, they would inſtantly have abandoned him to the pretenſions and uſurpations of the catholics. The more bigoted catholics, he knew, particularly thoſe of the League, had entertained ſuch

[b] D'Ewes, p. 466, Townſend, p. 48.

an

CHAP. XLIII.

1593.

an unsurmountable prejudice against his person, and diffidence of his sincerity, that even his conversion would not reconcile them to his title; and he must either expect to be entirely excluded from the throne, or to be admitted to it on such terms as would leave him little more than the mere shadow of royalty. In this delicate situation he had resolved to temporize; to retain the hugonots by continuing the profession of their religion; to gain the moderate catholics by giving them hopes of his conversion; to attach both to his person by conduct and success; and he hoped, either that the animosity of war against the League would make them drop gradually the question of religion, or that he might, in time, after some victories over his enemies and some conferences with divines, make finally, with more decency and dignity, that abjuration, which must have appeared, at first, both mean and suspicious to both parties.

Henry IV. embraces the catholic religion.

WHEN the people are attached to any theological tenets, merely from a general persuasion or prepossession, they are easily induced, by any motive or authority, to change their faith in these mysterious subjects; as appears from the example of the English, who, during some reigns, generally embraced, without scruple, the still varying religion of their sovereigns. But a nation, like the French, where principles had so long been displayed as the badges of faction, and where each party had fortified its belief by an animosity against the other, were not found so pliable or inconstant; and Henry was at last convinced, that the catholics of his party would entirely abandon him, if he gave them not immediate satisfaction in this particular. The hugonots also, taught by experience, clearly saw, that his desertion of them was become entirely necessary for the public settlement; and so general was this persuasion among them, that, the duke of Sully pretends, even the divines of that party purposely allowed themselves to be

overcome

overcome in the disputes and conferences; that the King might more readily be convinced of the weakness of their cause, and might more cordially and sincerely, at least more decently, embrace the religion which it was so much his interest to believe. If this self-denial, in so tender a point, should appear incredible and supernatural in theologians, it will, at least, be thought very natural, that a prince, so little instructed in these points as Henry, and so desirous to preserve his sincerity, should insensibly bend his opinion to the necessity of his affairs, and should believe that party to have the best arguments, who could alone put him in possession of a kingdom. All circumstances, therefore, being prepared for this great event, that monarch renounced the protestant religion, and was solemnly received, by the French prelates of his party, into the bosom of the church. 1593.

ELIZABETH, who was, herself, chiefly attached to the protestants, by her interests and the circumstances of her birth, and who seems to have entertained some propensity, during her whole life, to the catholic superstition, at least, to the antient ceremonies, yet pretended to be extremely displeased with this abjuration of Henry; and she wrote him a very angry letter, reproaching him with this interested change of his religion. Sensible, however, that the League and the King of Spain were still their common enemies, she hearkened to his apologies; continued her succours both of men and money; and formed a new treaty, in which they mutually stipulated never to make peace but by common agreement.

Scots affairs.

THE intrigues of Spain were not limited to France and England: The never failing pretence of religion, joined to the influence of money, excited new disorders in Scotland, and gave fresh alarms to Elizabeth. George Ker, brother to the lord Newbottle, had been taken, while he was making his passage secretly into

CHAP. XLII.

1593.

Spain; and some papers were found about him, by which a dangerous conspiracy of some catholic noblemen with Philip was discovered. The earls of Angus, Errol, and Huntley, the heads of three potent families, had entered into a confederacy with the Spanish monarch; and had stipulated to raise all their forces, to join them to thirty thousand Spanish troops, which Philip engaged to send into Scotland; and after re-establishing the catholic religion in that kingdom, to march with their united power, in order to effectuate the same purpose in England[c]. Graham of Fintry, who had also entered into this conspiracy, was taken and arraigned, and executed. Elizabeth sent lord Borough ambassador into Scotland, and exhorted the King to exercise the same severity on the three earls, to forfeit their estates, and by annexing them to the crown, both increase his own demesnes, and set an example to all his subjects of the dangers attending treason and rebellion. This advice was certainly very rational, but not easy to be executed by the small revenue and limited authority of James. He desired, therefore, some supply from her of men and money; but tho' she had reason to deem the prosecution of the three popish earls a common cause, he never could obtain the least assistance from her. The tenth part of the expence, which she bestowed in supporting the French King and the States, would have sufficed to execute this purpose, more immediately essential to her security[d]: But she seems ever to have borne some degree of malignity to James, whom she hated, both as her heir, and as the son of Mary, her hated rival and competitor. So far from giving him assistance to prosecute the catholic conspirators, she rather contributed to his inquietude, by countenancing the turbulent disposition of the earl

[c] Spotswood, p. 391. Rymer, tom. XVI. p. 190.
[d] Spotswood, p. 393. Rymer, tom. XVI. p. 235.

of

of Bothwel[e], a nobleman descended from a natural son of James the fifth. Bothwel more than once attempted to render himself master of the King's person; and being expelled the kingdom for these traiterous designs, he took shelter in England, was secretly protected by the Queen, and lurked near the borders, where his power lay, with a view of still enterprizing some new violence. He succeeded at last in an attempt on the King; and by the mediation of the English ambassador, imposed very dishonourable terms upon that prince: But James, with the authority of the convention of states, annulled this agreement as imposed by violence; again expelled Bothwel the country; and obliged him to take shelter in England. Elizabeth, pretending ignorance of the place of his retreat, never executed the treaties, by which she was bound to deliver up all rebels and fugitives to the King of Scotland. During these disorders, encreased by the refractory disposition of the ecclesiastics, the prosecution of the catholic earls remained in suspence; but at last the Parliament passed an act of attainder against them, and the King prepared himself to execute it by force of arms. The noblemen, tho' they obtained a victory over the earl of Argyle, who acted by the King's commission, found themselves hard pressed by James himself, and agreed, on certain terms, to leave the kingdom. Bothwel, being detected in a confederacy with them, forfeited the favour of Elizabeth, and was obliged to take shelter, first in France, then in Italy, where he died, some years after, in great poverty.

CHAP. XLIII. 1594. 1594.

The established authority of the Queen secured her from all such attempts as James was exposed to from the mutinous disposition of his subjects; and her enemies found no other means of giving her any domestic disturbance than by such traiterous and perfidious machinations, as ended in their own disgrace, and in

[e] Spotswood, p. 257, 258.

CHAP. XLIII. 1594.

the ruin of their criminal inſtruments. Roderigo Lopez, a Jew, domeſtic phyſician to the Queen, being impriſoned on ſuſpicion, confeſſed, that he had received a bribe to poiſon her from Fuentes and Ibarra, who had ſucceeded Parma, lately deceaſed, in the government of the Netherlands; but he maintained, that he had no other intention than to cheat Philip of his money, and never meant to fulfil his promiſe. He was, however, executed for the conſpiracy; and the Queen complained to Philip of theſe diſhonourable attempts of his miniſters, but could obtain no ſatisfaction [f]. York and Williams, two Engliſh traitors, were afterwards executed for a like conſpiracy with Ibarra [g].

INSTEAD of revenging herſelf, by retaliating in this ſhameful manner, Elizabeth ſought a more honourable vengeance, by ſupporting the King of France, and aſſiſting him in finally breaking the force of the League, which, after the converſion of that monarch, went daily to decay, and was threatned with ſpeedy ruin and diſſolution. Norris commanded the Engliſh forces in Britanny, and aſſiſted at the taking of Morlaix, Quimpercorentin, and Breſt, towns guarded by Spaniſh forces in that province. In every action, the Engliſh, tho' they had ſo long enjoyed domeſtic peace, diſcovered a ſtrong military diſpoſition; and the Queen, tho' herſelf a heroine, found more frequent occaſion to reprove her generals for encouraging their temerity, than for countenancing their fear or caution [h]. Sir Martin Forbiſher, her brave admiral, periſhed, with many others, before Breſt. Morlaix had been promiſed the Engliſh for a place of retreat; but the duke d'Aumont, the French general, eluded this promiſe by making it to be inſerted in the capitulation, that none but catholics ſhould be admitted into that city.

[f] Camden, p. 577. Birch's Negot. p. 15. Bacon, vol. IV. p. 381.
[g] Camden, p. 582. [h] Ibid. p. 578.

NEXT

CHAP. XLIII.

1595.

NEXT campaign, the French King, who had long carried on hoſtilities with Philip, was at laſt provoked, by the taking of Chatelet and Dourlens, and the attack of Cambray, to declare war againſt that monarch. Elizabeth, being threatned with a new invaſion in England, and with an inſurrection in Ireland, recalled moſt of her forces, and ſent Norris to command in this latter kingdom. Finding alſo, that the French League was almoſt entirely diſſolved, and that the moſt conſiderable leaders had made an accommodation with their prince, ſhe thought that he could well ſupport himſelf by his own force and valour, and ſhe began to be more ſparing in his cauſe, of the blood and treaſure of her ſubjects.

SOME diſguſts, which ſhe had received from the ſtates, joined to the remonſtrances of her frugal miniſter, Burleigh, made her alſo inclined to diminiſh her charges on that ſide; and ſhe even demanded, by her ambaſſador, Sir Thomas Bodley, to be reimburſed all the money, which ſhe had expended in ſupporting them. The ſtates, beſides alledging the conditions of the former treaty, by which they were not bound to repay her, till the concluſion of a peace, pleaded their preſent poverty and diſtreſs, the great ſuperiority of the Spaniards, and the difficulty of ſupporting the war; much more, of ſaving money to diſcharge their incumbrances. After much negotiation, a new treaty was at laſt formed; by which the ſtates engaged to free the Queen immediately from the charge of the Engliſh auxiliaries, computed at forty thouſand pounds a year, to pay her annually twenty thouſand pounds for ſome years, to aſſiſt her with a certain number of ſhips, and to conclude no peace nor treaty without her conſent. They alſo bound themſelves, on the concluſion of the peace with Spain, to pay her annually the ſum of an hundred thouſand pounds for four years; but on this condition, that the payment ſhould be in lieu of all debts, and that they ſhould be ſupplied, tho' at their

CHAP. XLIII.

1596. own charges, with a body of four thouſand auxiliaries from England [1].

THE Queen ſtill retained in her hands the cautionary towns, which were a great check on the riſing power of the ſtates; and ſhe committed the important charge of Fluſhing to Sir Francis Vere, a brave officer, who had been much diſtinguiſhed by his valour in the Low Countries. She gave this gentleman the preference to Eſſex, who expected ſo honourable a command; and tho' that earl was daily riſing both in reputation with the people, and favour with herſelf, the Queen, who was commonly reſerved in the advancement of her courtiers, thought proper, on this occaſion, to give him a refuſal. Sir Thomas Baſkerville was ſent over to France at the head of two thouſand Engliſh, with which Elizabeth, by a new treaty, concluded with Henry, engaged to ſupply that prince. Some ſtipulations for mutual aſſiſtance were formed by the treaty; and all the former engagements were renewed.

1597. THIS body of Engliſh troops were maintained at the expence of the French King; yet did Henry eſteem this ſupply of conſiderable advantage, on account of the great reputation acquired by the Engliſh, in ſo many fortunate enterprizes, undertaken againſt the common enemy. In the great battle of Turnhoult, gained this campaign by prince Maurice, the Engliſh auxiliaries under Sir Francis Vere and Sir Robert Sidney had extremely diſtinguiſhed themſelves; and the fortunate ſucceſs of that day was univerſally aſcribed to their diſcipline and valour.

Naval enterprizes. THO' Elizabeth, at a great expence of blood and treaſure, made war againſt Philip in France and the Low Countries, the moſt ſevere blows which ſhe gave the Spaniſh greatneſs, were owing to thoſe naval enterprizes, which either ſhe or her ſubjects ſcarce ever intermitted during one ſeaſon. In 1594, Richard Haw-

[1] Camden, p. 586.

kins,

CHAP. XLIII.

1597.

kins, son to Sir John, the famous navigator, procured the Queen's commission, and sailed with three ships to the South Sea by the straits of Magellan: But his voyage proved unfortunate, and he himself was taken prisoner on the coast of Chili. James Lancaster was supplyed the same year with three ships and a pinnace by the merchants of London; and was more fortunate in his adventures. He took thirty-nine ships of the enemy; and not contented with this success, he made an attempt on Fernambouc in Brazil, where, he knew, great treasures were at that time lodged. As he approached the land, he saw it lined with great numbers of the enemy; but no-wise daunted with this appearance, he placed the stoutest of his men in boats, and ordered them to row with such violence against the shore as to split them in pieces. By this bold action, he both deprived his men of all hopes of saving themselves but by victory, and terrified the enemy, who fled after a short resistance. He returned home safely with the treasure, which he had so bravely acquired. In 1595, Sir Walter Raleigh, who had anew forfeited the Queen's friendship by an intrigue with one of the maids of honour, and who had been confined in prison for this misdemeanor, no sooner recovered his liberty than he was pushed by his active and enterprizing genius to attempt some great action. The success of the first Spanish adventures against Mexico and Peru had begot an extreme avidity in Europe; and a prepossession universally took place, that in the inland parts of South America, called Guiana, a country as yet undiscovered, there were mines and treasures and riches far exceeding any thing which Cortes or Pizarro had met with. Raleigh, whose turn of mind was somewhat romantic and extravagant, undertook at his own charge the discovery of this wonderful country. Having taken the small town of St. Joseph in the isle of Trinidado, where he found no riches, he left his ship,

CHAP. XLIII.

1597.

and ſailed up the river Oroonoko in pinnaces, but without meeting with any thing to anſwer his expectations. On his return, he publiſhed an account of this country, full of the greateſt and moſt palpable lies, that were ever attempted to be impoſed on the credulity of mankind [k].

THE ſame year, Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins undertook a more important expedition againſt the Spaniſh ſettlements in America; and they carried with them ſix ſhips of the Queen's and twenty more, which they had either fitted out at their own charges, or which were furniſhed them by private adventurers. Sir Thomas Baſkerville was appointed commander of the land forces, which they carried on board. Their firſt deſign was to attempt Porto Rico, where, they knew, a rich carrack was at that time ſtationed; but as they had not preſerved the requiſite ſecrecy, a pinnace, having ſtrayed from the fleet, was taken by the Spaniards, and betrayed the intentions of the Engliſh. Preparations were made in that iſland to receive them; and the Engliſh fleet, notwithſtanding the brave aſſault, which they made on the enemy, was repulſed with loſs. Hawkins ſoon after died; and Drake purſued his courſe to to Nombre di Dios, on the iſthmus of Darien; where, having landed his men, he attempted to paſs forward to Panama, with a view of plundering that place, or, if he found ſuch a ſcheme practicable, of keeping and fortifying it. But he met not with the ſame facility, which had attended his firſt enterprizes in theſe parts. The Spaniards, taught by experience, had every where fortified the paſſes, and had ſtationed troops in the woods; who ſo infeſted the Engliſh by continual alarms and ſkirmiſhes, that they were obliged to return, without being able to effectuate any thing. Drake himſelf, from the intemperance of the climate, from the fatigues of his journey, and from the vexation of his diſappointment, was ſeized with a diſtemper, of

[k] Camden, p. 584.

which

CHAP. XLIII.

1597.

which he ſoon after died. Sir Thomas Baſkerville took the command of the fleet, which was in a very weak condition; and after having fought a battle near Cuba with a Spaniſh fleet, of which the event was not deciſive, he returned to England. The Spaniards ſuffered ſome loſs from this enterprize; but the Engliſh reaped no profit [l].

THE bad ſucceſs of this enterprize in the Indies made the Engliſh rather attempt the Spaniſh dominions in Europe, where, they heard, Philip was making great preparations for a new invaſion of England. A powerful fleet was equipped at Plymouth conſiſting of an hundred and ſeventy veſſels, ſeventeen of which were capital ſhips of war; the reſt tenders and ſmall veſſels: Twenty ſhips were added by the Hollanders. In this fleet there were computed to be ſix thouſand three hundred and ſixty ſoldiers, a thouſand volunteers, and ſix thouſand ſeven hundred and ſeventy-two ſeamen, beſide the Dutch. The land forces were commanded by the earl of Eſſex. The navy by lord Effingham, high admiral. Both theſe commanders had expended great ſums of their own in this armament: For ſuch was the ſpirit of Elizabeth's reign. The lord Thomas Howard, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Francis Vere, Sir George Carew, and Sir Coniers Clifford had commands in this expedition, and were named as a council to the general and admiral [m].

THE fleet ſet ſail on the firſt of June 1596; and meeting with a fair wind, bent their courſe to Cadiz, at which place, by ſealed orders delivered to all the captains, the general rendeſvous was appointed. They ſent before them ſome armed tenders, which intercepted every ſhip, that could carry intelligence to the enemy; and they themſelves were ſo fortunate when they came near Cadiz, as to take an Iriſh veſſel, by which they learned, that that port was full of mer-

[l] Monſon, p. 167. [m] Camden, p. 591.

chant

CHAP. XLIII.

1597.

chant ships of great value, and that the Spaniards lived in perfect security, without any apprehensions of an enemy. This intelligence much encouraged the English fleet, and gave them the prospect of a fortunate issue to the enterprize.

AFTER a fruitless attempt to land at St. Sebastians on the western side of the island of Cadiz; it was, upon deliberation, resolved by the council of war to attack the ships and gallies in the bay. This attempt was deemed very rash; and the lord admiral himself, who was cautious in his temper, had entertained great scruples with regard to it: But Essex strenuously urged the enterprize; and when he found the resolution at last taken, he threw his hat into the sea, and gave symptoms of the most extravagant joy. He felt, however, a great mortification, when Effingham informed him, that the Queen, who was anxious for his safety, and who dreaded the effects of his youthful ardour, had secretly given orders, that he should not be permitted to command the van in the attack [n]. That duty was performed by Sir Walter Raleigh and the lord Thomas Howard; but Essex no sooner came within reach of the enemy, than he forgot the promise which the admiral had exacted of him to keep in the midst of the fleet; He broke thro' and pressed forward into the thickest of the fire. Emulation for glory, avidity of plunder, animosity against the Spaniards proved incentives to every one; and the enemy were soon obliged to slip anchor, and retreat farther into the bay, where they ran many of their ships aground. Essex then landed his men at the fort of Puntal; and immediately marched to the attack of Cadiz, which the impetuous valour of the English soon carried sword in hand. The generosity of Essex, which was not inferior to his valour, made him stop the slaughter, and treat his prisoners with the greatest humanity, and even affabili-

[n] Monson, p. 196.

ty

1597.

ty and kindneſs. The Engliſh made rich plunder in the city; but miſſed of a much richer by the reſolution, which the duke of Medina, the Spaniſh admiral, took, of ſetting fire to the ſhips, in order to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy. It was computed, that the loſs, which the Spaniards ſuſtained in this enterprize, amounted to twenty millions of ducats [o]; beſides the indignity, which that proud and ambitious people received, from the taking one of their chief cities, and deſtroying in their harbour a fleet of ſuch force and value.

Essex, all on fire for glory, regarded this great ſucceſs only as a ſtep to future atchievements: He inſiſted on the keeping poſſeſſion of Cadiz, and he undertook with four hundred men and three months proviſions, to defend the place till ſuccours ſhould arrive from England. But all the other ſeamen and ſoldiers were ſatisfied with the honour which they had acquired; and were impatient to return home, in order to ſecure their plunder. Every other propoſal of Eſſex to annoy the enemy, met with a like reception; his ſcheme for intercepting the carracks at the Azores, for aſſaulting the Groyne, for taking St. Andero, and St. Sebaſtian: And the Engliſh, finding ſo great difficulty to drag this impatient warrior from the enemy, at laſt left him on the Spaniſh coaſt, attended with very few ſhips. He complained much to the Queen, of their want of ſpirit in this enterprize; nor was ſhe pleaſed, that they had returned without attempting to intercept the Indian fleet [p]; but the great ſucceſs in the enterprize on Cadiz, had covered all their miſcarriages: And that princeſs, tho' ſhe admired the lofty genius of Eſſex, could not forbear expreſſing an eſteem for the other officers [q]. The admiral was created earl of Nottingham; and his promotion gave great diſguſt to Eſſex [r]. In the pre-

[o] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 97. [p] Ibid. p. 121.
[q] Camden, p. 593. [r] Sydney Papers, vol. II. 77.

amble

CHAP. XLIII. 1597.

amble of the patent it was ſaid, that the new dignity was conferred on him, on account of his good ſervices in taking Cadiz, and deſtroying the Spaniſh ſhips; a merit which Eſſex pretended to belong ſolely to himſelf: And he offered to maintain this plea by ſingle combat againſt the earl of Nottingham, or his ſons, or any of his kindred.

THE atchievements in the ſubſequent year proved not ſo fortunate; but, as the Indian fleet very narrowly eſcaped the Engliſh, Philip had ſtill reaſon to ſee the great hazard and diſadvantage of that war in which he was engaged, and the ſuperiority which the Engliſh, by their naval power, and their ſituation, had acquired over him. The Queen, having received intelligence, that the Spaniards, tho' their fleets were ſo much ſhattered and deſtroyed, by the expedition at Cadiz, were preparing a ſquadron at Ferrol and the Groyne, and were marching troops thither, with a view of making an invaſion on Ireland, was reſolved to prevent their enterprize, and to deſtroy the ſhipping in theſe harbours. She prepared a large fleet of a hundred and twenty ſail, of which ſeventeen were her own ſhips, forty-three were ſmaller veſſels, and the reſt tenders and victuallers: She embarked on board this fleet five thouſand new-levied ſoldiers, and added a thouſand veteran troops, whom Sir Francis Vere brought from the Netherlands. The earl of Eſſex, commander in chief, both of the land and ſea forces, was at the head of one ſquadron: Lord Thomas Howard was appointed vice-admiral of another; Sir Walter Raleigh of the third: Lord Mountjoy commanded the land forces under Eſſex: Vere was appointed marſhal: Sir George Carew lieutenant of the ordnance, and Sir Chriſtopher Blount firſt colonel. The earls of Rutland and Southampton, the lords Grey, Cromwel, and Rich, with ſeveral other perſons of diſtinction, attended as volunteers. Eſſex declared his reſolution, either to deſtroy the new Armada,

1597.

mada, which threatned England, or to perish in the attempt.

THIS powerful fleet set sail from Plymouth; but were no sooner out of the harbour than they met with a furious storm, which shattered and dispersed them; and before they could be refitted, Essex found, that their provisions were so far spent, that it would not be safe to carry so numerous an army along with him. He dismissed, therefore, all the soldiers, except the thousand veterans under Vere; and laying aside all thoughts of attacking Ferrol or the Groyne, he confined the object of his expedition to the intercepting the Indian fleet; which had at first been considered only as the second enterprize which he was to attempt. 9th July.

THE Indian fleet, in that age, by reason of the imperfection of navigation, had a stated course, as well as season, both in their going out and in their return; and there were certain islands, at which, as at fixed stages, they always touched, and where they took in water and provisions. The Azores, being one of these places where, about this time, the fleet was expected, Essex bent his course thither; and he informed Raleigh, that he, on his arrival, intended to attack Fayal, one of these islands. By some accident the squadrons were separated; and Raleigh arriving first before Fayal, thought it more prudent, after waiting some time for the general, to begin the attack alone, lest the inhabitants should, by farther delay, have leizure to make greater preparations for their defence. He succeeded in the enterprize; but Essex, jealous of Raleigh, expressed great displeasure at this conduct, and construed it as an intention of robbing the general of the glory which attended that action: He cashiered, therefore, Sydney, Bret, Berry, and others, who had concurred in the attempt; and would have proceeded to inflict the same punishment on Raleigh himself, had not lord Thomas Howard interposed with his good offices, and persuaded

CHAP. XLII.

1597. perſuaded Raleigh, tho' very high-ſpirited, to make ſubmiſſions to the general. Eſſex, who was placable, as well as haſty and paſſionate, was ſoon appeaſed, and both received Raleigh into favour, and reſtored the other officers to their commands[s]. This incident, however, tho' the quarrel was ſeemingly accommodated, laid the firſt foundation of that violent animoſity which afterwards took place between theſe two gallant commanders.

ESSEX made next a diſpoſition proper for intercepting the Indian galleons; and Sir William Monſon, whoſe ſtation was the moſt remote of the fleet, having fallen in with them, made the ſignals which had been agreed on. That able officer here aſcribes Eſſex's failure of ſucceſs, when he was ſo near attaining ſo mighty an advantage, to his want of experience in ſeamanſhip; and the account which he gives of the errors committed by that nobleman, appears very reaſonable as well as candid[t]. The Spaniſh fleet, finding that their enemy was upon them, made all the ſail poſſible to the Terceras, and got into the ſafe and well fortified harbour of Angra, before the Engliſh fleet could overtake them. Eſſex intercepted only three ſhips; which, however, were ſo rich as to repay all the charges of the expedition.

THE cauſes of this miſcarriage of Eſſex's enterprize, were much canvaſſed in England, upon the return of the fleet; and tho' the courtiers took party differently, as they affected either Eſſex or Raleigh, the people, in general, who bore an extreme affection to the gallantry, ſpirit, and generoſity of the former, were inclined to juſtify every circumſtance of his conduct. The Queen, who loved the one as much as ſhe eſteemed the other, maintained a kind of neutrality, and endeavoured to ſhare her favours with an impartial hand between the parties. Sir Robert Cecil, ſecond ſon to lord Bur-

[s] Monſon, p. 173. [t] Ibid. p. 174.

leigh,

leigh, was a courtier of very promiſing hopes, much connected with Raleigh; and ſhe made him ſecretary of ſtate, inſtead of Sir Thomas Bodley, whom Eſſex recommended for that office. But not to diſguſt Eſſex by this preference, ſhe promoted him to the dignity of earl marſhal of England, an office which had been vacant ever ſince the death of the earl of Shrewſbury. Eſſex might perceive from this conduct, that ſhe never intended to give him the entire aſcendant over his rivals, and might learn thence the neceſſity of moderation and caution. But his temper was too high for ſubmiſſion; his behaviour too open and candid to practice the arts of a court; and his free ſallies, while they rendered him only more amiable in the eyes of good judges, gave his enemies many advantages againſt him. CHAP. XLII. 1597.

THE war with Spain, tho' ſucceſsful, having exhauſted the Queen's treaſure, ſhe was obliged to aſſemble a Parliament; where Yelverton, a lawyer, was choſen ſpeaker of the houſe of commons[u]. Elizabeth took 24th October.

[u] It is uſual for the ſpeaker to diſqualify himſelf for the office; but the reaſons employed by this ſpeaker are ſo ſingular, that they may be worth tranſcribing. "My eſtate," ſaid he, "is nothing correſpondent for the "maintenance of this dignity: For my father dying left me a younger "brother; and nothing to me but my bare annuity. Then growing to "man's eſtate and ſome ſmall practice of the law, I took a wife, by whom "I have had many children; the keeping of us all being a great impoveriſh-"ing to my eſtate, and the daily living of us all nothing but my daily in-"duſtry. Neither from my perſon nor my nature doth this choice ariſe: "For he that ſupplieth this place ought to be a man big and comely, ſtate-"ly, and well-ſpoken, his voice great, his carriage majeſtical, his nature "haughty, and his purſe plentiful and heavy: But contrarily, the ſtature "of my body is ſmall, myſelf not ſo well ſpoken, my voice low, my car-"riage lawyer-like, and of the common faſhion, my nature ſoft and baſh-"ful, my purſe, thin, light, and never yet plentiful. ——— If *Demoſthe-*"*nes*, being ſo learned and eloquent as he was, one whom none ſurpaſſed, "trembled to ſpeak before *Phocion* at *Athens*; how much more ſhall I, "being unlearned and unſkilful to ſupply the place of dignity, charge, and "trouble, to ſpeak before ſo many *Phocions* as here be? Yea, which is "the greateſt, before the unſpeakable majeſty and ſacred perſonage of our "dread and dear ſovereign: The terror of whoſe countenance will appal "and abaſe even the ſtouteſt hearts; yea, whoſe very name will pull down

care,

CHAP. XLIII.

1597. care, by the mouth of Sir Thomas Egerton, lord keeper, to inform this assembly of the necessity of a supply. She said, that the wars formerly waged in Europe, had commonly been conducted by the parties without farther view than to gain a few towns, or at most a province, from each other; but the object of the present hostilities, on the part of Spain, was no other than utterly to bereave England of her religion, her liberty, and her independance: That these blessings, however, she had hitherto been enabled to preserve, in spite of the devil, the pope, and the Spanish tyrant, and all the mischievous designs of all her enemies: That in this contest she had disbursed a sum treble to all the parliamentary supplies granted her; and besides expending her ordinary revenues, had been obliged to sell many of the crown lands: And that she could not doubt, but her subjects, in a cause where their own honour and interest were so deeply concerned, would willingly contribute to such moderate taxations as would be found necessary for their common defence[x]. The commons granted her three subsidies and six fifteenths; the same supply which had been given four years before, but which had then appeared so unusual, that they had voted it should never afterwards be regarded as a precedent.

THE commons, this session, ventured to engage in two controversies about forms with the house of peers; a prelude to those encroachments which, as they assumed more courage, they afterwards made upon the prerogatives of the crown. They complained, that the lords failed in civility to them, by receiving their messages sitting with their hats on; and that the keeper returned an answer in the same negligent posture:

" the greatest courage. For how mightily do the estate and name of a " prince deject the haughtiest stomach even of their greatest subjects!" D'Ewes, p. 459.

[x] D'Ewes, p. 525, 527. Townsend, p. 79.

But

1597.

But the upper house proved, to their full satisfaction, that they were not intitled by custom, and the usage of Parliament, to any more respect [y]. Some amendments had been made by the lords, to a bill sent up by the commons; and these amendments were wrote on parchment, and returned with the bill to the commons. The lower house took umbrage at the novelty: They pretended, that these amendments ought to have been wrote on paper, not on parchment; and they complained of this innovation to the peers. The peers replied, that they expected not such a frivolous objection from the gravity of the house; and that it was not material, whether the amendments were wrote on parchment or on paper, nor whether the paper was white, black, or brown. The commons were offended with this reply, which seemed to maintain a mockery of them; and they complained of it, tho' without obtaining any satisfaction [z].

An application was made, by way of petition, to the Queen, from the lower house, against monopolies; an abuse which had risen to an enormous height; and they received a gracious, tho' a general answer; for which they returned their thankful acknowledgements [a]. But not to give them too great encouragement in such applications, she told them, in the speech which she delivered at their dissolution, "That with "regard to these patents, she hoped, that her dutiful "and loving subjects would not take away her prero-"gative, which is the chief flower in her garden, and "the principal and head pearl in her crown and dia-"dem; but that they would rather leave these matters "to her disposal [b]." The commons also took notice, this session, of some transactions in the court of high

[y] D'Ewes, p. 539, 540, 580, 585. Townsend, p. 93, 94, 95.
[z] D'Ewes, p. 576, 577.
[a] Ibid. p. 570, 573.
[b] Ibid. p. 547.

CHAP. XLII.

1598.

commiſſion; but not till they had previouſly received permiſſion from her majeſty to that purpoſe [c].

ELIZABETH had reaſon to foreſee, that parliamentary ſupplies would now become more neceſſary to her than ever; and that the chief burthen of the war with Spain would thenceforth lie on England. Henry had received an overture for a peace with Philip; but before he would proceed to a negociation, he gave intelligence of it to his allies the Queen and the States; that, if poſſible, a general pacification might be made by common conſent and agreement. Theſe two powers ſent ambaſſadors to France, in order to remonſtrate againſt peace with Spain; the Queen, Sir Robert Cecil, and Henry Herbert; the States, Juſtin Naſſau, and John Barnevelt. Henry ſaid to theſe miniſters, that his moſt early education had been amidſt war and danger, and he had paſſed the whole courſe of his life either in arms or in military preparations: That after the proofs which he had given of his alacrity in the field, no one could doubt, but he would willingly, for his part, have continued in a courſe of life, to which he was now habituated, till the common enemy was reduced to ſuch a condition as no longer to give umbrage either to him or to his allies: That no private intereſt of his own, not even that of his people, nothing but the moſt inevitable neceſſity, could ever induce him to think of a ſeparate peace with Philip, or make him embrace meaſures which were not entirely formed with the approbation of all his confederates: That his kingdom, torne with the convulſions and civil wars of near half a century, required ſome interval of repoſe, ere it could reach a condition in which it might ſuſtain itſelf, much more ſupport its allies: That after the minds of his ſubjects were compoſed to tranquillity and accuſtomed to obedience, after his finances were brought into order,

[c] D'Ewes, p. 557, 558.

and

and after agriculture and the arts were reſtored, France, inſtead of being a burthen, as at preſent, to her confederates, would be able to lend them effectual ſuccours, and amply to repay them all the aſſiſtance which ſhe had received during her calamities: And that if the ambition of Spain would not at preſent grant them ſuch terms as they ſhould think reaſonable, he hoped, that, in a little time, he ſhould attain ſuch a ſituation as would enable him to mediate more effectually, and with more deciſive authority, in their behalf.

THE ambaſſadors were ſenſible, that theſe reaſons were not feigned; and they therefore remonſtrated with the leſs vehemence againſt the meaſures which, they ſaw, Henry was determined to purſue. The States knew, that that monarch was intereſted never to permit their final ruin; and having received private aſſurances, that he would ſtill, notwithſtanding the peace, give them aſſiſtance both of men and money, they were well pleaſed to remain on terms of amity with him. His greateſt concern was to give ſatisfaction to Elizabeth for this breach of treaty. He had a cordial eſteem for that princeſs, a ſympathy of manners, and a gratitude for the extraordinary favours which he had received from her, during his greateſt difficulties: And he uſed every expedient to apologize and atone for that meaſure, which neceſſity extorted from him. But as Spain refuſed to treat with the Dutch as a free ſtate, and Elizabeth would not negotiate without her ally, Henry found himſelf obliged to conclude, at Vervins, a ſeparate peace, by which he recovered poſſeſſion of all the places ſeized by Spain during the courſe of the civil wars, and procured himſelf leizure to attend to the domeſtic ſettlement of his kingdom. His capacity for the arts of peace were not inferior to his military talents; and, in a little time, by his frugality, order, and wiſe government, he raiſed France, from the deſolation and miſery in which ſhe was at preſent involved, to a

Peace of Vervins.

CHAP. XLIII.

more flouriſhing condition than ſhe had ever before enjoyed.

1598. THE Queen knew, that it would be alſo in her power, whenever ſhe pleaſed, to conclude the war on equitable terms, and that Philip, having no pretenſions upon her, would be glad to free himſelf from an enemy who had foiled him in every conteſt, and who had it ſtill ſo much in her power to make him feel the weight of her arms. Some of her wiſeſt counſellors, particularly the lord treaſurer, adviſed her to embrace pacific meaſures; and ſet before her the advantages of tranquillity, ſecurity, and frugality, as more conſiderable than any ſucceſs which could attend the greateſt victories. But that high-ſpirited princeſs, though ſhe was at firſt averſe to the war, ſeemed now to have attained ſuch an aſcendant over the enemy, that ſhe was unwilling to ſtop the courſe of her proſperous fortune. She conſidered, that her ſituation, and her paſt victories, had given her entire ſecurity againſt any dangerous invaſion; and the war muſt henceforth be conducted by ſudden enterprizes, and naval expeditions, in which ſhe poſſeſſed an undoubted ſuperiority: That the weak condition of Philip in the Indies opened to her the view of the moſt deſirable advantages; and the yearly return of his treaſure by ſea, afforded a continual proſpect of important, though more temporary, ſucceſſes: That, after his peace with France, if ſhe alſo ſhould conſent to an accommodation, he would be able to turn all his force againſt the revolted provinces of the Netherlands, which, though they had ſurprizingly increaſed their power by commerce and good government, were ſtill unable, if not ſupported by their confederates, to maintain the war againſt ſo mighty a monarchy: And that as her defence of that commonwealth was the original ground of the quarrel, it was unſafe, as well as diſhonourable, to abandon their

their cauſe, till ſhe had placed them in a ſtate of greater ſecurity. CHAP. XLIII. 1598.

THESE reaſons were frequently inculcated on her by the earl of Eſſex, whoſe paſſion for glory, as well as his military talents, made him earneſtly deſire the continuance of that war from which he expected to reap ſo much advantage and diſtinction. The rivalſhip between this nobleman and lord Burleigh, made each of them inſiſt the more ſtrenuouſly on his own councils; and as Eſſex's perſon was agreeable to the Queen, as well as his advice conformable to her inclinations, the favourite ſeemed daily to acquire an aſcendant over the miniſter. Had he been endowed with caution and ſelf-command, equal to his ſhining qualities, he would have ſo riveted himſelf in the Queen's confidence, that none of his enemies had ever been able to impeach his credit: But his lofty ſpirit could ill ſubmit to that implicit deference which her temper required, and which ſhe had ever been accuſtomed to receive from all her ſubjects. Being once engaged in a diſpute with her about the choice of a governor for Ireland, he was ſo heated in the argument, that he entirely forgot the rules both of duty and civility; and turned his back upon her in a contemptuous manner. Her anger, which was naturally prompt and violent, roſe at this provocation; and ſhe inſtantly gave him a box on the the ear; adding a paſſionate expreſſion, ſuited to his impertinence. Inſtead of recollecting himſelf, and making the ſubmiſſions due to her ſex and ſtation, he clapped his hand to his ſword, and ſwore he would not bear ſuch uſage, were it from Henry the eighth himſelf; and, in a great paſſion, he immediately withdrew from court. Egerton, the chancellor, who loved Eſſex, exhorted him to repair his indiſcretion by proper acknowlegements; and entreated him not to give that triumph to his enemies, that affliction to his friends, The Earl of Eſſex.

CHAP. XLII.

1598.

which muſt enſue by his ſupporting a conteſt with his ſovereign, and deſerting the ſervice of his country: But Eſſex was deeply ſtung with the diſhonour which he had received; and ſeemed to think, that an inſult, which might be pardoned a woman, was become a mortal affront when it came from his ſovereign. "If the vileſt of all indignities," ſaid he, "is done me, "does religion enforce me to ſue for pardon? Doth "God require it? Is it impiety not to do it? Why? "Cannot princes err? Cannot ſubjects receive wrong? "Is an earthly power infinite? Pardon me, my lord, "I can never ſubſcribe to theſe principles. Let Solo- "mon's fool laugh when he is ſtricken; let thoſe that "mean to make their profit of princes, ſhew no ſenſe "of princes' injuries: Let them acknowlege an infinite "abſoluteneſs on earth, that do not believe an abſo- "luteInfiniteneſs in heaven." (alluding, probably, to the character and conduct of Sir Walter Raleigh, who lay under the reproach of impiety) "As for me," continued he, "I have received wrong, I feel it: My "cauſe is good, I know it; and whatſoever happens, "all the powers on earth can never exert more "ſtrength and conſtancy in oppreſſing, than I can "ſhew in ſuffering every thing that can or ſhall be "impoſed upon me. Your lordſhip, in the begin- "ning of your letter, makes me a player, and your- "ſelf a looker on: And me a player of my own "game, ſo you may ſee more than I: But give me "leave to tell you, that ſince you do but ſee, and I "do ſuffer, I muſt of neceſſity feel more than you [d]."

[d] Cabbala, p. 234. Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 386. Speed, p. 877. The whole letter is ſo curious and ſo ſpirited, that the reader may not be diſpleaſed to read it. "My very good lord; Tho' there is not that man "this day living, whom I would ſooner make judge of any queſtion that "might concern me than yourſelf, yet you muſt give me leave to tell you, "that in ſome caſes I muſt appeal from all earthly judges: And if in any, "then ſurely in this, when the higheſt judge on earth has impoſed on me

THIS

CHAP. XLIII. 1598.

THIS ſpirited letter was ſhown by Eſſex to his friends; and they were ſo imprudent as to diſperſe

" the heavieſt puniſhment without trial or hearing. Since then I muſt " either anſwer your lordſhip's argument, or elſe forſake mine own juſt " defence, I will force mine aching head to do me ſervice for an hour. " I muſt firſt deny my diſcontent, which was forced, to be an humourous " diſcontent; and that it was unſeaſonable or is of ſo long continuing, " your lordſhip ſhould rather condole with me than expoſtulate: Natural " ſeaſons are expected here below; but violent and unreaſonable ſtorms " come from above: There is no tempeſt equal to the paſſionate indig- " nation of a prince; nor yet at any time ſo unſeaſonable as when it " lighteth on thoſe that might expect a harveſt of their careful and pain- " ful labours. He that is once wounded, muſt needs feel ſmart, till his " hurt is cured, or the part hurt become ſenſeleſs: But cure I expect none, " her majeſty's heart being obdurate againſt me; and be without ſenſe I " cannot, being of fleſh and blood. But, ſay you, I may aim at the " end: I do more than aim; for I ſee an end of all my fortunes, I have " ſet an end to all my deſires. In this courſe do I any thing for my " enemies? When I was at court, I found them abſolute; and, therefore, " I had rather they ſhould triumph alone, than have me attendant upon " their chariots. Or do I leave my friends? When I was a courtier, I " could yield them no fruit of my love unto them; and now, that I " am a hermit, they ſhall bear no envy for their love towards me. Or do " I forſake myſelf, becauſe I do enjoy myſelf? Or do I overthrow my " fortunes, becauſe I build not a fortune of paper walls, which every " puff of wind bloweth down? Or do I ruinate mine honour, becauſe " I leave following the purſuit, or wearing the falſe badge or mark of " the ſhadow of honour? Do I give courage or comfort to the foreign foe, " becauſe I reſerve myſelf to encounter with him? Or becauſe I keep my " heart from buſineſs, tho' I cannot keep my fortune from declining? No, " no, my good lord, I give every one of theſe conſiderations its due " weight; and the more I weigh them, the more I find myſelf juſtified " from offending in any of them. As for the two laſt objections, that I " forſake my country, when it hath moſt need of me, and fail in that " indiſſoluble duty which I owe to my ſovereign; I anſwer, that if my " country had at this time any need of my public ſervice, her majeſty, " that governeth it, would not have driven me to a private life. I am " tied to my country by two bonds; one public, to diſcharge carefully " and induſtriouſly that truſt which is committed to me; the other pri- " vate, to ſacrifice for it my life and carcaſe, which hath been nouriſhed " in it. Of the firſt I am free, being diſmiſſed, diſcharged, and diſ- " abled by her majeſty: Of the other, nothing can free me but death; " and therefore no occaſion of my performance ſhall ſooner offer itſelf " but I ſhall meet it half way. The indiſſoluble duty which I owe unto " her majeſty, is only the duty of allegiance, which I never have, nor ever " can fail in: The duty of attendance, is no indiſſoluble duty. I owe her

CHAP. XLIII.

1598.

copies of it: Yet notwithſtanding this additional provocation, the Queen's partiality was ſo prevalent, that ſhe reinſtated him in his former favour; and her kindneſs to him appeared rather to have acquired new force from that ſhort interruption of anger and reſentment. The death of lord Burleigh, his antagoniſt, which happened about this time, ſeemed to enſure him a conſtant poſſeſſion of the Queen's confidence; and nothing indeed but his own indiſcretion could thenceforth have ſhaken his well-eſtabliſhed credit. Lord Burleigh died in an advanced age; and by a rare fortune, was equally regretted by his ſovereign and the people. He had riſen gradually, from ſmall beginnings, by the mere force of merit; and though his authority was never entirely abſolute, or uncontrouled with the Queen, he was ſtill, during a courſe of near forty years, regarded as her principal miniſter. None of her other inclinations or affections could ever overcome her confidence in ſo uſeful a counſellor; and as he had had the generoſity or good ſenſe to pay aſſiduous court to her, during her ſiſter's reign, when it

4 Auguſt.

" majeſty the duty of an earl and of lord marſhal of England. I have been " content to do her majeſty the ſervice of a clerk; but I can never ſerve " her as a villain or a ſlave. But yet you ſay I muſt give way unto the " time. So I do; for now that I ſee the ſtorm come, I have put myſelf " into the harbour. *Seneca* ſaieth, we muſt give way to Fortune: I know " that Fortune is both blind and ſtrong, and therefore I go as far as I can " out of her way. You ſay, the remedy is not to ſtrive: I neither ſtrive " nor ſeek for remedy. But, you ſay, I muſt yield and ſubmit: I can " neither yield myſelf to be guilty, nor allow the imputation laid upon " me to be juſt: I owe ſo much to the Author of all truth, as I can " never yield truth to be falſehood, nor falſehood to be truth. Have I " given cauſe, you aſk; and yet take a ſcandal when I have done? No: " I gave no cauſe, not ſo much as *Fimbria's* complaint againſt me; for I " did *totum telum corpore recipere:* Receive the whole ſword into my body. " I patiently bear all, and ſenſibly feel all that I then received, when this " ſcandal was given me. Nay more, when the vileſt of all indignities are " done unto me," &c. This noble letter, Bacon afterwards, in pleading againſt Eſſex, called bold and preſumptuous, and derogatory to her majeſty. Birch's Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 388.

Was

was dangerous to appear her friend, she thought herself bound in gratitude, when she mounted the throne, to persevere in her attachments to him. He seems not to have possessed any shining talents of address, eloquence, or imagination; and was chiefly distinguished by solidity of understanding, probity of manners, and indefatigable application in business: Virtues, which, if they do not always enable a man to rise to high stations, do certainly qualify him best for filling them. Of all the Queen's ministers he was the only one who left a considerable fortune to his posterity; a fortune not acquired by rapine or oppression, but gained by the regular profits of his offices, and preserved by frugality. CHAP. XLIII. 1598.

THE last act of this able minister was the concluding a new treaty with the Dutch; who, after being, in some measure, deserted by the King of France, were glad to preserve the Queen's alliance, by submitting to any terms which she pleased to require of them. The debt which they owed the Queen, was now fixed at eight hundred thousand pounds; Of this sum they agreed to pay, during the war, thirty thousand pounds a year; and these payments were to continue till four hundred thousand pounds of the debt should be extinguished. They engaged also, during the time that England should continue the war with Spain, to pay the garrison of the cautionary towns. They stipulated, that, if Spain should invade England, or the Isle of Wight, or Jersey, or Scilly, they should assist her with a body of five thousand foot, and five hundred horse; and that in case she undertook any naval armament against Spain, they should join an equal number of ships to hers [e]. By this treaty the Queen was eased of an annual charge of an hundred and twenty thousand pounds. 8 August.

[e] Rymer, vol. XVI. p. 340.

SOON

CHAP. XLIII.

1598.

Soon after the death of Burleigh, the Queen, who regreted extremely the loſs of ſo wiſe and faithful a miniſter, was informed of the death of her capital enemy, Philip the ſecond; who, after languiſhing under many infirmities, expired in an advanced age at Madrid. This haughty prince, deſirous of an accommodation with his revolted ſubjects in the Netherlands, but diſdaining to make in his own name the conceſſions requiſite for that purpoſe, had transferred to his daughter, married to the archduke Albert, the property of the Low Country provinces; but as it was not expected, that that princeſs could have any poſterity, and as the reverſion, in caſe of the failure of her iſſue, was ſtill reſerved to the crown of Spain, the States conſidered this deed only as the change of a name, and perſiſted with equal obſtinacy in their reſiſtance to the Spaniſh arms. The other ſtates alſo of Europe made no diſtinction between the courts of Bruſſels and Madrid; and the ſecret oppoſition of France, as well as the avowed force of England, continued to operate againſt the progreſs of Albert, as it had done againſt that of Philip.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

State of Ireland.—Tyrone's rebellion.—Eſſex ſent over to Ireland.—His ill ſucceſs.—Returns to England.—Is diſgraced.—His intrigues.—His inſurrection.—His trial and execution.—French affairs.—Mountjoy's ſucceſs in Ireland.—Defeat of the Spaniards and Iriſh.—A Parliament.—Tyrone's ſubmiſſion.—Queen's ſickneſs.—And death.—And character.—Government, manners, commerce, arts, and learning.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

THO' the dominion of the Engliſh over Ireland had been eſtabliſhed above four centuries, it may ſafely be affirmed, that their authority had hitherto been little more than nominal. The Iriſh princes and nobles, divided among themſelves, readily paid the exterior marks of obeiſance to a power which they were not able to reſiſt; but, as no durable force was ever kept on foot to retain them to their duty, they relapſed ſtill into their former ſtate of independance. Too weak to introduce order and obedience among the rude inhabitants, the Engliſh authority was yet ſufficient to check the growth of any enterprizing genius among the natives: And tho' it could beſtow no true form of civil government, it was able to prevent the riſe of any ſuch form, from the internal combination or policy of the Iriſh [a].

MOST of the Engliſh inſtitutions likewiſe, by which that iſland was governed, were to the laſt degree abſurd, and ſuch as no ſtate before had ever thought of, for the preſerving dominion over its conquered provinces.

[a] Sir J. Davis, p. 5, 6, 7, &c.

THE

CHAP. XLIV.

1592.

THE Engliſh nation, all on fire for the project of ſubduing France, a project, whoſe ſucceſs was the moſt improbable, and would to them have proved the moſt pernicious; neglected all other enterprizes, to which their ſituation ſo ſtrongly invited them, and which, in time, would have brought them an acceſſion of riches, grandeur, and ſecurity. The ſmall army which they maintained in Ireland, they never ſupplied regularly with pay; and as no money could be levied from the iſland, which poſſeſſed none, they gave their ſoldiers the privilege of free quarter upon the natives. Rapine and inſolence inflamed the hatred, which prevailed between the conquerors and the conquered: Want of ſecurity among the Iriſh, introducing deſpair, nouriſhed ſtill farther the ſloth, ſo natural to that uncultivated people.

BUT the Engliſh carried farther their ill-judged tyranny. Inſtead of inviting the Iriſh, to adopt the more civilized cuſtoms of their conquerors, they even refuſed, though earneſtly ſollicited, to communicate to them the privilege of their laws, and every where marked them out as aliens and as enemies. Thrown out of the protection of juſtice, the natives could find no ſecurity but in force; and flying the neighbourhood of cities, which they could not approach with ſafety, they ſheltered themſelves in their marſhes and foreſts from the inſolence of their inhuman maſters. Being treated like wild beaſts, they became ſuch; and joining the ardor of revenge to their yet untamed barbarity, they grew every day more intractable and dangerous [b].

AS the Engliſh princes deemed the conqueſt of the diſperſed Iriſh to be more the object of time and patience than the ſource of military glory, they willingly delegated that office to private adventurers, who in-

[b] Sir J. Davis, p. 102, 103, &c.

liſting

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

liſting ſoldiers at their own charge, conquered provinces of that iſland, which they converted to their own profit. Separate juriſdictions and principalities were eſtabliſhed by theſe lordly conquerors: The power of peace and war was aſſumed: Military law was exerciſed over the Iriſh, whom they ſubdued, and, by degrees, over the Engliſh, by whoſe aſſiſtance they conquered: And, after their dominion had once taken root, deeming the Engliſh inſtitutions leſs favourable to barbarous empire, they degenerated into mere Iriſh, and abandoned the garb, language, manners and laws of their native country [c].

By all this imprudent conduct of England, the natives of its dependant ſtate, remained ſtill in that abject condition, into which the northern and weſtern parts of Europe were ſunk, before they received civility and ſlavery from the refined policy and irreſiſtible bravery of Rome. Even at the end of the ſixteenth century, when every chriſtian nation was cultivating with ardour every civil art of life, that iſland, lying in a temperate climate, enjoying a fertile ſoil, acceſſible in its ſituation, poſſeſſed of innumerable harbours, was ſtill, notwithſtanding theſe advantages, inhabited by a people, whoſe cuſtoms and manners approached nearer thoſe of ſavages than of barbarians.

As the brutality and ignorance of the Iriſh was extreme, they were ſunk below the reach of that curioſity and love of novelty, by which every other people in Europe had been ſeized at the beginning of that century, and which had engaged them in innovations and religious diſputes, with which they were ſtill ſo violently agitated. The antient ſuperſtition, the practiſes and obſervances of their fathers, mingled and polluted with many wild opinions, ſtill maintained an unſhaken empire over them; and the example alone of the

[c] Sir J. Davis, p. 133, 134, &c.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

English was sufficient to render the reformation odious to the prejudiced and discontented Irish. The old opposition of manners, laws, and interest, was now inflamed by religious antipathy; and the subduing and civilizing that country seemed to become every day more difficult and more impracticable.

The animosity against the English was carried so far by the Irish, that, in an insurrection, raised by two sons of the earl of Clanricard, they put to the sword all the inhabitants of the town of Athenry, tho' Irish; because they began to conform themselves to English customs and institutions, and had embraced a more cultivated and civilized form of life, than had been practised by their barbarous ancestors [d].

The usual revenue of Ireland amounted only to six thousand pounds a year [e]: The Queen, though with much repining [f], commonly added twenty thousand more, which she remitted from England: And with this small revenue, a body of one thousand men was supported, which, in extraordinary emergencies was augmented to two thousand [g]. No wonder that a force, so disproportioned to the occasion, instead of subduing a mutinous kingdom, served rather to provoke the natives, and to excite those frequent insurrections and rebellions, which still farther inflamed the animosity between the two nations, and encreased the barbarity and disorders, to which the Irish were naturally subject.

In 1560, Shan O'Neale, or the great O'Neale, as the Irish called him, because head of that potent clan, raised a rebellion in Ulster; and after some skirmishes, was received into favour, upon his submission, and his promise of a more dutiful behaviour for the future [h].

[d] Camden, p. 457. [e] Memoirs of the Sidneys, vol. I. p. 86.
[f] Cox, p. 342. Sydney, vol. I. p. 85, 200. [g] Camden, p. 542.
Sydney, vol I. p. 65, 109, 183, 184. [h] Camden, p. 385, 391.

This

This impunity tempted him to undertake a new insurrection in 1567; but being pushed by Sir Henry Sidney, lord deputy, he retreated into Clandeboy, and rather than submit to the English, he put himself into the hands of some Scots islanders, who commonly infested those parts by their incursions. The Scots, who retained a quarrel against him on account of former injuries, violated the laws of hospitality, and murdered him in a festival, to which they had invited him. He was a man equally noted for his pride, his violences, his debaucheries, and his hatred of the English nation. He is said to have put some of his followers to death, because they endeavoured to introduce the use of bread after the English fashion [i]. Tho' so violent an enemy to luxury, he was extremely addicted to riot; and was accustomed, after his intemperance had thrown him into a fever, to plunge his body into mire, that he might allay the flame, which he had raised by former excesses [k]. Such was the life led by this haughty barbarian, who scorned the title of earl of Tyrone, which Elizabeth intended to have restored to him, and who assumed the rank and appellation of King of Ulster. He used also to say, that tho' the Queen was his sovereign lady, he never made peace with her but at her seeking [l].

Sir Henry Sidney was one of the wisest and most active governors whom Ireland had enjoyed for several reigns [m]; and he possessed his authority eleven years; during which time, he struggled with many difficulties, and made some progress in repressing those disorders, which had become inveterate among that people. The earl of Desmond, in 1569, gave him disturbance from the hereditary animosity which prevailed between that nobleman and the earl of Ormond, who was descended

[i] Camden, p. 409. [k] Ibid. p. 409. Cox, p. 324. [l] Ibid. p. 321. [m] Ibid. p. 350.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

Engliſh was ſufficient to render the reformation odious to the prejudiced and diſcontented Iriſh. The old oppoſition of manners, laws, and intereſt, was now inflamed by religious antipathy; and the ſubduing and civilizing that country ſeemed to become every day more difficult and more impracticable.

THE animoſity againſt the Engliſh was carried ſo far by the Iriſh, that, in an inſurrection, raiſed by two ſons of the earl of Clanricard, they put to the ſword all the inhabitants of the town of Athenry, tho' Iriſh; becauſe they began to conform themſelves to Engliſh cuſtoms and inſtitutions, and had embraced a more cultivated and civilized form of life, than had been practiſed by their barbarous anceſtors [d].

THE uſual revenue of Ireland amounted only to ſix thouſand pounds a year [e]: The Queen, though with much repining [f], commonly added twenty thouſand more, which ſhe remitted from England: And with this ſmall revenue, a body of one thouſand men was ſupported, which, in extraordinary emergencies was angmented to two thouſand [g]. No wonder that a force, ſo diſproportioned to the occaſion, inſtead of ſubduing a mutinous kingdom, ſerved rather to provoke the natives, and to excite thoſe frequent inſurrections and rebellions, which ſtill farther inflamed the animoſity between the two nations, and encreaſed the barbarity and diſorders, to which the Iriſh were naturally ſubject.

IN 1560, Shan O'Neale, or the great O'Neale, as the Iriſh called him, becauſe head of that potent clan, raiſed a rebellion in Ulſter; and after ſome ſkirmiſhes, was received into favour, upon his ſubmiſſion, and his promiſe of a more dutiful behaviour for the future [h].

[d] Camden, p. 457. [e] Memoirs of the Sidneys, vol. I. p. 86.
[f] Cox, p. 342. Sydney, vol. I. p. 85, 200. [g] Camden, p. 542. Sydney, vol I. p. 65, 109, 183, 184. [h] Camden, p. 385, 391.

This

This impunity tempted him to undertake a new insurrection in 1567; but being pushed by Sir Henry Sidney, lord deputy, he retreated into Clandeboy, and rather than submit to the English, he put himself into the hands of some Scots islanders, who commonly infested those parts by their incursions. The Scots, who retained a quarrel against him on account of former injuries, violated the laws of hospitality, and murdered him in a festival, to which they had invited him. He was a man equally noted for his pride, his violences, his debaucheries, and his hatred of the English nation. He is said to have put some of his followers to death, because they endeavoured to introduce the use of bread after the English fashion [i]. Tho' so violent an enemy to luxury, he was extremely addicted to riot; and was accustomed, after his intemperance had thrown him into a fever, to plunge his body into mire, that he might allay the flame, which he had raised by former excesses [k]. Such was the life led by this haughty barbarian, who scorned the title of earl of Tyrone, which Elizabeth intended to have restored to him, and who assumed the rank and appellation of King of Ulster. He used also to say, that tho' the Queen was his sovereign lady, he never made peace with her but at her seeking [l].

Sir Henry Sidney was one of the wisest and most active governors whom Ireland had enjoyed for several reigns [m]; and he possessed his authority eleven years; during which time, he struggled with many difficulties, and made some progress in repressing those disorders, which had become inveterate among that people. The earl of Desmond, in 1569, gave him disturbance from the hereditary animosity which prevailed between that nobleman and the earl of Ormond, who was descended

i Camden, p. 409. k Ibid. p. 409. Cox, p. 324. l Ibid. p. 321. m Ibid. p. 350.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

Engliſh was ſufficient to render the reformation odious to the prejudiced and diſcontented Iriſh. The old oppoſition of manners, laws, and intereſt, was now inflamed by religious antipathy; and the ſubduing and civilizing that country ſeemed to become every day more difficult and more impracticable.

THE animoſity againſt the Engliſh was carried ſo far by the Iriſh, that, in an inſurrection, raiſed by two ſons of the earl of Clanricard, they put to the ſword all the inhabitants of the town of Athenry, tho' Iriſh; becauſe they began to conform themſelves to Engliſh cuſtoms and inſtitutions, and had embraced a more cultivated and civilized form of life, than had been practiſed by their barbarous anceſtors [d].

THE uſual revenue of Ireland amounted only to ſix thouſand pounds a year [e]: The Queen, though with much repining [f], commonly added twenty thouſand more, which ſhe remitted from England: And with this ſmall revenue, a body of one thouſand men was ſupported, which, in extraordinary emergencies was angmented to two thouſand [g]. No wonder that a force, ſo diſproportioned to the occaſion, inſtead of ſubduing a mutinous kingdom, ſerved rather to provoke the natives, and to excite thoſe frequent inſurrections and rebellions, which ſtill farther inflamed the animoſity between the two nations, and encreaſed the barbarity and diſorders, to which the Iriſh were naturally ſubject.

IN 1560, Shan O'Neale, or the great O'Neale, as the Iriſh called him, becauſe head of that potent clan, raiſed a rebellion in Ulſter; and after ſome ſkirmiſhes, was received into favour, upon his ſubmiſſion, and his promiſe of a more dutiful behaviour for the future [h].

[d] Camden, p. 457. [e] Memoirs of the Sidneys, vol. I. p. 86.
[f] Cox, p. 342. Sydney, vol. I. p. 85, 200. [g] Camden, p. 542.
Sydney, vol I. p. 65, 109, 183, 184. [h] Camden, p. 385, 391.

This

1599.

This impunity tempted him to undertake a new insurrection in 1567; but being pushed by Sir Henry Sidney, lord deputy, he retreated into Clandeboy, and rather than submit to the English, he put himself into the hands of some Scots islanders, who commonly infested those parts by their incursions. The Scots, who retained a quarrel against him on account of former injuries, violated the laws of hospitality, and murdered him in a festival, to which they had invited him. He was a man equally noted for his pride, his violences, his debaucheries, and his hatred of the English nation. He is said to have put some of his followers to death, because they endeavoured to introduce the use of bread after the English fashion [i]. Tho' so violent an enemy to luxury, he was extremely addicted to riot; and was accustomed, after his intemperance had thrown him into a fever, to plunge his body into mire, that he might allay the flame, which he had raised by former excesses [k]. Such was the life led by this haughty barbarian, who scorned the title of earl of Tyrone, which Elizabeth intended to have restored to him, and who assumed the rank and appellation of King of Ulster. He used also to say, that tho' the Queen was his sovereign lady, he never made peace with her but at her seeking [l].

Sir Henry Sidney was one of the wisest and most active governors whom Ireland had enjoyed for several reigns [m]; and he possessed his authority eleven years; during which time, he struggled with many difficulties, and made some progress in repressing those disorders, which had become inveterate among that people. The earl of Desmond, in 1569, gave him disturbance from the hereditary animosity which prevailed between that nobleman and the earl of Ormond, who was descended

[i] Camden, p. 409. [k] Ibid. p. 409. Cox, p. 324. [l] Ibid. p. 321. [m] Ibid. p. 350.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

from the only family, eſtabliſhed in Ireland, that had ever ſteddily maintained its loyalty to the Engliſh crown [n]. The earl of Thomond, in 1570, attempted a rebellion in Connaught, but was obliged to fly into France, before his deſigns were ripe for execution. Stukeley, another fugitive, found ſuch credit with the pope, Gregory the 13th, that he flattered his holineſs with the proſpect of making his nephew, Buon Compagno, King of Ireland; and as if this project had already taken effect, he accepted the title of marquiſs of Leinſter from the new ſovereign [o]. He paſſed next into Spain; and after having received much encouragement and great rewards from Philip, who intended to make uſe of him as an inſtrument to diſturb Queen Elizabeth, he was found to poſſeſs too little intereſt for executing thoſe high promiſes, which he had made to that monarch. He retired into Portugal; and following the fortunes of Don Sebaſtian, he periſhed with that gallant prince in his bold but fatal expedition againſt the Moors.

Lord Gray ſucceeded Sydney in the government of Ireland; and, in 1579, ſuppreſſed a new rebellion of the earl of Deſmond, though ſupported by a body of Spaniards and Italians. The rebellion of the Bourks followed a few years after; occaſioned by the ſtrict and equitable adminiſtration of Sir Richard Bingham, governor of Connaught, who endeavoured to repreſs the tyranny of the chieftains over their vaſſals [p]. The Queen, finding Ireland ſo burthenſome to her, tried ſeveral expedients for reducing it to a ſtate of greater order and ſubmiſſion. She encouraged the earl of Eſſex, father to that nobleman, who was afterwards her favourite, to attempt the ſubduing and planting Clandeboy, Ferny, and other territories, part of ſome late

[n] Camden, p. 424. [o] Ibid. p. 430. Cox, p. 354. [p] Stowe, p. 720.

forfeitures:

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

forfeitures: But that enterprize proved unfortunate; and Eſſex died of a diſtemper, occaſioned, as is ſuppoſed, by the vexation, which he had conceived, from his diſappointments. An univerſity was founded in Dublin with a view of introducing arts and learning into that kingdom, and civilizing the uncultivated manners of the inhabitants [q]. But the moſt unhappy expedient, employed in the government of Ireland, was that made uſe of in 1585 by Sir John Perrot, at that time lord deputy: He put arms into the hands of the Iriſh inhabitants of Ulſter, in order to enable them, without the aſſiſtance of the government, to repreſs the incurſions of the Scots iſlanders, by which theſe parts were much infeſted [r]. At the ſame time, the invitations of Philip, joined to their zeal for the catholic religion, engaged many of the gentry to ſerve in the Low Country wars; and thus Ireland, being provided both of officers and ſoldiers, of diſcipline and arms, became formidable to the Engliſh, and was thenceforth able to maintain a more regular war againſt her antient maſters.

Tyrone's rebellion.

HUGH O'Neale, nephew to Shan O'Neale, had been raiſed by the Queen to the dignity of earl of Tyrone; but having murdered his couſin, ſon to that rebel, and being acknowleged head of his clan, he preferred the pride of barbarous licence and dominion, to the pleaſures of opulence and tranquillity, and fomented all thoſe diſorders, by which he hoped to weaken or overturn the Engliſh government. He was noted for the vices of perfidy and cruelty, ſo common among uncultivated nations; and was alſo eminent for courage, a virtue, which their diſorderly courſe of life requires, and which, notwithſtanding, being unſupported by the principle of honour, is commonly more precarious among them, than among a civilized people. Tyrone, actuated by this ſpirit, ſecretly fomented the diſcontents of the Maguires, Odonnels, O'Rourks, Macmahons,

[q] Camden, p. 566. [r] Nanton's Fragmenta Regalia, p. 201.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

and other rebels; yet truſting to the influence of his deceitful oaths and profeſſions, he put himſelf into the hands of Sir William Ruſſel, who, in the year 1594, was ſent over lord deputy into Ireland. Contrary to the advice and proteſtation of Sir Henry Bagnal, marſhal of the army, he was diſmiſſed; and returning to his own country, he embraced the reſolution of raiſing an open rebellion, and of relying no longer on the lenity or inexperience of the Engliſh government. He entered into a correſpondence with Spain: He procured thence a ſupply of arms and ammunition: And having united all the Iriſh chieftains in a dependance upon himſelf, he began to be regarded as a formidable enemy.

THE native Iriſh were ſo miſerably poor, that their country afforded few other commodities but cattle and oatmeal, which were eaſily deſtroyed or driven away on the approach of the enemy; and as Elizabeth was averſe to the expence requiſite for ſupporting her armies, the Engliſh found much difficulty in puſhing their advantages, and in purſuing the rebels into the bogs, woods, and other faſtneſſes, to which they retreated. Theſe motives made Sir John Norris, who commanded the Engliſh army, the more ready to hearken to any propoſals of truce or accommodation made him by Tyrone; and after the war was ſpun out by theſe artifices for ſome years, that gallant Engliſhman, finding that he had been deceived by treacherous promiſes, and that he had performed nothing worthy of his antient reputation, was ſeized with a languiſhing diſtemper, and died of vexation and diſcontent. Sir Henry Bagnal, who ſucceeded him in the command, was ſtill more unfortunate. As he advanced to relieve the fort of Black-water, beſieged by the rebels, he was ſurrounded in diſadvantageous ground; his ſoldiers, diſcouraged by part of their powder's accidentally taking fire, were put to flight; and, tho' the purſuit was ſtopt by Montacute, who commanded the Engliſh horſe, fifteen hundred men, together with the general himſelf,

himſelf, were left dead upon the ſpot. This victory, ſo unuſual to the Iriſh, mightly raiſed their ſpirits, ſupplied them with arms and ammunition, and exalted the reputation of Tyrone, who aſſumed the character of the deliverer of his country, and patron of Iriſh liberty [s].

CHAP. XLIV. 1599.

The Engliſh council were now ſenſible that the rebellion of Ireland was come to a dangerous head, and that the former temporizing arts, of granting truces and pacifications to the rebels, and of allowing them to purchaſe pardons by reſigning part of the plunder, acquired during their inſurrections, ſerved only to encourage the ſpirit of mutiny and diſorder among them. It was therefore reſolved to puſh the war by more vigorous meaſures; and the Queen caſt her eye on Charles Blount, lord Mountjoy, as a man, who, tho' hitherto leſs accuſtomed to arms than to books and literature, was endowed, ſhe thought, with talents equal to that undertaking. But the young earl of Eſſex, ambitious of glory, and deſirous of obtaining this government for himſelf, oppoſed the choice of Mountjoy; and repreſented the neceſſity of appointing, for that important employment, ſome perſon more experienced in war than this nobleman, more practiſed in buſineſs, and of higher quality and reputation. By this deſcription, he was underſtood to mean himſelf [t]; and no ſooner was his deſire known, to be poſſeſſed of that government, than his enemies, even more zealouſly than his friends, conſpired to render his wiſhes effectual. Many of his friends thought, that he never ought to conſent, except for a very ſhort time, to accept of employments which muſt remove him from court, and prevent him from cultivating that perſonal inclination, which the Queen ſo viſibly bore him [u]. His enemies hoped, that if, by his abſence, ſhe had once leizure to forget the charms of his perſon

[s] Cox, p. 415. [t] Bacon, vol. IV. p. 512. [u] Cabbala, p. 79.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

and converſation, his impatient and lofty demeanor would ſoon diſguſt a princeſs, who uſually exacted ſuch profound ſubmiſſion and implicit obedience from all her ſervants. But Eſſex was incapable of entering into ſuch cautious views; and even Elizabeth, who was extremely deſirous of ſubduing the Iriſh rebels, and who was much prepoſſeſſed in favour of Eſſex's genius, readily agreed to appoint him governor of Ireland, under the title of lord lieutenant. The more to encourage him in his undertaking, ſhe granted him by his patent more extenſive authority than had ever before been conferred on any lieutenant; the power of carrying on or finiſhing the war as he pleaſed, of pardoning the rebels, and of filling all the moſt conſiderable employments of the kingdom [x]. And to enſure him of ſucceſs, ſhe levied a numerous army of ſixteen thouſand foot and thirteen hundred horſe, which ſhe afterwards augmented to twenty thouſand foot and two thouſand horſe: A force, which, it was apprehended, would be able, in one campaign, to overwhelm the rebels, and make an entire conqueſt of Ireland. Nor did Eſſex's enemies, the earl of Nottingham, lord admiral, Sir Robert Cecil, ſecretary, Sir Walter Raleigh, and lord Cobham, throw any obſtacles in the way of theſe preparations; but hoped, that the higher the Queen's expectations were raiſed of ſucceſs, the more difficult it would be for the event to correſpond to them. In a like view, they rather ſeconded, than oppoſed, thoſe exalted encomiums, which Eſſex's numerous and ſanguine friends diſperſed, of his high genius, of his elegant endowments, his heroic courage, his unbounded generoſity, and his noble birth; nor were they diſpleaſed to obſerve that paſſionate fondneſs, which the people every where expreſſed for this nobleman. Theſe artful politicians had ſtudied his character; and finding, that his open and undaunted

Eſſex ſent over to Ireland.

x Rymer, tom. XVI. p. 366.

ſpirit,

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

ſpirit, if taught temper and reſerve from oppoſition, muſt become invincible, they reſolved rather to give full breath to thoſe ſails, which were already too much expanded, and to puſh him upon dangers, of which he ſeemed to make ſuch ſmall account[y]. And the better to make advantage of his indiſcretions, ſpies were ſet upon all his actions and even expreſſions; and his vehement ſpirit, which, while he was in the midſt of the court and environed by his rivals, was unacquainted with diſguiſe, could not fail, after he thought himſelf ſurrounded by none but friends, to give a pretence for malignant ſuſpicions and conſtructions.

Essex left London in the month of March, attended by the acclamations of the populace, and what did him more honour, accompanied by a numerous train of nobility and gentry, who, from affection to his perſon, had attached themſelves to all his fortunes, and propoſed to acquire fame and military experience under ſo renowned a commander. The firſt act of authority, which he exerciſed, after his arrival in Ireland, was an indiſcretion, but of the generous kind; and in both theſe reſpects, ſuitable to his character. He appointed his intimate friend, the earl of Southampton, general of the horſe; a nobleman, who had diſpleaſed the Queen by ſecretly marrying without her conſent, and whom ſhe had therefore enjoined Eſſex not to employ in any command under him. She no ſooner heard of this inſtance of diſobedience than ſhe reprimanded him, and ordered him to recal his commiſſion to Southampton. But Eſſex, who had imagined, that ſome reaſons, which he oppoſed to her firſt injunctions, had convinced her, had the imprudence to remonſtrate againſt theſe ſecond orders[z]; and it was not till ſhe reiterated her commands, that he could be prevailed on to diſplace his friend.

[y] Camden. Oſborne, p. 371. [z] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 421, 451.

CHAP. XLIV.

1599. His ill ſucceſs.

ESSEX, on his landing at Dublin, had deliberated with the Iriſh council, concerning the proper methods of carrying on war againſt the rebels; and here he was guilty of a capital error, which was the ruin of his enterprize. He had always, while in England, blamed the conduct of former commanders, who artfully protracted the war, who harraſſed their troops in ſmall enterprizes, and who, by agreeing to truces and temporary pacifications with the rebels, had given them leizure to recruit their broken forces [a]. In conformity to theſe views, he had ever inſiſted upon leading his forces immediately into Ulſter againſt Tyrone, the capital enemy; and his inſtructions had been drawn agreeably to theſe his declared intentions and reſolutions. But the Iriſh counſellors perſuaded him, that the ſeaſon was too early for the enterpize, and that as the moraſſes, in which the Iriſh uſually ſheltered themſelves, would not, as yet, be paſſable to the Engliſh forces, it would be better to employ the preſent time in an expedition into Munſter. Their ſecret reaſon for this advice was, that many of them poſſeſſed eſtates in that province, and were deſirous to have the enemy diſlodged from their neighbourhood [b]: But the ſame ſelfiſh ſpirit, which had induced them to give this council, made them ſoon after diſown it, when they found the bad conſequences with which it was attended [c].

ESSEX obliged all the rebels of Munſter either to ſubmit or to fly into the neighbouring provinces: But as the Iriſh, from the greatneſs of the Queen's preparations, had concluded, that ſhe intended to reduce them to total ſubjection, or even utterly to exterminate them, they conſidered their preſent defence as a common cauſe; and the Engliſh forces were no ſooner withdrawn, than the inhabitants of Munſter relapſed into rebellion, and renewed their confederacy with

[a] Ibid. p. 431. Bacon vol. IV. p. 512. [b] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 448. [c] Winwood, vol. I. p. 140.

their

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

their other countrymen. The army, meanwhile, by the fatigue of long and tedious marches, and by the influence of the climate, was become extreme ſickly; and on their return to Dublin, about the middle of July, were ſuprizingly diminiſhed in number. Their courage was even much abated: For tho' they had prevailed in ſome leſſer enterprizes, as againſt the lord Cahir and others; yet had they ſometimes met with more ſtout reſiſtance than they expected from the Iriſh, whom they were wont to deſpiſe; and as they were raw troops and unexperienced, a conſiderable body of them had been put to flight at the Glins, by an inferior number of the enemy. Eſſex was ſo enraged at this miſbehaviour, that he caſhiered all the officers, and decimated the private men [d]. But this inſtance of ſeverity, tho' neceſſary, had intimidated the ſoldiers, and had encreaſed their averſion to the preſent ſervice.

THE Queen was extremely diſguſted, when ſhe heard, that ſo conſiderable a part of the ſeaſon was conſumed in theſe frivolous enterprizes; and was ſtill more ſurprized, that Eſſex perſevered in the ſame practice, which he had ſo much condemned in others. and which he knew to be ſo much contrary to her purpoſe and intention. That nobleman, in order to give his troops leizure to recruit from their ſickneſs and fatigue, marched with a ſmall body of fifteen hundred men into the county of Ophelie againſt the O'Connors and O'Mores, whom he forced to a ſubmiſſion: But, on his return to Dublin, he found the army ſo extremely diminiſhed, that he wrote to the Engliſh council an account of his condition, and informed them, that, if he received not immediately a reinforcement of two thouſand men, it would be impoſſible for him this ſeaſon to attempt any thing againſt Tyrone. That there might be no pretence for farther inactivity, the Queen immediately ſent over

[d] Cox, p. 421.

CHAP. XLIV. 1599.

the number demanded [e]; and Essex began at last to assemble his forces for the expedition into Ulster. The army was so extremely averse to this enterprize, and terrified with the reputation of Tyrone, that many of them counterfeited sickness, many of them deserted [f]; and Essex found, that after leaving the necessary garrisons, he could scarce lead four thousand men against the rebels. He marched, however, with this small army; but was soon sensible, that, in so advanced a season, it would be impossible for him to effectuate any thing against an enemy, who, tho' superior in number, were determined to avoid every decisive action. He hearkened, therefore, to a message sent him by Tyrone, who desired a conference; and a place, near the two camps, was accordingly appointed. The generals met without any of their attendants, and a river ran between them, into which Tyrone entered to the depth of his saddle: But Essex stood on the opposite bank. After half an hour's conference, where Tyrone behaved with great submission and respect to the lord lieutenant, a cessation of arms was concluded to the first of May, renewable from six weeks to six weeks; but which might be broke off by either party upon a fortnight's warning [g]. Essex also received from Tyrone proposals for a peace, in which that rebel had inserted many unreasonable and exorbitant conditions: And there appeared afterwards some reason to suspect, that he had here commenced a very unjustifiable correspondence with the enemy [h].

So unexpected an issue of an enterprize, the greatest and most expensive which Elizabeth had ever undertaken, provoked her extremely against Essex; and this disgust was much augmented by other circumstances of that nobleman's conduct. He wrote many letters to the Queen and council, full of peevish and impa-

[e] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 430. Cox, p. 424. [f] Sydney's Letters, vol. II. p. 112, 113. [g] Ibid. p. 125. [h] Winwood, vol. I. p. 307. State Trials. Bacon, vol. IV. p. 514, 535. 537.

tient

1599.

tient expreſſions; complaining of his enemies, lamenting that their calumnies ſhould be believed againſt him, and diſcovering ſymptoms of a mind, equally haughty and diſcontented. She took care to inform him of her diſſatisfaction; but commanded him to remain in Ireland till farther orders.

ESSEX heard at once of Elizabeth's anger, and of the promotion of his enemies, Sir Robert Cecil, to the office of maſter of the wards, an office which he himſelf aſpired to: And dreading, that, if he remained any longer abſent, the Queen would be totally alienated from him, he haſtily embraced a reſolution, which, he knew, had once ſucceeded with the earl of Leiceſter, the former favourite of Elizabeth. Leiceſter being informed, while in the Low Countries, that his miſtreſs was extremely diſpleaſed with his conduct, diſobeyed her orders by coming over into England; and having pacified her by his preſence, by his apologies, and by his flattery and inſinuation, diſappointed all the expectations of his enemies [i]. Eſſex, therefore, weighing more the ſimilarity of circumſtances than the difference of characters between himſelf and Leiceſter, immediately ſet out for England; and making ſpeedy journeys, he arrived at court before any one was in the leaſt apprized of his intentions [k]. Tho' beſmeared with dirt and ſweat, he haſtened up ſtairs to the preſence chamber, thence to the privy-chamber; nor ſtopped till he was in the Queen's bed chamber, who was newly riſen, and was ſitting with her hair about her face. He threw himſelf on his knees, kiſſed her hand, and had ſome private conference with her; where he was ſo graciouſly received, that, on his departure, he was heard to expreſs great ſatisfaction, and to thank God, that, tho' he had ſuffered much trouble and many ſtorms abroad, he found a ſweet calm at home [l].

Returns to England.

[i] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 453.
[k] Winwood, vol. I. p. 118.
[l] Sydney's Letters, vol. II. p. 127.

BUT

CHAP. XLIV.

1599.

But this placability of Elizabeth was merely the result of her ſurprize, and of the momentary ſatisfaction which ſhe felt on the ſudden and unexpected appearance of her favourite: After ſhe had leizure for recollection, all his faults recurred to her memory; and ſhe thought it neceſſary by ſome ſevere diſcipline, to ſubdue his haughty and imperious ſpirit, who, preſuming on her partiality and indulgence, had pretended to domineer in her councils, to engroſs all her favour, and to act, in the moſt important affairs, without regard to her orders and inſtructions. When Eſſex waited on her in the afternoon, he found her extremely altered in her carriage towards him: She ordered him to be confined to his chamber; to be twice examined by the council; and tho' his anſwers were calm and ſubmiſſive, ſhe committed him to the cuſtody of the lord keeper, Egerton, and held him ſequeſtered from all company, even from that of his counteſs, nor was ſo much as the intercourſe of letters permitted between them. Eſſex dropped many expreſſions of humiliation and ſorrow, none of reſentment: He profeſſed an entire ſubmiſſion to the Queen's will: Declared his intention of retiring into the country, and of leading thenceforth a private life, remote from courts and buſineſs: But tho' he affected to be ſo entirely cured of his aſpiring ambition, the vexation of this diſappointment, and of the triumph gained by his enemies, preyed upon his haughty ſpirit; and he fell into a diſtemper, which ſeemed to put his life in hazard.

Is diſgraced.

The Queen had always declared to all the world, and even to the earl himſelf, that the purpoſe of her ſeverity was to correct, not to ruin him [m]; and when ſhe heard of his condition, ſhe was not a little alarmed with the danger. She ordered eight phyſicians of the beſt reputation and experience to conſult of his caſe;

[m] Birch's Memoirs, p. 444, 445. Sydney Papers, vol. II. p. 196.

and

and being informed, that the iſſue was much to be apprehended, ſhe ſent Dr. James to him with ſome broth, and deſired that phyſician to deliver him a meſſage, which ſhe probably deemed of ſtill greater virtue; that, if ſhe thought ſuch a ſtep conſiſtent with her honour, ſhe would herſelf pay him a viſit. The by-ſtanders, who carefully obſerved her countenance, remarked, that in pronouncing theſe words, her eyes were ſuffuſed with tears [n]. CHAP. XLIV. 1599.

When theſe ſymptoms of the Queen's returning affection towards Eſſex were known, they gave a ſenſible alarm to the faction which had declared their oppoſition to him. Sir Walter Raleigh, in particular, the moſt violent as well as the moſt ambitious of his enemies, was ſo affected with the appearance of that ſudden revolution, that he was ſeized with ſickneſs in his turn, and the Queen was obliged to apply the ſame ſalve to his wound, and to ſend him a favourable meſſage, expreſſing her deſire of his recovery [o].

The medicine which the Queen adminiſtered to 1600.
theſe aſpiring rivals, was ſucceſsful with both; and Eſſex, being now allowed the company of his counteſs, and having entertained more promiſing hopes of his future fortunes, was ſo much reſtored in his health, as to be thought paſt all danger. A belief was infuſed into Elizabeth, that his diſtemper had been entirely counterfeit, in order to move her compaſſion [p]; and ſhe relapſed into her former rigour againſt him. He wrote her a letter, and ſent her a rich preſent on New-Year's day; as was uſual among the courtiers of that time: She read the letter, but rejected the preſent [q]. After ſome interval, however, of ſeverity, ſhe allowed him to retire to his own houſe: And tho' he remained ſtill under cuſtody, and was ſequeſtered from all com-

[n] Sydney Letters, vol. II. p. 151. [o] Ibid. p. 139. [p] Ibid. p. 153.
[q] Ibid. p. 155, 156.

pany,

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

pany, he was ſo grateful for this mark of lenity, that he ſent her a letter of thanks on the occaſion. "This "farther degree of goodneſs," ſaid he, "doth ſound "in mine ears, as if your majeſty ſpake theſe words, "*Die not, Eſſex; for tho' I puniſh thine offence, and* "*humble thee for thy good, yet will I one day be ſerved* "*again by thee.* My proſtrate ſoul makes this anſwer. "*I hope for that bleſſed day.* And in expectation of it, "all my afflictions of body or mind are humbly, pati- "ently, and chearfully borne by me[r]." The counteſs of Eſſex, daughter of Sir Francis Walſingham, poſſeſſed, as well as her huſband, a very refined taſte in literature; and the chief conſolation which Eſſex enjoyed, during this period of anxiety and expectation, conſiſted in her company, and in reading with her thoſe inſtructive and entertaining authors which, even during the time of his greateſt proſperity, he had never entirely neglected.

THERE were ſeveral incidents which kept alive the Queen's anger againſt Eſſex. Every account which ſhe received from Ireland, convinced her more and more of his miſconduct in that government, and of the inſignificant purpoſes to which he had employed ſo much force and treaſure. Tyrone, ſo far from being quelled, had thought proper, in leſs than three months, to break the truce, and joining with O Donel, and other rebels, had over-run almoſt the whole kingdom. He boaſted, that he was certain of receiving a ſupply of men, money, and arms from Spain: He pretended to be champion of the catholic religion: And he loudly exulted in the preſent of a phœnix plume, which the pope, Clement the eighth, in order to encourage him in the proſecution of ſo good a cauſe, had conſecrated, and had conferred upon him[s]. The Queen, that ſhe might check his progreſs, returned to her former intention, of appointing Mountjoy lord-deputy; and tho' that nobleman, who was an intimate friend

[r] Birch's Memoirs, p. 444. [s] Camden, p. 617.

of

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

of Eſſex, and deſired his return to the government of Ireland, did at firſt very earneſtly excuſe himſelf, on account of his bad ſtate of health, ſhe obliged him to accept of that employment. Mountjoy found the iſland almoſt in a deſperate ſituation; but being a man of capacity and vigour, he was ſo little diſcouraged, that he immediately advanced againſt Tyrone in Ulſter. He penetrated into the heart of that country, the chief ſeat of the rebels: He fortified Derry and Mount-Norris, in order to bridle the Iriſh: He chaced them from the field, and obliged them to take ſhelter in the woods and moraſſes: He employed, with equal ſucceſs, Sir Gorge Carew in Munſter: And by theſe promiſing ſucceſſes, he gave new life to the Queen's authority in that country.

As the compariſon of Mountjoy's adminiſtration with that of Eſſex, contributed to alienate Elizabeth from her favourite, ſhe received additional diſguſt from the partiality of the people, who, prepoſſeſſed with an extravagant idea of Eſſex's merit, complained of the injuſtice which was done him, by his removal from court, and by his confinement. Libels were ſecretly diſperſed againſt Cecil and Raleigh, and all his enemies. And his popularity, which was always great, ſeemed rather to be increaſed than diminiſhed by his misfortunes. Elizabeth, in order to juſtify to the public her conduct with regard to him, had often expreſſed her intentions of having him tried in the ſtar-chamber, for his offences: But her tenderneſs for him prevailed at laſt over her ſeverity; and ſhe was contented to have him only examined by the privy-council. The attorney-general, Coke, opened the cauſe againſt him, and treated him with the cruelty and inſolence which that great lawyer uſually exerciſed againſt the unfortunate. He diſplayed, in the ſtrongeſt colours, all the faults committed by Eſſex in his adminiſtration of Ireland: His making Southampton general

CHAP. XLIV.

1600.

neral of the horſe, contrary to the Queen's injunctions; his deſerting the enterprize againſt Tyrone, and marching to Leinſter and Munſter; his conferring knighthood on too many perſons; his ſecret conference with Tyrone; and his ſudden return from Ireland, in contempt of her majeſty's commands. He alſo exaggerated the indignity of the conditions which Tyrone had been allowed to propoſe; odious and abominable conditions, ſaid he; a public toleration of an idolatrous religion, pardon for himſelf and every traitor in Ireland, and full reſtitution of lands and poſſeſſions to all of them [t]. The ſollicitor-general, Fleming, inſiſted upon the wretched ſituation in which the earl had left that kingdom; and Francis Bacon, ſon to Sir Nicholas Bacon, who had been lord keeper in the beginning of the preſent reign, cloſed the charge with diſplaying the undutiful expreſſions contained in ſome letters wrote by the earl.

ESSEX, when his turn came to plead in his own behalf, renounced, with great ſubmiſſion and humility, all pretenſions to an apology [u]; and declared his reſolution never, on this or any other occaſion, to have any conteſt with his ſovereign. He ſaid, that having ſevered himſelf from the world, and abjured all ſentiments of ambition, he had no ſcruple to confeſs every failing or error into which his youth, folly, or manifold infirmities might have betrayed him; that his inward ſorrow for his offences againſt her majeſty was ſo profound, that it exceeded all his outward croſſes and afflictions, nor did he retain any ſcruple of ſubmitting to a public confeſſion of whatever ſhe had been pleaſed to impute to him; that in his acknowledgements he retained only one reſerve, which he never would relinquiſh but with his life, the aſſertion of a loyal and unpolluted heart, of an unfeigned affection,

[t] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 449. [u] Sydney's Letters, vol. II. p. 200.

of

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

of an earneſt deſire ever to perform to her majeſty the beſt ſervice which his poor abilities would permit; and that if this ſentiment was recognized by the council, he willingly acquieſced in any condemnation or ſentence which they could pronounce againſt him. This ſubmiſſion was uttered with ſo much eloquence, and in ſo pathetic a manner, that it drew tears from many of the ſpectators [x]. All the privy-counſellors, in giving their judgment, made no ſcruple of doing the earl juſtice, with regard to the loyalty of his intentions. Even Cecil, whom he believed his capital enemy, treated him with regard and humanity. And the ſentence given by the lord keeper, (to which the council aſſented) was in theſe words. "If this cauſe," ſaid he, "had been heard in the Star-chamber, my ſen-"tence muſt have been for as great a fine as ever "was ſet upon any man's head in that court, together "with perpetual confinement in that priſon which "belongeth to a man of his quality, the Tower. "But ſince we are now in another place, and in a "courſe of favour, my cenſure is, that the earl of "Eſſex is not to execute the office of a counſellor, nor "that of earl marſhal of England, nor of maſter of "the ordnance; and to return to his own houſe, there "to contiue a priſoner, till it ſhall pleaſe her majeſty to "releaſe this and all the reſt of his ſentence [y]." The earl of Cumberland made a ſlight oppoſition to this ſentence; and ſaid, that, if he thought it would ſtand, he would have required a little longer time to deliberate; that he thought it ſomewhat ſevere; and that any commander in chief might eaſily incur a like penalty. But, however, added he, in confidence of her majeſty's mercy, I agree with the reſt. The earl of Worceſter delivered his opinion in a couple of

x Sydney's Letters, vol. II. p. 200, 201. y Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 454. Camden, p. 626, 627.

Latin

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

Latin verſes, implying, that, where the Gods are offended, even misfortunes ought to be imputed as crimes, and that accident is no excuſe for tranſgreſſions againſt the Divinity.

Bacon, ſo much diſtinguiſhed afterwards by his high offices, and ſtill more by his profound genius for the ſciences, was nearly allied to the Cecil family, being nephew to lord Burleigh, and couſin-german to the ſecretary: But notwithſtanding his extraordinary talents, he had met with ſo little protection from his powerful relations, that he had not yet obtained any preferment in the law, which was his profeſſion. But Eſſex, who could diſtinguiſh merit, and who paſſionately loved it, had entered into an intimate friendſhip with Bacon; had zealouſly attempted, tho' without ſucceſs, to procure him the office of Queen's ſollicitor; and in order to comfort his friend under the diſappointment, had conferred on him a preſent of land to the value of eighteen hundred pounds [z]. The public could ill excuſe Bacon's appearance before the council, againſt ſo munificent a benefactor; tho' he acted in obedience to the Queen's orders: But ſhe was ſo well pleaſed with his behaviour, that ſhe impoſed on him a new taſk, of drawing a narrative of that day's proceedings, in order to ſatisfy the nation of the juſtice and lenity of her conduct. Bacon, who wanted firmneſs of character, more than humanity, gave to the whole tranſaction the moſt favourable turn for Eſſex; and, in particular, painted out, in elaborate expreſſion, the dutiful ſubmiſſion which that nobleman diſcovered in the defence which he made for his conduct. When he read the paper to her, ſhe ſmiled at that paſſage, and obſerved to Bacon, that old love, ſhe ſaw, could not eaſily be forgotten. He replied, that he hoped ſhe meant that of herſelf [a].

z Cabbala, p. 78. a Cabbala, p. 83.

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

ALL the world, indeed, expected that Eſſex would ſoon be reinſtated in his former credit [b]; perhaps, as is uſual in reconcilements founded on inclination, would acquire an additional aſcendant with the Queen, and after all his diſgraces, would again appear more a favourite than ever. They were confirmed in this hope, when they ſaw, that, tho' he was ſtill prohibited to appear at court [c], he was continued in his office of maſter of horſe, and was reſtored to his liberty, and that all his friends had acceſs to him. Eſſex himſelf ſeemed determined to perſevere in that conduct which had hitherto been ſo ſucceſsful, and which the Queen, by all this diſcipline, had endeavoured to render habitual to him: He wrote to her, that he kiſſed her majeſty's hands, and the rod with which ſhe had corrected him; but that he could never recover his uſual chearfulneſs, till ſhe deigned to admit him to that preſence which had ever been the chief ſource of his happineſs and enjoyment: And that he had now reſolved to make amends for his paſt errors, to retire into a country ſolitude, and to ſay with Nebuchadnezzar, "Let "my dwelling be with the beaſts of the field; let me "eat graſs as an ox, and be wet with the dew of hea"ven; till it ſhall pleaſe the Queen to reſtore me to "my underſtanding." The Queen was much pleaſed with theſe ſentiments, and replied, that ſhe heartily wiſhed his actions might correſpond to his expreſſions; that he had tried her patience a long time, and it was but juſt ſhe ſhould now make ſome experiment of his ſubmiſſion; that her father would never have pardoned ſo much obſtinacy; but that, if the furnace of affliction produced ſuch good effects, ſhe ſhould ever after have the better opinion of her chemiſtry [d].

[b] Winwood, vol. I. p. 254. [c] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 462.
[d] Camden, p. 628.

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

THE earl of Eſſex poſſeſſed a monopoly of ſweet wines; and as his patent was near expiring, he patiently expected that the Queen would renew it, and conſidered this event as the critical circumſtance of his life, which would determine whether he could ever hope to be reinſtated in credit and authority [e]. But Elizabeth, tho' gracious in her demeanor, was of a temper ſomewhat haughty and ſevere; and being continually ſurrounded with Eſſex's enemies, means were found to perſuade her, that his lofty ſpirit was not yet ſufficiently humbled, and that he muſt undergo this farther trial, before he could again be ſafely received into favour. She therefore refuſed his demand; and even added, in a contemptuous ſtile, that an ungovernable beaſt muſt be ſtinted in his provender [f].

His intrigues.

THIS rigour, puſhed one ſtep too far, proved the final ruin of this young nobleman, and was the ſource of infinite ſorrow and vexation to the Queen herſelf. Eſſex, who had with great difficulty ſo long ſubdued his proud ſpirit, and whoſe patience was now exhauſted, imagining that the Queen was entirely inexorable, burſt at once all reſtraints of ſubmiſſion and of prudence, and was determined to ſeek relief, by proceeding to the utmoſt extremities againſt his enemies. Even during his greateſt favour he had ever been accuſtomed to carry matters with a high hand againſt his ſovereign; and as this practice gratified his own temper, and was ſometimes ſucceſsful, he had imprudently imagined, that it was the only proper method of managing her [g]: But being now reduced to deſpair, he gave entire reins to his violent diſpoſition, and threw off all appearance of duty and reſpect. Intoxicated with the general favour which he already poſſeſſed, he practiſed anew every art of popularity; and endeavoured to

[e] Birch's memoirs, vol. II. p. 472.
[f] Camden, p. 628.
[g] Cabbala, p. 79.

increaſe

increaſe the general good-will by a hoſpitable manner of life, little ſuited to his ſituation and his circumſtances. His former employments had given him great connections with gentlemen of the military profeſſion; and he now entertained, by additional careſſes and civilities, a friendſhip with all deſperate adventurers, whoſe attachment, he hoped, might, in his preſent views, prove ſerviceable to him. He ſecretly courted the confidence of the catholics; but his chief truſt lay in the puritans, whom he openly careſſed, and whoſe manners he ſeemed to have entirely adopted. He engaged the moſt celebrated preachers of that ſect to reſort to Eſſex-houſe; he had daily prayers and ſermons in his family; and he invited all the zealots in London to attend thoſe pious exerciſes. Such was the diſpoſition now beginning to prevail among the Engliſh, that, inſtead of feaſting and public ſpectacles, the methods anciently practiſed in commonwealths to gain the populace, nothing ſo effectually ingratiated an ambitious leader with the public, as theſe fanatical entertainments. And as the puritanical preachers frequently inculcated in their ſermons the doctrine of reſiſtance to the civil magiſtrate, they prepared the minds of their hearers for thoſe purpoſes which Eſſex was ſecretly contriving [h].

But the greateſt imprudence of this nobleman proceeded from the openneſs of his temper, by which he was ill qualified to ſucceed in ſuch difficult and dangerous projects. He indulged himſelf in great liberties of ſpeech, and was even heard to ſay of the Queen, that ſhe was now grown an old woman, and was become as crooked in her mind as in her body [i]. Some court ladies, whoſe favours Eſſex had formerly neglected, carried her theſe ſtories, and incenſed her to a high

[h] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 463. Camden, p. 630.

[i] Camden, p. 629. Oſborne, p. 397. Sir Walter Raleigh's Prerogative of Parliament, p. 43.

CHAP. XLIV.

1600.

degree againſt him. Elizabeth was ever remarkably jealous on this head; and tho' ſhe was now approaching to her ſeventieth year, ſhe allowed her courtiers[k] and even foreign ambaſſadors[l], to compliment her upon her beauty; nor had all her good ſenſe been able to cure her of this prepoſterous infirmity[m].

[k] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 442, 443. [l] Sydney's Letters, vol. II. p. 171.

[m] Moſt of Queen Elizabeth's courtiers feigned love and deſire towards her, and addreſſed themſelves to her in the ſtile of paſſion and gallantry. Sir Walter Raleigh, having fallen into diſgrace, wrote the following letter to his friend Sir Robert Cecil, with a view, no doubt, of having it ſhewn to the Queen. "My heart was never broke till this day, that I hear the "Queen goes away ſo far off, whom I have followed ſo many years, with "ſo great love and deſire, in ſo many journeys, and am now left behind "her in a dark priſon all alone. While ſhe was yet near at hand, that "I might hear of her once in two or three days, my ſorrows were the leſs; "but even now my heart is caſt into the depth of all miſery. I, that was "wont to behold her riding like *Alexander*, hunting like *Diana*, walking "like *Venus*, the gentle wind blowing her fair hair about her pure cheeks, "like a nymph, ſometimes ſitting in the ſhade like a Goddeſs, ſometimes "ſinging like an angel, ſometimes playing like *Orpheus*; behold the ſor-"row of this world! once amiſs hath bereaved me of all. O glory that "only ſhineth in miſfortune, what is become of thy aſſurance? All wounds "have ſcars but that of fantaſie: All affections their relenting but that of "womankind. Who is the judge of friendſhip but adverſity, or when is "grace witneſſed but in offences? There were no divinity but by reaſon "of compaſſion: For revenges are brutišh and mortal. All thoſe times "paſt, the loves, the ſighs, the ſorrows, the deſires, cannot they weigh "down one frail misfortune? Cannot one drop of gall be hid in ſo great "heaps of ſweetneſs? I may then conclude, *Spes & fortuna, valete.* "She is gone in whom I truſted; and of me hath not one thought of "mercy, nor any reſpect of that which was. Do with me now there-"fore what you liſt. I am more weary of life than they are deſirous I "ſhould periſh; which, if it had been for her, as it is by her, I had "been too happily born." *Murdin*, 657. It is to be remarked, that this Nymph, Venus, Goddeſs, Angel, was now about ſixty. Yet five or ſix years after, ſhe allowed the ſame language to be uſed to her. Sir Henry Unton, her ambaſſador in France, relates to her a converſation which he had with Henry the fourth. The Monarch, after having introduced Unton to his miſtreſs, the fair Gabrielle, aſked him how he liked her. "I an-"ſwered ſparingly in her praiſe," ſaid the miniſter, "and told him, that "if, without offence, I might ſpeak it, I had the picture of a far more

THERE

CHAP. XLIV.

1600.

THERE was another expedient employed by Eſſex, which, if poſſible, was more provoking to the Queen than thoſe ſarcaſms on her age and deformity; and that was, his ſecret applications to the King of Scots, her heir and ſucceſſor. That prince had this year very narrowly eſcaped a dangerous, tho' ill formed, conſpiracy of the earl of Gowry; and even his delivery was attended with this diſagreeable circumſtance, that the obſtinate eccleſiaſtics perſiſted, in ſpite of the moſt inconteſtable evidence, to maintain to his face, that there had been no ſuch conſpiracy. James, harraſſed with his turbulent and factious ſubjects, caſt a wiſhful eye to the ſucceſſion of England; and in proportion as the Queen advanced in years, his deſire increaſed of mounting that throne, on which, beſides acquiring a great addition of power and ſplendor, he hoped to govern a people, ſo much more tractable and ſubmiſſive. He negociated with all the courts of Europe, in order to enſure himſelf friends and partizans: He even neglected not the court of Rome and that of Spain; and tho' he engaged himſelf in no poſitive promiſe, he flattered the catholics with hopes, that, in caſe of his ſucceſſion, they might expect ſome more liberty

" excellent miſtreſs, and yet did her picture come far ſhort of her per-
" fection of beauty. As you love me, ſaid he, ſhew it me, if you have
" it about you. I made ſome difficulties; yet upon his importunity
" offered it to his view very ſecretly, holding it ſtill in my hand. He
" beheld it with paſſion and admiration, ſaying, that I had reaſon, *Ye me*
" *rends*, proteſting, that he had never ſeen the like: ſo, with great re-
" verence, he kiſſed it twice or thrice, I detaining it ſtill in my hand.
" In the end, with ſome kind of contention, he took it from me, vowing,
" that I might take my leave of it: For he would not forego it for any
" treaſure: And that to poſſeſs the favour of the lively picture, he would
" forſake all the world, and hold himſelf moſt happy; with many other
" moſt paſſionate ſpeeches." *Murdin*, p. 718. For farther particulars on this head, ſee the ingenious author of the Catalogue of royal and noble Authors, article *Eſſex*.

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

than what was at preſent indulged them. Elizabeth was the only ſovereign in Europe to whom he never dared to mention his right of ſucceſſion: He knew, that tho' her great age might now invite her to think of fixing an heir to the crown, ſhe never could bear the proſpect of her own death without horror, and was determined ſtill to retain him, and all other competitors, in an entire dependance upon her.

Essex was deſcended by females from the royal family; and ſome of his ſanguine partizans had been ſo imprudent as to mention his name among thoſe of other pretenders to the crown; but the earl took care, by means of Henry Lee, whom he ſecretly ſent into Scotland, to aſſure James, that, ſo far from entertaining ſuch ambitious views, he was determined to uſe every expedient for extorting an immediate declaration in favour of that monarch's right of ſucceſſion. James willingly hearkened to this propoſal; but did not approve of the violent methods which Eſſex intended to employ. Eſſex had communicated his ſcheme to Mountjoy, lord deputy of Ireland; and as no man ever commanded more the cordial affection and attachment of his friends, he had even engaged a perſon of that virtue and prudence to entertain thoughts of bringing over part of his army into England, and of forcing the Queen to declare the King of Scots her ſucceſſor[n]. And ſuch was Eſſex's impatient ardour, that, tho' James declined this dangerous expedient, he ſtill endeavoured to perſuade Mountjoy not to deſiſt from the project: But the deputy who thought that ſuch violence, tho' it might be prudent, and even juſtifiable, when ſupported by a ſovereign prince next heir to the crown, would be raſh and criminal, if at-

[n] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 471.

tempted

tempted by ſubjects, entirely refuſed his concurrence. The correſpondence, however, between Eſſex and the court of Scotland was ſtill conducted with great ſecrecy and cordiality; and that nobleman, beſides conciliating the favour of James, repreſented all his own adverſaries as enemies to that prince's ſucceſſion, and as men entirely devoted to the intereſts of Spain, and partizans of the chimerical title of the Infanta. CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

The Infanta and archduke, Albert, had made ſome advances to the Queen for peace; and Boulogne, as a neutral town, was choſen for the place of conference. Sir Henry Nevil, the Engliſh reſident in France, Herbert, Edmondes, and Beale, were ſent thither as ambaſſadors from England; and negociated with Zuniga, Carillo, Rachardot, and Verheiken, miniſters of Spain and the archduke: But the conferences were ſoon broke off, on account of a diſpute of ceremony. Among the European ſtates England had ever been allowed the precedency above Caſtile, Arragon, Portugal, and the other kingdoms of which the Spaniſh monarchy was compoſed; and Elizabeth inſiſted, that this ancient right was not loſt on account of the junction of theſe ſtates, and that Spain, in its preſent ſituation, tho' it ſurpaſſed England in extent, as well as in power, could not compare with it in point of antiquity, the only durable and regular foundation of precedency among kingdoms, as well as noble families. That ſhe might ſhew, however, a diſpoſition to peace, ſhe was contented to yield to an equality; but the Spaniſh miniſters, as their country had always diſputed precedency even with France, to which England yielded, would proceed no farther in the conference, till their ſuperiority of rank was acknowledged[o]. During the 16th May.

[o] Winwood's Memorials, vol. I. p. 186—226.

CHAP. XLIV.

1598. His infirmities.

preparations for this abortive negociation, the earl of Nottingham, the admiral lord Buckhurſt, the treaſurer, and ſecretary Cecil, had diſcovered their inclination to peace; and as the Engliſh nation, flushed with ſucceſs, and ſanguine in their hopes of plunder and conqueſt, were in general averſe to that meaſure, it was eaſy for a perſon ſo popular as Eſſex, to infuſe into the multitude an opinion, that theſe miniſters had ſacrificed the intereſts of their country to Spain, and would even make no ſcruple of receiving a ſovereign from that hoſtile nation.

But Eſſex, not contented with theſe arts for decrying his adverſaries, proceeded to concert more violent methods of ruining them; chiefly inſtigated by Cuffe, his ſecretary, a man of a bold and arrogant ſpirit, who had acquired a great aſcendant over his patron. A ſelect council of malecontents was formed, who commonly met at Drury-houſe, and were compoſed of Sir Charles Davers, to whom the houſe belonged, the earl of Southampton, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, Sir Chriſtopher Blount, Sir John Davis, and John Littleton; and Eſſex, who boaſted, that he had an hundred and twenty barons, knights, and gentlemen of note, at his devotion, and who truſted ſtill more to his authority with the populace, communicated to his aſſociates thoſe ſecret deſigns and reſolutions, with which his confidence in ſo powerful a party had inſpired him. Among other criminal projects, the reſult of blind rage and deſpair, he deliberated with them concerning the method of taking arms; and aſked their opinion whether he had beſt begin with ſeizing the palace or the Tower, or ſet out with making himſelf maſter at once of both places. The firſt enterprize being preferred, a method was concerted for executing it. It was agreed, that Sir Chriſtopher

1600. His insurrection.

pher Blount, with a choice detachment, ſhould poſſeſs himſelf of the palace gates, that Davis ſhould ſeize the hall, Davers, the guard-chamber, and preſence-chamber; and that Eſſex ſhould ruſh in from the Meuſe, attended by a body of his partizans; ſhould entreat the Queen, with all demonſtrations of humility, to remove his enemies; ſhould oblige her to aſſemble a Parliament, and ſhould with common conſent ſettle a new plan of government [p].

While theſe deſperate projects were in agitation, many reaſons of ſuſpicion were carried to the Queen; and ſhe ſent Robert Sacville, the treaſurer's ſon, to Eſſex-houſe on pretence of a viſit, but, in reality, with a view of diſcovering whether there was in that place any concourſe of people, or any extraordinary preparations, which might threaten an inſurrection. Soon after, Eſſex received a ſummons to attend the council, which met at the treaſurer's houſe; and while he was muſing on this circumſtance, and comparing it with the late unexpected viſit from Sacville, a private note was conveyed to him, by which he was warned to provide for his own ſafety. He concluded, that all his conſpiracy was diſcovered, or at leaſt ſuſpected, and that the eaſieſt puniſhment which he could expect, was a new and more ſevere confinement: He therefore excuſed himſelf to the council on pretence of an indiſpoſition; and he immediately diſpatched meſſages to his more intimate confederates, requeſting their advice and aſſiſtance in the preſent critical ſituation of his affairs. They deliberated, whether they ſhould abandon all their projects, and fly the kingdom; or inſtantly ſeize the palace with the force which they could aſſemble; or rely upon the affections of the citizens, who were

[p] Camden, p. 630. Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 464. State Trials. Bacon, vol. IV. p. 542, 543.

CHAP. XLIV.

1600.

generally known to bear a great affection to the earl. Eſſex declared againſt the firſt expedient, and profeſſed himſelf determined to undergo any fate rather than ſubmit to live the life of a fugitive. To ſeize the palace ſeemed impracticable without more preparation; eſpecially as the Queen ſeemed now aware of their projects, and, as they heard, had uſed the precaution of doubling her ordinary guards. There remained, therefore, no other expedient but that of betaking themſelves to the city; and while the prudence and expediency of this reſolution was under debate, a perſon arrived, who, as if he had received a commiſſion for that purpoſe, gave them aſſurance of the affection of the Londoners, and affirmed, that they might ſecurely reſt any project on that foundation. The popularity of Eſſex had chiefly buoyed him up in all his vain undertakings; and he fondly imagined, that with no other aſſiſtance than the good will of the multitude, he might be enabled to overturn Elizabeth's government, confirmed by time, revered for wiſdom, ſupported by vigour, and concurring with the general ſentiments of the nation. The wild project of raiſing the city was immediately reſolved on; the execution of it was delayed till next day; and emiſſaries were diſpatched to all Eſſex's friends, informing them that Cobham and Raleigh had laid ſchemes againſt his life, and entreating their preſence and aſſiſtance.

8th February.

NEXT day, there appeared at Eſſex-houſe the earls of Southampton and Rutland, the lords Sandys and Monteagle, with about three hundred gentlemen of good quality and fortune; and Eſſex informed them of the danger, to which, he pretended, the machinations of his enemies expoſed him. To ſome, he ſaid, that he would throw himſelf at the Queen's feet, and crave her juſtice and protection: To others, he boaſted

of

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

of his intereſt in the city, and affirmed, that, whatever might happen, this reſource could never fail him. The queen was informed of theſe deſigns, by means of intelligence, conveyed, as is ſuppoſed, to Raleigh by Sir Ferdinando Gorges; and having ordered the magiſtrates of London to keep the citizens in readineſs, ſhe ſent Egerton, lord keeper, to Eſſex-houſe, with the earl of Worceſter, Sir William Knollys, controller, and Popham, lord chief juſtice, in order to learn the cauſe of theſe unuſual commotions. They were with difficulty admitted thro' a wicket; but all their ſervants were excluded, except the purſe-bearer. After ſome altercation, in which they charged Eſſex's retainers, upon their allegiance, to lay down their arms, and were menaced in their turn by the angry multitude, who ſurrounded them, the earl, who found, that matters were paſt recal, reſolved to leave them priſoners in his houſe, and to proceed to the execution of his former project. He iſſued out with about two hundred attendants, armed only with ſwords; and in his paſſage to the city was joined by the earl of Bedford and lord Cromwel. He cried aloud, *For the Queen! for the Queen! a plot is laid for my life*; and then proceeded to the houſe of Smith, the ſheriff, on whoſe aid he had great reliance. The citizens flocked about him in amazement; but tho' he told them, that England was ſold to the infanta, and exhorted them to arm inſtantly, otherwiſe they could not do him any ſervice, no one ſhowed a diſpoſition to join him. The ſheriff, on the earl's approach to his houſe, ſtole out at the back door, and made the beſt of his way to the lord mayor. Eſſex, meanwhile, obſerving the coldneſs of the citizens, and hearing, that he was proclaimed a traitor by the earl of Cumberland and lord Burleigh, began

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

began to despair of success, and thought of retreating to his own house. He found the streets in his passage barricadoed, and guarded by the citizens under the command of Sir John Levison. In his attempt to force his way, Tracy, a young gentleman, to whom he bore great friendship, was killed with two or three of the Londoners; and the earl himself, attended by a few of his partizans (for the greatest part began secretly to withdraw themselves) retired towards the river, and taking boat, arrived at Essex-house. He there found, that Gorges, whom he had sent before to capitulate with the lord keeper and the other counsellors, had given them all their liberty, and had gone to court with them. He was now reduced to despair; and appeared determined, in prosecution of lord Sandys's advice, to defend himself to the last extremity, and rather to perish, like a brave man, with his sword in his hand, than basely by the hands of the executioner: But after some parley, and after demanding in vain, first hostages, then conditions, from the besiegers, he surrendered at discretion; requesting only civil treatment, and a fair and impartial hearing [q].

THE Queen, who, during all this commotion, had behaved with as great tranquillity and security, as if there had only passed a fray in the streets, in which she was no way concerned [r], soon gave orders for the trial of the most considerable of the criminals. The earls of Essex and Southampton were arraigned before a jury of twenty-five peers, where Buckhurst acted as lord steward. The guilt of the prisoners was too apparent to admit of any doubt; and, besides the insurrection known to every body, the treasonable con-

19th February. His trial.

[q] Camden, p. 632. [r] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 469.

ferences

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

ferences at Drury-houſe were proved by undoubted evidence. Sir Ferdinando Gorges was produced in court: The confeſſions of the earl of Rutland, of the lords Cromwel, Sandys, and Monteagle, of Davers, Blount, and Davies, were only read to the peers, according to the practice of that age. Eſſex's beſt friends were ſcandalized at his aſſurance in inſiſting ſo poſitively on his innocence, and the goodneſs of his intentions; and ſtill more at his vindictive diſpoſition, in accuſing, without any appearance of reaſon, ſecretary Cecil as partizan of the infanta's title. The ſecretary, who had expected this charge, ſtepped into the court, and challenged Eſſex to produce his authority, which, on examination, was found extremely weak and frivolous[a]. When ſentence was pronounced, Eſſex ſpoke like a man who laid his account to die: But he added, that he ſhould be ſorry, if he was repreſented to the Queen as a perſon that deſpiſed her clemency; tho' he ſhould not, he believed, make any cringing ſubmiſſions to obtain it. Southampton's behaviour was more mild and ſubmiſſive: He entreated the good offices of the peers in ſo modeſt and becoming a manner, as excited compaſſion in every one.

The moſt remarkable circumſtance in Eſſex's trial was Bacon's appearance againſt him. He was none of the crown lawyers; ſo was not obliged by his office to aſſiſt at this trial: Yet did he not ſcruple, in order to obtain the Queen's favour, to be active in bereaving of life his friend and patron, whoſe generoſity he had often experienced. He compared Eſſex's conduct, in pretending to fear the attempts of his adverſaries, to that of Piſiſtratus, the Athenian, who cut and wounded his own body; and making the people

[a] Bacon, vol. IV. p. 530.

believe,

CHAP. XLIV. 1600.

began to despair of success, and thought of retreating to his own house. He found the streets in his passage barricadoed, and guarded by the citizens under the command of Sir John Levison. In his attempt to force his way, Tracy, a young gentleman, to whom he bore great friendship, was killed with two or three of the Londoners; and the earl himself, attended by a few of his partizans (for the greatest part began secretly to withdraw themselves) retired towards the river, and taking boat, arrived at Essex-house. He there found, that Gorges, whom he had sent before to capitulate with the lord keeper and the other counsellors, had given them all their liberty, and had gone to court with them. He was now reduced to despair; and appeared determined, in prosecution of lord Sandys's advice, to defend himself to the last extremity, and rather to perish, like a brave man, with his sword in his hand, than basely by the hands of the executioner: But after some parley, and after demanding in vain, first hostages, then conditions, from the besiegers, he surrendered at discretion; requesting only civil treatment, and a fair and impartial hearing [q].

19th February. His trial.

The Queen, who, during all this commotion, had behaved with as great tranquillity and security, as if there had only passed a fray in the streets, in which she was no way concerned [r], soon gave orders for the trial of the most considerable of the criminals. The earls of Essex and Southampton were arraigned before a jury of twenty-five peers, where Buckhurst acted as lord steward. The guilt of the prisoners was too apparent to admit of any doubt; and, besides the insurrection known to every body, the treasonable con-

[q] Camden, p. 632. [r] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 469.

ferences

CHAP. XLIV. 1601.

ferences at Drury-house were proved by undoubted evidence. Sir Ferdinando Gorges was produced in court: The confessions of the earl of Rutland, of the lords Cromwel, Sandys, and Monteagle, of Davers, Blount, and Davies, were only read to the peers, according to the practice of that age. Essex's best friends were scandalized at his assurance in insisting so positively on his innocence, and the goodness of his intentions; and still more at his vindictive disposition, in accusing, without any appearance of reason, secretary Cecil as partizan of the infanta's title. The secretary, who had expected this charge, stepped into the court, and challenged Essex to produce his authority, which, on examination, was found extremely weak and frivolous[s]. When sentence was pronounced, Essex spoke like a man who laid his account to die: But he added, that he should be sorry, if he was represented to the Queen as a person that despised her clemency; tho' he should not, he believed, make any cringing submissions to obtain it. Southampton's behaviour was more mild and submissive: He entreated the good offices of the peers in so modest and becoming a manner, as excited compassion in every one.

The most remarkable circumstance in Essex's trial was Bacon's appearance against him. He was none of the crown lawyers; so was not obliged by his office to assist at this trial: Yet did he not scruple, in order to obtain the Queen's favour, to be active in bereaving of life his friend and patron, whose generosity he had often experienced. He compared Essex's conduct, in pretending to fear the attempts of his adversaries, to that of Pisistratus, the Athenian, who cut and wounded his own body; and making the people

[s] Bacon, vol. IV. p. 530.

believe,

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

believe, that his enemies had committed that violence, obtained a guard for his perſon, by whoſe aſſiſtance he afterwards ſubdued the liberties of his country.

AFTER Eſſex had paſſed ſome days in the ſolitude and reflexion of a priſon, his proud heart was at laſt ſubdued, not by the fear of death, but by the ſentiments of religion; a principle, which he had before attempted to make the inſtrument of his ambition, but which now took a more firm hold of his mind, and prevailed over every other motive and conſideration. His ſpiritual directors perſuaded him, that he never could obtain the pardon of heaven, unleſs he made a full confeſſion of his diſloyalty; and he gave in to the council an account of all his moſt criminal deſigns, as well as of his correſpondence with the King of Scots. He ſpared not even his moſt intimate friends, ſuch as lord Mountjoy, whom he had engaged in theſe conſpiracies; and he ſought to pacify his preſent remorſe, by making ſuch attonements as in any other period of his life, he would have deemed more blameable than thoſe attempts themſelves, which were the objects of his penitence [t]. Sir Harry Nevil, in particular, a man of merit, he accuſed of a correſpondence with the conſpirators; tho' it appears, that that gentleman had never aſſented to the propoſals made him, and was no farther criminal than in not revealing the earl's treaſon; an office to which every man of honour naturally bears the ſtrongeſt reluctance [u]. Nevil was thrown into priſon, and underwent a ſevere perſecution: But as the Queen found Mountjoy a very able and ſucceſsful commander, ſhe continued him in his government, and ſacrificed her reſentment to the public ſervice.

[t] Winwood, vol. I. p. 300.

[u] Winwood, vol. I. p. 302.

ELIZABETH

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

ELIZABETH affected extremely the praiſe of clemency; and in every great example, which ſhe had made during her reign, ſhe had always appeared full of reluctance and heſitation: But the preſent ſituation of Eſſex called forth all her tender affections, and kept her in the moſt real agitation and irreſolution. She felt a perpetual combat between reſentment and inclination, pride and compaſſion, the care of her own ſafety and concern for her favourite; and her ſituation, during this interval, was perhaps more an object of pity, than that to which Eſſex himſelf was reduced. She ſigned the warrant for his execution; ſhe countermanded it; ſhe again reſolved on his death; ſhe felt a new return of tenderneſs. Eſſex's enemies told her, that he himſelf deſired to die, and had aſſured her, that ſhe could never be in ſafety while he lived: It is likely, that this proof of penitence and of concern for her, would operate a contrary effect to what they intended, and would revive all that fond affection, which ſhe had ſo long indulged to the unhappy priſoner. But what chiefly hardened her heart againſt him was his ſuppoſed obſtinacy, in never making, as ſhe hourly expected, any application to her for mercy and forgiveneſs; and ſhe finally gave her conſent to his execution. He diſcovered at his death ſymptoms rather of penitence and piety than of fear; and willingly acknowledged the juſtice of the ſentence, by which he ſuffered. The execution was private in the Tower, agreeable to his own requeſt. He was apprehenſive, he ſaid, leſt the favour and compaſſion of the people would too much raiſe his heart in thoſe moments when humiliation under the afflicting hand of heaven was the only proper ſentiment, which he could

25th February.

And execution.

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

could indulge [x]. And the Queen, no doubt, thought, that prudence required the removal of so melancholy a spectacle from the public eye. Sir Walter Raleigh, who came to the Tower on purpose, and who beheld Essex's execution from a window, encreased much by this action the general hatred, under which he already laboured: It was thought, that he had no other purpose than to feast his eyes with the death of his enemy; and no apology, which he could make for so exceptionable a conduct, could be accepted by the public. The cruelty and animosity, with which he urged on Essex's fate, even when Cecil relented [y], were still regarded as the principles of this unmanly and ungenerous behaviour.

THE earl of Essex was but thirty-four years of age, when his rashness, imprudence, and violence brought him to this untimely end. We must here, as in many other instances, lament the inconstancy of human nature, that a person endowed with so many noble virtues, generosity, sincerity, friendship, valour, eloquence, and industry, should in the latter period of his life have given such reins to his ungovernable passions, as involved, not only himself, but many of his friends, in utter ruin. The Queen's tenderness and passion for him, as it was the cause of those premature honours, which he attained, seems, on the whole, the chief circumstance which brought on his destruction. Confident of her partiality towards him, as well as of his own merit, he treated her with a haughtiness, which neither her love nor her dignity could bear; and as her amorous inclinations in so advanced an age, would naturally make her appear ri-

[x] Dr. Barlow's sermon on Essex's execution. Bacon, vol. IV. p. 534.
[y] Murdin, p. 811.

diculous

1601.

diculous, if not hateful in his eyes, he was engaged, by an imprudent openneſs, of which he made profeſſion, to diſcover too eaſily thoſe ſentiments to her. The many reconciliations and returns of affection, of which he had ſtill made advantage, induced him to venture on new provocations, till he puſhed her beyond all bounds of patience; and he forgot, that, tho' the ſentiments of the woman were ever ſtrong in her, thoſe of the ſovereign had ſtill in the end appeared predominant.

Some of Eſſex's aſſociates, Cuffe, Davers, Blount, Meric, and Davis were tried and condemned, and all of them, except Davis, were executed. The Queen pardoned the reſt; being perſuaded that they were drawn in merely from their friendſhip to that nobleman, and their care of his ſafety; and were ignorant of the more criminal part of his intentions. Southampton's life was ſpared with great difficulty; but he was detained in priſon during all the remainder of this reign.

The King of Scots, who was apprehenſive leſt his correſpondence with Eſſex might have been diſcovered, and have given offence to Elizabeth, ſent the earl of Marre and the lord Kinloſs as ambaſſadors to England, in order to congratulate the Queen on her eſcape from the late inſurrection and conſpiracy. They were alſo ordered to enquire whether any meaſures had been taken by her to exclude him from the ſucceſſion, as well as to diſcover the inclinations of the chief nobility and counſellors, in caſe of the Queen's demiſe [z]. They found the diſpoſitions of men as favourable as they could wiſh; and they even entered into a correſpondence with ſecretary Cecil, whoſe influence, after the fall of Eſſex, was now uncontrouled [a],

[z] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 510. [a] Oſborne, p. 615.

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

and who was resolved, by this policy, to acquire, in time, the confidence of the successor. He knew how jealous Elizabeth ever was of her authority, and he therefore carefully concealed from her his attachment to James: But he afterwards asserted, that nothing could be more advantageous to her, than this correspondence; because the King of Scots, secure of mounting the throne by his undoubted title, aided by those connexions with the English ministry, was the less likely to give any disturbance to the present sovereign. He also persuaded that prince to remain in quiet, and patiently to expect, that time should open to him the inheritance of the throne, without pushing his friends on desperate enterprizes which would totally incapacitate them from serving him. James's equity, as well as his natural facility of disposition, easily inclined him to embrace this resolution [b]; and thus the minds of the English were silently, but universally disposed to admit, without opposition the succession of the Scottish line: The death of Essex, by putting an end to faction, had been rather favourable than prejudicial to that great event.

THE King of France, who was little prepossessed in favour of James, and who was averse to the union of England and Scotland [c], made his ambassador drop some hints to Cecil of Henry's willingness to concur in any measure for disappointing the hopes of the Scottish monarch; but as Cecil showed an entire disapprobation of such schemes; the court of France took no farther steps in that matter; and thus the only foreign power, which could give much disturbance to James's succession, was induced to acquiesce in it [d].

French affairs.

Henry made a journey this summer to Calais; and the Queen, hearing of his intentions, went to Dover,

[b] Spotswood, p. 471, 472. [c] Winwood, vol. I. p. 352. [d] Spotswood, p. 475.

in

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

in hopes of having a personal interview with a monarch, whom, of all others, she most loved and most respected. The French King, who felt the same sentiments towards her, would gladly have accepted of the proposal; but as many difficulties occurred, it appeared necessary to lay aside, by common consent, the project of an interview. Elizabeth, however, wrote successively two letters to Henry, one by Edmondes, another by Sir Robert Sydney, in which she expressed a desire of conferring about a business of importance, with some minister in whom that prince reposed entire confidence. The marquess of Rhoni, the King's favourite and prime minister, came to Dover in disguise; and the memoirs of that able statesman contain a full account of his conversation with Elizabeth. That magnanimous princess had formed a scheme of establishing, in conjunction with Henry, a new system of policy in Europe, and of fixing a durable ballance of power, by the erection of new states on the ruins of the house of Austria. She had even the wisdom to foresee the perils, which might ensue from the aggrandizement of her ally; and she proposed to unite all the seventeen provinces of the Low Countries into one republic, in order to form a perpetual barrier against the dangerous encrease of the French, as well as of the Spanish, monarchy. Henry had himself long meditated such a project against the Austrian family; and Rhoni could not forbear expressing his astonishment, when he found that Elizabeth and his master, tho' they had never communicated their thoughts on this subject, had not only entered into the same general views, but had also formed the same project for their execution. The affairs, however, of France were not yet brought to a situation, which might enable Henry to begin that great enterprize; and Rhoni satisfied the Queen, that it would be ne-

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

and who was resolved, by this policy, to acquire, in time, the confidence of the successor. He knew how jealous Elizabeth ever was of her authority, and he therefore carefully concealed from her his attachment to James: But he afterwards asserted, that nothing could be more advantageous to her, than this correspondence; because the King of Scots, secure of mounting the throne by his undoubted title, aided by those connexions with the English ministry, was the less likely to give any disturbance to the present sovereign. He also persuaded that prince to remain in quiet, and patiently to expect, that time should open to him the inheritance of the throne, without pushing his friends on desperate enterprizes which would totally incapacitate them from serving him. James's equity, as well as his natural facility of disposition, easily inclined him to embrace this resolution [b]; and thus the minds of the English were silently, but universally disposed to admit, without opposition the succession of the Scottish line: The death of Essex, by putting an end to faction, had been rather favourable than prejudicial to that great event.

THE King of France, who was little prepossessed in favour of James, and who was averse to the union of England and Scotland [c], made his ambassador drop some hints to Cecil of Henry's willingness to concur in any measure for disappointing the hopes of the Scottish monarch; but as Cecil showed an entire disapprobation of such schemes; the court of France took no farther steps in that matter; and thus the only foreign power, which could give much disturbance to James's succession, was induced to acquiesce in it [d].

French affairs.

Henry made a journey this summer to Calais; and the Queen, hearing of his intentions, went to Dover,

[b] Spotswood, p. 471, 472. [c] Winwood, vol. I. p. 352. [d] Spotswood, p. 475.

in

in hopes of having a perſonal interview with a monarch, whom, of all others, ſhe moſt loved and moſt reſpected. The French King, who felt the ſame ſentiments towards her, would gladly have accepted of the propoſal; but as many difficulties occurred, it appeared neceſſary to lay aſide, by common conſent, the project of an interview. Elizabeth, however, wrote ſucceſſively two letters to Henry, one by Edmondes, another by Sir Robert Sydney, in which ſhe expreſſed a deſire of conferring about a buſineſs of importance, with ſome miniſter in whom that prince repoſed entire confidence. The marquefs of Rhoni, the King's favourite and prime miniſter, came to Dover in diſguiſe; and the memoirs of that able ſtateſman contain a full account of his converſation with Elizabeth. That magnanimous princeſs had formed a ſcheme of eſtabliſhing, in conjunction with Henry, a new ſyſtem of policy in Europe, and of fixing a durable ballance of power, by the erection of new ſtates on the ruins of the houſe of Auſtria. She had even the wiſdom to foreſee the perils, which might enſue from the aggrandizement of her ally; and ſhe propoſed to unite all the ſeventeen provinces of the Low Countries into one republic, in order to form a perpetual barrier againſt the dangerous encreaſe of the French, as well as of the Spaniſh, monarchy. Henry had himſelf long meditated ſuch a project againſt the Auſtrian family; and Rhoni could not forbear expreſſing his aſtoniſhment, when he found that Elizabeth and his maſter, tho' they had never communicated their thoughts on this ſubject, had not only entered into the ſame general views, but had alſo formed the ſame project for their execution. The affairs, however, of France were not yet brought to a ſituation, which might enable Henry to begin that great enterprize; and Rhoni ſatisfied the Queen, that it would be ne-

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

ceſſary to poſtpone for ſome years their united attack on the houſe of Auſtria. He departed, filled with juſt admiration of the ſolidity of Elizabeth's judgment, and the greatneſs of her mind; and he owns that ſhe was entirely worthy of that high reputation, which ſhe poſſeſſed in Europe.

THE Queen's magnanimity in forming ſuch extenſive projects was the more remarkable, as, beſides her having fallen ſo far into the decline of life, the affairs of Ireland, tho' conducted with ability and ſucceſs, were ſtill in diſorder, and made a great diverſion of her forces. The expence incurred by this war lay heavy upon her narrow revenues; and her miniſters, taking advantage of her great diſpoſition to frugality, propoſed to her an expedient of ſaving, which, tho' ſhe at firſt diſapproved of it, ſhe was at laſt induced to embrace. It was repreſented to her, that the great ſums of money remitted to Ireland for the pay of the Engliſh forces, came, by the neceſſary courſe of circulation, into the hands of the rebels, and enabled them to buy abroad all neceſſary ſupplies of arms and ammunition, which, from the extreme poverty of that kingdom and its want of every uſeful commodity, they could not otherwiſe find means to purchaſe. It was therefore propoſed to her, that ſhe ſhould pay her forces in money of a baſe alloy; and it was aſſerted, that, beſides the great ſaving to the revenue, this ſpecies of coin could never be exported with advantage, and would not paſs in any foreign market. Some of the wiſer counſellors maintained, that, if the pay of the ſoldiers was raiſed in proportion, the Iriſh rebels would neceſſarily reap the ſame benefit from the baſe money, which would always be taken at a rate ſuitable to its value; if the pay was not raiſed, there was danger of a mutiny among the troops, who, whatever names might be affixed to the pieces of metal, would ſoon find from experience that they were defrauded in their income.

income [e]. But Elizabeth, tho' she justly valued herself, on fixing the standard of the English coin, much debased by her predecessors, and had innovated very little in that delicate article, was seduced by the specious arguments employed by the lord treasurer on this occasion; and she coined a great quantity of base money, which she made use of in the pay of her forces in Ireland [f].

Mountjoy's success in Ireland.

Mountjoy, the deputy, was a man of great ability; and foreseeing the danger of mutiny among the troops, he led them instantly into the field, and resolved, by means of strict discipline, and by keeping them employed against the enemy, to obviate those inconveniencies, which were justly apprehended. He made military roads, and built a fortress at Moghery; he drove the Mac-Genises out of Lecale; he harrassed Tyrone in Ulster with inroads and lesser expeditions; and by destroying, every where, and during all seasons, the provisions of the Irish, he reduced them to perish with famine in the woods and morasses, to which they were obliged to retreat. At the same time, Sir Henry Docwray, who commanded another body of troops, took the castle of Derry, and put garrisons into Newton and Ainogh; and having seized the monastery of Donnegal near Balishannon, he threw troops into it, and defended it against the assaults of O'Donnel and the Irish. Nor was Sir George Carew idle in the province of Munster. He seized the titular earl of Desmond, and sent him over, with Florence Macarty, another chieftain, prisoner to England. He arrested many suspected persons, and took hostages from others. And having got a reinforcement of two thousand men from England, he threw himself into Corke, which he supplied with arms and provisions; and he put

[e] Camden, p. 643. [f] Rymer, tom. XVI. p. 414.

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

ceſſary to poſtpone for ſome years their united attack on the houſe of Auſtria. He departed, filled with juſt admiration of the ſolidity of Elizabeth's judgment, and the greatneſs of her mind; and he owns that ſhe was entirely worthy of that high reputation, which ſhe poſſeſſed in Europe.

THE Queen's magnanimity in forming ſuch extenſive projects was the more remarkable, as, beſides her having fallen ſo far into the decline of life, the affairs of Ireland, tho' conducted with ability and ſucceſs, were ſtill in diſorder, and made a great diverſion of her forces. The expence incurred by this war lay heavy upon her narrow revenues; and her miniſters, taking advantage of her great diſpoſition to frugality, propoſed to her an expedient of ſaving, which, tho' ſhe at firſt diſapproved of it, ſhe was at laſt induced to embrace. It was repreſented to her, that the great ſums of money remitted to Ireland for the pay of the Engliſh forces, came, by the neceſſary courſe of circulation, into the hands of the rebels, and enabled them to buy abroad all neceſſary ſupplies of arms and ammunition, which, from the extreme poverty of that kingdom and its want of every uſeful commodity, they could not otherwiſe find means to purchaſe. It was therefore propoſed to her, that ſhe ſhould pay her forces in money of a baſe alloy; and it was aſſerted, that, beſides the great ſaving to the revenue, this ſpecies of coin could never be exported with advantage, and would not paſs in any foreign market. Some of the wiſer counſellors maintained, that, if the pay of the ſoldiers was raiſed in proportion, the Iriſh rebels would neceſſarily reap the ſame benefit from the baſe money, which would always be taken at a rate ſuitable to its value; if the pay was not raiſed, there was danger of a mutiny among the troops, who, whatever names might be affixed to the pieces of metal, would ſoon find from experience that they were defrauded in their income.

1601.

income [e]. But Elizabeth, tho' she justly valued herself, on fixing the standard of the English coin, much debased by her predecessors, and had innovated very little in that delicate article, was seduced by the specious arguments employed by the lord treasurer on this occasion; and she coined a great quantity of base money, which she made use of in the pay of her forces in Ireland [f].

Mountjoy's success in Ireland.

Mountjoy, the deputy, was a man of great ability; and foreseeing the danger of mutiny among the troops, he led them instantly into the field, and resolved, by means of strict discipline, and by keeping them employed against the enemy, to obviate those inconveniencies, which were justly apprehended. He made military roads, and built a fortress at Moghery; he drove the Mac-Genises out of Lecale; he harrassed Tyrone in Ulster with inroads and lesser expeditions; and by destroying, every where, and during all seasons, the provisions of the Irish, he reduced them to perish with famine in the woods and morasses, to which they were obliged to retreat. At the same time, Sir Henry Docwray, who commanded another body of troops, took the castle of Derry, and put garrisons into Newton and Ainogh; and having seized the monastery of Donnegal near Balishannon, he threw troops into it, and defended it against the assaults of O'Donnel and the Irish. Nor was Sir George Carew idle in the province of Munster. He seized the titular earl of Desmond, and sent him over, with Florence Macarty, another chieftain, prisoner to England. He arrested many suspected persons, and took hostages from others. And having got a reinforcement of two thousand men from England, he threw himself into Corke, which he supplied with arms and provisions; and he put every

[e] Camden, p. 643. [f] Rymer, tom. XVI. p. 414.

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

every thing in a condition for resisting the Spanish invasion, which was daily expected. The deputy, informed of the danger, to which the southern provinces were exposed, left the prosecution of the war against Tyrone, who was reduced to great extremity, and he marched with his army into Munster.

23d September.

At last, the Spaniards, under Don John d'Aquila, arrived at Kingsale; and Sir Richard Piercy, who commanded in the town with a small garrison of an hundred and fifty men, found himself obliged to abandon it on their appearance. These invaders amounted to four thousand men, and the Irish expressed a great desire to join them, in order to free themselves from the English government, with which they were extremely discontented. One chief ground of their complaint was the introduction of their trials by jury[g]; an institution, abhorred by this barbarous nation, tho' nothing contributes more to the support of that equity and liberty, for which the English laws are so justly celebrated. The Irish also bore a great favour to the Spaniards, having entertained the opinion that they themselves were descended from that nation; and their attachment to the catholic religion proved a new cause of affection to the invaders. D'Aquila assumed the title of general *in the holy war for the preservation of the faith* in Ireland, and he endeavoured to persuade the people, that Queen Elizabeth was, by several bulls of the pope, deprived of her crown, that her subjects were absolved from their oaths of allegiance; and that the Spaniards were come to deliver the Irish from the power of the devil[h]. Mountjoy found it necessary to act with vigour, in order to prevent a total insurrection of the Irish; and having gathered

[g] Camden, p. 644. [h] Camden, p. 645.

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

thered together his forces, he formed the ſiege of Kinſale by land; while Sir Richard Leviſon, with a ſmall ſquadron, blockaded it by ſea. He had no ſooner begun his operations than he heard of the arrival of another body of two thouſand Spaniards under the command of Alphonſo Ocampo, who had taken poſſeſſion of Baltimore and Berehaven; and he found himſelf obliged to detach Sir George Carew to oppoſe their progreſs. Tyrone, meanwhile, with Randal, Mac-Surley, Tirel baron of Kelley, and other chieftains of the Iriſh, had joined Ocampo with all their forces, and were marching to the relief of Kinſale. The deputy, informed of their deſign by intercepted letters, made preparations to receive them; and being joined by Leviſon with ſix hundred marines, he poſted his troops on an advantageous ground, which lay on their paſſage, leaving ſome cavalry to prevent a ſally from D'Aquila and the Spaniſh garriſon. When Tyrone, with a body of Iriſh and Spaniards, approached, he was ſurprized to find the Engliſh ſo well poſted, and ranged in ſuch good order; and he immediately ſounded a retreat: But the deputy gave orders to purſue him; and having thrown theſe advanced troops into diſorder, he followed them to the main body, whom he alſo attacked, and put to flight, with the ſlaughter of twelve hundred men[1]. Ocampo was taken priſoner; Tyrone fled into Ulſter; Odonel made his eſcape into Spain; and D'Aquila, finding himſelf reduced to the greateſt difficulties, was obliged to capitulate upon ſuch terms as the deputy preſcribed to him: He ſurrendered Kinſale and Baltimore, and agreed to evacuate the kingdom. This great blow, joined to other ſucceſſes, gained by Wilmot, governor of Kerry, and by Roger and Gavin Harvey, threw the rebels into diſmay, and gave a proſpect of the final reduction of that Kingdom.

[1] Winwood, vol. I. p. 369.

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

THE Irish war, tho' successful, was extremely burthensome on the Queen's revenue; and besides the supplies granted by Parliament, which were indeed very small, but which they ever regarded as mighty concessions, she had been obliged, notwithstanding her great frugality, to employ other expedients, such as selling the royal demesnes and crown jewels [k], and exacting loans from the people [l], in order to support this cause, so essential to the honour and interests of England. The necessity of her affairs obliged her again to summon a Parliament; and it here appeared, that, tho' old age was advancing fast upon her, tho' she had lost much of her popularity by the unfortunate execution of Essex, insomuch that, when she appeared in public, she was not attended with the usual acclamations [m], yet the powers of her prerogative, supported by her vigour, still remained as high and uncontroulable as ever.

27 October. A Parliament.

THE active reign of Elizabeth had enabled many persons to distinguish themselves in civil and military employments; and the Queen, who was not able, from her revenue, to give them any rewards proportioned to their services, had made use of an expedient, which had been employed by her predecessors, but which had never been carried to such an extreme as under her administration. She granted her servants and courtiers patents for monopolies; and these patents they sold to others, who were thereby enabled to raise commodities to what price they pleased, and who put invincible restraints upon all commerce, industry, and emulation. It is astonishing to consider the number and importance of those commodities, which were thus assigned over to patentees. Currants, salt, iron, powder, cards,

[k] D'Ewes, p. 629. [l] Ibid. [m] Ibid, p. 602. Osborne, p. 604.

cards, calf-skins, fells, pouldavies, ox-shin-bones, train oil, lists of cloth, pot-ashes, annis-seeds, vinegar, sea-coals, steel, aquavitæ, brushes, pots, bottles, salt-petre, lead, accidences, oil, calamint-stone, oil of blubber, glasses, paper, starch, tin, sulphur, new drapery, dried pilchards, transportation of iron ordnance, of beer, of horn, of leather, importation of Spanish wools, of irish yarn[n]. These are but a part of the commodities, which had been consigned over to monopolists[o]. When this list was read over in the house, a member cried out, *Is not bread in the number?* *Bread*, said every one with astonishment: *Yes, I assure you*, replied he, *if affairs go on at this rate, we shall have bread reduced to a monopoly before next Parliament*[p]. These monopolists were so exorbitant in their demands, that in some places they raised the price of salt, from sixteen pence a bushel, to fourteen or fifteen shillings[q]. Such high profits naturally begot intruders upon their commerce; and in order to secure themselves against encroachments, the patentees were armed with high and arbitrary powers from the council, by which they were enabled to oppress the people at pleasure, and to exact money from such as they thought proper to accuse of interfering with their patent[r]. The patentees of salt-petre, having the power of entering into every house, and of committing what havock they pleased in stables, cellars, or where-ever they suspected salt-petre might be gathered; commonly extorted money from those who desired to free themselves from this damage or trouble[s]. And while all domestic intercourse was thus restrained, lest any scope should remain for industry, almost every species of foreign commerce was confined to exclusive companies, who

CHAP. XLIV. 1601.

[n] D'Ewes, p. 648, 650, 652. [o] Ibid. p. 648. [p] Ibid. p. 647.
[q] Ibid. p. 644, 646, 652. [r] D'Ewes, p. 653.

bought

CHAP. XLIV. 1601.

bought and sold at any price, that they themselves thought proper to offer or exact.

THESE grievances, the most intolerable for the present, and the most pernicious in their consequences, that ever were known in any age or under any government, had been mentioned in the last Parliament, and a petition had even been presented to the Queen, complaining of the patents; but she still persisted in defending her monopolists against her people. A bill was now introduced into the lower house, abolishing all these monopolies; and as the former application had been unsuccessful, a law was insisted on as the only certain expedient for correcting these abuses. The courtiers, on the other hand, maintained, that this matter regarded the prerogative, and that the commons could never hope for success, if they did not make application, in the most humble and respectful manner, to the Queen's goodness and beneficence. The topics, which were advanced in the house, and which came equally from the courtiers and the country gentlemen, and were admitted by both, will appear the most extraordinary to such as are prepossessed with an idea of the privileges enjoyed by the people during this age, and of the liberty possessed under the administration of Elizabeth. It was asserted, that the Queen inherited both an enlarging and a restraining power; by her prerogative she might set at liberty what was restrained by statute or otherwise, and by her prerogative she might restrain what was otherwise at liberty [s]: That the royal prerogative was not to be canvassed nor disputed nor examined [t]; and did not even admit of any limitation [u]: That absolute princes, such as the sovereigns of England, were a species of divinity [x]. That it was in vain to attempt tying the

[s] Ibid. p. 644. 675. [t] Ibid. p. 644. 649. [u] Ibid. p. 646. 654. [x] Ibid. p. 649.

Queen's

Queen's hands by laws or ſtatutes; ſince, by means of her diſpenſing power, ſhe could looſen herſelf at her pleaſure [y]: That even if a clauſe ſhould be annexed to a ſtatute, excluding her diſpenſing power; ſhe could firſt diſpenſe with that clauſe, and then with the ſtatute [z]. After all this diſcourſe, more worthy of a Turkiſh divan than of an Engliſh houſe of commons, according to our preſent idea of this aſſembly, the Queen, who perceived how odious monopolies had become, and what heats were likely to riſe, ſent for the ſpeaker, and deſired him to inform the houſe, that ſhe would immediately cancel the moſt grievous and oppreſſive of theſe patents [a].

[y] Ibid. [z] Ibid. p. 640, 646.

[a] It may not be amiſs to ſubjoin ſome paſſages of theſe ſpeeches; which may ſerve very much to give us a juſt idea of the government of that age and of the political principles, which prevailed during the reign of Elizabeth. Mr. Laurence Hyde propoſed a bill, entituled, an act for the explanation of the common law in certain caſes of letters patent. Mr. Spicer ſaid, This bill may touch the prerogative-royal, which, as I learned the laſt Parliament, is ſo tranſcendant, that the —— of the ſubject may not aſpire thereunto. Far be it therefore from me, that the ſtate and prerogative-royal of the prince ſhould be tied by me, or by the act of any other ſubject. Mr. Francis Bacon ſaid, As to the prerogative royal of the Prince, for my own part, I ever allowed of it; and it is ſuch as I hope will never be diſcuſſed. The Queen, as ſhe is our ſovereign, hath both an enlarging and reſtraining power. For by her prerogative ſhe may ſet at liberty things reſtrained by ſtatute law or otherwiſe, and ſecondly by her prerogative ſhe may reſtrain things which be at liberty. For the firſt, ſhe may grant a *non obſtante* contrary to the penal laws.—— With regard to monopolies and ſuch like caſes, the caſe hath ever been to humble ourſelves unto her Majeſty, and by petition deſire to have our grievances remedied, eſpecially when the remedy toucheth her ſo nigh in point of prerogative—I ſay, and I ſay it again, that we ought not to deal, to judge, or meddle with her majeſty's prerogative. I wiſh therefore every man to be careful of this buſineſs. Dr. Bennet ſaid, He that goeth about to debate her majeſty's prerogative had need to walk warily. Mr. Laurence Hyde ſaid, For the bill itſelf, I made it, and I think I underſtand it: And far be it from this heart of mine to think, this tongue to ſpeak, or this hand to write any thing either in prejudice or derogation of her majeſty's prerogative-royal and the ſtate.—— Mr. Speaker, quoth ſerjeant Harris, for ought I ſee, the houſe moveth to have this bill in the nature of a petition. It muſt

THE

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

THE houſe was ſtruck with aſtoniſhment, and admiration, and gratitude at this extraordinary inſtance

then begin with more humiliation. And truly, Sir, the bill is good of itſelf, but the perming of it is ſomewhat out of courſe. Mr. Montague ſaid, The matter is good and honeſt, and I like this manner of proceeding by bill well enough in this matter. The grievances are great, and I would note only unto you thus much, that the laſt Parliament we proceeded by way of petition, which had no ſucceſsful effect. Mr. Francis Moore ſaid, I know the Queen's prerogative is a thing curious to be dealt withal; yet all grievances are not comparable. I cannot utter with my tongue or conceive with my heart the great grievances that the town and country, for which I ſerve, ſuffereth by ſome of theſe monopolies. It bringeth the general profit in a private hand, and the end of all this is beggary and bondage to the ſubjects. We have a law for the true and faithful carrying of leather: There is a patent ſets all at liberty, notwithſtanding that ſtatute. And to what purpoſe is it to do any thing by act of Parliament, when the Queen will undo the ſame by her prerogative? Out of the ſpirit of humiliation, Mr. Speaker, I do ſpeak it, there is no act of her's that hath been or is more derogatory to her own majeſty, more odious to the ſubject, more dangerous to the commonwealth than the granting of theſe monopolies. Mr. Martin ſaid, I do ſpeak for a town that grieves and pines, for a country that groaneth and languiſheth under the burthen of monſtrous and unconſcionable ſubſtitutes to the monopolitans of ſtarch, tin, fiſh, cloth, oil, vinegar, ſalt, and I know not what; nay, what not? The principaleſt commodities both of my town and country are engroſt into the hands of theſe blood ſuckers of the commonwealth. If a body, Mr. Speaker, being let blood, be left ſtill languiſhing without any remedy, how can the good eſtate of that body ſtill remain? Such is the ſtate of my town and country; the traffic is taken away, the inward and private commodities are taken away, and dare not be uſed without the licence of theſe monopolitans. If theſe blood-ſuckers be ſtill let alone to ſuck up the beſt and principaleſt commodities, which the earth there hath given us, what will become of us, from whom the fruits of our own ſoil and the commodities of our own labour, which with the ſweat of our brows, even up to the knees in mire and dirt, we have laboured for, ſhall be taken by warrant of ſupreme authority, which the poor ſubject dare not gainſay? Mr. George Moore ſaid, We know the power of her majeſty cannot be reſtrained by any act; why therefore ſhould we thus talk? Admit we ſhould make this ſtatute with a *non obſtante*; yet the Queen may grant a patent with a *non obſtante* to croſs this *non obſtante*. I think therefore it agreeth more with the gravity and wiſdom of this houſe to proceed with all humbleneſs by petition than bill. Mr. Downland ſaid, As I would be no let or over-vehement in any thing, ſo I am not ſottiſh or ſenſeleſs of the common grievance of the commonwealth. If we proceed by way of petition, we can have no more gracious anſwer, than we had the laſt Parlia-

of

CHAP. XLIV. 1601.

of the Queen's goodneſs and condeſcenſion. A member ſaid, with tears in his eyes, that if a ſentence of ment to our petition. But ſince that Parliament, we have no reformation. Sir Robert Wroth ſaid, I ſpeak, and I ſpeak it boldly, theſe patentees are worſe than ever they were. Mr. Hayward Townſend propoſed, that they ſhould make ſuit to her majeſty, not only to repeal all monopolies grievous to the ſubject, but alſo that it would pleaſe her majeſty to give the Parliament leave to make an act, that they might be of no more force, validity, or effect, than they are at the common law, without the ſtrength of her prerogative. Which tho' we might now do, and the act being ſo reaſonable, we might aſſure ourſelves her majeſty would not delay the paſſing thereof, yet we, her loving ſubjects, &c. would not offer without her privity and conſent (the cauſe ſo nearly touching her prerogative) or go about to do any ſuch act.

On a ſubſequent day, the bill againſt monopolies was again introduced, and Mr. Spicer ſaid, It is to no purpoſe to offer to tie her majeſty's hands by act of parliament, when ſhe may looſen herſelf at her pleaſure. Mr. Davies ſaid, God hath given that power to abſolute princes, which he attributes to himſelf. *Dixi quod Diiſtis.* (N. B. This axiom he applies to the Kings of England.) Mr. ſecretary Cecil ſaid, I am ſervant to the Queen, and before I would ſpeak and give conſent to a caſe that ſhould debaſe her prerogative, or abridge it, I would wiſh that my tongue were cut out of my head. I am ſure there were law-makers before there were laws: (Meaning, I ſuppoſe, that the ſovereign was above the laws.) One gentleman went about to poſſeſs us, with the execution of the law in an ancient record of 5 or 7 of Edward the third. Likely enough to be true in that time, when the King was afraid of the ſubject. If you ſtand upon law, and diſpute of the prerogative, hark ye what Bracton ſays, *Prærogativam noſtram nemo audeat diſputare.* And for my own part, I like not theſe comma's ſhould be taken. And you, Mr. Speaker, ſhould perform the charge her majeſty gave unto you, in the beginning of this Parliament, not to receive bills of this nature: For her majeſty's ears be open to all grievances, and her hands ſtretched out to every man's petitions. When the prince diſpenſes with a penal law, that is left to the alteration of ſovereignty, that is good and irrevocable. Mr. Montague ſaid, I am loth to ſpeak what I know, leſt perhaps, I ſhould diſpleaſe. The prerogative royal is that which is now in queſtion, and which the laws of the land have ever allowed and maintained. Let us therefore apply by petition to her majeſty.

After the ſpeaker told the houſe that the Queen had annulled many of the patents, Mr. Francis Moore ſaid, I muſt confeſs, Mr. Speaker, I moved the houſe both the laſt Parliament and this, touching this point; but I never meant (and I hope the houſe thinketh ſo) to ſet limits and bounds to the prerogative royal. He proceeds to move, that thanks ſhould be given to her majeſty; and alſo, that whereas divers ſpeeches have been moved extravagantly in the houſe, which doubtleſs have been told her majeſty, and per-

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

everlasting happiness had been pronounced in his favour, he could have felt more joy than that with which he was at present overwhelmed [b]. Another observed,

haps ill conceived of by her, Mr. Speaker would apologize, and humbly crave pardon for the same. N. B. These extracts were taken by Townsend, a member of the house, who was no courtier; and the extravagance of the speeches seems rather to be on the other side: It will certainly appear odd to us, that this liberty should be thought extravagant. However, the Queen, notwithstanding her cajoling the house, was so ill satisfied with these proceedings, that she spoke of them peevishly in her concluding speech, and told them, that she perceived, that private respects with them were privately masqued under public presence. D'Ewes, p. 619.

There were some other topics, in favour of prerogative, still more extravagant, advanced in the house this parliament. When the question of the subsidy was before them, Mr. serjeant Heyle said, Mr. Speaker, I marvel much, that the house should stand upon granting of a subsidy or the time of payment, when all we have is her majesty's and she may lawfully at her pleasure take it from us; Yea, she hath as much right to all our lands and goods as to any revenue of her crown. At which all the house hemmed, and laughed, and talked. Well, quoth serjeant Heyle, all your hemming shall not put me out of countenance. So Mr. Speaker stood up and said, It is a great disorder, that this should be used. — So the said serjeant proceeded, and when he had spoken a little while, the house hemmed again; and so he sat down. In his latter speech, he said, he could prove his former position by precedents in the time of Henry the third, King John, King Stephen, &c, which was the occasion of their hemming. D'Ewes, p. 633. It is observable, that Heyle was an eminent lawyer, a man of character, Winwood, vol. I. p. 290. And tho' the house in general shewed their disapprobation, no one cared to take him down, or oppose these extravagant positions. It was also asserted this session, that in the same manner as the Roman consul was possessed of the power of rejecting or admitting motions in the senate, the Speaker might either admit or reject bills in the house. D'Ewes, p. 677. The house declared themselves against this opinion; but the very proposal of it is a proof at what a low ebb liberty was at that time in England.

In the year 1591, the judges made a solemn decree, that England was an absolute empire, of which the King was the head. In consequence of this opinion, they determined, that even if the act of the first of Elizabeth had never been made, the King was supreme head of the church; and might have erected, by his prerogative, such a court as the ecclesiastical commission: For that he was the head of all his subjects. Now that court was plainly arbitrary: The inference is, that his power was equally absolute over the laity. See Coke's Reports, p. 5. Caudrey's case.

[b] D'Ewes, p. 654.

that

that this meſſage from the ſacred perſon of the Queen, was a kind of goſpel or glad-tidings, and ought to be received as ſuch, and be written in the tablets of their hearts [c]. And it was farther remarked, that in the ſame manner as the Deity would not give his glory to another, ſo the Queen herſelf was the only agent in their preſent proſperity and happineſs [d]. The houſe voted, that the ſpeaker, with a certain number of members, ſhould aſk permiſſion to wait on her majeſty, and return her thanks for her gracious conceſſions to her people.

When the ſpeaker, with the other members, was introduced to the Queen, they all flung themſelves on their knees; and remained in that poſture a conſiderable time, till ſhe thought proper to expreſs her deſire, that they ſhould riſe. The ſpeaker diſplayed the gratitude of the commons, on account that her ſacred ears were ever open to hear them, and her bleſſed hands ever ſtretched out to relieve them. They acknowleged, he ſaid, in all duty and thankfulneſs acknowleged, that, before they called, her *preventing grace*, and *all-deſerving goodneſs* watched over them for their good; more ready to give than they could deſire, much leſs deſerve. He remarked, that the attribute which was moſt proper to God, to perform all he promiſeth, appertained alſo to her; and that ſhe was all truth, all conſtancy, and all goodneſs. And he concluded with theſe expreſſions, "Neither do we preſent our thanks "in words or any outward ſign, which can be no "ſufficient retribution for ſo great goodneſs; but in "all duty and thankfulneſs, proſtrate at your feet, we "preſent our moſt loyal and thankful hearts, even the "laſt drop of blood in our hearts, and the laſt ſpirit "of breath in our noſtrils, to be poured out, to be

[c] Ibid. p. 656. [d] Ibid. p. 657.

breathed

CHAP. XLIV.

1601.

"breathed up, for your ſafety[e]." The Queen heard very patiently this ſpeech, where ſhe was flattered in phraſes appropriated to the Supreme Being; and ſhe returned an anſwer, full of ſuch expreſſions of tenderneſs towards her people, as ought to have appeared fulſome after the late inſtances of rigour which ſhe had employed, and from which nothing but neceſſity had made her depart. Thus was this critical affair happily terminated; and Elizabeth, by prudently receding, in time, from her rights, maintained her dignity, and preſerved the affections of her people.

THE commons granted her a ſupply very unprecedented, of four ſubſidies and eight fifteenths; and they were ſo dutiful as to vote this ſupply before they received any ſatisfaction in the buſineſs of monopolies, which they juſtly conſidered as of the utmoſt conſequence to the intereſt and happineſs of the nation. Had they attempted to extort that conceſſion by keeping the ſupply in ſuſpence; ſo haughty was the Queen's diſpoſition, that this appearance of conſtraint and jealouſy had been ſufficient to have produced a denial of all their requeſts, and to have forced her into ſome acts of authority ſtill more violent and arbitrary.

1602. THE remaining events of this reign are neither very numerous nor important. The Queen, finding that the Spaniards had involved her in ſo much trouble, by fomenting and aſſiſting the Iriſh rebellion, reſolved to give them employment at home; and ſhe fitted out a ſquadron, of nine ſhips under Sir Richard Leviſon, admiral, and Sir William Monſon, vice-admiral, whom ſhe ſent on an expedition to the coaſt of Spain. The admiral, with part of the ſquadron, met the galleons loaded with treaſure; but was not ſtrong enough to attack them: The vice-admiral alſo fell in with ſome

[e] D'Ewes, p. 658, 659.

very

very rich ſhips; but they eſcaped for a like reaſon: And theſe two brave officers, that their expedition might not be entirely fruitleſs, reſolved to attack the harbour of Cerimbra in Portugal, where, they received intelligence, a very rich Carrack had taken ſhelter. The harbour was guarded by a caſtle: There were eleven gallies ſtationed in it: And the militia of the country, to the number, as was believed, of twenty thouſand men, appeared in arms on the ſhore: Yet, notwithſtanding theſe obſtacles, and others derived from the winds and tides, the Engliſh ſquadron broke into the harbour, diſmounted the guns of the caſtle, ſunk or burnt, or put to flight, the gallies, and obliged the carrack to ſurrender [f]. They brought her home to England, and ſhe was valued at a million of ducats [g] A ſenſible loſs to the Spaniards; and a ſupply ſtill more conſiderable to Elizabeth [h].

CHAP. XLIV.

1602.

THE affairs of Ireland, after the defeat of Tyrone, and the expulſion of the Spaniards, haſtened to a ſettlement. Lord Mountjoy divided his army into ſmall parties, and harraſſed the rebels on every ſide: He built Charlemount, and many other ſmall forts, which were impregnable to the Iriſh, and guarded all the important paſſes of the country: The activity of Sir Henry Docwray and Sir Arthur Chicheſter, permitted no repoſe or ſecurity to the rebels: And many of the chieftains, after ſkulking, during ſome time, like wild beaſts, in woods and moraſſes, ſubmitted to mercy, and received ſuch conditions as the deputy was pleaſed to impoſe upon them. Tyrone himſelf made applica-

1603.

[f] Monſon, p. 181. [g] Camden, p. 647.

[h] This year the Spaniards begun the ſiege of Oſtend, which was bravely defended for five months by Sir Francis Vere. The States then relieved him, by ſending a new governor; and on the whole the ſiege laſted three years, and is computed to have coſt the lives of an hundred thouſand men.

CHAP. XLIV.

1603. Tyrone's ſubmiſſion.

tion by Arthur Mac-Baron, his brother, to be received upon terms; but Mountjoy would not admit him, except he made an abſolute ſurrender of his life and fortune to the Queen's mercy. He appeared before the deputy at Milleſont, in a habit and poſture ſuitable to his preſent fortune; and after acknowleging his offence in the moſt humble terms, he was committed to cuſtody by Mountjoy, who intended to bring him over captive into England, to be diſpoſed of at the Queen's pleaſure.

Queen's ſickneſs.

But Elizabeth was now incapable of receiving any ſatisfaction from this fortunate event: She had fallen into a profound melancholy; which all the advantages of her high fortune, all the glories of her proſperous reign, were unable, in any degree, to alleviate or aſſuage. Some aſcribed this depreſſion of mind to her repentance of granting a pardon to Tyrone, whom ſhe had always reſolved to bring to condign puniſhment for his treaſons, but who had made ſuch intereſt with the miniſters, as to extort a remiſſion from her. Others, with more likelihood, accounted for her dejection, by a diſcovery which ſhe had made, of the correſpondence maintained in her court with her ſucceſſor the King of Scots, and by the neglect to which, on account of her old age and infirmities, ſhe imagined herſelf to be expoſed. But there is another cauſe aſſigned for her melancholy, which has long been rejected by hiſtorians as romantic, but which late diſcoveries ſeem to have confirmed [i]: Some incidents happened which revived her tenderneſs for Eſſex, and filled her with the deepeſt ſorrow for the conſent which ſhe had unwarily given to his execution.

i See the proofs of this remarkable fact collected in Birch's Negociations, p. 206. And Memoirs, vol. II. p. 481, 505, 506, &c.

THE

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

THE earl of Eſſex, after his return from the fortunate expedition againſt Cadiz, obſerving the increaſe of the Queen's fond attachment towards him, took occaſion to regret, that the neceſſity of her ſervice required him often to be abſent from her perſon, and expoſed him to all thoſe ill offices which his enemies, more aſſiduous in their attendance, could employ againſt him. She was moved with this tender jealouſy; and making him the preſent of a ring, deſired him to keep that pledge of her affection, and aſſured him, that into whatever diſgrace he ſhould fall, whatever prejudices ſhe might be induced to entertain againſt him, yet, if he ſent her that ring, ſhe would immediately upon the ſight of it, recollect her former tenderneſs, would afford him again a hearing, and would lend a favourable ear to his apology. Eſſex, notwithſtanding all his misfortunes, reſerved this precious gift to the laſt extremity; but after his trial and condemnation, he reſolved to try the experiment, and he committed the ring to the counteſs of Nottingham, whom he deſired to deliver it to the Queen. The counteſs was prevailed on by her huſband, who was Eſſex's capital enemy, not to execute the commiſſion; and Elizabeth, who ſtill expected that her favourite would make this laſt appeal to her tenderneſs, and who aſcribed the neglect of it to his invincible obſtinacy, was, after much delay, and many internal combats, puſhed by reſentment and policy to ſign the warrant for his execution. The counteſs of Nottingham, falling into ſickneſs, and finding herſelf approach towards her end, was ſeized with remorſe for her conduct; and having obtained a viſit from the Queen, ſhe craved her pardon, and revealed to her the fatal ſecret. The Queen, aſtoniſhed with this incident, burſt into a furious paſſion: She ſhook the dying counteſs in her bed; and crying to her,

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

That God might pardon her, but ſhe never could, ſhe broke from her, and thenceforth reſigned herſelf over to the deepeſt and moſt incurable melancholy. She rejected all conſolation: She even refuſed food and ſuſtenance: And throwing herſelf on the floor, ſhe kept herſelf ſilent and immoveable, feeding her thoughts on her afflictions, and declaring life and exiſtence an inſufferable burthen to her. Few words ſhe uttered; and they were all expreſſive of ſome inward grief which ſhe cared not to reveal: But ſighs and groans were the chief vent which ſhe gave to her deſpondency, and which, tho' they diſcovered her ſorrows, were never able to eaſe or aſſuage them. Ten days and nights ſhe lay upon the carpet, leaning on cuſhions which her maids brought her; and her phyſicians could not perſuade her to allow herſelf to be put to bed, much leſs to make trial of any remedies which they preſcribed to her [k]. Her anxious mind at laſt had ſo long preyed on her frail body, that her end was viſibly approaching; and the council, being aſſembled, ſent the lord keeper, the lord admiral, and the ſecretary, to know her mind with regard to her ſucceſſor. She anſwered with a faint voice, that as ſhe had held a regal ſcepter, ſhe deſired no other than a royal ſucceſſor. Cecil requeſting her to explain herſelf more particularly, ſhe ſubjoined, that ſhe would have a King to ſucceed her; and who ſhould that be but her neareſt kinſman, the King of Scots. Being then adviſed by the archbiſhop of Canterbury, to fix her thoughts upon God, ſhe replied, that ſhe did ſo, nor did her mind in the leaſt wander from him. Her voice ſoon after left her, her ſenſes failed, ſhe fell into a lethargic ſlumber, which continued ſome hours, and ſhe expired gently, without

And death, 24 March.

[k] Strype, vol. IV. No. 276.

farther

CHAP. XLIV.

1603. And character.

farther ſtruggle or convulſion, in the ſeventieth year of her age, and forty-fifth of her reign.

SUCH a dark cloud overcaſt the evening of that day, which had ſhone out with a mighty luſtre in the eyes of all Europe. There are few great perſonages in hiſtory who have been more expoſed to the calumny of enemies, and the adulation of friends, than Queen Elizabeth, and yet there ſcarce is any, whoſe reputation has been more certainly determined, by the unanimous conſent of poſterity. The unuſual length of her adminiſtration, and the ſtrong features of her character, were able to overcome all prejudices; and obliging her detractors to abate much of their invectives, and her admirers ſomewhat of their penegyrics, have at laſt, in ſpite of political factions, and what is more, of religious animoſities, produced an uniform judgment with regard to her conduct. Her vigour, her conſtancy, her magnanimity, her penetration, vigilance, addreſs, are allowed to merit the higheſt praiſes, and appear not to have been ſurpaſſed by any perſon who ever filled a throne: A conduct leſs rigorous, leſs imperious, more ſincere, more indulgent to her people, would have been requiſite to form a perfect character. By the force of her mind, ſhe controuled all her more active and ſtronger qualities, and prevented them from running into exceſs: Her heroiſm was exempt from all temerity, her frugality from avarice, her friendſhip from partiality, her active temper from turbulency and a vain ambition: She guarded not herſelf with equal care or equal ſucceſs from leſſer infirmities; the rivalſhip of beauty, the deſire of admiration, the jealouſy of love, and the ſallies of anger.

Her ſingular talents for government were founded equally on her temper and on her capacity. Endowed with a great command over herſelf, ſhe ſoon obtained

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

an uncontrouled aſcendant over her people; and while ſhe merited all their eſteem by her real virtues, ſhe alſo engaged their affection by her pretended ones. Few ſovereigns of England ſucceeded to the throne in more difficult circumſtances; and none ever conducted the government with ſuch uniform ſucceſs and felicity. Tho' unacquainted with the practice of toleration, the true ſecret for managing religious factions, ſhe preſerved her people, by her ſuperior prudence, from thoſe confuſions in which theological controverſy had involved all the neighbouring nations: And tho' her enemies were the moſt powerful princes of Europe, the moſt active, the moſt enterprizing, the leaſt ſcrupulous, ſhe was able by her vigour to make deep impreſſions on their ſtate: Her own greatneſs mean while remained untouched and unimpaired.

THE wiſe miniſters, and brave warriors, who flouriſhed during her reign, ſhare the praiſe of her ſucceſs; but inſtead of leſſening the applauſe due to her, they make great addition to it. They owed, all of them, their advancement to her choice; they were ſupported by her conſtancy; and with all their ability, they were never able to acquire any undue aſcendant over her. In her family, in her court, in her kingdom, ſhe remained equally miſtreſs: The force of the tender paſſions was great over her, but the force of her mind was ſtill ſuperior; and the combat which her victory viſibly coſt her, ſerves only to diſplay the firmneſs of her reſolution, and the loftineſs of her ambitious ſentiments.

THE fame of this princeſs, tho' it has ſurmounted the prejudices both of faction and of bigotry, yet lies ſtill expoſed to another prejudice, which is more durable becauſe more natural, and which, according to the different views in which we ſurvey her, is capable either

either of exalting beyond meaſure, or diminiſhing the luſtre of her character. This prejudice is founded on the conſideration of her ſex. When we contemplate her as a woman, we are apt to be ſtruck with the higheſt admiration of her great qualities and extenſive capacity; but we are alſo apt to require ſome more ſoftneſs of diſpoſition, ſome greater lenity of temper, ſome of thoſe amiable weakneſſes by which her ſex is diſtinguiſhed. But the true method of eſtimating her merit, is to lay aſide all theſe conſiderations, and conſider her merely as a rational being, placed in authority, and entruſted with the government of mankind. We may find it difficult to reconcile our fancy to her as a wife or a miſtreſs; but her qualities as a ſovereign, tho' with ſome conſiderable exceptions, are the object of undiſputed applauſe and approbation. * *

* * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * *
* * * * * * * * *

Government, manners, commerce, arts and learning.

THE party amongſt us who have diſtinguiſhed themſelves by their adherence to liberty and a popular Government, have long indulged their prejudices againſt the ſucceeding race of princes, by beſtowing unbounded panegyrics on the virtue and wiſdom of Elizabeth. They have been ſo extremely ignorant of tranſactions of this reign, as to extol her for a quality which, of all others, ſhe was the leaſt poſſeſt of; a tender regard for the conſtitution, and a concern for the liberties and privileges of her people. But as it is ſcarce poſſible for the prepoſſeſſions of party to throw a veil much longer over facts ſo palpable and undeniable, there is danger leſt the public ſhould run into the oppoſite extreme, and ſhould entertain an averſion to the memory of a princeſs who exerciſed the royal authority in a manner ſo contrary to all the ideas which we at preſent enter-

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

tain of a legal conſtitution. But Elizabeth only ſupported the prerogatives which were tranſmitted to her by her immediate predeceſſors: She believed that her ſubjects were entitled to no more liberty than their anceſtors enjoyed: She found that they entirely acquieſced in her arbitrary adminiſtration: And it was not natural for her to find fault with a form of government, by which ſhe herſelf was inveſted with ſuch unlimited authority. In the particular exertions of power, the queſtion ought never to be forgot, *What is beſt?* But in the general diſtribution of power among the ſeveral members of a conſtitution, there can ſeldom be admitted any other queſtion, than *What is uſual?* Few examples occur of princes, who have willingly reſigned their power: None of thoſe who have, without ſtruggle, allowed it to be extorted from them. If any other rule than eſtabliſhed practice be followed, factions and diſſenſions muſt multiply without end: And tho' many conſtitutions, and none more than the Britiſh, have been improved even by violent innovations, the praiſe which we beſtow on thoſe patriots, to whom we are indebted for our privileges, ought to be given with ſome reſerve, and ſurely without the leaſt rancour againſt thoſe who adhered to the ancient conſtitution.

In order to underſtand the ancient conſtitution of England [1], there is not a period which deſerves more to be ſtudied than the reign of Elizabeth. The pre-

[1] By the ancient conſtitution, is here meant that which prevailed before the ſettlement of our preſent plan of liberty. There was a more antient conſtitution, where, tho' the people had perhaps leſs liberty than under the Tudors, yet the King had alſo leſs authority: The power of the barons was a great check upon him, and exerciſed great tyranny over them. But there was ſtill a more antient conſtitution, viz. that before the ſigning of the charter, where neither the people nor the barons had any regular authority; and the power of the government was almoſt wholly in the King. The Engliſh conſtitution, like all others, has been in a ſtate of continual fluctuation.

rogatives

rogatives of this princeſs were ſcarce ever diſputed, and ſhe therefore employed them without ſcruple: Her imperious temper, a circumſtance in which ſhe went far beyond her ſucceſſors, rendered her exertions of power violent and frequent, and diſcovered the full extent of her authority: The great popularity which ſhe enjoyed, proves, that ſhe did not infringe any eſtabliſhed liberties of the people: There remain monuments numerous enough to aſcertain the moſt noted acts of her adminiſtration: And tho' theſe monuments muſt be ſought for remote from the ordinary hiſtorians, they become only the more authentic on that account, and ſerve as a ſtronger proof, that the particular exertions of her power were conceived to be nothing but the ordinary courſe of adminiſtration, ſince they were not thought remarkable enough to be recorded even by contemporary writers. If there was any difference in this particular, the people, in former reigns, ſeem rather to have been more ſubmiſſive than during the age of Elizabeth [m]. It may not here be improper to recount ſome of the ancient prerogatives of the crown, and lay open the ſources of that great power which the Engliſh monarchs formerly enjoyed.

One of the moſt ancient and moſt eſtabliſhed inſtruments of power was the court of Star-chamber, which poſſeſſed an unlimited diſcretionary authority of fining, impriſoning, and inflicting corporal puniſhment, and whoſe juriſdiction extended to all ſorts of offences, contempts, and diſorders, that lay not within reach

[m] In a memorial of the ſtate of the realm, drawn by ſecretary Cecil, in 1569, there is this paſſage. "Then followeth the decay of obedience "in civil policy, which being compared with the fearfulneſs and reverence "of all inferior eſtates to their ſuperiors in times paſt, will aſtoniſh any wiſe "and conſiderate perſon, to behold the deſperation of reformation." Haynes, p. 586. Again, p. 588.

of

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

of the common law. The members of this court consisted of the privy council and the judges; men, who all of them enjoyed their offices during pleasure: And when the prince himself was present, he was the sole judge, and all the others could only interpose with their advice. There needed but this one court in any government, to put an end to all regular, legal, and exact plans of liberty. For who durst set himself in opposition to the crown and ministry, or aspire to the character of being a patron of freedom, while exposed to so arbitrary a jurisdiction? I much question, whether any of the absolute monarchies in Europe contain, at present, so illegal and despotic a tribunal.

THE court of High Commission was another jurisdiction still more terrible, both because the crime of heresy, of which it took cognizance, was more undefinable than any civil offence, and because its methods of inquisition and of administering oaths, were more contrary to all the most simple ideas of justice and equity. The fines and imprisonments imposed by this courts were frequent: The deprivations and suspensions of the clergy for non-conformity, were also very numerous, and comprehended at one time the third of all the ecclesiastics of England [n]. The Queen, in a letter to the archbishop of Canterbury, said expressly, that she was resolved, "That no man should be "suffered to decline either on the left or on the right "hand, from the drawn line limited by authority, and "by her laws and injunctions [o]."

BUT Martial Law went far beyond even these two courts in a prompt and arbitrary and violent method of decision. Whenever there was any insurrection or public disorder, the crown employed martial law; and

[n] Neal, vol. I. p. 479 [o] Murden, p. 183.

it

it was, during that time, exerciſed not only over the ſoldiers, but over the whole people: Any one might be puniſhed as a rebel, or an aider and abettor of rebellion, whom the provoſt-marſhal or lieutenant of counties, or their deputies, pleaſed to ſuſpect. Lord Bacon ſays, that the trial at common law granted to the earl of Eſſex, and his fellow conſpirators, was a favour: For that the caſe would have born and required the ſeverity of martial law [p]. We have ſeen inſtances of its being employed by Queen Mary in defence of orthodoxy. There remains a letter of Queen Elizabeth's to the earl of Suſſex, after the ſuppreſſion of the northern rebellion, in which ſhe reproves him ſharply, becauſe ſhe had not heard of his having done any execution by martial law [q]; tho' it is probable, that near eight hundred perſons ſuffered, one way or other, on account of that ſlight inſurrection. But the Kings of England did not always limit the exerciſe of this law to the times of war and rebellion. In 1552, when there was no rebellion or inſurrection, King Edward granted a commiſſion of martial law; and empowered the commiſſioners to execute it, *as ſhould be thought by their diſcretions moſt neceſſary* [r], Queen Elizabeth too was not ſparing in the uſe of this law. In 1573, one Peter Burchet a puritan, being perſuaded that it was lawful or meritorious to kill ſuch as oppoſed the truth of the goſpel, ran into the ſtreets, and wounded Hawkins, the famous ſea-captain, whom he took for Hatton, the Queen's favourite. The Queen was ſo incenſed that ſhe ordered him to be puniſhed inſtantly by martial law; but upon the remonſtrance of ſome prudent counſellors, who told her, that that law ought to be confined

p Vol. IV. p. 510. q MS. of lord Royſton's from the Paper Office. r Strype's Eccleſ. Memoirs, vol. II. p. 373, 458, 9.

to

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

to turbulent times, ſhe recalled her order, and delivered over Burchet to the common law [s]. But ſhe continued not always ſo reſerved in exerting this authority. There remains a proclamation of hers, in which ſhe orders martial law to be uſed againſt all ſuch as import bulls, or even forbidden books and pamphlets from abroad [t]; and prohibits the lieutenants or their deputies to be queſtioned for their arbitrary puniſhment of ſuch offenders, *any law or ſtatute to the contrary in any wiſe notwithſtanding*. We have another act of hers ſtill more extraordinary. The ſtreets of London were very much infeſted with idle vagabonds and riotous perſons: The lord mayor had endeavoured to repreſs this diſorder: The Star-chamber had exerted its authority, and inflicted puniſhment on theſe riotors: But the Queen, finding thoſe remedies ineffectual, revived martial law, and gave Sir Thomas Wilford a commiſſion of provoſt-marſhal: "Granting him authority, and commanding "him, upon ſignification given by the juſtices of peace "in London or the neighbouring counties, of ſuch of"fenders, worthy to be ſpeedily executed by martial "law, to attach and take the ſame perſons, and in the "preſence of the ſaid juſtices, according to juſtice of "martial law, to execute them upon the gallows or "gibbet openly, or near to ſuch place where the ſaid "rebellious and incorrigible offenders ſhall be found "to have committed the ſaid great offences [u]." I ſuppoſe it will be difficult to produce an inſtance of ſuch an act of authority in any place nearer than Muſcovy.

THE Star chamber, and High Commiſſion, and Court Martial, tho' arbitrary juriſdictions, yet had ſtill ſome pretence of a trial, at leaſt a ſentence; but there

s Camden, p. 446. Strype, vol. II. p. 288. t Strype, vol. III. p. 570. u Rymer, tom. XVI. p. 279.

was

was a grievous puniſhment very familiarly inflicted in that age, without any other authority than the warrant of a ſecretary of ſtate, or of the privy-council [x]; and that was, impriſonment, in any jail, and during any time that theſe miniſters ſhould think proper. In ſuſpicious times, all the jails were full of priſoners of ſtate; and theſe unhappy victims of public jealouſy were ſometimes thrown into dungeons, and loaded with irons, and treated in the moſt cruel manner, without their being able to obtain any remedy from law.

THIS practice was an indirect way of employing torture: But the rack itſelf was frequently uſed, upon any ſuſpicion, without other authority than a warrant from the ſecretary or the privy council. Even the council in the marches of Wales were empowered, by their very commiſſion, to make uſe of torture, whenever they thought proper [y]. There cannot be a ſtronger proof how lightly the rack was employed, than the following ſtory, told by lord Bacon. We ſhall give it in his own words. "The Queen was mightily incenſed "againſt Haywarde, on account of a book he dedicated "to lord Eſſex, being a ſtory of the firſt year of "King Henry the fourth, thinking it a ſeditious pre-"lude to put into the people's heads boldneſs and fac-"tion [z]: She ſaid, ſhe had an opinion that there was "treaſon in it, and aſked me, if I could not find any "places in it, that might be drawn within the caſe "of treaſon: Whereto I anſwered, For treaſon, ſure "I found none; but for felony, very many: And "when her majeſty haſtily aſked me, Wherein? I told

[x] In 1588, the lord mayor committed ſeveral citizens to priſon, becauſe they refuſed to pay the loan demanded of them. Murden, p. 632.

[y] Haynes, p. 196.

[z] To our apprehenſion, Haywarde's Book ſeems rather to have a contrary tendency. For he has there preſerved the famous Speech of the Biſhop of Carliſle, which contains, in the moſt expreſs terms, the Doctrine of paſſive obedience. But Queen Elizabeth was very difficult to pleaſe on this head.

'her,

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

"her, the author had committed very apparent theft: "For he had taken moſt of the ſentences of Cornelius "Tacitus, and tranſlated them into Engliſh, and "put them into his text. And another time, when "the Queen could not be perſuaded, that it was "his writing whoſe name was to it, but that it had "ſome more miſchievous author, and ſaid with great "indignation, that ſhe would have him racked to pro- "duce his author; I replied, Nay, madam, he is a "doctor, never rack his perſon, but rack his ſtile: "Let him have pen, ink, and paper, and help of books, "and be enjoined to continue the ſtory where it break- "eth off, and I will undertake, by collating the ſtyles, "to judge whether he were the author or no[a]." Thus, had it not been for Bacon's humanity, or rather his wit, this author, a man of letters, had been put to the rack, for a moſt innocent performance. His real offence was, his dedicating a book to that munificent patron of the learned, the earl of Eſſex, at a time when this nobleman lay under diſgrace with her majeſty.

THE Queen's menace of trying and puniſhing Hayward for treaſon, could eaſily have been executed, let his book have been ever ſo innocent. While ſo many terrors hung over the people, no jury durſt have acquitted a man whom the court was reſolved to have condemned. The practice alſo of not confronting the witneſſes with the priſoner, gave the crown lawyers all imaginable advantages againſt him. And, indeed, there ſcarce occurs an inſtance, during all theſe reigns, that the ſovereign, or the miniſters, were ever diſappointed in the iſſue of a proſecution. Timid juries, and judges who held their offices during pleaſure, never failed to ſecond all the views of the court.

4

[a] Cabbala, p. 81.

THE

THE power of preſſing, and obliging any perſon to accept of any office, was another prerogative totally incompatible with freedom. Oſborne gives the following account of Elizabeth's method of employing this prerogative. "In caſe ſhe found any likely to inter-"rupt her occaſions," ſays he, "ſhe did ſeaſonably "prevent him by a chargeable employment abroad, "or putting him upon ſome ſervice at home, which "ſhe knew leaſt grateful to the people: Contrary to "a falſe maxim, ſince practiſed with far worſe ſucceſs, "by ſuch princes as thought it better huſbandry to "buy off enemies than reward friends [b]." The practice with which Oſborne reproaches the two immediate ſucceſſors of Elizabeth, proceeded partly from the extreme difficulty of their ſituation, partly from the greater lenity of their diſpoſition. The power of preſſing, as may naturally be imagined, was often abuſed; and money was exacted by the officers for freeing perſons from the ſervice [c].

THE government of England during that age, however different in other particulars, bore, in this reſpect, ſome reſemblance to that of Turkey at preſent: The ſovereign poſſeſſed every power, except that of impoſing taxes: And in both countries this limitation, unſupported by other privileges, appears rather prejudicial to the people. In Turkey, it obliges the Sultan to permit the extortion of the baſhas and governors of provinces, from whom he afterwards ſqueezes preſents or takes forfeitures: In England, it engaged the Queen to erect monopolies, and grant patents for excluſive trade: An invention ſo pernicious, that, had ſhe gone on, during a tract of years, at her own rate, England, the ſeat of riches, and arts, and commerce,

[b] Page 392. [c] Murden, p. 181.

would

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

"her, the author had committed very apparent theft: "For he had taken moſt of the ſentences of Cornelius "Tacitus, and tranſlated them into Engliſh, and "put them into his text. And another time, when "the Queen could not be perſuaded, that it was "his writing whoſe name was to it, but that it had "ſome more miſchievous author, and ſaid with great "indignation, that ſhe would have him racked to pro- "duce his author; I replied, Nay, madam, he is a "doctor, never rack his perſon, but rack his ſtile: "Let him have pen, ink, and paper, and help of books, "and be enjoined to continue the ſtory where it break- "eth off, and I will undertake, by collating the ſtyles, "to judge whether he were the author or no[a]." Thus, had it not been for Bacon's humanity, or rather his wit, this author, a man of letters, had been put to the rack, for a moſt innocent performance. His real offence was, his dedicating a book to that munificent patron of the learned, the earl of Eſſex, at a time when this nobleman lay under diſgrace with her majeſty.

THE Queen's menace of trying and puniſhing Haywarde for treaſon, could eaſily have been executed, let his book have been ever ſo innocent. While ſo many terrors hung over the people, no jury durſt have acquitted a man whom the court was reſolved to have condemned. The practice alſo of not confronting the witneſſes with the priſoner, gave the crown lawyers all imaginable advantages againſt him. And, indeed, there ſcarce occurs an inſtance, during all theſe reigns, that the ſovereign, or the miniſters, were ever diſappointed in the iſſue of a proſecution. Timid juries, and judges who held their offices during pleaſure, never failed to ſecond all the views of the court.

4

[a] Cabbala, p. 81.

THE

THE power of preſſing, and obliging any perſon to accept of any office, was another prerogative totally incompatible with freedom. Oſborne gives the following account of Elizabeth's method of employing this prerogative. "In caſe ſhe found any likely to inter-"rupt her occaſions," ſays he, "ſhe did ſeaſonably "prevent him by a chargeable employment abroad, "or putting him upon ſome ſervice at home, which "ſhe knew leaſt grateful to the people: Contrary to "a falſe maxim, ſince practiſed with far worſe ſucceſs, "by ſuch princes as thought it better huſbandry to "buy off enemies than reward friends [b]." The practice with which Oſborne reproaches the two immediate ſucceſſors of Elizabeth, proceeded partly from the extreme difficulty of their ſituation, partly from the greater lenity of their diſpoſition. The power of preſſing, as may naturally be imagined, was often abuſed; and money was exacted by the officers for freeing perſons from the ſervice [c].

THE government of England during that age, however different in other particulars, bore, in this reſpect, ſome reſemblance to that of Turkey at preſent: The ſovereign poſſeſſed every power, except that of impoſing taxes: And in both countries this limitation, unſupported by other privileges, appears rather prejudicial to the people. In Turkey, it obliges the Sultan to permit the extortion of the baſhas and governors of provinces, from whom he afterwards ſqueezes preſents or takes forfeitures: In England, it engaged the Queen to erect monopolies, and grant patents for excluſive trade: An invention ſo pernicious, that, had ſhe gone on, during a tract of years, at her own rate, England, the ſeat of riches, and arts, and commerce,

[b] Page 392. [c] Murden, p. 181.

would

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

would have contained at preſent as little induſtry as Morocco, or the coaſt of Barbary.

We may further obſerve, that this valuable privilege, valuable only becauſe it proved afterwards the means by which the Parliament extorted all their other privileges, was very much encroached on, in an indirect manner, during the reign of Elizabeth, as well as of her predeceſſors. She often exacted loans from her people; an arbitrary and unequal kind of impoſition and which individuals felt ſeverely: For tho' the money had been regularly reſtored, which was ſeldom the caſe [d], it lay in the prince's hands without intereſt, which was a ſenſible loſs to the individuals from whom the money was borrowed [e].

There remains a propoſal made by the lord Burleigh, for levying a general loan on the people, equivalent to a ſubſidy [f]; a ſcheme which would have laid the burthen more equally, but which was, in different words, nothing but a taxation, impoſed without conſent of Parliament. It is remarkable, that the ſcheme, thus propoſed, without any viſible neceſſity, by that wiſe miniſter, is the very ſame which Henry the eighth attempted, and which Charles the firſt, enraged by ill uſage from his Parliament, and reduced to the greateſt difficulties, put afterwards in practice, to the great diſcontent of the nation.

The demand of benevolence was another invention of that age for taxing the people. This practice was ſo little conceived to be irregular, that the commons, in 1585, offered the Queen a benevolence; which ſhe very generouſly refuſed, as having no occaſion, at that

[d] Bacon, vol IV. p. 362. [e] In the ſecond of Richard II, it was enacted that in loans, which the King ſhall require of his ſubjects, upon letters of Privy Seal, ſuch as have *reaſonable* excuſe of not lending, may there be received without further ſummons, travel or greef. See Cotton's Abridg. p. 170. By the law, the King's Prerogative of exacting loans was ratify'd; and what ought to be deem'd a *reaſonable* excuſe was ſtill left in his own breaſt, to judge of. [f] Haynes, p. 518, 519.

time, for money [g]. Queen Mary alſo, by an order of council, increaſed the cuſtoms in ſome branches; and her ſiſter imitated the example [h]. There was a ſpecies of ſhip money impoſed at the time of the Spaniſh invaſion. The ſeveral ports were required to equip a certain number of ſhips at their own charge; and ſuch was the alacrity of the people for the public defence, that ſome of the ports, particularly London, ſent double the number demanded of them [i]. When any levies were made for Ireland, France, or the Low Countries, the Queen obliged the counties to raiſe the ſoldiers, to arm and cloth them, and carry them to the ſea-ports at their own charge. New Year's gifts were, at that time expected from the nobility, and from the more conſiderable gentry [k].

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

PURVEYANCE was another method of taxation, unequal, arbitrary and oppreſſive. The whole kingdom felt ſenſibly the burthen of this impoſition; and it was regarded as a great privilege which was conferred on Oxford and Cambridge, to prohibit the purveyors from taking any commodities within five miles of theſe univerſities. The Queen victualled her navy by means of this prerogative, during the firſt years of her government [l].

WARDSHIP was the moſt regular and legal of all theſe impoſitions by prerogative. Yet was it a great badge of ſlavery, and oppreſſive to the great families. When an eſtate fell to a female, the ſovereign obliged her to marry any one he pleaſed: Whether the heir was male or female, the crown enjoyed the whole profit of the rents during the minority. The giving a rich wardſhip was an uſual method of rewarding a courtier or favourite.

g D'Ewes, p. 494. h Bacon, vol. IV. p. 362. i Monſon, p. 267. k Strype's Memor. vol. I. p. 137 l Camden, p. 388.

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

THE inventions were endleſs, which arbitrary power might employ for extorting of money, while the people imagined that their property was ſecured by the crown's being debarred from impoſing taxes. Strype has preſerved a ſpeech of lord Burleigh to the Queen and council, wherein are contained ſome particulars not a little extraordinary [m]. Burleigh propoſes that ſhe ſhould erect a court for the correction of all abuſes, and ſhould confer on the commiſſioners a general inquiſitorial power over the whole kingdom. He ſets before her eyes the example of her wiſe grandfather, Henry the ſeventh, who, by ſuch methods, augmented extremely his revenue; and he recommends, that this new court ſhould proceed, "as well by the direction "and ordinary courſe of the laws, as by virtue of her "majeſty's ſupreme regiment and *abſolute power, from "whence law proceeded.*" In a word, he expects from this inſtitution, greater acceſſion to the royal treaſure, than Henry the eighth derived from abolition of the abbeys, and all the forfeitures of the eccleſiaſtical revenues. This project of lord Burleigh needs not, I think, any comment. A form of government muſt be very arbitrary, where a wiſe and good miniſter could make ſuch a propoſal to the ſovereign.

EMBARGOES on merchandize was another engine of royal power, by which the Engliſh princes were able to extort money from the people. We have ſeen inſtances in the reign of Mary. Elizabeth, before her coronation, iſſued an order to the cuſtom-houſe, prohibiting the ſale of all crimſon ſilks which ſhould be imported, till the court was firſt provided [n]. She expected, no doubt, a good penny-worth from the merchants, while they lay under this reſtraint.

[m] Annals, vol. IV. p. 234, & ſeq. [n] Strype, vol. I. p. 27.

THE

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

THE Parliament pretended to the right of enacting laws, as well as of granting ſubſidies; but this privilege was, during that age, ſtill more inſignificant than the other. Queen Elizabeth expreſsly prohibited them from meddling with ſtate matters or eccleſiaſtical cauſes; and ſhe openly ſent the members to priſon, who dared to tranſgreſs her imperial edict in theſe particulars. There paſſed few Parliaments, during her reign, where there occur not inſtances of this arbitrary conduct.

BUT the legiſlative power of the Parliament was a mere fallacy, while the ſovereign was univerſally acknowleged to poſſeſs a diſpenſing power, by which all the laws could be invalidated, and rendered of no effect. The uſe of this power wasalſo an indirect method practiſed for erecting monopolies. Where the ſtatutes laid any branch of manufacture under reſtrictions, the ſovereign, by exempting one perſon from the laws, gave him in effect the monopoly of that commodity [o]. There was no grievance, at that time, more univerſally complained of, than the frequent diſpenſing with the penal laws [p].

BUT in reality, the crown poſſeſſed the full legiſlative power, by means of proclamations, which might affect any ſubject of the greateſt importance, and which the Star-chamber took care to ſee more rigorouſly executed than the laws themſelves. The motives of theſe proclamations were ſometimes very frivolous and even ridiculous. Queen Elizabeth had taken offence at the ſmell of woad; and ſhe iſſued an edict prohibiting any one to cultivate that uſeful plant [q]. She was alſo pleaſed to take offence at the long ſwords and high ruffs then in faſhion: She ſent about her officers, to break

[o] Rymer, tom. XV. p. 756. D'Ewes, p. 645 [p] Murden, p. 325. [q] Townſend's Journals, p. 250. Stow's Annals.

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

every man's ſword, and clip every man's ruff, which was beyond a certain length [r]. This practice reſembles ſomewhat the method employed by the great Czar Peter, to make his ſubjects change their garb.

THE Queen's prohibition of the propheſyings was founded on a better reaſon; but ſhews ſtill the unlimited extent of her prerogative. Two or three people could not meet together, in order to read the ſcriptures, and confer about religion, tho' in ever ſo orthodox a manner, without her permiſſion.

THERE were many other branches of prerogative incompatible with an exact or regular enjoyment of liberty. None of the nobility could marry without permiſſion from the ſovereign. The Queen detained the earl of Southampton long in priſon, becauſe he privately married the earl of Eſſex's couſin [s]. No man could travel without the conſent of the prince. Sir William Evers underwent a ſevere perſecution, becauſe he had preſumed to pay a private viſit to the King of Scots [t].

THE Parliament in the thirteenth of the Queen praiſed her for not imitating the practice, uſual among her predeceſſors, of ſtopping the courſe of juſtice by particular warrants [u]. There could not poſſibly be a greater abuſe, nor a ſtronger mark of arbitrary power; and the Queen, in refraining from it, was very laudable. But ſhe was by no means conſtant in this reſerve. There remain in the public records ſome warrants of her's for exempting perſons from all law-ſuits and proſecutions [x]; and theſe warrants, ſhe ſays, ſhe grants from her royal prerogative, which ſhe will not allow to be diſputed.

[r] Townſend's Journals, p. 250. Stow's Annals. Strype, vol. II. p. 603. [s] Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. p. 422. [t] Ibid. p. 511. [u] D'Ewes, p. 141. [x] Rymer, tom. XV. p. 652, 708, 777.

IT

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

It was very usual in Queen Elizabeth's reign, and probably in all the preceding reigns, for noblemen or privy counsellors to commit to prison any one, who had happened to displease them by suing for his just debts; and the person, tho' he gained his cause in the courts of justice, was commonly obliged to relinquish his property in order to obtain his liberty. Some likewise, who had been delivered from prison by the judges, have again been committed to custody in secret places without any possibility of obtaining relief; and even the officers and serjeants of the courts of law have been punished for executing the writs in favour of these persons. Nay, it was usual to send for people by pursuivants, a kind of harpies, who then attended the orders of the council and high commission; and they were brought up to London, and constrained by imprisonment, not only to withdraw their lawful suits, but also to pay the pursuivants great sums of money. The judges, in the 34th of the Queen, complain to her majesty of the frequency of this practice. It is probable, that that tyranny was carried no further down than the reign of Elizabeth; since the Parliament, who obtained the petition of right, found no later instances of it [y]. And even these very judges of Elizabeth, who thus protect the people against the tyranny of the great, expressly allow, that a person committed by special command from the Queen, is not baileable.

It is easy to imagine, that, in such a government, no justice could, by course of law, be obtained of the sovereign, unless he was willing to allow it. In the naval expedition, undertaken by Raleigh and Forbisher against the Spaniards, in 1592, a very rich carrack was taken worth two hundred thousand pounds. The

[y] Rushworth, Vol. I. p. 511. Franklyn's Annals, p. 250, 251.

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

Queen's ſhare in the adventure was only a tenth part; but as the prize was ſo great, and exceeded ſo much the expectations of all the adventurers, ſhe was determined not to reſt contented with her ſhare. Raleigh, humbly and earneſtly begged her to accept of an hundred thouſand pounds, in lieu of all demands, or rather exactions; and ſays, that the preſent, which the proprietors were willing to make her of eighty thouſand pounds, was the greateſt that ever a prince received from a ſubject [z].

But it is no wonder the Queen, in her adminiſtration, ſhould pay ſo little regard to liberty; while the parliament itſelf, in enacting laws, were ſo entirely negligent of it. The perſecuting ſtatutes, which they paſſed againſt papiſts and puritans, are extremely contrary to the genius of freedom; and by expoſing ſuch multitudes to the tyranny of prieſts and bigots, accuſtomed the people to the moſt diſgraceful ſubjection. Their conferring an unlimited ſupremacy on the Queen, or what is worſe, acknowleging her inherent right to it, was another proof of their voluntary ſervitude.

The law of the 23d of her reign, making ſeditious words againſt the Queen capital, is alſo a very tyrannical ſtatute; and an uſe, no leſs tyrannical, was ſometimes made of it. The caſe of Udal, a puritanical clergyman, ſeems ſingular, even in thoſe arbitrary times. This man had publiſhed a book called a demonſtration of diſcipline, in which he inveighed againſt the government of biſhops; and tho' he had carefully endeavoured to conceal his name, he was thrown into priſon upon ſuſpicion, and brought to his trial for this offence. It was pretended, that the biſhops were part of the Queen's political body; and to ſpeak againſt

[z] Strype, vol. IV. p. 128, 129.

them,

them, was really to attack her, and was therefore felony by the ſtatute. This was not the only iniquity, to which Udal was expoſed. The judges would not allow the jury to determine any thing but the fact, whether Udal had wrote the book, or not, without examining his intention, or the import of the words. In order to prove the fact, the crown lawyers did not produce a ſingle witneſs to the court: They only read the teſtimony of two perſons abſent, one of whom ſaid that Udal had told him he was the author; another, that a friend of Udal's had ſaid ſo. They would not allow Udal to produce any exculpatory evidence; which, they ſaid, was never to be permitted againſt the Queen. And they tendered him an oath, by which he was required to ſwear, that he was not author of the book; and his refuſal to give that teſtimony was employed as the ſtrongeſt proof of his guilt. It is almoſt needleſs to add, that, notwithſtanding theſe multiplied iniquities, a verdict of death was given by the jury againſt Udal: For as the Queen was extremely bent upon his proſecution, it was impoſſible he could eſcape [a]. He died in priſon before the execution of the ſentence.

THE caſe of Penry was, if poſſible, ſtill harder. This man was a zealous puritan, or rather, a Browniſt; and he had wrote againſt the hierarchy ſeveral tracts, ſuch as Martin Mar-prelate, *Theſes Martinianæ*, and other compoſitions full of low ſcurrility and petulant ſatyre. After concealing himſelf for ſome years, he was ſeized; and s the ſtatute againſt ſeditious words required that the criminal ſhould be tried within a year after committing the offence, he could not be indicted for his printed books. He was therefore tried

[a] State Trials, vol. I. p. 144. Strype, vol. IV. p. 21. Id. Life of Whitgift, p. 343.

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

for ſome papers found in his pocket, as if he had thereby ſcattered ſedition [b]. It was alſo imputed to him, by the lord keeper, Puckering, that in ſome of theſe papers, "he had only acknowleged her majeſty's royal power "to *eſtabliſh* laws, eccleſiaſtical and civil; but had "avoided the *uſual* terms of *making*, *enacting*, *decreeing*, "*and ordaining* laws: Which imply," ſays the lord keeper, "a moſt abſolute authority [c]." Penry for theſe offences was condemned and executed.

THUS we have ſeen, that *the moſt abſolute* authority of the ſovereign, to make uſe of the lord keeper's phraſe, was eſtabliſhed on above twenty branches of prerogative, which are now aboliſhed, and which were, every one of them, totally incompatible with the liberty of the ſubject. But what enſured more effectually the ſlavery of the people, than even theſe branches of prerogative, was, the eſtabliſhed principles of the times, which attributed to the prince ſuch an unlimited and indefeizable power, as was ſuppoſed to be the origin of all law, and could be bounded and circumſcribed by none. The homilies, publiſhed for the uſe of the clergy, and which they were enjoined to read every Sunday in all the churches, inculcate every where a blind, and unlimited paſſive-obedience to the prince, which, on no account, and under no pretence, is it ever lawful for them, in the ſmalleſt article, to depart from or infringe. Much noiſe has been made, becauſe ſome court chaplains, during the ſucceeding reigns, were permitted to preach ſuch doctrines; but there is a great difference between theſe ſermons, and diſcourſes publiſhed by authority, avowed by the prince and council, and promulgated to the whole nation [d]. So

[b] Strype's Life of Whitgift, book IV. chap. 11. Neal, vol. I. p. 564.
[c] Strype, vol. IV. p. 177. [d] Gifford, a clergyman, was ſuſpended in 1584, for preaching up a limited obedience to the civil magiſtrate. Neal, vol. I. p. 435.

thoroughly

thoroughly were theſe principles imbibed by the people during the reigns of Elizabeth and her immediate predeceſſors, that oppoſition to them was regarded as the moſt flagrant ſedition, and was not even rewarded by that public praiſe and approbation, which can alone ſupport men under ſuch dangers and difficulties, as attend the reſiſtance of tyrannical authority. It was only during the next generation that the noble principles of liberty took root, and ſpreading themſelves, under the ſhelter of puritanical abſurdities, became faſhionable among the people.

It is worth remarking, that the advantage, uſually aſcribed to abſolute monarchy, a greater regularity of police and a more ſtrict execution of the laws, did not attend the former Engliſh government, tho' in many reſpects it fell under that denomination: A demonſtration of this truth is contained in a judicious paper, which is preſerved by Strype[e]; and which was wrote by an eminent juſtice of peace of Somerſetſhire, in the year 1596, near the end of the Queen's reign, when the authority of that princeſs may be ſuppoſed to be fully corroborated, by time, and her maxims of government improved by long practice. This paper contains an account of the diſorders which then prevailed in the county of Somerſet. The author ſays, that forty perſons had been there executed in a year for robberies, thefts, and other felonies; thirty-five burnt in the hand, thirty-ſeven whipt, one hundred and eighty-three diſcharged: That thoſe who were diſcharged were moſt wicked and deſperate perſons, who never could come to any good, becauſe they would not work, and none would take them into ſervice: That notwithſtanding this great number of indictments, the

e Annals, vol. IV. p. 290.

fifth

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

fifth part of the felonies committed in the county were not brought to a trial, the greater number eſcaped cenſure, either from the ſuperior cunning of the felons, the remiſſneſs of the magiſtrates, or the fooliſh lenity of the people: That the rapines committed by the infinite number of wicked, wandering, idle people were intolerable to the poor countrymen, and obliged them to a perpetual watch of their ſheep-folds, their paſtures, their woods and their corn-fields: That the other counties of England were in no better condition than Somerſetſhire; and many of them were even in a worſe: That there were at leaſt three or four hundred able-bodied vagabonds in every county, who lived by theft and rapine; and who ſometimes met in troops to the number of ſixty, and committed ſpoil on the inhabitants: That if all the felons of this kind were aſſembled, they would be able, if reduced to good ſubjection, to give the greateſt enemy her majeſty has a ſtrong battle: And that the magiſtrates themſelves were intimidated from executing juſtice upon them; and there were examples of juſtices of peace, who, after giving ſentence againſt rogues, had interpoſed to ſtop the execution of their own ſentence on account of the danger, which hung over them from the confederates of theſe felons.

In the year 1575, the Queen complained in Parliament of the bad execution of the laws; and threatened, if the magiſtrates were not, for the future, more vigilant, that ſhe would entruſt authority to indigent and needy perſons, who would find an intereſt in the more exact diſtribution of juſtice [f]. It appears, that ſhe was as good as her word. For in 1601, there were great complaints made in Parliament of the rapine of juſtices of peace; and a member ſaid, that this

[f] D'Ewes, p. 234.

magiſtrate,

magiſtrate was an animal, who, for half a dozen of chickens, would diſpenſe with a dozen of penal ſtatutes [z]. It is not eaſy to account for this relaxation of government, and neglect of police, during a reign of ſo much vigour as that of Elizabeth. The ſmall revenue of the crown is the moſt likely cauſe that can be aſſigned. The Queen had it not in her power to intereſt a great number in aſſiſting her to execute the laws.

On the whole, the Engliſh have no reaſon, from the example of their anceſtors, to be in love with the picture of abſolute monarchy; or to prefer the unlimited authority of the prince, and his unbounded prerogatives, to that noble liberty, that ſweet equality, and that happy ſecurity, by which they are at preſent diſtinguiſhed above all nations of the univerſe. The utmoſt that can be ſaid in favour of the government of that age (and perhaps it may be ſaid with truth) is, that the power of the prince, tho' really unlimited, was exerciſed after the European manner, and entered not into every part of the adminiſtration; that the inſtances of a high exerted prerogative were not ſo frequent as to render property ſenſibly inſecure, or reduce the people to a total ſervitude; that the freedom from faction, the quickneſs of execution, and the promptitude of thoſe meaſures, which could be taken for offence, or defence, made ſome compenſation for the want of a legal and determined liberty; that as the prince commanded no mercenary army, there was a tacit check on him, which maintained the government in that medium, to which the people had been accuſtomed; and that this ſituation of England was in reality more remote from, tho' ſeemingly it approached nearer to, a deſpotic and eaſtern monarchy, than the

[z] Ibid. p. 661--664.

preſent

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

fifth part of the felonies committed in the county were not brought to a trial, the greater number escaped censure, either from the superior cunning of the felons, the remissness of the magistrates, or the foolish lenity of the people: That the rapines committed by the infinite number of wicked, wandering, idle people were intolerable to the poor countrymen, and obliged them to a perpetual watch of their sheep-folds, their pastures, their woods and their corn-fields: That the other counties of England were in no better condition than Somersetshire; and many of them were even in a worse: That there were at least three or four hundred able-bodied vagabonds in every county, who lived by theft and rapine; and who sometimes met in troops to the number of sixty, and committed spoil on the inhabitants: That if all the felons of this kind were assembled, they would be able, if reduced to good subjection, to give the greatest enemy her majesty has a strong battle: And that the magistrates themselves were intimidated from executing justice upon them; and there were examples of justices of peace, who, after giving sentence against rogues, had interposed to stop the execution of their own sentence on account of the danger, which hung over them from the confederates of these felons.

In the year 1575, the Queen complained in Parliament of the bad execution of the laws; and threatened, if the magistrates were not, for the future, more vigilant, that she would entrust authority to indigent and needy persons, who would find an interest in the more exact distribution of justice [f]. It appears, that she was as good as her word. For in 1601, there were great complaints made in Parliament of the rapine of justices of peace; and a member said, that this

[f] D'Ewes, p. 234.

magistrate,

magiſtrate was an animal, who, for half a dozen of chickens, would diſpenſe with a dozen of penal ſtatutes [z]. It is not eaſy to account for this relaxation of government, and neglect of police, during a reign of ſo much vigour as that of Elizabeth. The ſmall revenue of the crown is the moſt likely cauſe that can be aſſigned. The Queen had it not in her power to intereſt a great number in aſſiſting her to execute the laws. 1603.

On the whole, the Engliſh have no reaſon, from the example of their anceſtors, to be in love with the picture of abſolute monarchy; or to prefer the unlimited authority of the prince, and his unbounded prerogatives, to that noble liberty, that ſweet equality, and that happy ſecurity, by which they are at preſent diſtinguiſhed above all nations of the univerſe. The utmoſt that can be ſaid in favour of the government of that age (and perhaps it may be ſaid with truth) is, that the power of the prince, tho' really unlimited, was exerciſed after the European manner, and entered not into every part of the adminiſtration; that the inſtances of a high exerted prerogative were not ſo frequent as to render property ſenſibly inſecure, or reduce the people to a total ſervitude; that the freedom from faction, the quickneſs of execution, and the promptitude of thoſe meaſures, which could be taken for offence, or defence, made ſome compenſation for the want of a legal and determined liberty; that as the prince commanded no mercenary army, there was a tacit check on him, which maintained the government in that medium, to which the people had been accuſtomed; and that this ſituation of England was in reality more remote from, tho' ſeemingly it approached nearer to, a deſpotic and eaſtern monarchy, than the

[z] Ibid. p. 661--664.

preſent

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

present government, of that kingdom, where the people, tho' guarded by multiplied laws, are totally naked, defenceless, and disarmed.

We shall close this chapter with a brief account of the revenues, the military force, the commerce, the arts, and the learning of England during this period.

Queen Elizabeth's œconomy was very remarkable; and in some instances seemed to border on avarice. The smallest expence, if it could possibly be saved, appeared considerable in her eyes; and even the charge of an express, during the most delicate transactions, was not below her notice [h]. She was also attentive to every profit; and embraced opportunities of gain, which may appear somewhat extraordinary. She kept the see of Ely vacant nineteen years, in order to pocket the revenue [i]; and it was usual with her, when she promoted a bishop, to take the opportunity of pillaging the see of some of its manors [k]. But that there was in reality little or no avarice in the Queen's temper appears from this circumstance, that she never amassed any treasure; and even refused subsidies from the Parliament, when she had no present occasion for them. Yet we must not conclude from this circumstance, that her œconomy proceeded from a tender concern for her people: She loaded them with monopolies and exclusive patents, which are infinitely more oppressive than the most heavy taxes, levied in a legal and regular manner. The real source of her frugal conduct was derived from her desire of independency, and her care to preserve her dignity, which would have been endangered, had she reduced herself to the necessity of having frequent recourse to parliamentary supplies. In consequence of this motive, the Queen, tho' en-

h Birch's Negot. p. 21. i Strype, vol. IV. p. 351. k Ibid. p. 215.

gaged

gaged in ſucceſsful and neceſſary wars, thought it more prudent to make a continual dilapidation of the royal demeſnes [k], than demand the moſt moderate ſupplies from the commons. As ſhe lived unmarried and had no poſterity, ſhe was contented to ſerve her preſent turn, tho' at the expence of her ſucceſſors, who, by reaſon of this policy, joined to other accidents, found themſelves, on a ſudden, reduced to the moſt extreme indigence.

THE ſplendor of a court was, during this age, a great part of the public charge; and as Elizabeth was a ſingle woman, and expenſive in no kind of magnificence, except cloaths, this circumſtance enabled her to perform great things by her narrow revenue. She is ſaid to have paid four millions of debt, left on the crown by her father, brother, and ſiſter; an incredible ſum for that age [l]. The ſtates at the time of her death owed her about eight hundred thouſand pounds: And the King of France four hundred and fifty thouſand [m]. Tho' that prince was extremely frugal, and after the peace of Vervins, was continually amaſſing treaſure, the Queen never could, by the moſt preſſing remonſtrances, prevail on him to make payment of thoſe ſums, which ſhe had ſo generouſly advanced him, during his greateſt diſtreſſes. One payment of twenty thouſand crowns, and another of fifty thouſand, were all ſhe could obtain, by the ſtrongeſt repreſentations ſhe could make of the difficulties to which the rebellion in Ireland had reduced her [n]. The Queen expended on the wars with Spain between 1589 and 1593, the

k Rymer, tom. XVI. p. 141. D'Ewes, p. 151, 457, 525, 629. Bacon, vol. IV. p. 363. l D'Ewes, p. 473. I think it impoſſible to reconcile this account of the public debts with that given by Strype, Eccleſ. Mem. vol. II. p. 344. that in the year 1553, the crown owed but 300,000 pounds. I own, that this laſt ſum appears a great deal more likely. The whole revenue of Queen Elizabeth would not in ten years have paid four millions. m Winwood, vol. I. p. 29, 54. n Ibid. p. 117, 395.

ſum

CHAP. XLIV. 1603.

ſum of one million three hundred thouſand pounds, beſide the double ſubſidy, amounting to two hundred and eighty thouſand pounds, granted her by Parliament [o]. In the year 1599 ſhe ſpent ſix hundred thouſand pounds in ſix months in the ſervice of Ireland [p]. Sir Robert Cecil affirmed, that in ten years time, Ireland coſt her three millions four hundred thouſand pounds [q]. She gave the earl of Eſſex a preſent of thirty thouſand pounds upon his departure for the government of that kingdom [r]. Lord Burleigh computed that the value of the gifts conferred on that favourite amounted to three hundred thouſand pounds: a proof of her ſtrong affection towards him! It was a common ſaying during this reign; *The Queen pays bountifully, tho' ſhe rewards ſparingly* [s].

It is difficult to compute exactly the Queen's ordinary revenue, but it certainly fell much ſhort of five hundred thouſand pounds a year [t]. In 1590, ſhe raiſed the cuſtoms from fourteen thouſand pounds a year to fifty thouſand, and obliged Sir Thomas Smith, who had farmed them, to refund ſome of his former profits [u]. This improvement of the revenue was owing to the ſuggeſtions of one Caermarden; and was extremely oppoſed by Burleigh, Leiceſter, and Walſingham. But the Queen's perſeverance overcame all their oppoſition. The great undertakings, which ſhe executed with ſo narrow a revenue, and with ſuch ſmall ſupplies from her people, prove the mighty effects of wiſdom and

o D'Ewes, p. 483. p Camden, p. 167. q Appendix to the earl of Eſſex's apology. r Birch's Memoirs, vol. II. s Nanton's Regalia, chap. I. t Franklyn in his annals p. 9, ſays that the profit of the kingdom, beſides Wards and the duthy of Lancaſter (*which amounted to about* 120,000 *pounds*) was 188,197 pounds, the crown lands ſeem to be comprehended in this computation u Camden, p. 558. This account of Camden is difficult or impoſſible to be reconciled to the ſtate of the cuſtoms in the beginning of the ſubſequent reign, as they appear in the journals of the commons. See Hiſt. of James, chap. 1.

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

œconomy. She received from the Parliament, during the course of her whole reign, only twenty subsidies and thirty-nine fifteenths. It is not easy to compute exactly the amount of these supplies; because the value of a subsidy was continually falling; and in the end of of her reign it amounted only to eighty thousand pounds [x], tho' in the beginning it had been an hundred and twenty thousand. If we suppose that the supplies granted Elizabeth during a reign of forty-five years amounted to three millions, we shall not probably be much wide of the truth [y]. This sum makes only sixty-six thousand six hundred and sixty-six pounds a year; and it is surprizing, that while the Queen's demands were so moderate, and her expences so well regulated, she should ever have found any difficulty of getting a supply from the Parliament, or be reduced to make sale of the crown-lands. But such was the extreme, I had almost said, absurd parsimony of the Parliaments during that period. They valued nothing in comparison of their money: The members had no connexion with the court; and the very idea, which they conceived of the trust committed to them, was, to reduce the demands of the crown, and to grant as few supplies as possible. The crown, on the other hand, conceived the Parliament in no other light than a means of supply. Queen Elizabeth made a merit to her people of seldom assembling Parliaments [z]. No redress of grievances was expected from these assemblies: They were supposed to meet for no other purpose than to impose taxes.

x D'Ewes, p. 630. y Lord Salisbury computed them at two millions eight hundred thousand pounds. Journ. 17. February 1609. King James was certainly mistaken when he computed the Queen's supplies at 135,000 pounds a year. Franklyn, p. 49. z Strype, vol. IV. p. 124.

BEFORE

CHAP. XLIV.

1603.

BEFORE Queen Elizabeth's reign, the Engliſh princes had uſually recourſe to the city of Antwerp for voluntary loans; and their credit was ſo low, that, beſides the exorbitant intereſt of ten or twelve per cent, they were obliged to make the city of London join in the ſecurity. Sir Thomas Greſham, that great and enterprizing merchant, one of the chief ornaments of this reign, engaged the company of merchant-adventurers to grant a loan to the Queen; and as the money was regularly paid, her credit by degrees eſtabliſhed itſelf in the city, and ſhe ſhook off this dependance on foreigners [a].

In 1559, the Queen employed Greſham to borrow for her two hundred thouſand pounds at Antwerp, in order to enable her to reform the coinage, which was at that time extremely debaſed [b]. She was ſo unpolitic as to make herſelf an innovation in the coin; by dividing a pound of ſilver into ſixty-two ſhillings, inſtead of ſixty, the former ſtandard. This is the laſt time, that the coin has been tampered with in England.

QUEEN Elizabeth, ſenſible how much the defence of her kingdom depended on its naval power, was deſirous to encourage commerce and navigation: But as her monopolies tended to extinguiſh all domeſtic induſtry, which is much more valuable than foreign trade, and is the foundation of it, the general train of her conduct was very ill calculated to ſerve the purpoſe at which ſhe aimed, much leſs to promote the riches of her people. The excluſive companies alſo were an immediate check on foreign trade. Yet, notwithſtanding theſe diſcouragements, the ſpirit of the age was ſtrongly bent on naval enterprizes; and beſides, the military expeditions againſt the Spaniards, many at-

a Stowe's Survey of London, book I. p. 286. b MS. of lord Royſton's from the paper office, p. 295.

tempts were made for new diſcoveries, and many new branches of foreign commerce were opened by the Engliſh. Sir Martin Forbiſher undertook three fruitleſs voyages to diſcover the north-weſt paſſage: Davis, not diſheartened by this ill ſucceſs, made a new attempt, when he diſcovered the ſtraits, which paſs by his name. In 1600, the Queen granted the firſt patent to the Eaſt India company: The ſtock of that company was ſeventy-two thouſand pounds; and they fitted out four ſhips, under the command of James Lancaſter, for this new branch of trade. The adventure was ſucceſsful; and the ſhips, returning with a rich cargo, encouraged the company to continue that commerce.

THE communication with Muſcovy had been opened in Queen Mary's time by the diſcovery of the paſſage to Archangel: But the commerce to that country did not begin to be carried to a great extent till about the year 1569. The Queen obtained from the Czar an excluſive patent to the Engliſh for the whole trade to Muſcovy [c]; and ſhe entered into a perſonal, as well as national, alliance with him. This Czar was named John Baſilides, a moſt furious tyrant, who ſuſpecting continually the revolt of his ſubjects, ſtipulated to have a ſafe retreat and protection in England. In order the better to enſure himſelf of this reſource, he propoſed to marry an Engliſh woman, and the Queen intended to have ſent him the lady Anne Haſtings, daughter to the earl of Huntingdon: But when the lady was informed of the barbarous manners of the country, ſhe wiſely declined purchaſing an empire at the expence of her eaſe and ſafety [d].

THE Engliſh, encouraged by the privileges, which they had obtained from Baſilides, ventured farther into theſe countries, than any Europeans had formerly

[c] Camden, p. 408. [d] Ibid. p. 493.

CHAP. XLIV.

done. They tranſported their goods along the river Dwina in boats made of one entire tree, which they towed and rowed up the ſtream as far as Walogda. From thence, they carried them ſeven days journey by land to Yeraſlau, and then down the Volga to Aſtracan. At Aſtracan, they built ſhips, croſſed the Caſpian Sea, and diſtributed their commodities into Perſia. But this bold attempt met with ſuch diſcouragements that it was never renewed [e].

After the death of John Baſilides, his ſon Theodore revoked the patent, which the Engliſh enjoyed for a monopoly of the Ruſſian trade; and when the Queen remonſtrated againſt this innovation, he told, her miniſters, that princes muſt carry an indifferent hand, as well between their ſubjects as between foreigners; and not convert trade, which by the laws of nations ought to be common to all, into a monopoly for the private gain of a few [f]. So much juſter notions of commerce were entertained by this barbarian, than were practiſed by the renowned Queen Elizabeth! Theodore, however, continued ſome privileges to the Engliſh, on account of their being the firſt diſcoverers of the communication between Europe and his country.

The trade to Turkey was begun about 1583; and that commerce was immediately confined to a company by Queen Elizabeth. Before that time, the grand ſignior had always conceived England to be a dependant province of France [g]; but having heard of the Queen's power and reputation he gave a good reception to the Engliſh, and even granted them larger privileges than he had given to the French.

[e] Ibid. p. 418. [f] Ibid. p. 493. [g] Birch's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 36.

The

CHAP. XLIV.

THE merchants of the Hanſe-towns complained loudly in the beginning of Elizabeth's reign of the treatment, which they had received in the days of King Edward and Queen Mary. She very prudently replied, that as ſhe would not innovate any thing, ſhe would protect them ſtill in the immunities and privileges, which ſhe found them poſſeſſed of. This anſwer not contenting them, their commerce was ſoon after ſuſpended for a time, to the great advantage of the Engliſh merchants, who tried what they could themſelves effectuate for the promotion of their own induſtry. They took the whole trade into in their own hands: and their returns proving ſucceſsful, they divided themſelves into ſtaplers and merchant-adventurers; the former reſiding conſtantly at one place, the other trying their fortunes in other towns and ſtates abroad with cloth and other manufactures. This ſucceſs ſo enraged the Hanſe-towns, that they tried all the methods, which a diſcontented people could deviſe, to draw upon the Engliſh merchants the ill opinion of other nations and ſtates. They prevailed ſo far as to obtain an imperial edict, by which the Engliſh merchants were prohibited all commerce in the empire: The Queen, by way of retaliation, retained ſixty of their ſhips, which had been ſeized in the river of Liſbon with contraband goods of the Spaniards. Theſe ſhips the Queen intended to have reſtored, as deſiring to have compromiſed all differences with thoſe trading cities; but when ſhe was informed, that a general aſſembly was held at Lubec, in order to concert meaſures for diſtreſſing the Engliſh trade, ſhe cauſed the ſhips and cargoes to be confiſcated; only two of them were releaſed to carry home the news, and to inform theſe ſtates, that ſhe had the greateſt contempt imaginable for all their proceedings [h].

[h] Lives of the Admirals, vol. I. p. 470.

CHAP. XLIV.

HENRY the eighth, in order to fit out a navy, was obliged to hire ships from Hamburg, Lubec, Dantzick, Genoa, and Venice: But Elizabeth, very early in her reign, put affairs upon a better footing; both by building some ships of her own, and by encouraging the merchants to build large trading vessels, which, on occasion, were converted into ships of war [1]. In 1582, the seamen in England were computed at fourteen thousand two hundred and ninety-five men [k]; the number of vessels twelve hundred and thirty-two; of which there were only two hundred and seventeen above eighty tons. Monson computes, that tho' the navigation decayed in the first years of James the first, by the practice of the merchants, who carried on their trade in foreign bottoms [l], yet before 1640, this number of seamen was trebled in England [m].

THE navy which the Queen left at her decease appears considerable, when we reflect only on the number of vessels, which were forty-two: But when we consider that none of these ships carried above forty guns; that four only came up to that number; that there were but two ships of a thousand ton; and twenty-three below five hundred, some of fifty, and some even of twenty tons; that the whole number of the guns belonging to the fleet were seven hundred and seventy-four [n]; we must entertain a very contemptible idea of the English navy compared to the force which it has now attained. In the year 1588, there were not above five vessels, equipped by the noblemen and sea-ports, which exceeded two hundred tons [o].

IN 1599, an alarm was given of an invasion from the Spaniards; and the Queen equipped a fleet and

[1] Camden, p. 388. [k] Monson, p. 256. [l] Ibid. p. 300. [m] Ibid. p. 210, 256. [n] Monson, p. 196. The English navy at present carries about 14000 guns. [o] Ibid, p. 300.

levied

levied an army in a fortnight to oppoſe them. Nothing gave foreigners a higher idea of the power of England than this ſudden armament. In 1575, all the militia in the kingdom were computed at an hundred and eighty-two thouſand nine hundred and twenty-nine [p]. A diſtribution was made, in 1595, of an hundred and forty thouſand men, beſides thoſe which Wales could ſupply [q]. Theſe armies were formidable by their numbers; but their diſcipline and experience were not proportional. Small bodies from Dunkirk and Newport frequently ran over, and plundered the eaſt coaſt: So unfit was the militia, as it was then conſtituted, for the defence of the kingdom. The lord lieutenants were firſt appointed to the counties in this reign.

MR. MURDEN [r] has publiſhed a paper, which contains the military force of the nation at the time of the Spaniſh Armada, and which is ſomewhat different from the account given by our ordinary hiſtorians. It makes all the able-bodied men of the kingdom amount to an hundred and eleven thouſand five hundred and thirteen; thoſe armed, to eighty thouſand eight hundred and ſeventy-five; of whom forty four thouſand ſeven hundred and twenty-ſeven were trained. It muſt be ſuppoſed that theſe able-bodied men conſiſted of ſuch only as were regiſtered, otherwiſe the ſmall number is not to be accounted for. Yet Sir Edward [s] ſaid in the Houſe of Commons, that he was employed about the ſame time, together with Popham, Lord Chief Juſtice, to take a ſurvey of all the people of England, and that they found them to be 900,000 of all ſorts. This number, by the ordinary rules of computation, ſuppoſes, that there were above 200,000 men able to bear arms. Yet even this number is ſurprizingly ſmall.

[p] Lives of the Admirals, vol. I. p. 432. [q] Strype, vol. IV. p. 221.
[r] p. 608. [s] Journ. 25. April, 1621.

CHAP. XLIV.

Can we ſuppoſe thus the kingdom is ſeven times more populous at preſent? And that Murden's was the real number of men, excluding catholics and infirm perſons?

WHATEVER opinion we may form of the comparative populouſneſs of England in theſe two periods, it muſt be allowed, that there is a prodigious encreaſe of power, in that, more perhaps than in any other European ſtate, ſince the beginning of the laſt century. It would be no paradox to affirm, that Ireland alone could at preſent exert a greater force than all the three kingdoms were capable of at the death of Queen Elizabeth. And we might go farther, and aſſert, that one good county of England is capable of making, at leaſt of ſupporting, a greater effort than the whole kingdom was in the reign of Harry V; when the maintainance of a garriſon in a ſmall town, like Calais, formed more than a third of the ordinary national expence. Such are the effects of liberty, induſtry, and good government!

THE ſtate of the Engliſh manufactures was at this time very low; and foreign wares of almoſt all kinds had the preference [t]. About 1590, there were in London four perſons only rated in the ſubſidy-books ſo high as four hundred pounds [u]. This computation is not indeed to be deemed an exact eſtimate of their wealth. In 1567, there were found on enquiry to be four thouſand eight hundred and fifty-one ſtrangers of all nations in London: Of whom three thouſand eight hundred and thirty-eight were Flemings, and only fifty-eight Scots [x]. The perſecutions in France and the Low Countries drove afterwards a greater number of foreigners into England; and the commerce, as well

t D'Ewes, p. 505. u Ibid. p. 497. x Haynes, p. 461, 462.

as

as manufactures, of that kingdom was very much improved by them [y]. It was then that Sir Thomas Greſham built, at his own charge, the magnificent fabric of the Exchange for the reception of the merchants: The Queen viſited it, and gave it the appellation of the Royal Exchange.

THERE were two attempts made in this reign to ſettle colonies in America; one by Sir Humphry Gilbert in Newfoundland, another by Sir Walter Raleigh in Virginia: But neither of theſe projects proved ſucceſsful. All theſe noble ſettlements were made in the following reigns. The current money of the kingdom, in the end of this reign, is computed at four millions [z].

THE nobility in this age ſupported ſtill, in ſome degree, the ancient magnificence in their hoſpitality, and in the numbers of their retainers; and the Queen found it prudent to retrench, by proclamation, their expences in this laſt particular [a]. The expence of hoſpitality, ſhe ſomewhat encouraged, by the frequent viſits ſhe paid her nobility, and the magnificent feaſts which ſhe received from them. The earl of Leiceſter gave her an entertainment in Kenilworth caſtle, which was extraordinary for expence and magnificence. Among other particulars, we are told, that three hundred and ſixty-five hogſheeds of beer were drank at it [b]. The earl had fortified this caſtle at great expence; and it contained arms for ten thouſand men [c]. The earl of Derby had a family conſiſting of two hundred and forty ſervants [d]. Stowe remarks it as a ſingular proof of beneficence in this nobleman, that he was contented with his rent from his tenants, and exacted not

y Stowe, p. 668. z Lives of the Admirals, vol. I. p. 475. a Strype, vol. III. Appen. p. 54. b Biogr. Brit. vol. III. p. 1791. c Strype, vol. III. p. 394. d Stowe, p. 674.

CHAP. XLIV.

any extraordinary ſervices from them: A proof that the abſolute power of the ſovereign (what was almoſt unavoidable) had very generally countenanced the nobility in tyrannizing over the people. Burleigh, tho' he was frugal, and had no paternal eſtate, kept a family conſiſting of an hundred ſervants [e]. He had a ſtanding table for gentlemen, and two other tables for perſons of meaner condition, which were always ſerved alike, whether he was in town or in the country. About his perſon he had people of great diſtinction, inſomuch that he could reckon up twenty gentlemen retainers who had each a thouſand pounds a year; and as many among his ordinary ſervants, who were worth from a thouſand pounds to three, five, ten, and twenty thouſand pounds [f]. It is to be remarked, that, tho' the revenue of the crown was at that time very ſmall, the miniſters and courtiers found means, by employing the exorbitant prerogative, to acquire much greater fortunes than it is poſſible for them at preſent to gain, from their larger ſalaries, and more limited authority.

BUT tho' there were preſerved great remains of the ancient cuſtoms, the nobility were, by degrees, acquiring a taſte of elegant luxury; and many edifices, in particular, were built by them, neat, large, and ſumptuous, to the great ornament of the kingdom, ſays Camden [g]; but to the no leſs decay of the glorious hoſpitality of the nation. It is, however, more reaſonable to think, that this new turn of expence promoted arts and induſtry; while the ancient hoſpitality was the ſource of vice, diſorder, ſedition, and idleneſs.

[e] Strype, vol III. p. 129. Appen. [f] Biogr. Brit. p. 1267. [g] Page 452.

AMONG

CHAP. XLIV.

AMONG the other ſpecies of luxury, that of apparel began much to increaſe during this age; and the Queen thought proper to reſtrain it by proclamation [h]. Her example was very little conformable to her edicts. As no woman was ever more conceited of her beauty, nor more deſirous of making impreſſion on the hearts of beholders, no one ever went to a greater extravagance in apparel, or ſtudied more the variety and richneſs of her dreſſes. She appeared almoſt every day in a different habit; and tried all the ſeveral modes, by which ſhe hoped to render herſelf agreeable. She was alſo ſo fond of her cloaths, that ſhe never could part with any of them; and at her death ſhe had in her wardrobe all the different habits, to the number of three thouſand, which ſhe had ever worn in her life-time [i].

THE retrenchment of the ancient hoſpitality, and the diminution of retainers, were favourable to the prerogative of the ſovereign; and by diſabling the great noblemen from reſiſtance, promoted the execution of the laws, and extended the authority of the courts of juſtice. There were many particular cauſes in the ſituation and character of Henry the ſeventh, which augmented the authority of the crown: Moſt of theſe cauſes concurred in ſucceeding princes; together with the factions of religion, and the acquiſition of the ſupremacy, a moſt important article of prerogative: But the manners of the age were a general cauſe, which operated during this whole period, and which continually tended to diminiſh the riches, and ſtill more the influence, of the Ariſtocracy, anciently ſo formidable to the crown. The habits of luxury diſſipated the immenſe fortunes of the ancient barons; and as the new methods of expence gave ſubſiſtance to mechanics

h Camden, p. 452. i Carte, vol. III. p. 702. from Beaumont's Diſpatches.

CHAP. XLIV.

and merchants, who lived in an independant manner on the fruits of their own induſtry, a nobleman, inſtead of that unlimited aſcendant which he was wont to aſſume over thoſe who were maintained at his board, or ſubſiſted by ſalaries conferred on them, retained only that moderate influence which cuſtomers have over tradeſmen, and which can never be dangerous to civil government. The landed proprietors alſo having a greater demand for money than for men, endeavoured to turn their lands to the beſt account with regard to profit, and either incloſing their fields, or joining many ſmall farms into a few large ones, diſmiſſed thoſe uſeleſs hands which formerly were always at their call, in every attempt to ſubvert the government, or oppoſe a neighbouring baron. By all theſe means the cities increaſed; the middle rank of men began to be rich and powerful; the prince, who in effect was the ſame with the law, was implicitly obeyed; and tho' the farther progreſs of the ſame cauſes begot a new plan of liberty, founded on the privileges of the commons, yet in the interval between the fall of the nobles and the riſe of this order, the ſovereign took advantage of the preſent ſituation, and aſſumed an authority almoſt abſolute.

WHATEVER may be commonly imagined, from the authority of lord Bacon, and from that of Harrington, and later authors, the laws of Henry the ſeventh contributed very little towards the great revolutions which happened about this period in the Engliſh conſtitution. The practice of breaking entails, by a fine and recovery, had been introduced in the preceding reigns; and this prince only gave indirectly a legal ſanction to the practice, by reforming ſome abuſes which attended it. But the ſettled authority, which he acquired to the crown, enabled the ſovereign to encroach on the ſeparate juriſdictions of the barons, and produced

produced a more general and regular execution of the laws. The counties palatine underwent the ſame fate as the feudal juriſdictions; and by a ſtatute of Henry the eighth [k], the juriſdiction of theſe counties was annexed to the crown, and all writs were ordained to run in the King's name. But the change of manners was the chief cauſe of the ſecret revolution of the government, and ſubverted the power of the barons.

LEARNING, on its firſt revival, was held in great eſtimation by the Engliſh princes and nobles; and as it was not yet proſtituted by being too common, even the Great deemed it an object of ambition to attain a character for literature. The four ſucceſſive ſovereigns, Henry, Edward, Mary, and Elizabeth, may, on one account or other, be admitted into the claſs of authors. Queen Catherine Parr tranſlated a book: Lady Jane Gray, conſidering her age, and her ſex, and her ſtation, may be regarded as a prodigy of literature. Sir Thomas Smith was raiſed from being profeſſor in Cambridge, firſt to be ambaſſador to France, and then ſecretary of ſtate. The diſpatches of thoſe times, and among others thoſe of Burleigh himſelf, are very frequently interlarded with quotations from the Greek and Latin claſſics. Even the ladies of the court valued themſelves on knowlege: Lady Burleigh, lady Bacon, and their two ſiſters, were miſtreſſes of the ancient, as well as modern languages; and valued themſelves more on their erudition than on their rank and quality.

QUEEN Elizabeth wrote and tranſlated ſeveral books; and ſhe was familiarly acquainted with the Greek as well as Latin tongue. It is pretended, that

[k] 27 Hen. VIII. c. 24.

ſhe

CHAP. XLIV.

she made an extemporary reply in Greek to the university of Cambridge, who had addressed her in that language. It is certain, that she answered in Latin, without premeditation, and in a very spirited manner, to the Polish ambassador, who had been wanting in respect to her. When she had finished, she turned about to her courtiers, and said, "God's death, my "lords," (for she was much addicted to swearing) "I "have been forced this day to scour up my old Latin, "that hath long lain rusting[1]." Elizabeth, even after she was Queen, did not entirely drop the ambition of appearing as an author; and next to her desire of admiration for beauty, this seems to have been the chief object of her vanity. She translated Boethius of the Consolation of Philosophy; in order, as she pretended, to allay her grief for Henry the fourth's change of religion. As far as we can judge from Elizabeth's compositions, we may pronounce, that notwithstanding her application, and her excellent parts, her taste in literature was very indifferent: She was even inferior to her successor in this particular, who was himself far from being a just model of eloquence.

UNHAPPILY for literature, at least for the learned of this age, the Queen's vanity lay more in shining by her own learning, than in encouraging men of genius by her liberality. Spencer himself, the finest English writer of his age, was long neglected; and after the death of Sir Philip Sydney, his patron, was allowed to die almost for want. This poet contains great beauties, a sweet and harmonious versification, easy elocution, a fine imagination; Yet does the perusal of his work become so tedious, that one never finishes it from the mere pleasure which it affords: It soon becomes a kind of task-reading; and it requires some effort

[1] Speed.

and

and reſolution to carry us on to the end of his long performance. This effect, of which every one is conſcious, is uſually aſcribed to the change of manners: But manners have more changed ſince Homer's age; and yet that poet remains ſtill the favourite of every reader of taſte and judgment. Homer copied true natural manners, which, however rough or uncultivated, will always form an agreeable and intereſting picture: But the pencil of the Engliſh poet was employed in drawing the affectations, and conceits, and fopperies of chivalry, which appear ridiculous as ſoon as they loſe the recommendation of the mode. The tediouſneſs of continued allegory, and that too ſeldom ſtriking or ingenious, has alſo contributed to render the *Fairy Queen* peculiarly tireſome; not to mention the too great frequency of its deſcriptions, and the langour of its ſtanza. Upon the whole, Spencer maintains his place in the ſhelves among our Engliſh claſſics: But he is ſeldom ſeen on the table; and there is ſcarce any one, if he dares to be ingenuous, but will confeſs, that, notwithſtanding all the merit of the poet, he affords an entertainment with which the palate is ſoon ſatiated. Several writers of late have amuſed themſelves in copying the ſtile of Spencer; and no imitation has been ſo indifferent as not to bear a great reſemblance of the original: His manner is ſo peculiar, that it is almoſt impoſſible not to transfer ſome of it into the copy.

CHAP. XLIV.

ſhe made an extemporary reply in Greek to the univerſity of Cambridge, who had addreſſed her in that language. It is certain, that ſhe anſwered in Latin, without premeditation, and in a very ſpirited manner, to the Poliſh ambaſſador, who had been wanting in reſpect to her. When ſhe had finiſhed, ſhe turned about to her courtiers, and ſaid, "God's death, my "lords," (for ſhe was much addicted to ſwearing) "I "have been forced this day to ſcour up my old Latin, "that hath long lain ruſting[1]." Elizabeth, even after ſhe was Queen, did not entirely drop the ambition of appearing as an author; and next to her deſire of admiration for beauty, this ſeems to have been the chief object of her vanity. She tranſlated Boethius of the Conſolation of Philoſophy; in order, as ſhe pretended, to allay her grief for Henry the fourth's change of religion. As far as we can judge from Elizabeth's compoſitions, we may pronounce, that notwithſtanding her application, and her excellent parts, her taſte in literature was very indifferent: She was even inferior to her ſucceſſor in this particular, who was himſelf far from being a juſt model of eloquence.

UNHAPPILY for literature, at leaſt for the learned of this age, the Queen's vanity lay more in ſhining by her own learning, than in encouraging men of genius by her liberality. Spencer himſelf, the fineſt Engliſh writer of his age, was long neglected; and after the death of Sir Philip Sydney, his patron, was allowed to die almoſt for want. This poet contains great beauties, a ſweet and harmonious verſification, eaſy elocution, a fine imagination; Yet does the peruſal of his work become ſo tedious, that one never finiſhes it from the mere pleaſure which it affords: It ſoon becomes a kind of taſk-reading; and it requires ſome effort

[1] Speed.

and

and reſolution to carry us on to the end of his long performance. This effect, of which every one is conſcious, is uſually aſcribed to the change of manners: But manners have more changed ſince Homer's age; and yet that poet remains ſtill the favourite of every reader of taſte and judgment. Homer copied true natural manners, which, however rough or uncultivated, will always form an agreeable and intereſting picture: But the pencil of the Engliſh poet was employed in drawing the affectations, and conceits, and fopperies of chivalry, which appear ridiculous as ſoon as they loſe the recommendation of the mode. The tediouſneſs of continued allegory, and that too ſeldom ſtriking or ingenious, has alſo contributed to render the *Fairy Queen* peculiarly tireſome; not to mention the too great frequency of its deſcriptions, and the langour of its ſtanza. Upon the whole, Spencer maintains his place in the ſhelves among our Engliſh claſſics: But he is ſeldom ſeen on the table; and there is ſcarce any one, if he dares to be ingenuous, but will confeſs, that, notwithſtanding all the merit of the poet, he affords an entertainment with which the palate is ſoon ſatiated. Several writers of late have amuſed themſelves in copying the ſtile of Spencer; and no imitation has been ſo indifferent as not to bear a great reſemblance of the original: His manner is ſo peculiar, that it is almoſt impoſſible not to transfer ſome of it into the copy.

CHAP. XLV.

Introduction.—James's first transactions.—State of Europe.—Rosni's negotiations.—Raleigh's conspiracy.—Hampton-court conference.—A parliament.—Peace with Spain.

CHAP. XLV. 1603.

THE crown of England was never transmitted from father to son with greater tranquillity, than it passed from the family of Tudor to that of Stuart. During the whole reign of Elizabeth, the eyes of men had been employed in search of her successor; and when old age made the prospect of her death more immediate, there appeared none but the King of Scotland, who could advance any just claim or pretension to the throne. He was the great-grandson of Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry VII. and, on the failure of all the male-line, his hereditary right remained unquestionable. If the religion of Mary Queen of Scots, and the other prejudices contracted against her, had formed any considerable obstacle to her succession; these objections, being entirely personal, had no place with regard to her son. Men also considered, that, tho' the title, derived from blood, had been frequently violated since the Norman conquest, such licences had proceeded more from force or intrigue, than from any deliberate maxims of government. The lineal heir had still in the end prevailed; and both his exclusion and restoration had been commonly attended with such convulsions, as were sufficient to warn all prudent men not lightly to give way to such irregularities. If the will of Henry VIII. authorised by act of parliament, had tacitly excluded the Scottish line; the tyranny and caprices of that monarch had rendered his memory so odious, that a settlement of this nature, unsupported

CHAP. XLV.

1603.

ſupported by any juſt reaſon, had no authority with the people. Queen Elizabeth too, with her dying breath, had recognized the undoubted title of her kinſman James; and the whole nation ſeemed to diſpoſe themſelves with joy and pleaſure for his reception. Tho' born and educated amidſt a foreign and hoſtile people, men hoped, from his character of moderation and wiſdom, that he would embrace the maxims of an Engliſh monarch; and the prudent foreſaw greater advantages, reſulting from an union with Scotland, than diſadvantages from ſubmitting to a prince of that nation. The alacrity, with which the Engliſh looked towards the ſucceſſor, had apppeared ſo evident to Elizabeth, that, concurring with other cauſes, it affected her with the deepeſt melancholy; and that wiſe Princeſs, whoſe penetration and experience had given her the greateſt inſight into human affairs, had not yet ſufficiently weighed the ingratitude of courtiers, and levity of the people.

As victory abroad, and tranquillity at home, had ever attended this Queen, ſhe left the nation in ſuch flouriſhing circumſtances, that her ſucceſſor poſſeſſed every advantage, except that of compariſon with her illuſtrious name, when he mounted the throne of England. The King's journey from Edinburgh to London immediately afforded to the inquiſitive ſome circumſtances of compariſon, which even the natural partiality in favour of their new ſovereign, could not interpret to his advantage. As he paſſed along, all ranks of men flocked about him, from every quarter; allured by intereſt or curioſity. Great were the rejoicings, and loud and hearty the acclamations which reſounded from all ſides; and every one could remember how the affability and popularity of their Queen diſplayed themſelves, amidſt ſuch concourſe and exultation of

First tranſactions of this reign.

CHAP. XLV.

1603.

her ſubjects. But James, tho' ſociable and familiar with his friends and courtiers, hated the buſtle of a mixt multitude; and tho' far from diſliking flattery, yet was he ſtill fonder of tranquillity and eaſe. He therefore iſſued a proclamation, forbidding this great reſort of people, on pretence of the ſcarcity of proviſions, and other inconveniencies, which would neceſſarily attend it [m].

He was not, however, inſenſible to the great overflow of affection, which appeared in his new ſubjects; and being himſelf of an affectionate temper, he ſeems to have been in haſte to make them ſome return of kindneſs and good offices. To this motive, probably, we are to aſcribe that profuſion of titles, which was obſerved in the beginning of his reign; when in ſix weeks time, after his entrance into the kingdom, he is computed to have beſtowed knighthood on no leſs than 237 perſons. If Queen Elizabeth's frugality of honours, as well as of money, had been formerly repined at, it began now to be valued and eſteemed: And every one was ſenſible, that the King, by his laviſh and premature conferring of favours, had failed of obliging the perſons, on whom he beſtowed them. Titles of all kinds became ſo common, that they were no longer marks of diſtinction; and being diſtributed, without choice or deliberation, to perſons, unknown to the Prince, were regarded more as the proofs of facility and good-nature, than of any determined friendſhip or eſteem.

A paſquinade was affixed to St Paul's, in which an art was promiſed to be taught, very neceſſary to aſſiſt frail memories, in retaining the names of the new Nobility [n].

[m] Kennet. p. 662. [n] Wilſon, in Kennet, p. 665.

We

CHAP. XLV. 1603.

We may preſume, that the Engliſh would have thrown leſs blame on the King's facility in beſtowing favours, had theſe been confined entirely to their own nation, and had not been ſhared out, in too unequal proportions, to his old ſubjects. James, who, thro' his whole reign, was more guided by temper and inclination than by the rules of political prudence, had brought with him great numbers of his Scots courtiers; whoſe impatience and importunity were apt, in many particulars, to impoſe on the eaſy nature of their maſter, and extort favours, of which, it is natural to imagine, his Engliſh ſubjects would very loudly complain. The Duke of Lenox, the Earl of Mar, the Lord Hume, Lord Kinloſs, Sir George Hume, Secretary Elphinſtone [a], were immediately added to the Engliſh privy council. Sir George Hume, whom he created Earl of Dunbar, was his declared favourite as long as that Nobleman lived; and was the wiſeſt and moſt virtuous, tho' the leaſt powerful, of all thoſe whom the King ever honoured with that diſtinction. Hay, ſome time after, was created Viſcount Doncaſter, and then Earl of Carliſle, and got an immenſe fortune from the crown; all which he ſpent in a ſplendid and courtly manner. Ramſay obtained the title of Earl of Holderneſs; and many others, being raiſed, on a ſudden, to the higheſt elevation, encreaſed, by their inſolence, that envy, which naturally attended them, as enemies and ſtrangers.

It muſt, however, be owned, in juſtice to James, that he left almoſt all the chief offices in the hands of Elizabeth's miniſters, and truſted the conduct of political concerns, both foreign and domeſtic, to his Engliſh ſubjects. Among theſe, Secretary Cecil, created ſucceſſively Lord Eſſindon, Viſcount Cranborne, and

[a] Wilſon in Kennet, p. 662.

CHAP. XLV.

1603.

her ſubjects. But James, tho' ſociable and familiar with his friends and courtiers, hated the buſtle of a mixt multitude; and tho' far from diſliking flattery, yet was he ſtill fonder of tranquillity and eaſe. He therefore iſſued a proclamation, forbidding this great reſort of people, on pretence of the ſcarcity of proviſions, and other inconveniencies, which would neceſſarily attend it [m].

He was not, however, inſenſible to the great overflow of affection, which appeared in his new ſubjects; and being himſelf of an affectionate temper, he ſeems to have been in haſte to make them ſome return of kindneſs and good offices. To this motive, probably, we are to aſcribe that profuſion of titles, which was obſerved in the beginning of his reign; when in ſix weeks time, after his entrance into the kingdom, he is computed to have beſtowed knighthood on no leſs than 237 perſons. If Queen Elizabeth's frugality of honours, as well as of money, had been formerly repined at, it began now to be valued and eſteemed: And every one was ſenſible, that the King, by his laviſh and premature conferring of favours, had failed of obliging the perſons, on whom he beſtowed them. Titles of all kinds became ſo common, that they were no longer marks of diſtinction; and being diſtributed, without choice or deliberation, to perſons, unknown to the Prince, were regarded more as the proofs of facility and good-nature, than of any determined friendſhip or eſteem.

A paſquinade was affixed to St Paul's, in which an art was promiſed to be taught, very neceſſary to aſſiſt frail memories, in retaining the names of the new Nobility [n].

[m] Kennet. p. 662. [n] Wilſon, in Kennet, p. 665.

We

CHAP. XLV. 1603.

We may preſume, that the Engliſh would have thrown leſs blame on the King's facility in beſtowing favours, had theſe been confined entirely to their own nation, and had not been ſhared out, in too unequal proportions, to his old ſubjects. James, who, thro' his whole reign, was more guided by temper and inclination than by the rules of political prudence, had brought with him great numbers of his Scots courtiers; whoſe impatience and importunity were apt, in many particulars, to impoſe on the eaſy nature of their maſter, and extort favours, of which, it is natural to imagine, his Engliſh ſubjects would very loudly complain. The Duke of Lenox, the Earl of Mar, the Lord Hume, Lord Kinloſs, Sir George Hume, Secretary Elphinſtone [o], were immediately added to the Engliſh privy council. Sir George Hume, whom he created Earl of Dunbar, was his declared favourite as long as that Nobleman lived; and was the wiſeſt and moſt virtuous, tho' the leaſt powerful, of all thoſe whom the King ever honoured with that diſtinction. Hay, ſome time after, was created Viſcount Doncaſter, and then Earl of Carliſle, and got an immenſe fortune from the crown; all which he ſpent in a ſplendid and courtly manner. Ramſay obtained the title of Earl of Holderneſs; and many others, being raiſed, on a ſudden, to the higheſt elevation, encreaſed, by their inſolence, that envy, which naturally attended them, as enemies and ſtrangers.

It muſt, however, be owned, in juſtice to James, that he left almoſt all the chief offices in the hands of Elizabeth's miniſters, and truſted the conduct of political concerns, both foreign and domeſtic, to his Engliſh ſubjects. Among theſe, Secretary Cecil, created ſucceſſively Lord Eſſindon, Viſcount Cranborne, and

[o] Wilſon in Kennet, p. 662.

CHAP. XLV.

1603.

Earl of Saliſbury, was always regarded as his prime miniſter and chief counſellor. Tho' the capacity and penetration of this miniſter were ſufficiently known, his favour with the King created great ſurprize on the acceſſion of that monarch. Cecil was ſon of the famous Burleigh, whoſe merits towards his ſovereign and his country were great, but whoſe name was naturally odious to James; as the declared enemy of his mother, and the chief cauſe of her tragical death, by ſome eſteemed the great ſtain in the bright annals of Elizabeth. He himſelf, as well as his father, had ſtood at the head of the court-faction, which oppoſed the greatneſs of the Earl of Eſſex, and which, aſſiſted by the imprudence or rather frenzy of that favourite, at laſt brought him to the ſcaffold. The people, by whom the Earl was infinitely beloved, reſented the conduct of his enemies; but James ſtill more, who had maintained a ſecret correſpondence with Eſſex, and regarded him as a zealous partizan for the ſucceſſion in the houſe of Stuart. Sir Walter Raleigh, Lord Grey, Lord Cobham, Cecil's aſſociates, felt immediately the effects of theſe prejudices of their maſter, and were diſmiſſed from their employments [p]: But Cecil, who poſſeſſed all the art and cunning of a courtier, as well as many of the talents of a great ſtateſman, had found the means of making his peace with James; and, unknown both to Elizabeth and all the other miniſters, had entered into a ſecret commerce with the ſucceſſor, during the latter years of the Queen's adminiſtration.

THE capacity of James and his miniſters in negotiation was immediately put to trial, on the appearance of ambaſſadors from almoſt all the princes and ſtates of Europe, in order to congratulate the King on his acceſſion to the throne, and to form with him

[p] Kennet, p. 663.

new

new treaties and alliances. Beſide miniſters from Venice, Denmark, the Palatinate; Henry Frederic of Naſſau, aſſiſted by Barnevelt the Penſionary of Holland, repreſented the ſtates of the United Provinces. Aremberg was ſent by Archduke Albert; and Taxis was expected in a little time from Spain. But he who excited moſt the attention of the public, both on account of his own merit and that of his maſter, was the Marqueſs of Roſni, afterwards Duke of Sully, prime miniſter and favourite of Henry IV. of France. CHAP. XLV. 1603. 8th of June.

When the dominions of the houſe of Auſtria devolved on Philip II. all Europe was ſtruck with terror; leſt the power of a family, which had been raiſed by fortune, ſhould now be carried to an immeaſurable height, by the wiſdom and conduct of this monarch. But never were apprehenſions found in the event to be more groundleſs. Slow without prudence, ambitious without enterprize, falſe without deceiving any body, and refined without any true judgment; ſuch was the character of Philip and ſuch the character, which during his life-time and after his death, he impreſſed on the Spaniſh councils. Revolted or depopulated provinces, diſcontented or indolent inhabitants, were the ſpectacles, which thoſe dominions, lying in every climate of the globe, preſented to Philip III. a weak prince, and to the Duke of Lerma, a miniſter, weak and odious. But tho' military diſcipline, which ſtill remained, was what alone gave ſome appearance of life and vigour to that languiſhing body; yet ſuch was the terror, produced by former power and ambition, that the reduction of the houſe of Auſtria was the object of men's vows, throughout all the ſtates of chriſtendom. It was not perceived, that the French empire, now united in domeſtic peace, and governed by the moſt heroic and moſt amiable prince, that adorns modern ſtory, was become, of itſelf, a ſufficient counterpoiſe State of Europe.

CHAP. XLV.

1603. Roſni's negotiations.

terpoiſe to the Spaniſh greatneſs. Perhaps, that prince himſelf did not perceive it, when he propoſed, by his miniſter, a league with James, in conjunction with Venice, the United Provinces, and the northern crowns; in order to attack the Auſtrian dominions on every ſide, and depreſs the exorbitant power of that ambitious family [q]. But the genius of the Engliſh monarch was not equal to ſuch vaſt enterprizes. The love of peace was his ruling paſſion; and it was his peculiar felicity, that the conjunctures of the times rendered the ſame object which was agreeable to him, in the higheſt degree advantageous to his people.

THE French ambaſſador, therefore, was obliged to depart from theſe extenſive aims, and to concert with James the means of providing for the ſafety of the United Provinces: Nor was this object altogether without its difficulties. The King, before his acceſſion to the throne of England, had entertained very ſtrong ſcruples with regard to the revolt of the Low Countries; and being always open and ſincere [r], except when deliberately reſolved to diſſemble, he had, on many occaſions, gone ſo far as to give to the Dutch the denomination of rebels, but having converſed more fully with Engliſh miniſters and courtiers, he found their attachment to that republic ſo ſtrong, and their opinion of common intereſt ſo eſtabliſhed, that he was obliged to ſacrifice to politics his ſenſe of juſtice; a quality, which, even when erroneous, is reſpectable as well as rare in a monarch. He therefore agreed with Roſni to ſupport ſecretly the ſtates-general, in concert with the King of France; leſt their weakneſs and deſpair ſhould oblige them to ſubmit to their old maſter. The articles of the treaty were few and ſimple. It was ſtipulated, that the two

q Sully's Memoirs. r Monſieur de la Boderie, the French leaguer, ambaſſador at that time in England, aſcribes the virtue of openneſs and ſincerity to the King. *Le naturel du Roi eſt aſſez ouvert.* vol. i. p. 120. s Winwood, vol. 2. p. 55.

Kings

Kings ſhould allow the Dutch to levy forces both in France and Britain; and ſhould underhand remit to that republic the ſum of 1,400,000 livres a year for the pay of theſe forces: That the whole ſum ſhould be advanced by the King of France; but that the third of it ſhould be deducted from a debt due by him to Queen Elizabeth. And if the Spaniard attacked either of the Princes, they agreed to aſſiſt each other; Henry with a force of ten thouſand, James with that of ſix thouſand men. This treaty, one of the wiſeſt and moſt equitable concluded by James, during the whole courſe of his reign, was more the work of the Prince himſelf, than any of his miniſters [t]. 1603.

Raleigh's conſpiracy.

AMIDST the great tranquillity, both foreign and domeſtic, with which the nation was bleſt, nothing could be more ſurpriſing than the diſcovery of a conſpiracy to ſubvert the government, and to fix on the throne of England Arabella Stuart, a near relation of the King, and deſcended equally from Henry VII. Every thing remains ſtill myſterious in this conſpiracy; and hiſtory can give us no clue to unravel it. Watſon and Clarke, two catholic prieſts, were accuſed of the plot: Lord Grey, a puritan: Lord Cobham, a thoughtleſs man of no fixt principle: And Sir Walter Raleigh, ſuſpected to be of that philoſophical ſect, who were then extremely rare in England, and who have ſince received the appellation of *free-thinkers*. Together with theſe, Mr. Broke, brother to Lord Cobham, Sir Griffin Markham, Mr. Copeley, Sir Edward Parham. What cement could unite men of ſuch diſcordant principles in ſo dangerous a combination; what end they propoſed, or what means proportioned to an undertaking of this nature, has never yet been explained, and cannot eaſily be imagined. As Raleigh, Grey, and Cobham were

[t] Sully's Memoirs.

CHAP. XLV. 1603.

commonly believed, after the Queen's death, to have oppoſed proclaiming the King, till conditions ſhould be made with him; they were, upon that, as well as other accounts, extremely obnoxious to the court and miniſtry; and people were apt, at firſt, to ſuſpect, that the plot was merely a contrivance of Secretary Cecil, to get rid of his old confederates, now become his moſt inveterate enemies. But the confeſſion, as well as trial of the criminals, put the matter beyond all doubt [u]. And tho' no one could find any marks of a concerted enterprize, it appeared, that men of furious and ambitious ſpirits, meeting frequently together, and believing all the world diſcontented like themſelves, had entertained very criminal projects, and had even entered, ſome of them at leaſt, into a correſpondence with Aremberg, the Flemiſh ambaſſador, in order to give diſturbance to the new ſettlement.

THE two prieſts [x] and Broke [y] were executed: Cobham, Grey, and Marham were pardoned [z], after they had laid their heads upon the block [a]. Raleigh too was reprieved, not pardoned; and he remained in confinement many years afterwards.

IT appears from Sully's Memoirs, that Raleigh ſecretly offered his ſervices to the French ambaſſador; and we may thence preſume, that, meeting with a repulſe from that quarter, he had recourſe, for the ſame unwarrantable purpoſes, to the Flemiſh miniſter. Such a conjecture we are now enabled to form; but it muſt be confeſſed, that, on his trial, there appeared no proof of this tranſaction, nor indeed any circumſtance which could juſtify his condemnation. He was accuſed by Cobham alone, in a ſudden fit of paſſion, upon hearing, that Raleigh, when examined, had pointed out

[u] State Trials, p. 180. 2d Edit. Winwood Vol. 2. p. 8, 11.
[x] November 29. [y] December 5. [z] December 9. [a] Winwood, vol. 2. p. 11.

ſome

CHAP. XLV.

ſome circumſtances, by which Cobham's guilt might be known and aſcertained. This accuſation Cobham afterwards retracted; and ſoon after, retracted his retractation. Yet, upon the written evidence of this ſingle witneſs, a man of no honour nor underſtanding, and ſo contradictory in his teſtimony; not confronted with Raleigh; not ſupported by any concurring circumſtance; was that great man, contrary to all law and equity, found guilty by the jury. His name was at that time extremely odious in England; and every man was pleaſed to give ſentence againſt the capital enemy of Eſſex, the favourite of the people. 1603.

Sir Edward Coke, the famous lawyer, then attorney-general, managed the cauſe for the crown, and threw out on Raleigh ſuch groſs abuſe, as may be deemed a great reflection, not only on his own memory, but even, in ſome degree, on the manners of that age. Traitor, monſter, viper, and ſpider of hell, are the terms, which he employs againſt one of the moſt illuſtrious men of the kingdom, who was under trial for life and fortune, and who defended himſelf with ſurpriſing temper, eloquence, and courage [b].

THE next occupation of the King was entirely according to his heart's content. He was now employed, in dictating magiſterially to an aſſembly of divines concerning points of faith and diſcipline, and in receiving the applauſes of theſe holy men for his ſuperior zeal and learning. The religious diſputes between the church and the puritans had induced him to call a conference at Hampton-court, on pretence of finding expedients, which might reconcile both parties. 1604.

THO' the ſeverities of Elizabeth towards the catholics had much weakened that party, whoſe genius was averſe to the prevailing ſpirit of the nation; like ſeve-

[b] State Trials, 1ſt Edit. p. 176, 177, 182.

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

rities had had ſo little influence on the puritans, who were encouraged by that ſpirit, that no leſs than ſeven hundred and fifty clergymen of that party ſigned a petition to the King on his acceſſion; and many more ſeemed willing to adhere to it [c]. They all hoped, that James, having received his education in Scotland, and having ever profeſſed an attachment to the church eſtabliſhed there, would at leaſt abate the rigour of the laws enacted againſt puritans; if he did not ſhow them more particular grace and encouragement. But the King's diſpoſition had taken ſtrongly a contrary byaſs. The more he knew the puritanical clergy, the leſs favour he bore them. He had remarked in their Scots brethren a violent turn towards republicaniſm, and a zealous attachment to civil liberty; principles nearly allied to that religious enthuſiaſm, with which they were actuated. He had found, that being moſtly perſons of low birth and mean education, the ſame lofty pretenſions, which attended them in their familiar addreſſes to their Maker, of whom they believed themſelves the peculiar favourites, induced them to uſe the utmoſt freedoms with their earthly ſovereign. In both capacities, of monarch and of theologian, he had experienced the little complaiſance, which they were diſpoſed to ſhow him; whilſt they controuled his commands, diſputed his tenets, and to his face, before the whole people, cenſured his conduct and behaviour. If he had ſubmitted to the indignity of courting their favour, he treaſured up the ſtronger reſentment againſt them, and was determined to make them feel, in their turn, the weight of his authority. Tho' he had often met with reſiſtance and faction and obſtinacy in the Scots nobility, he retained no ill-will to that order; or rather ſhowed them favour and kindneſs in England,

[c] Fuller Book, 10. Collier vol. 2. p. 672.

beyond

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

beyond what reaſon and ſound policy could well juſtify: But the aſcendant, which the preſbyterian clergy had aſſumed over him, was what his monarchical pride could never thoroughly digeſt [d].

He dreaded likewiſe the popularity, which attended this order of men in both kingdoms. As uſeleſs auſterities and ſelf-denial are imagined, in many religions, to render us acceptable to a benevolent Being, who created us ſolely for happineſs, James remarked, that the ruſtic ſeverity of theſe clergymen and of their whole ſect had given them, in the eyes of the multitude, the appearance of ſanctity and virtue. Strongly inclined himſelf to mirth and wine and ſports of all kinds, he apprehended their cenſure for his manner of life, free and diſengaged. And, being thus averſe, from temper as well as policy, to the ſect of puritans, he was reſolved, if poſſible, to prevent it's further growth in England.

But it was the character of James's councils, throughout his whole reign, that they were more wiſe and equitable, in their end, than prudent and political, in the means. Tho' juſtly ſenſible, that no part of civil adminiſtration required greater care or a nicer judgment than the conduct of religious parties, whoſe various geniuſes, affections and antipathies, have ſo mighty an influence on public affairs; he had not perceived, that in the ſame proportion as this practical knowlege of theology is requiſite, the ſpeculative refinements in it are mean, and even dangerous in a monarch. By entering zealouſly into frivolous diſputes, James gave them an air of importance and dignity, which they could

[d] James ventured to ſay in his Baſilicon Doron, publiſhed while he was in Scotland: "I proteſt before the great God, and ſince I am here as upon my Teſtament, it is no place for me to lie in, that ye ſhall never find with any Highland or Borderer Thieves, greater ingratitude and more lyes and vile perjuries, than with theſe fanatic ſpirits: And ſuffer not the principal of them to brook your land." *K. James Works*, p. 161.

not

CHAP. IXLV.

1604.

not otherwiſe have acquired; and being himſelf inliſted in the quarrel, he could no longer have recourſe to contempt and ridicule, the only proper method of appeaſing it. The church of England had not yet abandoned the rigid doctrines of grace and predeſtination: The puritans had not yet totally ſeparated themſelves from the church, nor openly renounced epiſcopacy. Tho' the ſpirit of the parties was conſiderably different, the only apparent ſubjects of diſpute were concerning the croſs in baptiſm, the ring in marriage, the uſe of the ſurplice, and the bowing at the name of Jeſus. Theſe were the mighty queſtions, which were ſolemnly agitated in the conference at Hampton-court between ſome biſhops and dignified clergymen on the one hand, and ſome leaders of the puritan party on the other; the king and his miniſters being preſent [e].

Conference at Hampton-court.

4th of January.

THE puritans were here ſo unreaſonable as to complain of a partial and unfair management of the diſpute; as if the ſearch after truth were in any degree the object of ſuch conferences, and a candid indifference, ſo rare even among private inquirers in *philoſophical* queſtions, could ever be expected among princes and prelates, in a *theological* controverſy. The King, it muſt be confeſſed, from the beginning of the Conference, ſhowed the ſtrongeſt propenſity to the eſtabliſhed church, and frequently inculcated a maxim, which, tho' it has ſome foundation, is to be received with great limitations, NO BISHOP, NO KING. The biſhops, in their turn, were very liberal of their praiſes towards the royal diſputant; and the Archbiſhop of Canterbury ſaid, that *undoubtedly his Majeſty ſpoke by the ſpecial aſſiſtance of God's ſpirit* [f]. A few alterations in the liturgy were agreed to, and both parties ſeparated with mutual diſſatisfaction.

[e] Fuller's Eccleſiaſt. Hiſtory. [f] Kennet, p. 665.

IT

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

It had frequently been the practice of puritanical clergymen to form together certain aſſemblies, which they called *propheſyings*; where alternately, as moved by the ſpirit, they diſplayed their pious zeal in prayers and exhortations, and raiſed their own enthuſiaſm, as well as that of their audience, to the higheſt pitch, from that ſocial contagion, which has ſo mighty an influence on holy fervours, and from the mutual emulation, which aroſe in thoſe trials of religious eloquence. Such dangerous ſocieties had been ſuppreſſed by Elizabeth; and the miniſters in this conference moved the King for their revival. But James ſharply replied, *If you aim at a* Scottiſh *preſbytery, it agrees as well with monarchy as God and the devil. There* Jack *and* Tom *and* Will *and* Dick *ſhall meet and cenſure me and my council. Therefore I reiterate my former ſpeech:* Le Roi s'aviſera. *Stay, I pray for one ſeven years before you demand; and then, if you find me grow purſie and fat, I may perchance hearken unto you. For that government will keep me in breath, and give me work enough* [z]. Such were the political conſiderations, which determined the King in his choice among religious parties.

A parliament.

March 19.

The next aſſembly, in which James diſplayed his learning and eloquence, was one that ſhowed ſome more ſpirit of liberty than appeared among his biſhops and theologians. The parliament was now ready to aſſemble; being ſo long delayed on account of the plague, which had broke out in London. and raged to ſuch a degree, that 30,000 perſons are computed to have died of it in a year; tho' the City contained at that time only about 150,000 inhabitants.

The ſpeech, which the King made on opening the parliament, diſplays fully his character, and proves him to have poſſeſſed more knowlege and greater parts

[z] Fuller's Eccleſiaſt. Hiſtory.

than

CHAP. XLIV. 1604.

than prudence or any juſt ſenſe of decorum and propriety [h]. Tho' few productions of the age ſurpaſs this ſpeech either in ſtyle or matter; it wants that majeſtic brevity and reſerve, which becomes a king in his addreſſes to the great council of the nation. It contains, however, a very remarkable ſtroke of candor, where he confeſſes his too great facility in yielding to the ſollicitations of ſuitors [i]. A fault, which he promiſes to correct, but which adhered to him, and diſtreſſed him, during the whole courſe of his reign.

THE firſt buſineſs, in which the commons were engaged, was of the utmoſt importance to the preſervation of their privileges; and neither temper nor reſolution were wanting in their conduct of it.

IN former periods of the Engliſh government, the houſe of commons were of ſo ſmall weight in the balance of the conſtitution, that little attention had been given, either by the crown, the people, or the houſe itſelf, to the choice and continuance of the members. It had been uſual, after parliaments were prolonged beyond one ſeſſion, for the chancellor to exert a diſcretionary authority, of iſſuing new writs to ſupply the place of any members, whom he judged incapable of attending, either on account of their employment, their ſickneſs, or other impediment. This practice gave that miniſter, and conſequently the prince, an unlimited power of garbling at pleaſure the repreſentatives of the nation; yet ſo little jealouſy had it created, that the commons of themſelves, without any court influence or intrigue, and contrary to ſome former votes of their own, confirmed it in the twenty third of Elizabeth [k]. At that time, tho' ſome members, whoſe place had been ſupplied on account of ſickneſs, having

h K. James's Works, p. 484, 485, &c. Journ. 22d March 1603. Kennet, p. 668. i K. James's Works, p. 495, 496. k Journ. January 19, 1580.

now

CHAP. XLIV. 1604.

now recovered their health, appeared in the houſe, and claimed their ſeat; ſuch was the authority of the chancellor, that merely out of reſpect to him, his ſentence was adhered to, and the new members were continued in their places. Here a moſt dangerous prerogative was conferred on the crown: But to ſhow the genius of that age, or rather the channels in which power then ran, the crown put very little value on this authority; inſomuch, that two days afterwards, the chancellor, of himſelf, reſigned it back to the commons, and and gave them power to judge of a particular vacancy in their houſe. And when the queſtion, concerning the chancellor's new writs, was again brought on the carpet towards the end of the ſeſſion, the commons were ſo little terrified at the precedent, that, tho' they re-admitted ſome old members, whoſe ſeats had been vacated, on account of ſlight indiſpoſitions, yet they confirmed the chancellor's ſentence, in inſtances where the diſtemper appeared dangerous and incurable[1]. Nor did they proceed any farther, in vindication of their privileges, than to vote, *that during the ſitting of parliament there do not, at any time, any writ go out for the chooſing or returning any member without the warrant of the houſe.* In Elizabeth's reign we may remark, and the reigns preceding, ſeſſions of parliament uſually continued not above the twelfth part ſo long as the vacations: and during the latter, the chancellor's power, if he pleaſed to exert it, was ſtill left, by this vote, as unlimited and unreſtrained as ever.

In a ſubſequent parliament, the abſolute authority of the Queen was exerted in a manner ſtill more open; and began for the firſt time to give alarm to the commons. New writs having been iſſued by the chancellor, when there was no vacancy, and a controverſy

[1] Journ. March 18, 1580. See farther D'Ewes, p. 430.

ariſing

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

ariſing upon that incident; the Queen ſent a meſſage to the houſe, informing them, that it was impertinent for them to deal in ſuch matters. Theſe queſtions, ſhe ſaid, belonged only to the chancellor; and ſhe had appointed him to confer with the judges, in order to ſettle all diſputes with regard to elections. The commons had the courage, a few days after, to vote, "That "it was a moſt perilous precedent, where two knights "of a county were duly elected, if any new writ "ſhould iſſue out for a ſecond election, without order "of the houſe itſelf; that the diſcuſſing and adjudging "of this and ſuch like differences belonged only to "the houſe; and that there ſhould be no meſſage ſent "to the Lord chancellor, not ſo much as to enquire "what he had done in the matter, becauſe it was con-"ceived to be a matter derogatory to the power and "privilege of the houſe [m]." This is the moſt conſiderable, and almoſt only inſtance of parliamentary liberty, which occurs, during the reign of that Princeſs.

OUTLAWS, whether on account of debts or crimes, had been declared by the judges [n], incapable of a ſeat in the houſe, where they muſt themſelves be lawgivers: But this opinion of the judges had been frequently over-ruled. I find, however, in the caſe of Vaughan [o], who was queſtioned for an outlawry, that, having proved all his debts to have been contracted for ſuretiſhip, and to have been, moſt of them, honeſtly compounded, he was allowed, on account of theſe favourable circumſtances, ſtill to keep his ſeat: Which plainly ſuppoſes, that, otherwiſe, it would have been vacated, on account of the outlawry [p].

[m] Ibid. p. 397. [n] 39 H. vi. [o] Journ. Feb. 8, 1580.

[p] In a ſubſequent Parliament that of the 35th of the Queen, the Commons, after great debate, expreſly voted, that a perſon out-lawed might be elected. D'Ewes, p. 518. But as the matter had been much conteſted,

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

WHEN James ſummoned this parliament, he iſſued a proclamation [q]; in which among many general advices, which, like a kind tutor, he beſtowed on his people, he ſtrictly charges them not to chuſe any outlaw for their repreſentative. And he adds; *If any perſon take upon him the place of knight, citizen, or burgeſs, not being duly elected, according to the laws and ſtatutes in that behalf provided, and according to the purport, effect, and true meaning of this our proclamation, then every perſon ſo offending to be fined or impriſoned for the ſame.* A proclamation here was plainly put on the ſame footing with a law, and that in ſo delicate a point as the right of elections: Moſt alarming circumſtances, had there not been reaſon to believe, that this meaſure, being entered into ſo early in the King's reign, proceeded more from precipitation and miſtake, than from any ſerious deſign of invading the privileges of his parliament [r].

SIR Francis Goodwin was choſen member for the county of Bucks; and his return, as uſual, was made into chancery. The chancellor, pronouncing him an outlaw, vacated his ſeat, and iſſued writs for a new election [s]. Sir John Fortiſcue was choſen in his place

the King might think the vote of the Houſe no law, and might eſteem his own deciſion of more weight than theirs. We may alſo ſuppoſe, that he was not acquainted with this vote. Queen Elizabeth in her ſpeech to her laſt Parliament complained of their admitting outlaws, and repreſents that conduct of the Houſe as a great abuſe.

q Jan. 11, 1604. Rymer, Tom. XVI. p. 561.

r The duke of Sully tells us, that it was a maxim of James, that no Prince in the firſt year of his reign ſhould begin any conſiderable undertaking. A maxim very reaſonable in itſelf, and very ſuitable to his cautious, if not timid character. The facility, with which he departed from this pretenſion is another proof, that his meaning was innocent. But had the privileges of Parliament been at that time exactly aſcertained, or royal power fully limited, could ſuch an imagination ever have been entertained by him, as to think, that his proclamations could regulate parliamentary elections.

s Winwood, vol. II. p. 18, 19.

by

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

by the county: But the first act of the house was to reverse the chancellor's sentence, and restore Sir Francis to his seat. At the King's instigation, the lords desired a conference on this subject; but were absolutely refused by the commons, as the question regarded entirely their own privileges [t]. They agreed, however, to make a remonstrance to the King by the mouth of their speaker; where they maintained, that, tho' the returns were by form made into chancery, yet the sole right of judging with regard to elections belonged to the house itself, not to the chancellor [u]. James was not satisfied, and ordered a conference between the house and the judges, whose opinion in this case was opposite to that of the commons. This conference, he said, he commanded as an *absolute* king [x]; an epithet

t Journ. 26th March, 1604. u Journ 3d April. 1604.

x Sir Charles Cornwallis the King's ambassador at Madrid, when pressed by the Duke of Lerma to enter into a league with Spain, said to that minister; *Tho' his Majesty was an* absolute *king, and therefore not bound to give an account to any, of his actions; yet that so gracious and regardful a prince he was of the love and contentment of his own subjects, as I assured myself he would not think it fit to do any thing of so great consequence without acquainting them with his intentions.* Winwood, Vol. 2. p. 222. Sir Walter Raleigh has this passage in the preface to his history of the world. *Philip* II. *by strong hand and main force, attempted to make himself not only an* absolute monarch *over the Netherlands, like unto the kings and monarchs of England and France, but, Turk like, to tread under his feet all their natural and fundamental laws, privileges and ancient rights.* We may infer from these passages, either that the word *absolute* bore a different sense from what it does at present, or that men's ideas of the English government were then different. This latter inference seems juster. The word being derived from the French, bore always the same sense as in that language. An absolute monarchy in Charles I's answer to the nineteen propositions is opposed to a limited: and the King of England is acknowleged not to be absolute. So much had matters changed even before the civil war. In Sir John Fortescue's treatise of absolute and limited monarchy, a book wrote in the reign of Edward the IVth, the word *absolute* is taken in the same sense as at present; and the government of England is said not to be absolute. They were the princes of the house of Tudor chiefly, who introduced that administration, which had the appearance of absolute government. The princes before them were restrained by the barons; as those after them by the House of

we are apt to imagine, not very grateful to Engliſh ears, but one to which they had already been ſomewhat accuſtomed from the mouth of Elizabeth [y]. He added, *That all their privileges were derived from his grant, and hoped they would not turn them againſt him* [z], a ſentiment, which, from her conduct, it is certain, that Princeſs had alſo entertained, and which was the reigning principle of her courtiers and miniſters, and the ſpring of all her adminiſtration.

THE commons were in ſome perplexity. Their eyes were now opened, and they ſaw the conſequences of that power, which had been aſſumed by the chancellor, and to which their predeceſſors had, in ſome inſtances, blindly ſubmitted. *By this courſe*, ſaid a member, *the free election of the counties is taken away, and none ſhall be choſen but ſuch as ſhall pleaſe the King and council. Let us, therefore, with fortitude, underſtanding, and ſincerity, ſeek to maintain our privilege. This cannot be conſtrued any contempt in us, but merely a maintenance of our common rights, which our anceſtors have left us, and which it is juſt and fit for us to tranſmit to our poſterity* [a]. Another ſaid [b], *This may be called a* quo warranto *to ſeize all our liberties. A chancellor*, added a third, *by this courſe may call a parliament conſiſting of what perſons he pleaſes. Any ſuggeſtion, by any perſon, may be the cauſe of ſending a new writ. It is come to this plain queſtion, whether the chancery or parliament ought to have authority* [c].

NOTWITHSTANDING this watchful ſpirit of liberty, which now appeared in the commons, their deference for majeſty was ſo great, that they appointed a com-

Commons. The people had, properly ſpeaking, little liberty in either of theſe antient governments, but the leaſt, in the more antient.

[y] Camden in Kennet, p. 375. [z] Journ. 29 March. 5 April 1604.
[a] Journ. 30 March 1604. [b] Id. Ibid. [c] Id. Ibid.

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

mittee to confer with the judges before the King and council. There the queſtion of law began to appear, in James's eyes, a little more doubtful than he had hitherto imagined it; and in order to bring himſelf off with ſome honour, he propoſed, that both Goodwin and Forteſcue ſhould be ſet aſide, and a writ be iſſued, by warrant of the houſe, for a new election. Goodwin gave his conſent; and the commons embraced this expedient; but in ſuch a manner, that, while they ſhowed their regard for the King, they ſecured for the future, the free poſſeſſion of their ſeats, and the right, which they claimed, of judging ſolely in their own elections and returns [d].

A POWER like this, ſo eſſential to the exerciſe of all their other powers, themſelves ſo eſſential to public liberty, cannot fairly be deemed an encroachment in the commons; but muſt be regarded as an inherent privilege, happily reſcued from that ambiguity, which the negligence of ſome former parliaments had thrown upon it.

AT the ſame time, the commons, in the caſe of Sir Thomas Shirley, eſtabliſhed their power of puniſhing, as well the perſons at whoſe ſuit any member is arreſted, as the officers, who either arreſt or detain him. Their aſſerting of this privilege admits of the ſame reflection [e].

[d] Even this Parliament, which ſhewd ſo much ſpirit and good-ſenſe in the affair of Goodwin, made a ſtrange conceſſion to the crown, in their fourth ſeſſion. Toby Mathews, a member, had been baniſhed by order of council upon direction from his Majeſty. The Parliament not only acquieſced in this arbitrary proceeding, but iſſued writs for a new election. Such novices were they, as yet in the principles of Liberty! See Journ. 14 Feb. 1609. Mathews was baniſhed by the King, on account of his change of religion to popery. The King had an indulgence to thoſe who had been educated catholics: but could not bear the new converts. It was probably the animoſity of the Commons againſt the papiſts, which made them acquieſce in this precedent, without reflecting on the conſequences! The jealouſy of Liberty, tho' rouzed, was not yet thoroughly enlightened.

[e] Journ. 6, and 7, May, 1604.

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

ABOUT this period, the minds of men, throughout all Europe, but eſpecially in England, ſeem to have undergone a general, but inſenſible revolution. Tho' letters had been revived in the preceding age, they ſeem to have been chiefly cultivated by men of ſedentary profeſſions; nor had they, till now, begun to ſpread themſelves, in any degree, among men of the world. Arts, both mechanical and liberal, were every day receiving great improvements. Navigation had extended itſelf over the whole globe. Travelling was ſecure and agreeable. And the general ſyſtem of politics, in Europe, was become more enlarged and comprehenſive.

IN conſequence of this univerſal fermentation, the ideas of men enlarged themſelves on all ſides, and the ſeveral conſtituent parts of the gothic governments, which ſeem to have lain aſleep for ſo many ages, began, every where, to operate and encroach on each other. On the continent, where the neceſſity of diſcipline had begot mercenary armies, the prince commonly eſtabliſhed an unlimited authority, and overpowered, by force or intrigue, the liberties of the people. In England, the love of freedom, which, unleſs checked, flouriſhes extremely in all liberal natures, acquired new force, and was regulated by more enlarged views, ſuitable to that cultivated underſtanding, which became, every day, more common, among men of birth and education. A familiar acquaintance with the precious remains of antiquity excited in every generous breaſt a paſſion for a limited conſtitution, and begot an emulation of thoſe manly virtues, which the Greek and Roman authors, by ſuch animating examples, as well as pathetic expreſſions, recommend to us. The ſevere, tho' popular, government of Elizabeth had confined this riſing ſpirit within very narrow bounds: But when a

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

new and a foreign family ſucceeded to the throne, and a prince leſs dreaded and leſs beloved; ſymptoms immediately appeared of a more free and independent genius in the nation.

HAPPILY this Prince poſſeſſed neither ſufficient capacity to perceive the alteration, nor ſufficient art and vigour to check it in its early advances. Jealous of regal, becauſe conſcious of little perſonal authority, he had eſtabliſhed within his own mind a ſpeculative ſyſtem of abſolute government, which few of his ſubjects, he believed, and none but traitors and rebels, would make any ſcruple to admit. On which-ever ſide he caſt his eyes, every thing concurred to encourage his prejudices. When he compared himſelf with the other hereditary ſovereigns of Europe, he imagined, that, as he bore the ſame rank, he was intitled to equal prerogatives; not conſidering the innovations lately introduced by them, and the military force, by which their authority was ſupported. In England, that power, almoſt unlimited, which had been exerciſed for above a century, eſpecially during the late reign, he aſcribed ſolely to royal birth and title; not to the prudence and ſpirit of the monarchs, nor to the conjunctures of the times. Even the oppoſition, which he had ſtruggled with in Scotland, encouraged him ſtill farther in his favourite notions; while he there ſaw, that the ſame reſiſtance, which oppoſed regal authority, violated all law and order, and made way, either for the ravages of a barbarous nobility, or for the more intolerable inſolence of ſeditious preachers. In his own perſon, therefore, he thought all legal power to be centered, by an hereditary and a divine right: And this opinion might have proved dangerous, if not fatal, to liberty; had not the firmneſs of the perſuaſion, and its ſeeming evidence induced him to truſt ſolely to his

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

right, without making the ſmalleſt proviſion either of force or politics, in order to ſupport it.

SUCH were the oppoſite diſpoſitions of parliament and prince, at the commencement of the Scottiſh line; diſpoſitions juſt beginning to exiſt and to appear in the parliament [f], but thoroughly eſtabliſhed and openly avowed on the part of the prince.

THE ſpirit and judgment of the houſe of commons appeared, not only in defence of their own privileges, but alſo in their endeavour, tho', at this time, in vain, to free trade from thoſe ſhackles, which the high exerted prerogative, and even, in this reſpect, the ill-judged tyranny of Elizabeth, had impoſed upon it.

JAMES had already, of his own accord, called in and annulled all the numerous patents for monopolies, which had been granted by his predeceſſor, and which

[f] At that time, men of genius and of enlarg'd minds had adopted the principles of liberty, which were, as yet, pretty much unknown to the generality of the people. Sir Matthew Hales had publiſh'd a remonſtrance againſt the King's conduct towards the Parliament during this ſeſſion. The remonſtrance is drawn with great force of reaſoning and ſpirit of liberty; and was the production of Sir Francis Bacon and Sir Edwin Sandys, two men of the greateſt parts and knowledge in England. It is drawn in the name of the Parliament; but as there is no hint of it in the journals, we muſt conclude, either that the authors, ſenſible that the ſtrain of the piece was much beyond the principles of the age, had not ventur'd to preſent it to the houſe, or that it had been, for that reaſon, rejected by them. The dignity and authority of the commons are ſtrongly inſiſted upon in this remonſtrance; and it is there ſaid, that their ſubmiſſion to the ill treatment, which they rec: ved during the latter part of Elizabeth's reign, had proceeded from their tenderneſs towards her age and her ſex. But the authors are miſtaken in theſe facts: For the houſe received and ſubmitted to as bad treatment in the beginning and middle of that reign. The government was equally arbitrary in Mary's reign, in Edward's, in Harry the eighth and ſeventh's. And the farther we go back in hiſtory, tho' there might be more of a certain irregular kind of liberty among the barons, the commons were ſtill of leſs authority. King James, as they themſelves acknowleg'd, gave the houſe of commons more liberty of ſpeech, than had been indulg'd them by any of his predeceſſors.

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

fettered extremely every ſpecies of domeſtic induſtry: But the excluſive companies ſtill remained; another ſpecies of monopoly, by which almoſt all foreign trade, except that to France, was brought into the hands of a few rapacious engroſſers, and all proſpect of future improvement in commerce was for ever ſacrificed to a little temporary advantage of the ſovereign. Theſe companies, tho' arbitrarily erected, had carried their privileges ſo far, that the whole commerce of England was centered in London; and it appears, that the cuſtoms of that port amounted to 110,000 *l.* a-year, while thoſe of all the kingdom beſide yielded only ſeventeen thouſand [g]. Nay, the whole trade of London was confined to about 200 citizens [h], who were eaſily enabled, by combining among themſelves, to fix whatever price they pleaſed both to the exports and imports of the nation. The committee, appointed to examine this enormous grievance, one of the greateſt which we read of in Engliſh ſtory, inſiſt on it as a fact well known and avowed, however contrary to the preſent received opinion, that ſhipping and ſeamen had ſenſibly decayed during all the preceding reign [i]. And tho' nothing be more common than complaints of the decay of commerce, even during the moſt flouriſhing periods; yet is this a conſequence which might naturally reſult from ſuch arbitrary eſtabliſhments, at a time when the trade of all the other nations of Europe, except that of Scotland, enjoyed full liberty and indulgence.

[g] Journ. 21 May, 1604. [h] Id. Ibid. [i] A remonſtrance from the Trinity-houſe, in 1602, ſays, that in a little above twelve years, after 1588, the ſhipping and number of ſeamen in England decayed about a third part. Anglesey's happy future ſtate of England, p. 128. from Sir Julius Cæſar's collections. See Journ. 21 May 1604.

WHILE

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

WHILE the commons were thus attempting to give liberty to the trading part of the nation, they alſo endeavoured to free the landed intereſt from the burthen of wardſhips [k], and to remove thoſe remains of the feudal tenures, under which the nation ſtill laboured. A juſt regard was ſhown to the crown in the whole conduct of this affair; nor was the remedy, ſought for, conſidered as a matter of right, but merely of grace and favour. The profit, which the King reaped both from wards and from reſpite of homage, was eſtimated; and it was propoſed to compound for theſe prerogatives by a ſecure and independent revenue. But after ſome debates in the houſe, and ſome conferences with the lords, the affair was found to contain more difficulties than could eaſily, at that time, be ſurmounted; and it was not then brought to any concluſion.

THE ſame fate attended an attempt of a like nature, to free the nation from the burthen of purveyance; an old prerogative in the crown, by which the officers of the houſhold were empowered to take, without conſent of the owners, proviſions for the King's family, and carts and horſes for the removal of his baggage, upon paying a ſtated price for them. This prerogative had been much abuſed by the purveyors [l]; and the commons ſhewed ſome intention to offer the King fifty thouſand pounds a-year for the abolition of it.

ANOTHER affair of the utmoſt conſequence was brought before this parliament, where the commons ſhewed a greater ſpirit of independence than any true judgment of national intereſt. The union of the two kingdoms was very zealouſly, and even impatiently urged by the King [m]. He juſtly regarded it as the peculiar felicity of his reign, that he had terminated

k Journ. 1 June, 1604. l Journ. 30 April, 1604. m Journ. 21 April. 1 May, 1604. Parliamentary Hiſtory, Vol. 5. p. 91.

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

the bloody animoſities of theſe hoſtile nations, and had reduced the whole iſland under one empire; enjoying tranquillity within itſelf, and ſecurity from all foreign invaſions. He hoped, that, while his ſubjects of both kingdoms reflected on paſt diſaſters, beſides regarding his perſon as infinitely precious, they would entertain the ſtrongeſt deſire of ſecuring themſelves againſt the return of like calamities, by a thorough union of laws, parliaments, and privileges. He conſidered not, that this very reflection operated, as yet, in a contrary manner, on men's prejudices, and kept alive that mutual hatred between the nations, which had been carried to the greateſt extremity, and required time to allay it. The more urgent the King appeared in promoting ſo uſeful a meaſure, the more backward was the Engliſh parliament in concurring with him; while they aſcribed his exceſſive zeal, to that partiality, in favour of his antient ſubjects, of which they thought, that, on other occaſions, they had reaſon to complain. Their complaiſance for the King, therefore, carried them no farther than to appoint forty-four Engliſh to meet with thirty-one Scots commiſſioners, in order to deliberate concerning the terms of an union; but without any power of making advances towards the eſtabliſhment of it [n].

THE ſame ſpirit of independence, and perhaps not better judgment, appeared in the houſe of commons, when the queſtion of ſupply was brought before them, by ſome members who were attached to the court. In vain was it urged, that, tho' the King received a ſupply, which had been voted to Elizabeth, and which had not been collected before her death; yet he found it burthened with a debt contracted by the Queen, equal to the full amount of it: That peace was not

[n] Journ. 7 June, 1604. Kennet, p. 673.

yet

1604.

yet thoroughly concluded with Spain, and that Ireland was ſtill expenſive to him: That on his journey from Scotland, amidſt ſuch an immenſe concourſe of people, and on that of the Queen and royal family, he had expended conſiderable ſums: And that, as the courtiers had looked for greater liberalities from the Prince on his acceſſion, and had impoſed on his generous nature; ſo the Prince, in his turn, would expect, at the beginning, ſome mark of duty and attachment from his people and ſome conſideration of his neceſſities. No impreſſion was made on the houſe of commons by theſe topics; and the majority appeared fully determined to refuſe all ſupply. The burthen of the government, at that time, lay ſurpriſingly light upon the people: And that very reaſon, which to us, at this diſtance, may ſeem a motive for generoſity, was the real cauſe why the parliament was, on all occaſions, ſo remarkably frugal and reſerved. They were not, as yet, accuſtomed to open their purſes in ſo liberal a manner as their ſucceſſors, in order to ſupply the wants of their ſovereign; and the ſmalleſt demand, however requiſite, appeared in their eyes unreaſonable and exorbitant. The commons ſeem alſo to have been deſirous of reducing the crown to ſtill farther neceſſities, by their refuſing a bill, ſent down to them by the lords, for entailing the crown lands for ever on the King's heirs and ſucceſſors [o]. The diſſipation, made by Elizabeth, had probably taught him the neceſſity of this law, and ſhewn them the advantage of refuſing it.

In order to cover a diſappointment, which might bear a bad conſtruction both at home and abroad, James ſent a meſſage to the houſe [p], where he told them, that he deſired no ſupply; and he was very

[o] Parliamentary Hiſt. Vol. 5. p. 108. [p] Journ. 26 June 1604.

forward

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

forward in refuſing what was never offered him. Soon after, he prorogued the parliament, not without diſcovering, in his ſpeech, viſible marks of diſſatisfaction. Even ſo early in his reign, he ſaw reaſon to make pub-
7th of July. lic complaints of the reſtleſs and encroaching ſpirit of the puritanical party, and of the malevolence, with which they endeavoured to inſpire the commons. Nor were his apprehenſions without reaſon; ſince the commons, now finding themſelves free from the arbitrary government of Elizabeth, apply'd for a conference with the lords, and preſented a petition to the King; the purport of both which was to procure, in favour of the puritans, a relaxation of the eccleſiaſtical laws. The uſe of the ſurplice and of the croſs in baptiſm is there chiefly complained of; but the remedy ſeems to be expected ſolely from the King's diſpenſing power [q]. The ſame papers diſcover the violent animoſity of the commons againſt the catholics together with the intolerating ſpirit of that aſſembly.

Peace with Spain. 18th Auguſt.

THIS ſummer, the peace with Spain was finally concluded, and was ſigned by the Spaniſh miniſters at London [r]. In the conferences, previous to this treaty, the nations were found to have ſo few claims on each other, that, except on account of the ſupport given by England to the Low country provinces, the war might appear to have been continued more on account of perſonal animoſity between Philip and Elizabeth, than any contrariety of political intereſts between their ſubjects. Some articles in the treaty, which ſeem prejudicial to the Dutch commonwealth, were never executed by the King; and as the Spaniards made no complaints on that head, it appeared, that, by ſecret agreement, theſe articles were underſtood in a different ſenſe from what they ſeem naturally to bear, and that

q Parliamentary hiſtory, vol. 5. p. 98, 99, 100. r Rymer tom. XVI. p. 585. &c.

the

CHAP. LXV.

1604.

the King reſerved the power of ſending aſſiſtance to the Hollanders [s]. The Conſtable of Caſtile came into England to ratify the peace; and on the part of England, the Earl of Hartford was ſent into the Low Countries for the ſame purpoſe, and the Earl of Nottingham, Lord high admiral, into Spain. The train of the latter was numerous and ſplendid; and the Spaniards, it is ſaid, were extremely ſurpriſed, when they beheld the blooming countenances and graceful appearance of the Engliſh, whom their bigotry, inflamed by the prieſts, had repreſented as ſo many monſters and infernal dem ns.

THO' England, by means of her naval force, was perfectly ſecure, during the latter years of the Spaniſh war, James ſhewed an extreme impatience to put an end to hoſtilities; and ſoon after his acceſſion, before any terms of peace were concerted or even propoſed by Spain, he recalled all the letters of marque [t], which had been granted by Queen Elizabeth. The Archduke Albert had made ſome advances of a like nature [u], which invited the King to take this friendly ſtep. But what is remarkable; in James's proclamation for that purpoſe, he plainly ſuppoſes, that, as he had himſelf, while king of Scotland, always lived in amity with Spain, peace was attached to his perſon, and that merely by his acceſſion to the crown of England, without any articles of treaty or agreement, he had ended the war between the kingdoms [x]. This ignorance of the

[s] Winwood, vol. II. p. 27. p. 330, *et alibi*. In this reſpect James's peace was more honourable than that which Henry the 4th himſelf made with Spain. That prince ſtipulated not to aſſiſt the Dutch; and the ſupplies, which he ſecretly ſent them were in direct contravention to the treaty.

[t] 23d of June, 1603. [u] Grotii Annal. Lib. 12. [x] See proclamations during the firſt ſeven years of K. James. Winwood vol. II. p. 65.

law

CHAP. XLV. 1604.

forward in refuſing what was never offered him. Soon after, he prorogued the parliament, not without diſcovering, in his ſpeech, viſible marks of diſſatisfaction. Even ſo early in his reign, he ſaw reaſon to make public complaints of the reſtleſs and encroaching ſpirit of the puritanical party, and of the malevolence, with which they endeavoured to inſpire the commons. Nor were his apprehenſions without reaſon; ſince the commons, now finding themſelves free from the arbitrary government of Elizabeth, apply'd for a conference with the lords, and preſented a petition to the King; the purport of both which was to procure, in favour of the puritans, a relaxation of the eccleſiaſtical laws. The uſe of the ſurplice and of the croſs in baptiſm is there chiefly complained of; but the remedy ſeems to be expected ſolely from the King's diſpenſing power [q]. The ſame papers diſcover the violent animoſity of the commons againſt the catholics together with the intolerating ſpirit of that aſſembly.

7th of July.

Peace with Spain. 18th Auguſt.

THIS ſummer, the peace with Spain was finally concluded, and was ſigned by the Spaniſh miniſters at London [r]. In the conferences, previous to this treaty, the nations were found to have ſo few claims on each other, that, except on account of the ſupport given by England to the Low country provinces, the war might appear to have been continued more on account of perſonal animoſity between Philip and Elizabeth, than any contrariety of political intereſts between their ſubjects. Some articles in the treaty, which ſeem prejudicial to the Dutch commonwealth, were never executed by the King; and as the Spaniards made no complaints on that head, it appeared, that, by ſecret agreement, theſe articles were underſtood in a different ſenſe from what they ſeem naturally to bear, and that

q Parliamentary hiſtory, vol. 5. p. 98, 99, 100. r Rymer tom. XVI. p. 585. &c.

the

CHAP. LXV.

1604.

the King reſerved the power of ſending aſſiſtance to the Hollanders [s]. The Conſtable of Caſtile came into England to ratify the peace; and on the part of England, the Earl of Hartford was ſent into the Low Countries for the ſame purpoſe, and the Earl of Nottingham, Lord high admiral, into Spain. The train of the latter was numerous and ſplendid; and the Spaniards, it is ſaid, were extremely ſurpriſed, when they beheld the blooming countenances and graceful appearance of the Engliſh, whom their bigotry, inflamed by the prieſts, had repreſented as ſo many monſters and infernal dem ns.

THO' England, by means of her naval force, was perfectly ſecure, during the latter years of the Spaniſh war, James ſhewed an extreme impatience to put an end to hoſtilities; and ſoon after his acceſſion, before any terms of peace were concerted or even propoſed by Spain, he recalled all the letters of marque [t], which had been granted by Queen Elizabeth. The Archduke Albert had made ſome advances of a like nature [u], which invited the King to take this friendly ſtep. But what is remarkable; in James's proclamation for that purpoſe, he plainly ſuppoſes, that, as he had himſelf, while king of Scotland, always lived in amity with Spain, peace was attached to his perſon, and that merely by his acceſſion to the crown of England, without any articles of treaty or agreement, he had ended the war between the kingdoms [x]. This ignorance of the

[s] Winwood, vol. II. p. 27. p. 330, *et alibi*. In this reſpect James's peace was more honourable than that which Henry the 4th himſelf made with Spain. That prince ſtipulated not to aſſiſt the Dutch; and the ſupplies, which he ſecretly ſent them were in direct contravention to the treaty.

[t] 23d of June, 1603. [u] Grotii Annal. Lib. 12. [x] See proclamations during the firſt ſeven years of K. James. Winwood vol. II. p. 65.

law

CHAP. XLV.

1604.

law of nations may appear ſurpriſing in a Prince, who was thirty-ſix years of age, and who had reigned from his infancy, did we not conſider, that a king of Scotland, who lives in cloſe friendſhip with England, has few tranſactions to manage with foreign princes, and has little opportunity of acquiring experience. Unhappily for James, his timidity, his prejudices, his indolence, his love of amuſement, particularly of hunting, to which he was extremely addicted, ever prevented him from making any progreſs in the knowledge or practice of foreign politics, and in a little time diminiſhed that regard, which all the neighbouring nations had paid to England, during the reign of his predeceſſor.

JAMES

CHAP. XLVI.

Gun-powder conſpiracy.—A parliament.—Truce betwixt Spain and the United Provinces.—A parliament.—Death of the French King.—Arminianiſm.—State of Ireland.

CHAP. XLVI.

1604.

WE come now to relate an event, one of the moſt memorable, which hiſtory has conveyed to poſterity, and containing at once a ſingular proof both of the ſtrength and weakneſs of the human mind; its wideſt departure from morals, and its moſt ſteady attachment to religious prejudices. 'Tis the *Gun-powder treaſon* of which I ſpeak; a fact as certain as it appears incredible.

Gun-powder conſpiracy.

THE Roman catholics had expected great favour and indulgence on the acceſſion of James, both as he was deſcended from Mary, who had ſacrificed her life to their cauſe, and as he himſelf, in his early youth, was believed to have ſhown ſome partiality towards them; which nothing, they thought, but intereſt and neceſſity had ſince reſtrained. 'Tis pretended, that he had even entered into poſitive engagements to tolerate their religion, ſo ſoon as he ſhould mount the throne of England; whether their credulity had interpreted in this ſenſe ſome obliging expreſſions of the King, or that he had employed ſuch an artifice, in order to render them favourable to his title [y]. Very ſoon they diſcovered their miſtake; and were at once ſurpriſed and enraged to find James, on all occaſions, expreſs his intention of executing ſtrictly the laws enacted againſt them, and of perſevering in all the rigorous meaſures of Eli-

[y] State Trials vol. II. p. 201, 202, 203. Winwood vol. II. p. 49.

zabeth.

CHAP. XLVI.

1605.

zabeth. Cateſby, a gentleman of good parts and of an antient family, firſt thought of a moſt extraordinary method of revenge; and he opened his intention to Piercy, a deſcendant of the illuſtrious houſe of Northumberland. In one of their converſations with regard to the diſtreſt condition of the catholics, Piercy having broke into a ſally of paſſion, and mentioned the aſſaſſinating the King; Cateſby took the opportunity of revealing to him a nobler and more extenſive plan of treaſon, which not only included a ſure execution of vengeance, but afforded ſome hopes of reſtoring the catholic religion in England. In vain, ſaid he, would you put an end to the King's life: He has children, who would ſucceed both to his crown and to his maxims of government. In vain would you extinguiſh the whole royal family: The nobility, the gentry, the parliament are all infected with the ſame hereſy, and could raiſe to the throne another prince and another family, who, beſides their hatred to our religion, would be animated with revenge for the tragical death of their predeceſſors. To ſerve any good purpoſe, we muſt deſtroy, at one blow, the King, the royal family, the lords, the commons; and bury all our enemies in one common ruin. Happily, they are all aſſembled on the firſt meeting of the Parliament; and afford us the opportunity of glorious and uſeful vengeance. Great preparations will not be requiſite. A few of us, combining, may run a mine below the hall, in which they meet, and chooſing the very moment when the King harangues both houſes, conſign over to deſtruction theſe determined foes to all piety and religion. Mean while, we ourſelves ſtanding aloof, ſafe and unſuſpected, ſhall triumph in being the inſtruments of divine wrath, and ſhall behold with pleaſure thoſe ſacrilegious walls, in which were paſt the edicts for proſcribing our church and butchering

CHAP. XLVI. 1605.

ing her children, toſt into a thouſand fragments; while their impious inhabitants, meditating perhaps ſtill new proſecutions againſt us, paſs from flames above to flames below, there for ever to endure the torments due to their offences [z].

PIERCY was charmed with this project of Cateſby; and they agreed to communicate the matter to a few more, and among the reſt to Thomas Winter, whom they ſent over to Flanders, in queſt of Fawkes, an officer in the Spaniſh ſervice, with whoſe zeal and courage they were all thoroughly acquainted. When they inliſted any new conſpirator, in order to bind him to ſecrecy, they always, together with an oath, employed the ſacrament, the moſt ſacred rite of their religion [a]. And 'tis remarkable, that no one of theſe pious devotees ever entertained the leaſt compunction with regard to the cruel maſſacre, which they projected, of whatever was great and eminent in the nation. Some of them only were ſtartled by the reflection, that of neceſſity many catholics muſt be preſent; as ſpectators or attendants on the King, or as having ſeats in the houſe of peers: But Teſmond, a jeſuit, and Garnet, ſuperior of that order in England, removed theſe ſcruples, and ſhewed them how the intereſts of religion required, that the innocent ſhould here be ſacrificed with the guilty.

ALL this paſſed in the ſpring and ſummer of the year 1604; when the conſpirators alſo hired a houſe in Piercy's name, adjoining to that in which the parliament was to aſſemble. Towards the end of that year they began their operations. That they might be leſs interrupted, and give leſs ſuſpicion to the neighbourhood, they carried in ſtore of proviſions with them,

z History of the Gunpowder Treaſon. a State Trials vol. I. p. 190, 198, 210.

and

CHAP. XLVI.

1605.

and never desisted from their labour. Obstinate to their purpose, and confirmed by passion, by principle and by mutual exhortation, they little feared death in comparison of a disappointment; and having provided arms, together with the instruments of their labour, they resolved there to perish in case of a discovery. Their perseverance advanced the work; and they soon pierced the wall, tho' three yards in thickness; but on approaching the other side, they were somewhat startled with hearing a noise, which they knew not how to account for. Upon inquiry, they found, that it came from the vault below the house of lords; that a magazine of coals had been kept there; and that, as the coals were selling off, the vault would be let to the highest bidder. The opportunity was immediately seized; the place hired by Piercy; thirty-six barrels of powder lodged in it; the whole covered up with faggots and billets; the doors of the cellar boldly flung open; and every body admitted, as if it contained nothing dangerous.

Confident of success, they now began to look forward, and to plan the remaining part of their project. The King, the Queen, Prince Henry, were all expected to be present at the opening of the parliament. The Duke, by reason of his tender age, would be absent; and it was resolved, that Piercy should seize him, or assassinate him. The Princess Elizabeth, a child likewise, was kept at Lord Harrington's house in Warwickshire; and Sir Everard Digby, Rookwood, Grant, being let into the conspiracy, engaged to assemble their friends, on pretence of a hunting-match, and seizing that Princess, immediately to proclaim her Queen. So transported were they with rage against their adversaries, and so charmed with the prospect of revenge, that they forgot all care of their own safety; and trusting to the general confusion, which must result from

so

ſo unexpected a blow, they foreſaw not, that the fury of the people, now unreſtrained by any authority, muſt have turned againſt them, and would probably have ſatiated itſelf, by an univerſal maſſacre of the catholics.

THE day, ſo long wiſhed for, now approached, on which the parliament was appointed to aſſemble. The dreadful ſecret, tho' communicated to above twenty perſons, had been religiouſly kept, during the ſpace of near a year and a half. No remorſe, no pity, no fear of puniſhment, no hope of reward, had, as yet, induced any one conſpirator, either to abandon the enterprize, or make a diſcovery of it. The holy fury had extinguiſhed in their breaſt every other motive; and it was an indiſcretion at laſt, proceeding chiefly from theſe very bigotted prejudices and partialities, which ſaved the nation.

TEN days before the meeting of the parliament, Lord Monteagle, a catholic, ſon to Lord Morley, received the following letter, which had been delivered to his ſervant by an unknown hand. *My Lord, Out of the love I bear to ſome of your friends, I have a care of your preſervation. Therefore I would adviſe you, as you tender your life, to deviſe ſome excuſe to ſhift off your attendance at this parliament. For God and man have concurred to puniſh the wickedneſs of this time. And think not ſlightly of this advertiſement; but retire yourſelf into your country, where you may expect the event in ſafety. For, tho' there be no appearance of any ſtir, yet, I ſay, they will receive a terrible blow, this parliament, and yet they ſhall not ſee who hurts them This counſel is not to be contemned, becauſe it may do you good, and can do you no harm: For the danger is paſt, as ſoon as you have burned the letter. And I hope God will give you the grace to make good*

+ from his Sister, who was married to Thomas Abington of Hendlip House near Worcester.

CHAP. XLVI.

1605.

good use of it, to whose holy protection I commend you [b].

MONTEAGLE knew not what to make of this letter; and tho' inclined to think it a fooliſh attempt to frighten and ridicule him, he judged it ſafeſt to carry it to Lord Saliſbury, ſecretary of ſtate. Tho' Saliſbury too was inclined to give little attention to it, he thought proper to lay it before the King who came to town a few days after. To the King it appeared not ſo light a matter; and from the ſerious earneſt ſtyle of the letter, he conjectured, that it implied ſomething very dangerous and important. A *terrible blow*, and yet *the authors concealed*; a danger ſo *ſudden*, and yet ſo *great*; theſe circumſtances ſeemed all to denote ſome contrivance by gun-powder; and it was thought adviſable to inſpect all the vaults below the houſes of parliament. This care belonged to the earl of Suffolk, Lord chamberlain; who purpoſely delayed the ſearch, till the day before the meeting of the parliament. He remarked thoſe great piles of wood and faggots, which lay in the vault under the upper houſe; and he caſt his eye upon Fawkes, who ſtood in a dark corner, and paſſed himſelf for Piercy's ſervant. That daring and determined courage, which ſo much diſtinguiſhed this conſpirator, even among thoſe heroes in villany, was fully painted in his countenance, and was not paſſed unnoticed by the Lord chamberlain [c]. Such a quantity alſo of fuel, for the uſe of one who lived ſo little in town as Piercy, appeared a little extraordinary [d]; and upon comparing all circumſtances it was reſolved that a more thorow inſpection ſhould be made. About midnight, Sir Thomas Knevet, a juſtice of peace, was ſent with proper attendants; and before the door of the vault,

[b] K. James's Works, p. 227.
[c] K. James's Works, p. 229.
[d] Id. Ibid.

finding

finding Fawkes, who had juſt finiſhed all his preparations, he immediately ſeized him, and turning over the faggots, diſcovered the powder. The matches and every thing proper for ſetting fire to the train were taken in Fawkes's pocket; who finding his guilt now apparent, and ſeeing no refuge but in boldneſs and deſpair, expreſſed the utmoſt regret, that he had loſt the opportunity, of firing the powder at once, and of ſweetening his own death by that of his enemies [e]. Before the council, he diſplayed the ſame intrepid firmneſs, mixt even with ſcorn and diſdain; refuſing to diſcover his accomplices and ſhewing no concern but for the failure of the enterprize [f]. This obſtinacy laſted two or three days: But being confined to the Tower, left to reflect on his guilt and danger, and the rack being juſt ſhown to him; his courage, fatigued with ſo long an effort, and unſupported by hope or ſociety, at laſt failed him; and he made a full diſcovery of all the conſpirators [g].

CHAP. XLVI. 1605.

CATESBY, Piercy, and the other criminals, who were in London, tho' they had heard of the alarm taken at the letter ſent to Monteagle; tho' they had heard of the lord chamberlain's ſearch; yet were reſolved to perſiſt to the utmoſt, and never abandon their hopes of ſucceſs [h]. But at laſt, hearing that Fawkes

[e] K. James's Works, p. 230. [f] Winwood, vol. II. p. 173. [g] K. James's Works, p. 231. [h] Some hiſtorians have imagined, that the King had ſecret intelligence of the conſpiracy, and that the letter to Monteagle was wrote by his direction, in order to obtain the fame of penetration in diſcovering the plot. But the known facts refute this ſuppoſition. That letter, being commonly talked of, might naturally have given an alarm to the conſpirators, and made them contrive their eſcape. The viſit of the Lord chamberlain ought to have had the ſame effect. In ſhort, it appears, that no body was arreſted or enquired after, for ſome days, till Fawkes diſcovered the names of the conſpirators. We may infer, however, from a letter in Winwood's Memorials, vol. II. p. 171. that Saliſbury's ſagacity led the King in his conjectures, and that the miniſter, like an artful courtier, gave his maſter the praiſe of the whole diſcovery.

CHAP. XLVI.

1605.

was arreſted, they hurried away to Warwickſhire; where Sir Everard Digby, making account that ſucceſs had attended his confederates, was already in arms, in order to ſeize the princeſs Elizabeth. She had eſcaped into Coventry; and they were obliged to put themſelves on their defence againſt the country, who were raiſed from all quarters, and armed, by the ſheriffs. The conſpirators, with all their attendants never exceeded the number of eighty perſons; and being ſurrounded on every ſide, could no longer entertain hopes, either of eſcaping or prevailing. Having therefore confeſſed themſelves, and received abſolution, they boldly prepared for death, and reſolved to ſell their lives as dear as poſſible to the aſſailants. But even this miſerable conſolation was denied them. Some of their powder took fire, and diſabled them for defence [i]. The people ruſhed in upon them. Piercy and Cateſby was killed with one ſhot. Digby, Rookwood, Winter, and others, being taken priſoners, were tried, confeſſed their guilt, and died, as well as Garnet, by the hands of the executioner. Notwithſtanding this horrid crime, the bigotted catholics were ſo devoted to Garnet, that they fancy'd miracles to be wrought by his blood [k]; and in Spain he was regarded as a Martyr [l].

NEITHER had the deſperate fortune of the conſpirators urged them to this enterprize, nor had the former profligacy of their lives prepared them for ſo great a crime. Before that audacious attempt, their conduct ſeems, in general, to be liable to no reproach. Cateſby's character had entitled him to ſuch regard, that Rookwood and Digby were ſeduced by their implicit truſt in his judgment; and they declared, that, from the motive alone of friendſhip to him, they were ready,

[i] State Trials vol. I. p. 199. Diſcourſe of the manner &c. p. 69, 70.
[k] Winwood Vol. II. p. 300. [l] Winwood Vol. II. p. 300.

on

CHAP. XLVI. 1605.

on any occaſion, to have ſacrificed their lives [m]. Digby himſelf was as highly eſteemed and beloved as any man in England; and he had been particularly honoured with the good opinion of Queen Elizabeth [n]. 'Twas bigotted zeal alone, the moſt abſurd of prejudices maſqued with reaſon, the moſt criminal of paſſions covered with the appearance of duty, which ſeduced them into meaſures, that were fatal to themſelves, and had ſo nearly proved fatal to their country [o].

THE Lords Mordaunt and Sturton, two catholics, were fined, the former 10,000 pounds, the latter 4000, by the ſtar-chamber; becauſe their abſence from parliament had begot a ſuſpicion of their being made acquainted with the conſpiracy. The Earl of Northumberland was fined 30,000 pounds, and detained ſeveral years priſoner in the Tower; becauſe, among other grounds of ſuſpicion, he had admitted Piercy into the number of gentlemen penſioners, without his taking the requiſite oaths [p]. Theſe ſentences may be thought ſomewhat arbitrary: But ſuch was the nature of all proceedings in the ſtar-chamber.

THE King, in his ſpeech to the parliament, obſerved, that, tho' religion had engaged the conſpirators in ſo criminal an attempt, yet ought we not to involve all the Roman catholics in the ſame guilt, or ſuppoſe them equally diſpoſed to commit ſuch enormous barbarities. Many holy men, he ſaid, and our anceſtors among the reſt, had been ſeduced to concur with that church in her ſcholaſtic doctrines; who yet had never

[m] State Trials vol. I. p. 201. [n] Athen. Ox. vol. II. fol. 354.

[o] Digby after his condemnation, ſaid in a letter to his wife: "Now for my "intention, let me tell you, that if I had thought there had been the leaſt "ſin in the plot, I would not have been of it for all the world; and no "other cauſe drew me, to hazard my fortune and life but zeal to God's "religion." He expreſſes his ſurprize to hear that any catholics had condemned it. *Digby's papers, publiſhed by ſecretary Coventry.* [p] Camden in Kennet, p. 692.

CHAP. XLVI.

admitted her ſeditious principles, conerning the Pope's power of dethroning kings, or ſanctifying aſſaſſination.

1605. The wrath of heaven is denounced againſt crimes, but innocent error may obtain its favour; and nothing can be more hateful than the uncharitableneſs of the puritans, who condemn alike to eternal torments, even the moſt inoffenſive proſelytes to popery. For his part, he added, that conſpiracy, however atrocious, ſhould never alter, in the leaſt, his plan of government: While with one hand he puniſhed guilt; with the other, he would ſtill ſupport and protect innocence [q]. After this ſpeech, he prorogued the parliament, till the 22d of January [r].

1606. THE moderation, and, I may ſay, magnanimity, of the King, immediately after ſo narrow an eſcape from a moſt deteſtable conſpiracy, was no wiſe agreeable to his ſubjects. Their animoſity againſt popery, even before this provocation, had riſen to a great pitch; and it had perhaps been more prudent in James, by a little diſſimulation, to have conformed himſelf to it. His theological learning, confirmed by diſputation, had happily fixed his judgment in the proteſtant faith; yet was his heart a little byaſſed by the allurements of Rome, and he had been extremely pleaſed, if the making ſome advances could have effected an union with that antient mother-church. He ſtrove to abate the acrimony of his own ſubjects againſt the religion of their fathers: He became himſelf the object of their diffidence and averſion. Whatever meaſures he embraced; in Scotland to introduce prelacy, in England to inforce the authority of the preſent church, and

q K. James's works, p. 503, 504.

r The Parliament this ſeſſion paſſed an act obliging every one to take the oath of allegiance; a very moderate teſt, ſince it decided no controverted points between the two religions, and only engaged the perſon who took it to abjure the Pope's power of dethroning Kings. See K. James's works, p. 250.

ſupport

CHAP. XLVI. 1606.

ſupport its rites and ceremonies; were interpreted as ſo many ſteps towards popery, and were repreſented by the puritans as ſymptoms of idolatry and ſuperſtition. Ignorant of the conſequences, or unwilling to ſacrifice to politics his inclination, which he called his conſcience, he perſevered in the ſame meaſures, and gave truſt and preferment, almoſt indifferently, to his catholic and proteſtant ſubjects. And finding his perſon, as well as his title leſs obnoxious to the church of Rome, than thoſe of Elizabeth, he gradually abated the rigour of thoſe laws, which had been enacted againſt that church, and which were ſo acceptable to his bigotted ſubjects. But the effects of theſe diſpoſitions on both ſides became not very ſenſible, till towards the concluſion of his reign.

AT this time, James ſeems to have poſſeſſed, in ſome degree, the affections even of his Engliſh ſubjects, and, in a pretty high degree, their eſteem and regard. Hitherto their complaints were chiefly levelled againſt his too great conſtancy in his early friendſhips; a quality, which, had it been attended with more œconomy, the wiſe would have excuſed, and the candid would even, perhaps, have applauded. His parts, which were not deſpicable, and his learning, which was great, being highly extolled by his courtiers and gownmen, and not yet tried in the management of any delicate affairs, for which he was unfit, raiſed a very high idea of him in the world; nor was it always thro' flattery or inſincerity, that he received the title of the ſecond Solomon. A report, which was ſuddenly ſpread about this time, of his being aſſaſſinated, viſibly ſtruck a great conſternation into all orders of men [s]. The commons alſo abated, this ſeſſion, ſomewhat of their exceſſive frugality and granted him an aid o ſthree ſubſidies and ſix

A parliament.

[s] Kennet, p. 676.

CHAP. XLVI. 1606.

fifteenths, which, Sir Francis Bacon said in the house [t], might amount to about four hundred thousand pounds: And for once the King and parliament parted in friendship and good humour. The hatred, which the catholics seemed to bear him, gave him, at this time, an additional value in the eyes of his people. The only point, in which the commons gave him displeasure, was by discovering their constant goodwill to the puritans, in whose favour they desired a conference with the Lords [u]: which was rejected.

THE aid, granted by Parliament, was payable in four years; and the King's profusion, joined to the necessary charges of the government, had already very much anticipated this supply, and disposed him to dissipate, in a very little time, among his friends and courtiers, the residue of it. To engage him farther into expence, his brother-in-law, the King of Denmark payed him a visit this summer; and the whole court was employed in feasting and revelry, in masques and interludes [x]. Great erudition and profound morality, with little taste or pleasantry, prevail in all these entertainments: Mystery, allegory, and allusion reign throughout. Italy was then the model for wit and ingenuity among the European nations. France herself, who afterwards set so much better patterns of elegance and pleasure, was at that time contented to copy servilely laboured and romantic inventions of her southern neighbour.

November, 18.

THE chief affair which was transacted next session, was the intended union of the two kingdoms. Nothing could exceed the King's passion and zeal for this noble enterprize, but the parliament's prejudice and reluctance against it. There remain two excellent speeches

t Journ. 20 May, 1606. u Journ. 5 April 1606. x Kennet, p. 676.

in

CHAP. XLVI.

1606.

in favour of the union, which deſerve to be compared together; that of the King [y], and that of Sir Francis Bacon. Thoſe, who affect in every thing ſuch an extreme contempt for James, will be ſurpriſed to find, that his diſcourſe, both for good reaſoning and eloquent compoſition, approaches very near that of a man, who was undoubtedly, at that time, one of the greateſt geniuſes of Europe. A few trivial indiſcretions and indecorums may be ſaid to characterize the harangue of the monarch, and mark it for his own. And in general, ſo open and avowed a declaration in favour of a meaſure, where he had taken no care, by any precaution or intrigue, to enſure ſucceſs, may ſafely be pronounced a very great indiſcretion. But the art of managing parliaments, by private intereſt or cabal, being found hitherto of little uſe or neceſſity, was not, as yet, become a part of Engliſh politics. In the common courſe of affairs, government could be conducted without their aſſiſtance; and when their concurrence became requiſite to the meaſures of the crown, it was, generally ſpeaking, except in times of great faction and diſcontent, obtained without much difficulty.

THE King's influence ſeems to have rendered the Scots parliament very cordial in all the ſteps, which they took towards the union. Tho' the advantages which Scotland might hope from that meaſure, were more conſiderable; yet were the objections too, with regard to that kingdom, more ſtriking and obvious. The benefit, which muſt have reſulted to England, both by acceſſion of ſtrength and ſecurity, was not deſpicable; and as the Engliſh were, by far, the greater nation, and poſſeſſed the ſeat of government, the objections, either from the point of honour or from jea-

[y] K. James's works, p. 509.

louſy,

CHAP. XLVI.

1606.

louſy, could not reaſonably have any place among them. The Engliſh parliament indeed ſeem to have been ſwayed merely by the vulgar motive of national antipathy. And they perſiſted ſo obſtinately in their prejudices, that all the efforts for a thorough union and incorporation, ended only in the abolition of the hoſtile laws, formerly enacted between the kingdoms [z].

Some precipitant ſteps, which the King, a little after his acceſſion, had taken, in order to promote his favourite project, had been here obſerved to do more injury than ſervice. From his own authority, he had aſſumed the title of King of Great Britain; and had quartered the arms of Scotland, with thoſe of England, in all coins, flags, and enſigns. And he had engaged the judges to make a declaration, that all thoſe, who, after the union of the crowns, ſhould be born in either kingdom, were, for that reaſon alone, naturalized in both. This was a nice queſtion, and, according to the ideas of thoſe times, ſuſceptible of ſubtile reaſoning on both ſides. The King was the ſame: The parliaments were different. To render the people therefore the ſame, we muſt ſuppoſe, that the ſovereign authority reſides chiefly in the prince, and that theſe popular aſſemblies are rather ordained to aſſiſt with money and advice, than indued with any controuling or active powers in the government. *It is evident*, ſays Bacon in his pleadings on this ſubject, *that all other commonwealths, monarchies only excepted, do*

[z] The commons were even ſo averſe to the union, that they had complained in the former ſeſſion to the lords of the biſhop of Briſtol, for writing a book in favour of it; and the prelate was obliged to make ſubmiſſions for this offence. The crime imputed to him ſeems to have conſiſted in his treating of a ſubject, which lay before the parliament. So little notion had they as yet of general liberty! See parliamentary hiſtory, vol. 5. p. 108, 109, 110.

ſubſiſt

CHAP. XLVI. 1606.

ſubſiſt by a law precedent. For where authority is divided amongſt many officers, and they not perpetual, but annual or temporary, and not to receive their authority but by election, and certain perſons to have voices only in that election, and the like; theſe are buſy and curious frames, which of neceſſity do preſuppoſe a law precedent, written or unwritten to guide and direct them: But in monarchies, eſpecially hereditary, that is, when ſeveral families or lineages of people do ſubmit themſelves to one line, imperial or royal; the ſubmiſſion is more natural and ſimple; which afterwards, by law ſubſequent, is perfected and made more formal; but that is grounded upon nature [a]. It would ſeem from this reaſoning, that the idea of an *hereditary, limited* monarchy, tho' implicitly ſuppoſed in many public tranſactions, had never, as yet, been expreſsly formed by any Engliſh lawyer or politician.

EXCEPT the obſtinacy of the parliament with regard to the union, and an attempt on the King's eccleſiaſtial juriſdiction [b], moſt of their meaſures, during this ſeſſion, were ſufficiently reſpectful and obliging; tho' they ſtill diſcover a vigilant ſpirit, and a careful attention towards public good and national liberty. The votes alſo of the commons ſhow, that that houſe contained a mixture of puritans, who had acquired great authority among them [c], and who, together with religious prejudices, were continually ſuggeſting ideas, more ſuitable to a popular than a monarchical form of government. The natural appetite for rule, made the commons lend a willing ear to every doctrine, which tended to augment their power and influence.

[a] Bacon's works, vol. 4. p. 190, 191. Edit. 1730.

[b] Journ. 2. December, 5 March, 1606. 25, 26 June, 1607.

[c] Journal, 26 February. 4, 7, March. 1606. 2 May, 17 June 1607.

A PETITION

CHAP. XLVI. 1607.

A PETITION was moved in the houſe for a more rigorous execution of the laws againſt popiſh recuſants, and an abatement towards proteſtant nonconformiſts. Both theſe two points were equally unacceptable to the King; and he ſent orders to the houſe to proceed no farther in that matter. The houſe were inclined, at firſt, to conſider theſe orders as a breach of privilege: But they ſoon acquieſced, when told, that this meaſure of the King, was ſupported by many precedents, during the reign of Elizabeth [d]. Had the houſe been always diſpoſed to make the precedents of that reign the rule of their conduct, they needed never have had any difference with any of their monarchs.

5th of June. THE complaints of Spaniſh depredations were very loud among the Engliſh merchants [e]. The lower houſe ſent a meſſage to the lords, deſiring a conference with them, in order to their preſenting a joint petition to the King on that ſubject. The lords took ſome time to deliberate on this meſſage; becauſe, they ſaid, the matter was *weighty* and *rare*. It probably occurred to them, at firſt, that the parliament's interpoſing in affairs of ſtate would appear unuſual and extraordinary. And to ſhow, that in this ſentiment they were not guided by court influence; after they had deliberated, they agreed to the conference.

THE houſe of commons began now to feel themſelves of ſuch importance, that, on the motion of Sir Edwin Sandys, a member of great authority, they entered, for the firſt time, an order for the regular keeping of their journals [f]. When all buſineſs was finiſhed, the King prorogued the parliament.

[d] Journ. 16, 17 June, 1607. [e] Journ. 25 Feb. 1606. [f] Journ. 2 July, 1607.

NEXT

CHAP. XLVI.

ABOUT this time, there was an inſurrection of the country people in Northamptonſhire, headed by one Reynolds, a man of low condition. They went about deſtroying incloſures; but carefully avoided the committing any other outrage. This inſurrection was eaſily ſuppreſſed, and, tho' great lenity was uſed towards the inſurgents, yet were ſome of the ringleaders puniſhed. The chief cauſe of that trivial commotion ſeems to have been, of itſelf, far from trivial. It was become the common practice in England to diſuſe tillage, and throw the land into incloſures for the ſake of paſture. By this means, the kingdom was depopulated, or at leaſt, prevented from increaſing ſo much in people, as might have been expected from the daily increaſe of induſtry and commerce. 1607. 4th of July.

NEXT year preſents us with nothing memorable: But in the ſpring of the ſubſequent, after a long negotiation, was concluded, by a truce of twelve years, that war, which, for near half a century, had been carried on with ſuch fury, between Spain and the ſtates of the United Provinces. Never conteſt ſeemed, at firſt, more unequal: Never conteſt was finiſhed with more honour to the weaker party. On the ſide of Spain were numbers, riches, authority, diſcipline: On the ſide of the revolted provinces were found the attachment to liberty and the enthuſiaſm of religion. By her naval enterprizes the republic maintained her armies; and joining peaceful induſtry to military valour, ſhe was enabled, by her own force, to ſupport herſelf, and gradually rely leſs on thoſe neighbouring princes, who, from jealouſy to Spain, were at firſt prompted to encourage her revolt. Long had the pride of that monarchy prevailed over her intereſt, and prevented her from hearkening to any terms of accommodation with her rebellious ſubjects. But finding all intercourſe cut off between her provinces by the maritime 1608. 1609. Truce betwixt Spain and the United Provinces.

CHAP. XLVI.

1609.

force of the ſtates, ſhe at laſt agreed to treat with them as a free people, and ſolemnly to renounce all claim and pretenſion to their ſovereignty.

March 30.

THIS chief point being once gained, the treaty was eaſily brought to a concluſion, under the joint mediation and guarantee of France and England. All exterior appearances of honour and regard were paid equally to both crowns: But very different were the ſentiments, which the ſtates, as well as all Europe, entertained of the princes, who wore them. Frugality and vigour, the chief circumſtances, which procure regard among foreign nations, ſhone as conſpicuouſly in Henry as they were defective in James. To a contempt of the Engliſh monarch, Henry ſeems to have added a conſiderable degree of jealouſy and averſion, which were ſentiments altogether without foundation. James was perfectly juſt and fair in all tranſactions with his allies [g], but it appears from the memoirs of of thoſe times, that each ſide deemed him partial towards their adverſary, and fancied, that he had entered into ſecret meaſures againſt them [h]. So little equity have men in their judgments of their own affairs; and ſo dangerous is that entire neutrality affected by the King of England!

THE little concern, which James took in foreign affairs, renders the domeſtic occurrences, particularly thoſe of parliament, the moſt intereſting of his reign. A new ſeſſion was held this ſpring; the King full of

1610.

February 9 A parliament.

g The plan of accommodation which James recommended is found in Winwood, vol. II. p. 49, 430; and is the ſame that was recommended by Henry, as we learn from Jeanin, tom. 3. p. 416, 117. It had long been imagined by hiſtorians from Jeanin's authority, that James had declared to the court of Spain that he would not ſupport the Dutch in their pretenſions to liberty and independence. But it has ſince been diſcovered by Winwood's memorials, vol. II. p. 456, 466, 469, 475, 476, that that report was founded on a lye of preſident Rickardot's.

h Winwood and Jeanin, *paſſim*.

hopes

hopes of receiving ſupply; the commons, of circumſcribing his exorbitant prerogative. The Earl of Saliſbury, now created treaſurer on the death of the Earl of Dorſet, laid open the King's neceſſities, firſt to the Peers, then to a committee of the lower houſe [1]. He inſiſted on the unavoidable expences, in ſupporting the navy, and in ſuppreſſing a late inſurrection in Ireland: He mentioned three numerous courts, which the King was obliged to maintain, for himſelf, for the Queen, and for the Prince of Wales: He obſerved, that Queen Elizabeth, tho' a ſingle woman, had received very large ſupplies, in the years preceding her death, which alone were expenſive to her: And he aſſerted, that, during her reign, ſhe had very much diſſipated the crown-lands; an expedient, which, tho' it ſupplied her preſent neceſſities, without laying burthens on her people, multiplied extremely the neceſſities of her ſucceſſor. From all theſe cauſes he thought it no-wiſe ſtrange, that the King's income ſhould fall ſhort ſo great a ſum as eighty one thouſand pounds of his ſtated and regular expence; without mentioning contingencies, which ought always to be eſteemed a fourth of the yearly charges. And as the crown was now neceſſarily burthened with a great and urgent debt of 300,000 pounds, he thence inferred the abſolute neceſſity of an immediate and large ſupply from the people. To all theſe reaſons, which James likewiſe urged in a ſpeech addreſſed to both houſes, the commons remained inexorable. But not to ſhock the King with an abſolute refuſal, they granted him one ſubſidy and one fifteenth; which would ſcarce amount to a hundred thouſand pounds. And James received the mortification of diſcovering, in vain, all his wants, and of begging aid of ſubjects, who had no reaſonable indulgence nor conſideration for him.

1610.

March 21.

[1] Journ. 17 Feb. 1609. Kennet, p. 681.

AMONG

CHAP. XLVI.

1610.

Among the many cauſes of diſguſt and quarrel, which now daily and unavoidably multiplied between Prince and Parliament, this article of money is to be regarded as none of the leaſt conſiderable. After the diſcovery and conqueſt of the Weſt-Indies, gold and ſilver became every day more plentiful in England, as well as in the reſt of Europe; and the price of all commodities and proviſions roſe to a pitch beyond what had ever been known, ſince the declenſion of the Roman empire. As the revenue of the crown roſe not in proportion [k], the Prince was inſenſibly reduced to poverty amidſt the general riches of his ſubjects, and required additional funds, in order to ſupport the ſame magnificence and force, which had been maintained by former monarchs. But while money thus flowed into England, we may obſerve, that, at the ſame time, and probably from that very cauſe, arts and induſtry of all kinds received a mighty increaſe; and elegance in every enjoyment of life became better known, and more cultivated among all ranks of people. The King's ſervants, both civil and military, his courtiers, his miniſters, demanded more ample ſupplies from the impoveriſhed Prince, and were not contented with the ſame ſimplicity of living, which had ſatisfied their anceſtors. The Prince himſelf began to regard an increaſe of pomp and ſplendor as requiſite to ſupport the dignity of his character, and to preſerve the ſame ſuperiority above his ſubjects, which his predeceſſors had enjoyed. Some equality too, and proportion to the other ſovereigns of Europe, it was natural for him to deſire; and as they had univerſally enlarged their revenue and multiplied their taxes, the King of England deemed it reaſonable, that his ſubjects who were generally as

[k] Beſides the great diſſipation of the crown-lands, the fee-farm-rents never increaſed, and the other lands were let on long leaſes and at a great undervalue, little or nothing above the old rent.

rich

rich as theirs, ſhould bear with patience ſome additional burthens and impoſitions. CHAP. XLVI. 1610.

UNHAPPILY for the King, thoſe very riches, with the increaſing knowlege of the age, bred oppoſite ſentiments in his ſubjects; and begetting a ſpirit of freedom and independence, diſpoſed them to pay little regard, either to the entreaties or menaces of their ſovereign. While the barons poſſeſſed their former immenſe property and extenſive juriſdictions, they were apt, on every diſguſt, to endanger the monarch and throw the whole government into confuſion: But this very confuſion often, in its turn, proved favourable to the monarch, and made the nation again ſubmit to him, in order to re-eſtabliſh juſtice and tranquillity. After that both the power of alienations, and the increaſe of commerce had thrown the ballance of property into the hands of the commons, the ſituation of affairs and the diſpoſitions of men became ſuſceptible of a more regular plan of liberty; and the laws were not ſupported ſingly by the authority of the ſovereign. And tho' in that interval, after the decline of the peers, and before the people had yet experienced their force, the princes aſſumed an exorbitant power, and had almoſt annihilated the conſtitution under the weight of their prerogative; ſo ſoon as the commons recovered from their lethargy, they ſeem to have been aſtoniſhed at the danger, and were reſolved to ſecure liberty by firmer barriers, than their anceſtors had hitherto provided for it.

HAD James poſſeſſed a very rigid frugality, he might have warded off this criſis ſomewhat longer; and waiting patiently for a favourable opportunity to increaſe and fix his revenue, might have ſecured the extenſive authority, which was tranſmitted to him. On the other hand, had the commons been inclined to act with more generoſity and kindneſs towards their Prince, they might probably have turned his neceſſities to good ac-

CHAP. XLVI. 1610.

count, and have bribed him to depart peaceably from the moſt dangerous articles of his prerogative. But he was a foreigner, and ignorant of the arts of popularity; they were ſoured by religious prejudices, and tenacious of their money: And, in this ſituation, it is no wonder, that, during this whole reign, we ſcarce find an interval of mutual confidence and friendſhip between prince and parliament.

THE King by his prerogative alone, had, ſome years before, altered the rates of the cuſtoms, and had eſtabliſhed new impoſitions on ſeveral kinds of merchandize. This exerciſe of power will naturally, to us, appear arbitrary and illegal; yet, according to the principles and practices of that time, it might admit of ſome apology. The duties of tonnage and poundage were at firſt granted to the crown, by a vote of parliament, and for a limited time; and as the grant frequently expired and was renewed, there could not then ariſe any controverſy concerning the origin of the King's right to levy theſe duties; and this impoſition, like all others, was plainly derived from the voluntary conſent of the people. But as Henry V. and all the ſucceeding princes, had the revenue conferred on them for life, the Prince, ſo long in poſſeſſion of theſe duties, began gradually to conſider them as his own proper right and inheritance, and regarded the vote of parliament as a mere formality, which rather expreſſed the acquieſcence of the people in his prerogative, than beſtowed any new gift or revenue upon him.

THE Parliament, when it firſt granted poundage to the crown, had fixed no particular rates: The impoſition was given as a ſhilling a pound, or five *per cent.* on all commodities: It was left to the King himſelf and the Privy Council, aided by the advice of ſuch merchants as they ſhould think proper to conſult, to fix the

CHAP. LXVI. 1610.

the value of goods, and thereby the rates of the cuſtoms: And as that value had been ſettled before the diſcovery of the Weſt-Indies, it was become much inferior to the prices, which almoſt all commodities bore in every market of Europe; and conſequently, the cuſtoms, tho' ſuppoſed to be five *per cent.* did not, in reality, amount to a third of that value. The King, therefore, was naturally led to think, that rates, which were now plainly falſe, ought to be corrected [l]; that a valuation of commodities, fixed by one act of the privy council, might be amended by another; that if his right to poundage was inherent in the crown, he ſhould alſo poſſeſs, of himſelf, the right of correcting its inequalities; if it was granted by the people, he ſhould at leaſt ſupport the ſpirit of the law, by fixing a new and a juſter valuation of all commodities. But beſides this reaſoning, which ſeems plauſible, if not ſolid, the King was ſupported in that act of power by two direct precedents, one in the reign of Mary, another in the beginning of Elizabeth [m]. Both theſe Princeſſes had, without conſent of parliament, altered the rates of ſome particular commodities; and as their impoſitions had, all along, been ſubmitted to without a murmur, and ſtill continued to be levied, the King had no reaſon to apprehend, that a farther exerciſe of the ſame authority would give any occaſion of complaint. That leſs umbrage might be taken, he was extremely moderate in the new rates, which he eſtabliſhed. The law entitled him to levy five *per cent.* on all commodities; yet he really did not, on the whole, exceed two: The cuſtoms, during his whole reign, roſe only from 127,000 pounds a-year to 160,000; tho' beſides the encreaſe of the rates, there was a ſenſible encreaſe of commerce and induſtry during that

[l] Winwood, vol. II. p. 438. [m] Journ. 18th April, 5th and 10th May, 1614, &c. 20th February, 1625.

CHAP. XLVI. 1610.

period: But all this precaution could not ſave him from the complaints of the houſe of commons. A ſpirit of liberty had now taken poſſeſſion of that houſe: The leading members, being men of an independant genius and large views, began to regulate their opinions, more by the future conſequences which they foreſaw, that by the former precedents which were laid before them; and they leſs aſpired at maintaining the antient conſtitution, than at eſtabliſhing a new one, and a freer and a better. In their remonſtrances to the King on this occaſion, they obſerved it to be a general opinion, *That the reaſons of that practice might be extended much farther, even to the utter ruin of the antient liberty of the kingdom, and the ſubjects right of property in their lands and goods* [n]. Tho' expreſly forbid by the King to touch his prerogative, they paſſed a bill aboliſhing theſe impoſitions; which was rejected by the houſe of lords.

In another addreſs to the King, they objected to the practice of borrowing upon privy ſeals, and deſired, that the ſubjects ſhould not be forced to lend money to his Majeſty, nor give a reaſon for their refuſal. Some murmurs likewiſe were thrown out in the houſe againſt a new monopoly of the licence of wines [o]. It muſt be confeſſed, that forced loans and monopolies were eſtabliſhed on many and recent precedents; tho' diametrically oppoſite to all the principles of a free government [p].

The houſe likewiſe diſcovered ſome diſcontent againſt the King's proclamations. James told them,

[n] Journ. 23d May, 1610. [o] Parliament. Hiſt vol. V. p. 241.

[p] We find the King's anſwer in Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 193, 2d edit. "To the third and fourth (namely, that it might be lawful "to arreſt the King's ſervants without leave, and that no man ſhould be "inforced to lend money, nor to give a reaſon why he would not) his "Majeſty ſent us an anſwer, that becauſe we brought precedents of anti-

That

CHAP. XLVI. 1610.

That tho' he well knew, by the conſtitution and policy of the kingdom, that proclamations were not of equal force with laws; yet he thought it a duty incumbent on him, and a power inſeparably annexed to the crown, to reſtrain and prevent ſuch miſchiefs and inconveniencies as he ſaw growing on the ſtate, againſt which no certain law was extant, and which might tend to the great detriment of the ſubject, if there ſhould be no remedy provided till the meeting of a parliament. And this prerogative, he adds, *our progenitors have, as well in antient as later times, uſed and enjoyed* [q]. The intervals between ſeſſions, we may obſerve, were frequently ſo long as to render it requiſite for a prince to interpoſe by his prerogative; and it was an eſtabliſhed maxim among the lawyers, that all the proclamations of a king were abrogated by his death [r]. But what the authority could be, which bound the ſubjects, and yet was inferior to the authority of laws, ſeems inexplicable by any maxims of reaſon or politics; And in this inſtance, as in many others, it is eaſy to ſee, how unintelligible the Engliſh conſtitution was, before the parliament was able, by continued acquiſitions or

[q] quity to ſtrengthen thoſe demands, he allowed not of any precedents "drawn from the time of uſurping or decaying princes, or people too bold "and wanton; that he deſired not to govern in that commonwealth, "where ſubjects ſhould be aſſured of all things, and hope for nothing. It "was one thing *ſubmittere principatum legibus*; and another thing *ſubmittere principatum ſubditis*. That he would not leave to poſterity ſuch a "mark of weakneſs upon his reign; and therefore his concluſion was, "*non placet petitio, non placet exemplum*: Yet with this mitigation, that "in matters of loans he would refuſe no reaſonable excuſe, nor ſhould my "Lord Chamberlain deny the arreſting of any of his Majeſty's ſervants, "if juſt cauſe was ſhown." The parliament however, acknowledged at this time with thankfulneſs to the King, that he allowed diſputes and inquiries about his prerogative, much beyond what had been indulged by any of his predeceſſors. *Parliament. Hiſt.* vol. V. p. 230. This very ſeſſion, he expreſsly gave them leave to produce all their grievances, without exception. [q] Parliament. Hiſt. vol. V. p. 250. [r] Journ. 12th May, 1614.

CHAP. XLVI.

1610.

encroachments, to eſtabliſh it on fixt principles of liberty.

UPON the ſettlement of the reformation, that extenſive branch of power, which regards eccleſiaſtical matters, being then without an owner, ſeemed to belong to the firſt occupier; and Henry VIII. failed not immediately to ſeize it, and to exert it even to the utmoſt degree of tyranny. The poſſeſſion of it was continued with Edward; and recovered by Elizabeth; and that ambitious Princeſs was ſo remarkably jealous of this flower of her crown, that ſhe ſeverely reprimanded the parliament, if they ever preſumed to intermeddle in theſe matters; and they were ſo over-awed by her authority, as to ſubmit, and to aſk pardon on theſe occaſions. But James's parliaments were much leſs obſequious. They ventured to lift up their eyes, and to conſider this prerogative. They there ſaw a very large province of government, poſſeſſed by the King alone, and never communicated with the parliament. They were ſenſible, that this province admitted not of any exact boundary or circumſcription. They had felt, that the Roman pontiff, in former ages, under pretence of religion, was gradually making advances to uſurp the whole civil power. They dreaded ſtill more dangerous conſequences from the claims of their own ſovereign, who reſided among them, and who, in many other reſpects, poſſeſſed ſuch unlimited authority. They therefore deemed it abſolutely neceſſary to circumſcribe this branch of prerogative, and accordingly, in the preceding ſeſſion, they paſſed a bill againſt the eſtabliſhment of any eccleſiaſtical canons without conſent of parliament [s]. But the houſe of lords, as is uſual, defended the barriers of the throne, and rejected the bill.

[s] Journ. 2d, 11th December; 5th March, 1606.

IN

CHAP. XLVI. 1610.

In this ſeſſion, the commons contented themſelves with remonſtrating againſt the proceedings of the *high commiſſion court* [t]. It required no great penetration to ſee the extreme danger to liberty, ariſing from large diſcretionary powers in a regal government. But James, as was natural, refuſed compliance with the application of the commons. He was probably ſenſible, that, beſides the great diminution of his authority, many inconveniences muſt neceſſarily reſult from the aboliſhing all power of this nature in every magiſtrate; and that the laws, were they ever ſo carefully framed and digeſted, could not poſſibly provide againſt all contingencies; much leſs, where they had not, as yet, attained a ſufficient degree of accuracy and refinement.

But the buſineſs, which chiefly occupied the commons, during this ſeſſion, was the abolition of wardſhips and purveyance; prerogatives, which had been more or leſs touched on, every ſeſſion, during the whole reign of James. In this affair, the commons employed the proper means, which might intitle them to ſucceſs: They offered the King a ſettled revenue as an equivalent for the powers, which he ſhould part with; and the King was willing to hearken to terms. After much diſpute, he offered to give up theſe prerogatives for 200,000 pounds a-year, which they agreed to confer on him [u]. And nothing remained, towards cloſing the

[t] Parliament. Hiſt. vol. V. p. 247. Kennet, p. 681.

[u] We learn from Winwood's Memorials, vol. II. p. 193, the reaſon aſſigned for this particular ſum. "From thence my Lord Treaſurer came "to the price; and here he ſaid, that the King would no more riſe and "fall like a merchant. That he would not have a flower of his crown "(meaning the court of wards) ſo much toſſed; that it was too dainty to "be ſo handled: And then he ſaid, that he muſt deliver the very coun-"tenance and character of the King's mind out of his own hand-writing: "which, before he read, he ſaid he would acquaint us with a pleaſant con-"ceit of his Majeſty. As concerning the number of nineſcore thouſand "pounds, which was our number, he could not affect, becauſe nine was "the number of the poets, who were always beggars, tho' they ſerved ſo

CHAP. XLVI.

1610.

bargain, but that the commons ſhould determine the funds, from which this ſum ſhould be levied. This ſeſſion was too far advanced to bring ſo difficult a matter to a full concluſion; and tho' the parliament met again, towards the end of the year, and reſumed the queſtion, they were never able to terminate an affair, which they ſeemed ſo intent upon. The journals of that ſeſſion are loſt; and, as the hiſtorians of this reign are very negligent in relating parliamentary affairs, of whoſe importance they were not ſufficiently appriſed, we know not exactly the reaſon of this failure. It only appears, that the King was extremely diſſatisfied with the conduct of the parliament, and ſoon afterwards diſſolved it. This was his firſt parliament, and it ſat near ſeven years.

In the midſt of all theſe attacks, ſome more, ſome leſs violent, on royal prerogative, the King diſplayed, as openly as ever, all his exalted notions of monarchy and the authority of princes. Even in a ſpeech to the parliament, where he begged for ſupply, and where he ſhould naturally have uſed every art to ingratiate himſelf with that aſſembly, he expreſſed himſelf in theſe terms; "I conclude, then, the point, touching the "power of kings, with this axiom of divinity, that, "as to diſpute *what God may do*, is blaſphemy, but "*what God wills*, that divines may lawfully and do "ordinarily diſpute and diſcuſs; ſo is it ſedition in "ſubjects to diſpute what a king may do in the height

"many muſes; and eleven was the number of the apoſtles, when the "traitor, Judas, was away; and therefore might beſt be affected by his "Majeſty: But there was a mean number, which might accord us both; "and *that was ten:* which, ſaid my Lord Treaſurer, is a ſacred number; "for ſo many were God's commandments, which tend to virtue and edifi-"cation." If the commons really voted 20,000 pounds a year more, on account of this *pleaſant conceit* of the King and the Treaſurer, it was certainly the beſt paid wit, for its goodneſs, that ever was in the world.

"of

" of his power. But juſt kings will ever be willing to " declare what they will do, if they will not incur " the curſe of God. I will not be content, that " my power be diſputed upon; but I ſhall ever be " willing to make the reaſon appear of my doings, " and rule my actions according to *my* laws [x]." Notwithſtanding the great extent of prerogative in that age, theſe expreſſions would probably give ſome offence. But we may obſerve, that, as the King's deſpotiſm was more ſpeculative than practical, ſo the independency of the commons was, at this time, the contrary; and, tho' ſtrongly ſupported by their preſent ſituation as well as diſpoſition, was too new and recent to be as yet founded on ſyſtematical principles and opinions [y].

x King James's Works, p. 531.

y It may not be unworthy obſervation, that James, in a Book called *The true Laws of free Monarchies*, which he publiſhed a little before his acceſſion to the crown of England, affirmed, " That a good king, altho' " he be above the law, will ſubject and frame his actions thereto, for " example's ſake to his ſubjects, and of his own free-will, but not as " ſubject or bound thereto." In another paſſage, " According to the " fundamental law already alleged, we daily ſee, that in the parliament " (which is nothing elſe but the head-court of the king and his vaſſals) " the laws are but craved by his ſubjects, and only made by him at their " rogation, and with their advice. For albeit the king *make daily* ſtatutes " and ordinances, enjoining ſuch pains thereto as he thinks meet, without " any advice of parliament or eſtates; yet it lies in the power of no " parliament to make any kind of law or ſtatute, without his ſceptre be " to it, for giving it the force of a law." *King James's Works*, p. 202. It is not to be ſuppoſed, that, at ſuch a critical juncture, James had ſo little ſenſe as, directly, in ſo material a point, to have openly ſhocked what were the univerſally eſtabliſhed principles of that age: On the contrary, we are told by hiſtorians, that nothing tended more to facilitate his acceſſion, than the good opinion entertained of him by the Engliſh, on account of his learned and judicious writings. The queſtion, however, with regard to the royal power was, at this time, become a very dangerous point; and without employing ambiguous, inſignificant terms, which determined nothing, it was impoſſible to p'eaſe both King and parliament. Dr. Cowell, who had magnified the prerogative in words too intelligible, fell this ſeſſion under the indignation of the commons. *Parliament. Hiſt.*

THIS

CHAP. XLVI.

1610. 3d of May. Death of the French King.

THIS year was distinguished by a memorable event, which gave great alarm and concern in England; the murder of the French monarch by the poniard of the fanatical Ravaillac. That experience, and reputation, which this heroic prince had been acquiring for so many years; those treasures, which he had amassed; those armies, which he had inlisted and disciplined; were on the point of being employed in some great enterprize, which would probably have changed the face of Europe; when a period was put to his glory by an enthusiastic madman, who sacrificed at once his own life and that of the prince to his detestable prejudices. Were the designs, ascribed to Henry by the compilers of Sully's Memoirs, less chimerical, they might be admitted, on account of the testimony, by which that narration is supported: But such vast projects, had they been real, he must have revolved and digested in his mind for many years; and 'tis observable, that about a twelve-month before, he had been very instrumental in making peace between Spain and the United Provinces; a measure, by which he deprived himself of the assistance of his firmest ally, and the best able to second his enterprises. 'Tis more probable, that the war, which, at the time of his death, he intended to commence against Spain, was the result of ambition, revenge, or love, in a powerful and military prince, who had long wished for an opportunity of attacking

vol. V. p. 521. The King himself, after all his magnificent boasts, was obliged to make his escape thro' a distinction, which he framed between a king *in abstracto* and a king *in concreto*: An abstract king, he said, had all power; but a concrete king was bound to observe the laws of the country, which he governed. *K. James's Works*, p. 533. But, how bound? By conscience only? Or might his subjects resist him and defend their privileges? This he thought not fit to explain. And so difficult is it to explain that point, that, to this day whatever liberties may be used by private inquirers, the laws have, very prudently, thought proper to maintain a total silence with regard to it.

his

his enemy, and who was at laſt rouſed by a ſudden motive or provocation. With his death, the glory of the French monarchy ſuffered an eclipſe for ſome years; and that kingdom falling under an adminiſtration weak and bigotted, factious and diſorderly, the Auſtrian greatneſs began anew to appear formidable to Europe. 1610.

In England, the antipathy to the catholics revived a little upon this tragical event; and ſome of the laws, which had been formerly enacted for no other purpoſe than to keep theſe religioniſts in awe, began now to be executed with greater rigour and ſeverity [z].

Tho' James's timidity and indolence fixed him, during moſt of his reign, in a very prudent inattention to foreign affairs, there happened, this year, an event in Europe of ſuch mighty conſequence as to rouze him from his lethargy, and ſummon up all his zeal and enterprize. A profeſſor of divinity, named Vorſtius, the diſciple of Arminius, was called from a German to a Dutch univerſity; and as he differed from his Britannic Majeſty in ſome nice queſtions concerning the intimate eſſence and ſecret decrees of God, he was conſidered as a dangerous rival in ſcholaſtic fame, and was, at laſt, obliged to yield to the legions of that royal doctor, whoſe ſyllogiſms he might have refuted or eluded. If vigour was wanting in other incidents of James's reign, here he behaved even with haughtineſs and inſolence; and the ſtates were obliged, after ſeveral remonſtrances, to deprive Vorſtius of his chair, and to baniſh him their dominions [a]. The King carried no farther his proſecutions againſt that profeſſor; tho' he had very charitably hinted to the ſtates, *That, as to the burning Vorſtius for his blaſphemies and atheiſm, he left them to their own chriſtian wiſdom; but ſurely never heretic better deſerved the flames* [b]. It is to 1611. Arminianiſm,

[z] Kennet, p. 684. [a] Id. p. 715. [b] K. James's Works, p. 355.

CHAP. XLVI.

1611.

be remarked, that, at this period, all over Europe, except in Holland alone, the practice of burning heretics ſtill prevailed, even in proteſtant countries; and inſtances were not wanting in England, during the reign of James. The Dutch themſelves were, at laſt, by ſtate intrigue, and the tyranny of Prince Maurice, forced from their rational and humane maxims; and the perſecuting bigots, a little after this time, ſignalized their power by the death of the virtuous Barnevelt, and the impriſonment of the virtuous and learned Grotius. The ſcholaſtic controverſies about free-will, and grace, and predeſtination, begot theſe violent convulſions.

In tracing the coherence among the ſyſtems of modern theology, we may obſerve, that the doctrine of abſolute decrees has ever been intimately connected with the enthuſiaſtic ſpirit; as that doctrine affords the higheſt ſubject of joy, triumph, and ſecurity, to the ſuppoſed elect, and exalts them, by infinite degrees, above the reſt of mankind. All the firſt reformers adopted theſe principles; and the Janſeniſts too, a fanatical ſet in France, not to mention the Mahometans in Aſia, have ever embraced them. As the Lutheran eſtabliſhments were ſubjected to epiſcopal juriſdiction, their enthuſiaſtic genius gradually decayed, and men had leiſure to perceive the abſurdity of ſuppoſing God to puniſh, by infinite torments, what he himſelf, from all eternity, had unchangeably decreed. The King, tho', at this time, his Calviniſtic education had rivetted him in the doctrine of abſolute decrees, yet, being a zealous partizan of epiſcopacy, was inſenſibly ingaged, towards the end of his reign, to favour the milder theology of Arminius. Even in ſo great a doctor, the genius of the religion prevailed over its ſpeculative tenets; and with him, the whole clergy gradually dropped the more rigid principles of abſolute reprobation

reprobation and unconditional decrees. Some noiſe was, at firſt, made about theſe innovations; but being drowned in the fury of factions and civil wars which ſucceeded, the ſcholaſtic arguments made an inſignificant figure amidſt thoſe violent diſputes about civil and eccleſiaſtical power with which the nation was agitated. And upon the reſtoration, the church, tho' ſhe ſtill retained her old ſubſcriptions and articles of faith, was found to have totally changed her ſpeculative doctrines, and to have embraced tenets more ſuitable to the genius of her diſcipline and worſhip, without its being poſſible to aſſign the preciſe period, in which the alteration was produced. CHAP. XLVI. 1611.

It may be worth obſerving, that, about this time, James, from his great deſire to promote controverſial divinity, erected a college at Chelſea for the entertainment of twenty perſons, who ſhould be entirely employed in refuting the papiſts and puritans[c]. All the efforts of the great Bacon could not procure an eſtabliſhment for the cultivation of natural philoſophy: Even to this day, no ſociety has been inſtituted for the poliſhing and fixing our language. The only encouragement, which the ſovereign in England has ever given to any thing, that has the appearance of ſcience, was this ſhort-lived eſtabliſhment of James; an inſtitution quite ſuperfluous, conſidering the unhappy propenſion, which, at that time, ſo univerſally poſſeſſed the nation for polemical divinity.

To conſider James in a more advantageous light, we muſt take a view of him as the legiſlator of Ireland; and moſt of the inſtitutions, which he had framed for the civilizing that kingdom, being finiſhed about this period, it may not here be improper to give ſome ac- 1612.

[c] Kennet, p. 685. Camden's Brit. vol. I. p. 370. Gibſon's edit.

count

CHAP. XLVI.

1612.

count of them. He frequently boaſts of the management of Ireland as his maſter-piece; and it will appear, upon inquiry, that his vanity, in this particular, was not altogether without foundation.

State of Ireland.

AFTER the ſubjection of Ireland by Elizabeth, the more difficult taſk ſtill remained; to civilize the barbarous inhabitants, to reconcile them to laws and induſtry, and to render their ſubjection durable and uſeful to the crown of England. James proceeded in this work by a ſteady, regular, and well concerted plan; and in the ſpace of nine years, according to Sir John Davis, he made greater advances towards the reformation of that kingdom, than had been made in the 440 years, which had elapſed ſince the conqueſt was firſt attempted [d].

IT was previouſly neceſſary to aboliſh the Iriſh cuſtoms, which ſupplied the place of laws, and which were calculated to keep that people for ever in a ſtate of barbariſm and diſorder.

BY the *Brehon* law or cuſtom, every crime, however enormous, was puniſhed, not with death, but by a fine or pecuniary mulct, which was levied upon the criminal. Murder itſelf, as among all the antient barbarous nations, was attoned for in this manner; and each man, according to his rank, had a different rate or value affixed to him, which, if any one was willing to pay, he needed not fear the aſſaſſinating his enemy. This rate was called his *eric*. When Sir William Fitzwilliams being Lord deputy, told Maguire, that he was to ſend a ſheriff into Fermannah, which, a little before, had been made a county, and ſubjected to the Engliſh law; *Your ſheriff*, ſaid Maguire, *ſhall be welcome to me: But, let me know, beforehand, his* eric, *or the price of his head, that, if my people*

[d] P. 259. edit. 1613.

cut

cut it off, I may levy the money upon the county [e]. As for oppreſſion, extortion, and other treſpaſſes, ſo little were they regarded, that no penalty was affixed to them, and no redreſs for ſuch offences could ever be obtained.

THE cuſtoms of *Gavelkinde* and *Taniſtry* were attended with the ſame abſurdity in the diſtribution of property. Upon the death of any perſon, his land, by the cuſtom of Gavelkinde, was divided among all the males of the ſept or family, both baſtard and legitimate: And, after partition made, if any of the ſept died, his portion was not ſhared out among his ſons; but the chieftain, at his diſcretion, made a new partition of all the lands, belonging to that ſept, and gave every one his ſhare [f]. As no man, by reaſon of this cuſtom, enjoyed the fixed property of any land; to build, to plant, to incloſe, to cultivate, to improve, would have been ſo much loſt labour.

THE chieftains and the Taniſts, tho' drawn from the principal families, were not hereditary, but were eſtabliſhed by election, or, more properly ſpeaking, by force and violence. Their authority was abſolute; and, notwithſtanding that certain lands were aſſigned to the office, its chief profit reſulted from exactions, dues, aſſeſſments, for which there was no fixed law, and which were levied at pleaſure [g]. Hence aroſe that common bye-word among the Iriſh, *That they dwelt weſtward of the law, which dwelt beyond the river of the Barrow:* Meaning the country, where the Engliſh inhabited, and which extended not beyond the compaſs of twenty miles, lying in the neighbourhood of Dublin [h].

e Sir John Davis, p. 166. f Sir John Davis, p. 167. g Id. p. 273. h Id, p. 237.

AFTER

CHAP. XLVI. 1612.

count of them. He frequently boaſts of the management of Ireland as his maſter-piece; and it will appear, upon inquiry, that his vanity, in this particular, was not altogether without foundation.

State of Ireland.

AFTER the ſubjection of Ireland by Elizabeth, the more difficult taſk ſtill remained; to civilize the barbarous inhabitants, to reconcile them to laws and induſtry, and to render their ſubjection durable and uſeful to the crown of England. James proceeded in this work by a ſteady, regular, and well concerted plan; and in the ſpace of nine years, according to Sir John Davis, he made greater advances towards the reformation of that kingdom, than had been made in the 440 years, which had elapſed ſince the conqueſt was firſt attempted [d].

IT was previouſly neceſſary to aboliſh the Iriſh cuſtoms, which ſupplied the place of laws, and which were calculated to keep that people for ever in a ſtate of barbariſm and diſorder.

BY the *Brehon* law or cuſtom, every crime, however enormous, was puniſhed, not with death, but by a fine or pecuniary mulct, which was levied upon the criminal. Murder itſelf, as among all the antient barbarous nations, was attoned for in this manner; and each man, according to his rank, had a different rate or value affixed to him, which, if any one was willing to pay, he needed not fear the aſſaſſinating his enemy. This rate was called his *eric*. When Sir William Fitzwilliams being Lord deputy, told Maguire, that he was to ſend a ſheriff into Fermannah, which, a little before, had been made a county, and ſubjected to the Engliſh law; *Your ſheriff*, ſaid Maguire, *ſhall be welcome to me: But, let me know, beforehand, his* eric, *or the price of his head, that, if my people*

[d] P. 259. edit. 1613.

cut

CHAP. XLVI. 1612.

cut it off, I may levy the money upon the county [e]. As for oppreſſion, extortion, and other treſpaſſes, ſo little were they regarded, that no penalty was affixed to them, and no redreſs for ſuch offences could ever be obtained.

THE cuſtoms of *Gavelkinde* and *Taniſtry* were attended with the ſame abſurdity in the diſtribution of property. Upon the death of any perſon, his land, by the cuſtom of Gavelkinde, was divided among all the males of the ſept or family, both baſtard and legitimate: And, after partition made, if any of the ſept died, his portion was not ſhared out among his ſons; but the chieftain, at his diſcretion, made a new partition of all the lands, belonging to that ſept, and gave every one his ſhare [f]. As no man, by reaſon of this cuſtom, enjoyed the fixed property of any land; to build, to plant, to incloſe, to cultivate, to improve, would have been ſo much loſt labour.

THE chieftains and the Taniſts, tho' drawn from the principal families, were not hereditary, but were eſtabliſhed by election, or, more properly ſpeaking, by force and violence. Their authority was abſolute; and, notwithſtanding that certain lands were aſſigned to the office, its chief profit reſulted from exactions, dues, aſſeſſments, for which there was no fixed law, and which were levied at pleaſure [g]. Hence aroſe that common bye-word among the Iriſh, *That they dwelt weſtward of the law, which dwelt beyond the river of the Barrow:* Meaning the country, where the Engliſh inhabited, and which extended not beyond the compaſs of twenty miles, lying in the neighbourhood of Dublin [h].

e Sir John Davis, p. 166. f Sir John Davis, p. 167. g Id. p. 273. h Id. p. 237.

AFTER

CHAP. XLVI.

1612.

AFTER aboliſhing theſe Iriſh cuſtoms, and ſubſtituting Engliſh law in their place; James, having taken all the natives under his protection, and declared them free citizens, proceeded to govern them by a regular adminiſtration, military as well as civil.

A ſufficient army was maintained, its diſcipline inſpected, and its pay tranſmitted from England, in order to keep the ſoldiers from preying upon the country, as had been uſual in former reigns. When Odoghartie raiſed an inſurrection, a reinforcement was ſent over, and the flames of that rebellion were immediately extinguiſhed.

ALL minds being firſt quieted by an univerſal indemnity [i]; circuits were eſtabliſhed, juſtice adminiſtred, oppreſſion baniſhed, and crimes and diſorders of every kind ſeverely puniſhed [k]. As the Iriſh had been univerſally engaged in the rebellion againſt Elizabeth, a reſignation of all the rights, which had been formerly granted them to ſeparate juriſdictions, was rigorouſly exacted; and no authority, but that of the King and the law, was permitted throughout the kingdom [l].

A reſignation of all private eſtates was even required; and when they were reſtored, the proprietors received them under ſuch conditions as might prevent, for the future, all tyranny and oppreſſion over the common people. The value of the dues, which the nobles uſually claimed from their vaſſals, was eſtimated at a fixed ſum, and all further arbitrary exactions prohibited under ſevere penalties [m].

THE whole province of Ulſter having fallen to the crown by the attainder of rebels, a company was eſtabliſhed in London, for planting new colonies in that fertile country: The property was divided into moderate ſhares, the largeſt not exceeding 2000 acres:

[i] Id. p. 263. [k] Id. p. 264, 265, &c. [l] Id. p. 276. [m] Sir John Davis, p. 278.

Tenants

Tenants were brought over from England and Scotland: The Iriſh were removed from the hills and faſtneſſes, and ſettled in the open country: Huſbandry and the arts were taught them: A fixed habitation ſecured: Plunder and robbery puniſhed: And, by theſe means, Ulſter, from being the moſt wild and diſorderly province of all Ireland, ſoon became the beſt cultivated and moſt civilized [n].

CHAP. XLVI. 1612.

SUCH were the arts, by which James introduced humanity and juſtice among a people, who had ever been buried in the moſt profound barbariſm. Noble cares! much ſuperior to the vain and criminal glory of conqueſts; but requiring ages of perſeverance and attention to perfect what had been ſo happily begun.

A laudable act of juſtice was, about this time, executed in England upon Lord Sanquhir, a Scots nobleman, who had been guilty of a baſe aſſaſſination upon Turner, a fencing-maſter. The Engliſh nation, who were generally diſſatisfied with the Scots, were enraged at this crime, equally mean and atrocious; but James appeaſed them, by preferring the ſeverity of law to the interceſſion of the friends and family of the criminal [o].

[n] Id. p. 280. [o] Kennet, p. 688.

END OF THE FIFTH VOLUME.

20 JY 63